

This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + Refrain from automated querying Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at http://books.google.com/

3 3433 08165045 3

Ganole



Digitized by Google

THE

HISTORY

OF THE

PARLIAMENT OF ENGLAND,

which began novembel the third, 1640; with a short and necessary view of some precedent years.

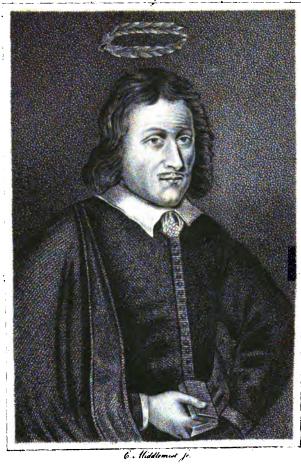
I HAVE read over the first part of this History, contained in three Books, an impartial Truth; and judge it fit for publike view by the printing.

Jo. LANGLEY.

May 7, 1647.

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

dna Xoreli, protes Protegrude in Bully L



Thomas , May , Esq." Etatis Sua 55.

THE

HISTORY

OF THE

PARLIAMENT OF ENGLAND,

WHICH BEGAN NOVEMBER THE THIRD, M.DC.XL.;

WITH

A SHORT AND NECESSARY VIEW OF SOME PRECEDENT YEARS.

WRITTEN BY THOMAS MAY, Esq. SECRETARY FOR THE PARLIAMENT.

PUBLISHED BY AUTHORITY.

Tempora mutantur.
Mutantur Homines.
Veritas eadem manet.

LONDON:

IMPRINTED BY MOSES BELL, FOR GEORGE THOMASON, AT THE SIGNE OF THE ROSE AND CROWN IN ST. PAUL'S CHURCH-YARD,

M.DC.XL.VII.

AND NOW REPRINTED BY ROBERT WILKS, 99, CHANCERY-LANE,
AND SOLD BY WHITE, COCHRANF, AND CO. FLEET-STREET, LONDON.

1812.



Digitized by Google

A PREFACE

TO THE

PRESENT EDITION OF THIS HISTORY.

THE following History of the Parliament of England, which begun on the 3rd day of November, in the year 1640, and which has since been usually distinguished by the name of the Long Parliament, was written by Thomas May, Esquire, a Gentleman of great Genius and Litterary attainments, who flour ished in the reign of King Charles the First. He was born at Mayfield, in the County of Sussex, in the year 1595, and was the eldest son of Sir Thomas May, a Knight, who lived at that place, and who seems to have been possessed of a competent estate in that neighbourhood, which was sufficient to maintain him in the condition of an Independent Gentleman; as it does not appear that he was engaged in any of the Professions. And the liberal education which he gave his eldest son, our Author, seems to confirm this supposition of the Independence of Sir Thomas May's circumstances: for, after having sent him to some good school in the neighbourhood of Mayfield, in the early part of his youth, in which he made an uncommon progress in the acquisition of the learned Languages;) Sir Thomas May entered him at Sidney-Sussex College, in the University of Cambridge, in the rank of a Fellow-commoner, which is the upper Class of Students there, into which the eldest sons of the affluent and independent gentlemen of England are usually admitted. And here our Author continued his classical studies with great assiduity and success, and laid-in a copious stock of that elegant Litera-

Digitized by Google

ture,

ture, and familiar acquaintance with the best Poets and Historians of Antiquity, for which he was afterwards so much celebrated. And in the year 1612; he took the Degree of Bachelor of Arts, being then only 17 years of age; it being the custom, in those days, to remove young scholars from Grammar-schools, to the two Universities of Oxford and Cambridge, about three years earlier than is done at present, or for the last 60 or 70 years. But, after taking the Degree of Bachelor of Arts in the University of Cambridge, it does not appear that our Author ever took any other Degree there.

From the year 1612, (when he was 17 years old,) to the year 1615 (when he was twenty years of age,) it does not appear where Mr. May resided: though it seems reasonable to suppose that it was partly at Cambridge, and partly with his father in Sussex. But in the month of August, 1615, he was admitted a Student of the Law in the Society of Gray's Inn. And from that time he resided chiefly either at that Inn of Court, or in some other part of London, for more than twenty years; during which time he devoted himself much to the study and cultivation of Poetry, and, in consequence of his success in that elegant Art, became familiarly acquainted with the most eminent Courtiers and Wits of those times, and particularly with Sir Kenelm Digby, Sir Richard Fanshaw, Sir John Suckling, Sir Aston Cokaine, Mr. Thomas Carew (one of the Gentlemen of the Privy-chamber to King Charles,) and Endymion Porter, (one of the Gentlemen of his Bed-chamber,) besides Ben. Jonson (the celebrated Dramatic Poet,) and many other persons of higher quality, who were Poets themselves, and lovers of Poetry in others, amongst whom they admitted Mr. May to have a strong claim to be distinguished. And it was in the course of these 20 years (from the year 1615, to the year 1635,) that Mr. May made an excellent translation, in verse, of Lucan's noble historical Poem on the Civil War of Rome, between Pompey the Great and Julius Casar, intitled Pharsalia: which translation was first published in the year 1627, or the second year of the Reign of King Charles the First, and when Mr. May was 32 years old; and was published a second time in the year 1630, or when Mr. May was 35 years old; and was then accompanied with a continuation of the Poem in seven additional books, in English verse (like the translation of Lucan's work,) which carry the History of that destructive Civil War, to the death of Julius Cæsar in the Capitol,

Digitized by Google

by

by the hands of several Senators of Rome, who had conspired against him; who, for the most part, (or with the exception of only Marcus Brutus and Caius Cassius, and, perhaps, two or three persons more,) were Officers of his own Army, but yet thought it to be their duty to put him to death, when they found that he was resolved to terminate the long series of Victories which they had helped him to gain, with a total suppression of the Liberties of their Country. With this grand and awful event, (which afforded an example of the punishment due to ambitious men, who employ their great talents to the destruction of Publick Liberty,) Mr. May thought the Poem ought to end: and it may reasonably be supposed that he thought that Lucan himself would have closed his Poem with the description of that catastrophe, if he had lived to bring it to a conclusion.

And, after having published this Continuation of Lucan's Poem, in seven additional Books in English verse, in the year 1630, he translated it into Latin Verse, and caused the translation to be printed at Leyden in Holland, where it was much admired by learned Foreigners, and thought to be not inferiour, in the purity of the Latin, and the harmony of the Verses, to the Verses of Lucan himself.

This translation of Lucan's Pharsalia, with the Continuation of it in English Verse, and the translation of the said Continuation into Latin Verse, are the principal works that have contributed to the reputation of Mr. May as a Poet. But they are not the only ones. For he also distinguished himself as a Dramatick writer, by writing five Plays, two Comedies, and three Tragedies. The first of his Comedies was intitled The Heir, and was acted at London in the Reign of King James the First, in the year 1620, when our Author was but 25 years old; and it was afterwards published in the year 1638; and it is spoken of by the writers of those times as an excellent performance. And his other Comedy, which was called The Old Couple, is thought to have been written about the same time as the former, and was also brought upon the Stage at London, and well received by the Publick, and it is said to have been estremed but little inferiour to his former Comedy. His three Tragedies were intitled Cleopatra, Queen of Egypt; Agrippina, Empress of Rome; and Antigoné, the Theban Princess: but they seem to have been less admired than his Comedies. And he distinguished

guished himself by other elegant Publications both in Verse and Prose, before the beginning of the Long Parliament, of which he wrote the following History. He lived somewhat above a year after the death of King Charles the First, in January 1648-49, and died, almost suddenly, in the year 1650, in the 55th, or 56th, year of his age.

More particulars concerning the life and writings of this eminent Author may be seen under the article of his name, in the Biographia Britannica. But those that have been here set-forth, are sufficient to shew that he must have had excellent opportunities of knowing the several publick events, that happened throughout the whole Reign of King Charles the First, which began in the year 1625, (when Mr. May was 30 years of age,) and ended in the year 1648-49, when Mr. May was 54 years old. And, therefore, Mr. May seems to have been admirably well fitted to become the historian of the transactions of this whole Reign, and especially of the proceedings of the three first years of this Parliament, which met in November, 1640, if he possessed the Grand Requisite of a good historian, which is Impartiality, or the Love of Truth." Now "that he had this important Requisite," seems to be highly probable from the following considerations.

As his History of this Parliament was published so early as the year 1617, that is, less than seven years after the first meeting of it in November 1640, there must have been great numbers of persons living at the time of its publication, who had been witnesses of the several transactions recorded in it, and perfectly acquainted with all the circumstances belonging to them; and many of these persons would, no doubt, have been ready enough to contradict the accounts he had given of them in this History, and to point-out to the Publick the particular points in which he had mis-represented them, if those accounts had not been faithful. And yet I do not find than any writers of that time, from the month of May, 1647, when this History was published, to the month of May, 1660, when King Charles the Second was restored to his father's Throne, have ever contested the truth of the facts related in this History. And, therefore, it seems reasonable to conclude that those facts are true.

And, further, we may observe that the facts related in this History are found to agree with the accounts given of them by Mr. Whitlock in his Memorials,

morials, and by others of the most sedate and exact historical writers of those times: which is an additional ground for supposing him to have been a very impartial, as well as a very well-informed and judicious, relater of the proceedings of that important Period of our History.

And, lastly, this History of the Parliament almost speaks for itself in support of the impartiality of its Author. For it is written in so calm and temperate a style, is so free from invective and animosity, and has every where such an air of candour and moderation, that it seems to be almost impossible for a reader of it not to suppose it to be impartial.

And, accordingly, this is the character that has generally been allowed to belong to this work, by the most diligent and critical inquirers into the English History: of which I will here give two examples by citing the opinions of two very eminent Persons to this purpose, namely, the late very learned Dr. Warburton, Bishop of Gloucester, and the late very great Minister of State, in the three last years of the reign of King George the Second, Mr. William Pitt, who was afterwards created Earl of Chatham.

Dr. Warburton, Bishop of Gloucester, in his familiar Letters to his intimate friend, Dr. Hurd, (who was afterwards Bishop of Worcester,) has two very remarkable passages relating to this work of Mr. May, which I will here transcribe from the collection of those Letters which was published a few years ago, soon after the death of Dr. Hurd.

The first of these passages occurs in a Letter of Bishop Warburton, to Dr. Hurd, dated on the 30th day of June, in the year 1753, and is in these words:

"As to the History of the Long Parliament, the principal Authors are, "May's History of the Parliament, Clarendon, Whitlock, Ludlow, Rushworth's "Collections, and Walker's History of Independency. The first is an extra- ordinary Performance, little known; written with great Temper, Good-sense, and Spirit; and has the qualities of a regular Composition."

The second passage is in a Letter to Dr. Hurd, dated on the 16th of August of the same year 1753, and is in these words:

"May's

"May's History of the Parliament is a just Composition, according to the "rules of History. It is written with much Judgement, Penetration, Manli-"ness, and Spirit; and with a candour that will greatly increase your esteem, "when you understand that he wrote by the order of his masters, the Par-"liament."

The opinion of the great Mr. William Pitt, (afterwards Earl of Chatham,) occurs in a Letter to his Nephew, Thomas Pitt, Esquire, (his elder brother's son,) who was then a young man and a student at Clare-hall, in the University of Cambridge, and who was afterwards created Lord Camelford; which Letter was dated on the 5th of September, 1754. The passage containing it is in these words:

"I desired you, some time since, to read Lord Clarendon's History of the Civil Wars. "I have lately read a much honester and more instructive book, "of the same Period of History. It is the History of the Parliament, by Thomas "May, Esquire. I will send it to you as soon as you return to Cambridge."

These passages of the Letters of these two very eminent persons, are strong testimonies in favour of this excellent History, of which, however, I cannot find that there has ever been published any second Edition: and the copies of this first Edition of it, (which is printed in a thin folio volume in a very large type,) are now grown very scarce. I therefore hope that this new Edition of it, in the more commodious size of a quarto volume, and with the addition of short abstracts of it's contents, printed in a smaller character in the margins of the pages, (which, though it is a practice that is now grown much out of fashion, appears to me a most important article for the convenience of the reader,) will be acceptable to the Publick.

At the end of this History, I have printed an Appendix to it, which contains all the Declarations, and Votes, and Messages of both Houses of Parliament to the King, with the King's Answers to them, from the month of November, 1641, (when the King had returned from Scotland to London) to the 7th of the following month of March, 1641-42, when he had refused to reside at Westminster, near the Parliament, (in consequence of some popular tumults.)

mults that had arisen there, from which he apprehended danger to his person) and was retiring to the city of York, to raise a body of Troops there for his defence, under the name of a Life-Guard; which measure was soon after followed by an open civil-war. Amongst these Parliamentary Papers will be found first, the famous Grand Remonstrance of the House of Commons, presented to the King in December, 1641, which contains a just Picture of the several Grievances of the Nation, arising from the King's mis-government, from the beginning of his reign, and the King's Answer to it; and secondly, an account of the King's violent Entry into the House of Commons, on the 4th of January, 1641-42, attended by a body of 300 armed men, to seize the persons of five of the most eminent Members of the House, (Mr. Danzil Holles, Sir Arthur Haslerig, Mr. Pym, Mr. Hamden, and Mr. Strode) in order to have them tried for High Tresson, for what they had said and done, as Members of that House; together with an account of the altercation that took place between the King and the Parliament in consequence of that violent measure; and, thirdly, an account of several informations, that had been given to the Parliament, of Licences that had been granted, under the King's hand, to several Irish Officers of the Popish Religion, (some of whom had been bred in the wars in Flanders and Holland, in the service of the King of Spain) to go-over to Ireland, where it was much to be feared, that they would engage in the Irish' rebellion; and some of them had actually done so: from which informations the Parliament could not but entertain some suspicions that the King, though he might not have at first authorised and encouraged the Irish Papists to enter into this rebellion, (as those rebels declared that he had done, yet, now that the rebellion was on foot, was unwilling that it should be speedily suppressed; and was in hopes that he should receive some assistance from those rebels against the English Parliament. These informations received by the Parliament, and set-forth in some of the latter Papers in this Appendix, are very positive and particular, and seem fully sufficient to justify the suspicions entertained by the Parliament, of the King's secret sentiments on this subject, and did certainly contribute very much to increase the jealousy they had conceived of his design to revoke all his late concessions, and to resume his former absolute authority, by any means that he could employ for that purpose. And, if that horrid Irish rebellion had not happened at the time

time it did, and Ireland had continued for a year or two in the same state of peace and tranquillity in which it was when the King went to Scotland, in August, 1641, to meet his Parliament there, and settle the affairs of that Kingdom both in Church and State, (which he did to the thorough satisfaction of his Scottish subjects) it seems probable that, upon his return to London in the following month of November, 1641, he would have complied in like manner with his English Parliament, in all the further measures they would have proposed to him, for the compleat correction of the former abuses in the Government, both in Church and State, and for the rendering all these corrections and concessions permanent after the Dissolution of the present Parliament, so as to put them out of all danger of being rescinded, or revoked, either by the King himself or any of his successors to the Crown. this opinion is well founded, it will follow that that horrid rebellion in Ireland must be considered as having been the cause, not only of all the bloodshed, and robbery, and desolation, which it immediately spread over that island, but also of all the misery in which England was overwhelmed during the whole of the English civil-war, or for the space of more than nine years, to wit, from the summer of the year 1642, when it begun, to the end of the year, 1651, when, (after the great victory gained at Worcester, by the army of the Commonwealth of England, under the command of Oliver Cromwell, over the Scottish army, commanded by King Charles the Second) the whole Island of Great-Britain was restored to Peace.

It appears from the last paragraph of this History, in page 228 of this Edition, that Mr. May had intended to publish a Continuation of it, in which, ashe informs us, he proposed to give a large account of the cessation of arms made by the King with the Irish rebels, (soon after the relief of the city of Gloucester, by the Earl of Essex, in the summer of the year 1643,) and of the great victories which small numbers of the English Forces had obtained over great multitudes of those Irish rebels, before the time of that cessation; as also of the Covenant, which she English Parliament, and that part of the Nation that adhered to it, entered into, about this time, with their Brethren of Scotland, for the maintenance of the Religion and Liberties of the two Kingdoms. But this design Mr. May did not carry into execution, though

the reason of his declining to do so is not apparent. This omission is much to be regretted; as a clear and faithful account of these two Subjects;the State of Ireland, after the Massacre of the Protestants, on the 23d of October, 1641, to the cessation of arms made with them, by the King's command, in the autumn of 1643; and the Treaty of the Covenant between the Parliaments of England and Scotland entered-into about the same time;given us by the impartial pen of this intelligent writer, would have afforded great satisfaction to his readers. But our loss on this occasion may be, in some degree, repaired, with respect to the State of Ireland during those two years, or, at least, during the first part of them, by having recourse to the excellent History of the Irish Rebellion and Massacre, in October, 1643, written by Sir John Temple, who was Master of the Rolls in Ireland, and a Member of the King's Privy Council in Dublin at the very time of its breaking-out, and took a zealous and active part in the measures that were immediately employed for the preservation of that important city. This account of that horrid Event is universally allowed to be perfectly true and authentick, and is, indeed, made-up, in a great degree, of the depositions of several persons who were eye-witnesses of the various assaults, and murders, and robberies of the poor Protestants, by their perfidious Popish neighbours, with whom they had been living in the most friendly and unsuspecting familiarity for almost forty years. It's authenticity is therefore above all suspicion; and it was published before Mr. May wrote this History of the Parliament: for it is mentioned by him in the 81st page of this Volume, with the greatest approbation, where he calls it the faithful relation of that Rebellion by a Noble Gentleman, whose place in that Kingdom gave him the means to know it; and he declares that he had partly collected from it, what he himself had said in this History, concerning that shocking event. therefore seems probable, that what is related on this subject by Sir John Temple, in his History of this Rebellion, will contain much of the same matter which would have been related by Mr. May concerning it, if he had executed his first design of continuing his History to a later Period: and, therefore, I think that the readers of this work of Mr. May, would do well to peruse Sir John Temple's History of the Irish Rebellion after it, as a proper Sequel,

Digitized by Google

Sequel, or Supplement, to it. The only Edition of Sir John Temple's Work that I have seen, was printed in the year 1746; and the copies of it, I am informed, are grown somewhat scarce. It would therefore be, probably, an acceptable service to the Lovers of Truth in the History of their Country, to publish another Edition of it. For the horrid event, of which it gives a faithful Relation, ought never to be forgot.

FRANCIS MASERES.

Inner Temple, Nov. 28, 1811.

THE

THE AUTHOR'S PREFACE.

THE use of History, and the just Rules for composure of it, have been so well and fully described heretofore by judicious Writers, that it were lost labour, and a needlesse extension of the present work, to insist, by way of Introduction, upon either of them. I could rather wish my abilities were such, as that the Reader, (to whose judgement it is left,) might finde those Rules to have been observed in the Narration itself, instead of being set-forth to him in the Preface by a vaine Anticipation.

I will only professe to follow that one Rule, Truth, to which all the rest (like the rest of Moral Vertues to that of Justice) may be reduced; against which there are many waies, besides plaine falsehood, wherein a Writer may offend. Some Historians, who seeme to abhorre direct falshood, have, notwithstanding, dressed Truth in such improper Vestments, as to seem to have brought her forth to act the same part that falshood would; and to have taught her, by Rhetorical disguises, partial concealments, and invective expressions, instead of informing, to seduce a Reader, and carry the judgement of Posterity after that Byas which themselves have made. It was the opinion of a learned Bishop of England, not long ago deceased, that the Annals of Cardinal Baronius did more wound the Protestant Cause, than the Controversies of Bellarmine: And it may well be true. For against the unexpected stroke of partial History the ward is not so ready, as against that Polemike writing, in which Hostility is professed with open face.

This fault I have endeavoured to avoid: But it is my misfortune to undertake a subject that is of such a nature that really to avoid partiality in treating it is not very easie; but to escape the suspicion,

Digitized by Google

or censure, of falling into it, is almost impossible for the cleerest integrity that ever wrote. Other writers, as well as myself, will, I suppose, undertake to handle this subject: and, because none of them, perchance, may give perfect satisfaction, I shall, in the behalfe of us all, intreat the Reader, that, in his censure of our several productions, he would deale with the Writings of men as with mankinde itselfe, call that the best, which is the least bad.

The Subject of this work is a Civil War;—a War indeed as much more than Civil, and as full of miracle, both in the causes and effects of it, as was ever observed in any Age;—a Warre as cruel as unnatural;—that has produced as much rage of Swords,—as much bitternesse of Pens, both publike and private,—as was ever knowne; and has divided the understandings of men, as well as their affections, in so high a degree, that scarce could any vertue gaine due applause, any reason give satisfaction, or any Relation obtaine credit, unlesse amongst men of the same side. It were, therefore, a presumptuous madnesse, to think that this poore and weake Discourse, which can deserve no applause from either side, should obtaine from both so much as pardon; or that those Persons should agree in the judgement they will form of it who could never agree in any thing else.

I cannot, therefore, be so stupid, as not to be fully sensible of the difficulty of the taske imposed on me, or the great envy which attends it; which other men who have written Histories, upon farre lesse occasion, have discoursed of at large in their Prefaces. And Tacitus himselfe, complaining of those ill times which were the unhappy subject of his Annals, (though he wrote not in the time of the same Princes under whom those things were acted;) yet, (because the Families of many men who had then been ignominious, were yet in being,) could not but discourse how much happier those Writers had been, who had taken more ancient and prosperous times for their Argument; such (as he there expresses it,) as those times in which the great and glorious actions of the old Romans, their honourable Atchievements, and exemplary Vertues, are recorded.

And I could have wished more than my life (being myself inconsiderable) that, for the sake of the Publick, my Theme could rather have been the prosperity of these Nations, the Honour and happinesse of this King, and such a blessed Condition of both, as might have reached all the ends for which Government was first ordained

ordained in the world, than the description of Shipwrecks, Ruines, and Desolations. Yet these things, truly recorded and observed, may be of good Use, and may benefit Posterity in divers kinds. For, though the present Actions, or rather sufferings, of these (once happy) Nations, are of so high a marke and consideration, as might, perchance, throw themselves into the knowledge of Posterity by Tradition, and the weight of their own Fame; Yet it may much conduce to the benefit that may arise from that knowledge, to have the true causes, original, and growth, of them represented by an honest Pen.

For the truth of this plaine and naked Discourse, which is here presented to the publike view, containing a briefe Narration of those Distractions which have fallen amongst us during the sitting of this present Parliament *; as also some passages, and visible Actions of the former Government (whether probably conducing to these present calamities, or not; of which let the Reader judge:) I appeale only to the memory of any Englishman, whose yeares have been enow to make him know the Actions that were done; and whose conversation has been enough publike, to let him heare, the Common Voice and discourses of People upon those Actions; to his memory, I say, do I appeale, whether such Actions were not done, and such Judgements made upon them, as are here related. In which, perchance, some Readers may be put in minde of their own thoughts heretofore, which thoughts have since, like Nebuchadnezzar's dreame, departed from them. An English Gentleman, who went to travel when this Parliament was called, and returned when these differences were growne among us, hearing what Discourses were daily made, affirined, That the Parliament of England (in his opinion) was more mis-understood in England than at Rome: And that there was a greater need to remind our own Countrymen, than to informe strangers, of what was past; So much (said he) have they seemed to forget both the things themselves, and their own former Notions concerning them +.

But

^{*} That is, from November 3rd, A. D. 1640, to September 27th, 1643, at which this History closes.

[†] The meaning of this passage seems to be, "That the English Noblemen and Gentlemen who now sided with the King against the Parliament, seemed to have forgot the sentiments of disgust c

But, where Warre continues, people are inforced to make their residence in several Quarters; and therefore several, according to the places where they converse, must their information be concerning the condition and state of things. From whence arises not onely a variety, but a great discrepancy for the most part, in the Writings of those who record the passages of such times. And therefore it has seldome happened, but that, in such times of calamity and Warre, Historians have much dissented from each Franciscus Haraus compiled Annals of the bloody and herce Warres in the Netherlands, when some of those Provinces fell from the obedience of Philip the Second, King of Spain: businesse he relates in such a way, as must, in probability, lead a Reader to believe that the King and his Officers were altogether innocent, and the people of those Countries the only causers of their own Calamity. Meteranus also wrote the History of those very times; which whose reads, must needs make a contrary censure concerning the occasion of that Warre. The like discrepancy bath been found in Historians of all ages and Nations, and therefore ought not to be much wondered-at, if it should now happen.

But that which, of all other subjects, is most likely to be differently related (because informations will not agree in such a distance) is concerning the actions of Warre and Souldiery; and in the time of this Warre, it is a thing of extreme difficulty (I might say, of impossibility) for those of one Party to be truly informed of all the Counsels, or the very Performances and Actions, of Commanders and Souldiers on the other side. How much valour the English Nation on both sides have been guilty of in this unnatural Warre, the World must needs know in the general fame. But for particulars, how much Worth, Virtue, and Courage, some particular Lords, Gentlemen, and others, have shewed, unlesse both sides

and indignation against the tyrannical government of the King, both in Civil and Ecclesiastical matters, which had been entertained by them, and continually expressed in their tree and private conversations, before the meeting of the Parliament, and were now thwarting the Parliament in it's wise and vigorous endeavours, to restrain the King's power in such a manner as to prevent his sevoking all his late concessions, and returning to the exercise of his former arbitrary authority, to which he was justly thought to be still secretly attached.

Digitized by Google

do write, will never perfectly be known. My residence hath been, during these Wars, in the quarters, and under the protection, of the Parliament; and whatsoever is briefly related of the Souldiery, being toward the end of this Book, is according to that light which I discerned there. For whatsoever I have missed concerning the other Party, I can make no other Apology than such as Meteranus (whom I named before) doth in the Preface to his History. De Belgicis tumultibus. Whose words are thus: Quòd plura de Reformatorum, & patriæ defensorum, qu'am de Partis adversæ rebus gestis exposuerim; mirum haudquaquam est: quoniam plus Commercii & familiaritatis mihi cum ipsis, & major indagandi opportunitas, fuit. Si Pars adversa idem tali probitate præstiterit & ediderit; Posteritas gesta omnia legere, & liquidò cognoscere, magno cum fructu poterit. In like manner may I averre, that, if in this discourse more particulars are set down, concerning the actions of those men who defended the Parliament, than of those that warred against it; it was, because my conversation gave me more light on that side; to whom, as I have endeavoured to give no more than what is due, so I have cast no blemishes on the other; nor bestowed any more characters than what the truth of Story must require. If those that write on the other side will use the same candour, there is no feare but that posterity may receive a full information concerning the unhappy distractions of these Kingdoms.

This I must adde, that to inform the world of the right nature, causes, and growth of these Distractions, it will require that the Discourse begin from precedent times; which I shall endeavour to deduce down to the present time with as much brevity as the necessity of unfolding truth can possibly admit.

Neither is it needful to begin the Story from times of any great distance; or to mention the Government of our most ancient Princes; but from that Prince* (fresh in the memory of some yet

hviug)

Queen Elizabeth, who died in the year 1603, only 37 years before the meeting of the Parliament which is the subject of this History, which was in November, 1640.

living) who first established the Reformed Religion in this Kingdome, and, according to that, settled a new Interest in the State; which it was most behoofeful and requisite for her Successors to follow, and much conducing, besides the glory of Almighty God, to their own Honour, Power, and Greatnesse.

THE

THE CONTENTS.

BOOK I.

CHAP. I.

WHEREIN is a short mention of Queene Elizabeth, King James, and the beginning of King Charles his Reign; His two first Parliaments. Of the Wars with Spaine and France. The death of the Duke of Buckingham. And the third Parliament of King Charles.

CHAP. II.

A briefe Relation of some grievances of the Kingdome. The various opinions of men concerning the present Government. The condition of the Court and Clergy of England. Some observations of a stranger, concerning the Religion of the English people.

10

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

Page

The condition of the Scottish State and Clergy, when the new Booke of Liturgy was sent unto them; how it was received; with some effects which followed. The King's Proclamation sent by the Earle of Traquare; against which the Lords make a Protestation.

18

CHAP. IV.

The Scots enter into a Covenant. The Marquesse Hamilton is sent thither from the King. A National Synod is granted to them, but dissolved within few daies by the Marquesse, as Commissioner from the King. The King declares against the Covenanters, and raises an Army to subdue them.

25

CHAP. V.

The aversenesse of the English People from this Warre with Scotland. The King advanceth to Yorke with his Army. The preparation of the Scottish Covenanters. A Pacification is made, and both Armies disbanded. Another preparation for Warre with Scotland. A Parliament called to begin in England on the 13th of April. The Parliament of Scotland is broken-off by command of the King to the Earle of Traquare.

31

CHAP. VI.

The Parliament beginneth in England, but is soone dissolved.

The Clergy continue their Convocation. The Scots enter into

England.

THE CONTENTS	T	H	E	C	0	N	Т	E	N	T	S
--------------	---	---	---	---	---	---	---	---	---	---	---

XXIII

Page

England. Some passages of the Warre. A Parliament is called to begin on the third of November. A truce betweene the Armies for two Moneths.

cO

CHAP. VII.

The beginning of the English Parliament. Grievances examined.

Sufferers relieved. Delinquents questioned. The Archbishop of Canterbury committed to the Tower. The flight of Secretary WINDEBANKE, and of the Lord-Keeper FINCH.

47

CHAP. VIII.

The Tryal and death of the Earle of Strafford. Conspiracies detected during the agitation of it. An Act for continuance of this present Parliament. With a mention of that Grant of the Triennial Parliament in February before.

50

CHAP. IX.

Allowance of money from the English Parliament to the Scots. The vast Charge of disbanding the two Armies. The great Taxations for that purpose, and the manner of Poll-money. The People take a Protestation. An Act for putting-down the High-Commission Court, and the Starre-Chamber; with other occurrences of that time. The Queene-Mother departeth from England. The King goeth into Scotland.

69

CHAP.

BOOK II.

CHAP. I.

Page

A Standing Committee during the Recesse of both Houses of Parliament. The Rebellion of the Irish, and Massacre of the Protestants there. Some endeavours of the English Parliament for relief of that Kingdom.

79

· CHAP. II.

The King returneth out of Scotland, and is pompously entertained by the City of London. The Remonstrance is published by the Parliament. The King entreth into the House of Commons. The Protestation of the twelve Bishops; and how it was censured by the Lords and Commons. Divers unhappy obstructions of the relief of Ireland.

88

CHAP. III.

The Queen passeth into Holland, with her daughter the Princesse Mary. Difference between the King and Parliament concerning the Militia. The King goeth toward York, and is followed with a Petition from the Lords and Commons to Theobalds, and another Declaration to Newmarket. The King is denyed entrance into Hull by Sir John Hotham.

102

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

Pages

Many Members of both Houses leave the Parliament, and repair to the King. Nine of the Lords who first went away, are impeached by the Commons, and censured by the Peers. The Great Seal is carried-away from London to York. Some votes of Parliament concerning the King's proceedings. A Petition, with nineteen Propositions, sent from the Parliament to the King.

114

CHAP. V.

An Order for the bringing-in of Plate and Money into Guildhall. The King's Declaration to the Lords about him; Their Projession and Protestation to him. The King layeth Siege to
Hull; but raiseth it again. The Earl of Warwick taketh possession of the Navy, as Lord-Admiral. The Earl of Essex is
voted in Parliament to be Lord-General of all their Forces.

130

CHAP. VI.

A brief Relation of the condition of divers Counties in England, when the Parliament's Ordinance for the Militia, and the King's Commission of Array, were put in execution. With a mention of some Lords and others who were actors on either side. The Lord Mayor of London committed to the Tower, and sentenced by the Parliament. A mention of some Declarations, Messages, and Answers, that passed between the King and the two Houses of Parliament.

140

-d

BOOK



BOOK III.

CHAP. I.

Pages

Prince Rupert and Prince Maurice arrive in England. The Earl of Essex taking leave of the Parliament, goeth to his Command. The King increaseth in strength at Shrewsbury. A skirmish at Worcester. The great Battell of Keynton is fought.

159

CHAP. II.

The Parliament send to the King, concerning an Accommodation.

A fight at Brainford. Another Treaty with the King begun, and broken-off. Reading besieged by the Lord General Essex, and surrendered to him. A conspiracy to betray Bristol. A treacherous Plot against the Parliament and City of London, discovered and prevented.

176

CHAP. III.

Matters of State transacted in Parliament, touching the Assembly of Divines. The making of a new Great Scale. Impeaching the Queene of High Treason, and other things. The Lord-General Essex, after some Marches, returneth to quarter his wasted and sick Army about Kingston. The King's Forces are Masters of the West. The Earl of Newcastle's greatnesse in the North. Some mention of the Earle of Cumberland, and the Lord Fairfax.

187

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

Pages

Some Actions of Sir Thomas Fairfax in the North. The Queen lands in England. The revolt of Sir Hugh Cholmley, and the two Hothams. The state of this Warre in the Westerne parts. The condition of the Associated Counties. A short relation of Sir William Waller's Actions; of Colonel Cromwell, Sir William Brereton, and Sir John Gell.

197

CHAP. V.

The death of the Lord Brooke, and of the Earle of Northampton. A short mention of some Actions in divers Counties. The low condition of the Parliament at that time. The Siege of Gloucester.

210

CHAP. VI.

The Expedition of the Lord-General Essex for reliefe of Gloucester. The great Battel of Newbury described.

20

APPENDIX:

Containing all the Papers issued by the King and the Parliament, from the time of the King's return from Scotland to London in November, 1641, to the middle of March, in the year 1641-2, extracted from Mr. Husbands's Collection, Published in the year 1642-3.

229

The Titles of the several Papers contained in this Appendix, with the proper references to the Pages in which they are to be found, are as follows.

d' 2

A TABLE

A-TABLE

Expressing the Titles of the several Papers contained in the Appendix to this History of the Parliament of November 3, 1640, which are re-printed from the first 118 pages of the much larger Collection of Papers of the same kind, which was published by MR. HUSBANDS in the year 1642-3, and contains 954 pages.

DECEMBER, 1641.

${f H}$ IS Majestie's Speech to both House	es of Parliament, af	ter His return fro	m Scotland. I	Dec. 2. 231			
His Majestie's Proclamation for obedic	ence to the Laws,	concerning Religi	on. Dec. 10	. 232			
His Majestie's Proclamation for the attendance of the Members in both Houses. Dec. 12. His Majestie's Speech to both Houses, concerning a Bill for pressing of Souldiers. Dec. 14.							
teenth of December.	•	•	•	234			
A Petition and Remonstrance of the S	tate of the Kingdo	m. Dec. 15.	-	235, 238			
His Majestie's Answer to the Petitition	n that accompanie	d the Remonstrat	ice	25 6			
His Majestie's Declaration to all His loving Subjects, in answer to the Remonstrance.							
His Majestie's Message to the Commo	on-Council, deliver	red by the Lord	Newburgh, re	espect-			
ing Tumultuous and Riotous Assem	blies. Dec. 31.	-		263			
His Majestie's Message to the House	of Peers concernin	g Ireland, Dec.	28.	- 265			
•				•			
	JANUARY, 1641	-4					
His Majestie's Proclamation concertion	ng the Rebels in Ir	eland. Jan. 1.	•	266			
Articles of High Treason against the	•		ers of the Ho	ouse of			
Commens. Jan. 3, 1641-42.	-		■.	267			
An Order of the Commons, against	breaking open any	Doors or Trunks	of any Mem	ber of			
that House	•	•	-	267			
His Majestie's Speech in the House of	Commons concern	ing the five Men	ibers. Jan. 4	268			
An Order and Declaration of the Ho	use of Commons,	concerning the l	oreach of the	ir Pri-			
viledges. Jan. 5, 1641-42.	-	•.	•	268			
. •	•			Another			

Pages

THE CONTENTS.	xxix
Another Declaration of the House of Commons concerning the breach of their priviledges, an	Pages
the Vindication of divers of their Members. Jan. 17, 1641-42.	_
The Petition and Protestation of the Bishops to the King's Majesty.	269
A Proposition by the House of Commons, unto His Majesty for a Guard.	273
His Majestie's Answer to the House of Commons' Proposition for a Guard.	278
The Petition of the Common-Council of London, to His Majestie.	276
His Majestie's Answer to the City Petition.	276
	278
His Majestie's Proclamation for a General Fast throughout the Kingdom. Jan. 8, 1641-42. His Majestie's Message to both Houses, concerning the Lord Kimbolton, and the five	
Members. Jan. 12, 1641-42.	280
The Petition of the County of Buckingham to His Majesty.	280
His Majestie's Answer to the Buckinghamshire Petition. Jan. 13, 1641-42.	281
An Order of both Houses concerning the Lord Digby and others. Jan. 13, 1641-42.	26 1
His Majestie's Profession and Addition to His last Message, concerning the Lord Kimbolton,	1
and the five Members. Jan. 14, 1641-42.	282
Questions propounded to Master Atturney, by the House of Commons, concerning the five	
Members, with his Answer to each of them.	262
His Majestie's Letter to the Lord Keeper, in Defence of the Atturney-Generall.	284
His Majestie's Message to both Houses of Parliament. Jan. 20, 1641-42.	284
An Order of the Lords, to prevent the delivering of Petitions unto them. Jan. 20, 1641-42.	28 5
His Majestie's Letter to both Houses, concerning the Lord Kimbolton, and the five Mem-	
bers. Jan. 21, 1641-42.	285
The Scotch Commissioners' Propositions for sending 2500 men into Ireland. Jan. 24, 1641-42.	286
The Votes of the Commons, and Order of the Lords, concerning the Propositions of the	
Scots	287
His Majestie's Answer to the Scotch Propositions. Jan. 26, 1641-42.	287
His Majestie's further answer to the three Articles of the said Propositions. Jan. 27, 1641-42. The Petition of the House of Commons to His Majesty, concerning the Militia. Jan. 26,	287
1641-42. His Majestie's Answer to the said Petition of the House of Commons. Jan. 28, 1641-42.	288
· · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·	289
An Order by both Houses for prevention of Popish Commanders from going into Ire-	200
land. Jan. 29, 1641-42.	290
•	
FEBRUARY, 1641-42.	
Two Petitions of the Lords and Commons to His Majesty, the one concerning the Militia,	
the other concerning the five Members 291,	202
His Majestie's Answer to the two Petitions of both Houses. Feb. 2, 1641-42.	29 3
His Majestie's consent for the Princesse Marie's going to Holland.	294
The Queen's Majestie's Answer to a Message of both Houses.	294
the Rucen a trigleance trought to a microsoffe of point tronses.	His
	AAIO

$g_{ij}(x^{f 4}) = g_{ij}(x^{f 4})$. The second constant $x^{f 4}$	Pages
His Majestie's Message to the House of Commons, concerning Master Pym's Speech. Feb	•.
7, 1641-42.	294
An Answer of the House of Commons, to His Majestie's Message. Feb. 10, 1641-42.	295
His Majestie's Reply to the said Answer of the House of Commons.	29 6
His Majestie's Message to the House of Peers, for accepting of Sir John Coniers, in Sir	r
John Birou's room. Feb. 11, 1641-42.	298
A List of the names of those men which were thought fit to be entrusted with the Militia of the	2
Kingdom. Feb. 12, 1641-42.	298
His Majestie's Message to both Houses of Parliament. Feb. 14, 1641-42.	300
A Petition of the Lords and Commons to His Majesty, concerning the Members accused.	301
An Ordinance, concerning Serjeant-Major Skippon.	-302
A Message from a Committee to the Spanish Ambassador, concerning some Ships lying a	t
Dunkirk.	802
The Spanish Ambassador's Answer to the same.	303
His Majestie's Message to both Houses, concerning the Militia.	304
The Petition of the Lords and Commons to His Majestie, in answer to his Majestie'	s
Message,	304
A Message from both Houses to the King and Queen's Majesties', concerning some Letters of the	e
Lord Digbye's.	305
A Message from both Houses to His Majesty, concerning the Prince, his Son. Feb. 24, 1641-42	306
His Majestie's Answer to the said Message of both Houses.	806
Votes of the Lords and Commons, upon the Propositions for Ireland.	307
His Majestie's Answer, and Assent, unto the Propositions for Ireland. Feb. 24, 1641-42.	309
Directions from the Lords and Commons, concerning the Propositions for Ireland.	310
An Ordinance of both Houses, for settling the Militia of the Kingdom.	311
Hie Majestie's Answer to both Houses of Parliament, concerning the Militia. Feb. 28, 1641-42	. 312
MARCH, 1641-42.	
A THE ALL OF THE STATE OF THE S	
A Petition of the Lords and Commons to His Majesty, concerning the Militia of the King	,
dom. March 1, 1641-42.	314
His Majestic's Answer to the said Petition.	316
Votes of both Houses of Parliament, for settling the Militia.	316
An Order of both Houses of Parliament, for the speedy Rigging of the Navy. March 2	-
1641-42.	317
A Declaration of the Lords and Commons, presented to his Majesty at Newmarket. March	
9, 1611-42.	318
Additional Reasons to the former Declaration of both Houses.	323
His Majestie's Speech at the delivery of the Declaration, from the Lords and Commons, pre-	
sented to his Majesty at Newmarket, on the 9th of March, 1641-42.	324
 	Tome

T	H	E	C	0	N	T	F.	N	Ŧ	2

X	X	X	1

					Pages
Some passages, that happen	ed between the	King's Majesty,	and the Com	nittee of both	
Houses, on the ninth of Ma	rch, when the D	eclaration was del	ivered.	• •	324
His Majestie's Declaration in	Answer to the sa	id Declaration of	both Houses,	•	325
A Letter from both Houses of	f Parliament, to	all High Sheriffs	concerning th	e Propositions	ļ
for Ireland.	•	•		•	330
Votes of both Houses for secu	ring the Kingdo	ın. March 15, 1	641-42.	. •	331
His Majestie's Message from	Huntingdon to b	oth Houses, upon	His removal to	York. March	
15, 1641-42,	•		-	,	332
Votes of both Houses upon H	is Majestie's Me	sage from Huntir	gdon.	•	333
A new declaration of the Lo	rds and Commo	ons, to His Maje	sty, upon His	removal from	
Huntingdon to York, conce	rning Warrants	ranted for Papist	s going into Ire	land. March	
15, 1641-42.	•	•	•		384
His Majestie's Answer to a Pa	per, intituled, a	new Declaration	of the Lords as	ad Commons.	387

THE

HISTORY

OF THE

PARLIAMENT OF ENGLAND.

CHAP. I.

Wherein is a short mention of Queene Elizabeth, King James, and the beginning of King Charles his Reigne; his two first Parliaments. Of the Warre with Spaine and France The death of the Duke of Buckingham. And the third Parliament of King Charles.

OUEENE ELIZABETH, of glorious Memory, together with that great Stock of Queen Elizabeth.

of Wealth and Honour, which her prudent and just Government had brought
to the English Nation, had enriched them besides with a greater Treasure (which
we may justly account the cause of all the rest) Religion reformed from Popish
Superstition.

That

That Reformation engaged the Queene in a new Interest of State, to side with the Protestants against those Potent Monarchs of the other Religion, which seemed at the beginning as much danger and disadvantage to her, as it proved in conclusion security and Honour; so impossible it is for any disadvantage to prevaile

over them that helpe the Lord against the Mighty.

That Storme from France, which so much threatened the weake beginnings of her Reigne, was suddenly blowne-over by the death of Henry the second, and, some few Moneths after, of his Sonne Francis, who had married the Queene of Scotland: the danger which remained greatest was from Spaine, where Philip the Second then reigned, a Prince not greater in Dominion, Treasure, and Armies, than deeply engaged against the Protestant Religion, by the instigation and assistance of the Jesuites, an Order, which in the Age before had beene highly countenanced by Pope Paul the third, in opposition to the Gospell-Doctrine, that then began to spread apace in Germany and other parts.

The whole Order of Jesuites (as endeavouring to set-up one Temporall Kingdome of Christendome, suitable to the Papall Hierarchy) applyed their service altogether to the Monarchy of Spaine, as being then far the greatest in Europe (and fittest for their purpose) by the late uniting of so many Kingdomes and Dutchies under the person of Charles the Emperour, who by a fortunate birthright inherited, together with Castile, and Arragon, and all the great acquisitions of his Grandfather Ferdinand in Italy and the West-Indies, the rich and useful patrimony of his Father Phillip, Burgundy, and the Netherlands. All these he had left entirely to his Sonne Phillip, who to so large a Territory, had made that strong addition of the Kingdome of Portugall, and might seeme an Enemy too mighty for England and all the Protestants of Europe to oppose.

But Queene ELIZABETH had woven the interest of her own State so inseparably into the cause of Religion itselfe, that it was hard to overthrow one without the ruine of the other. And God, who had given her so much grace and courage as to rely wholly upon him, did, with that Almighty hand, not onely hold

her up from sinking, but lift her above the heads of all her enemies.

By what degrees and means she atchieved the great Actions of her reigne, and brought so much prosperity to her Nation, it is not the scope of this discourse to relate at large (for her History is not the worke in hand) but only in brief to declare that, before her death, she was the happy instrument of God to promote the Protestant Religion in all parts. She curbed the Spanish greatnesse by supporting France from ruine, to give some balance to the other; as she preserved Scotland from being swallowed-up by the French before. She protected the Hollanders against him, vanquished his Armies both by Land and Sea, with many other such things as might seeme too much to be the atchievments of one Reigne. And last of all, she reduced Ireland wholly to obedience, notwithstanding all the subtill machinations of Spain, and open assistance given in Armes to her Irish Rebels. All which she accomplished by the justice and prudence of her government, by making the right use of her Subjects hearts, hands, and Purses, in a Parliamentary

Parliamentary way; as also securing her own Kingdome by strengthening the hands of Protestants abroad; insomuch as she stood at last above the reach of any enemy by open warre; and protected by God, though often attempted by domestick Treasons and Assassinations, till in the end she died in a good old age, leaving to her Successor, King James, the Kingdome of England in an happier condition than ever it was; the Kingdome of Ireland wholly subdued and reduced, to reap for himselfe the harvest of all her labour and expence; and nothing to do for it, but to propagate the true Faith in that Kingdome, which she, prevented by death, could not performe; and was, in probability, an easie taske for King James at that time; much conducing, besides the honour of God, to his owne Temporall strength and greatnesse, if he had onely gone fairly on in that way which Queene Elizabeth had made plaine for him.

The Prosperity of England seemed then at the height, or Axun; and it pleases. God that States many times shall decline from their happinesse without any apparent

signes to us, or reasons that we can give, as a Heathen complaines:

O! faciles dare summa Deos, eadémque tueri Difficiles? Lucan. How easie are the Gods to raise States high, But not to keepe them so?

These things have made some high-reaching Writers impute the raising and declination of Kingdomes and Common-wealths to certaine aspects of heavenly Constellations, to Conjunctions and oppositions of Planets, and various Eclipses of Celestiall Luminaries; others, to an hidden strength, and secret efficacy of Numbers themselves; and most men to the perpetuall Rotation of fortune: but the judgements of God in those things are past our finding-out; and they are too wise, who are not content sometimes to wonder.

For King James, the Successour to Queene Elizabeth, was a wise and Of King James. learned Prince, of disposition mercifull and gracious, excellently grounded in that Religion which he professed, as the world may finde by his extant writings; a Prince of whom England conceived wonderfull hope, and received with great joy and Triumph. But he did not beginne where his Predecessor left, proceeding rather in a contrary way: what the reasons of it were, I will not at all presume to deliver my opinion, though some have beene bold to write and publish of late yeeres, that it was feare for his own Person, that made him to temporize with Rome, considering the boldnesse of Jesuiticall Assassines: others, more candidly, conceived it might be his great desire of peace and union with other Princes, though he might erre in the meanes of attaining that end; for he was by nature a great seeker of Peace, and abhorrer of bloodshed, according to that Motto which he ever used, Beati Pacifici. I cannot search into mens thoughts, but onely relate the Actions which appeared.

King James, at the beginning of his Reigne, made a Peace with Spains, which

was brought very low by Queene ELIZABETH, and had beene neerer to ruine in all probability, had she lived a few yeares longer; the Estates of the united Provinces of the Netherlands, those usefull Confederates to England, began to be despised by the English Court, under a vaine shadow, in stead of a reason, "that they were an ill example for a Monarch to cherish." Then began secret Treaties to passe betwixt Rome and the Court of England; care to be taken about reconciliation of Religions; the rigour of Penall Lawes against the Papists (notwithstanding that odious plot of the Gunpowder-Treason) was abated; the pompe of Prelacy, and multitude of Geremonies, encreased daily in the Church of England, and according to that were all Civil Affaires managed both at home and abroad.

Neither was it easie for the King to turne himselfe out of that way, when he was once entred into it; so that at last the Papists began by degrees to be admitted neerer to him in service and conversation. Exceeding desirous he then was to match the Prince, his Sonne, to the Infanta of Spaine; about which many and long Treaties passed, wherein not onely the Spaniard, but the Pope, made many present advantages of the King's earnest desires, and many waies deluded him, as it appeared plainely by his owne Letters to his Ambassadours there, since found and published.

Thus was the King by degrees brought, not onely to forsake, but to oppose, his owne interest both in civill and religious affaires, which was most unhappily seene in that cause (as the Duke of ROHAN observed,) wherein, besides the interest of all Protestants, and the honour of his Nation, the estate and livelihood of his owne children were at the height concerned, the Palatinate-businesse.

From hence flowed a farther mischiefe; for the King (being loath, perchance, that the whole people should take notice of those waies in which he trod,) grew extremely

disaffected to Parliaments, calling them for nothing but to supply his expences, dissolving them when they began to meddle with State-Affaires, and divers times imprisoning the Members for Speeches made in Parliament, against the fundamen-

tall priviledges of that high Court.

Parliaments being thus despised and abused, projects against the Lawes were found-out to supply the King's expences, which were not small; and the King (whether to avoid the envy of those things, or the trouble of them) did in a manner put-off all businesse of Government from himselfe into the hands of a young Favourite, the Duke of Buckingham, whom he had raised, from a Knight's fourth Sonne, to that great heighth, and entrusted with the chiefe Offices of the Kingdome; besides the great power, which he had by that extraordinary favour of conferring all places and preferments both in Church and State.

This Duke, not long before the death of King James, was growne into extraordinary favour and interenesse with the Prince, whom he afterward swayed no lesse than he had before his father; like an unhappy vapour exhaled from the earth to

so great an height, as to cloud not only the rising, but the setting Sunne.

King CHARLES, with great hopes and expectation of the people, and no lesse high expressions of love and duty from all in general, began his Reigne on the

Of the Duke of Buckingham.

Of King Charles.

27 of March, 1624. And indeed that love which the people bare to his Person, had been before testified, whilest he was yet Prince, at his returne from Spaine, though the journey itselfe had not been pleasing to the Kingdome; for, when the people saw him arrived in safety, there needed no publike Edict for thanksgiving, or joy; every society and private family (as if the hearts of all had beene in one) did voluntarily assemble themselves together, praising God, with singing of Psalmes, with joyfull feasting, and charity to the poore; insomuch that, I suppose, the like consent, without any interposing authority, hath not been often knowne.

The same affections followed him to his Throne; the same hopes and faire presages of his future Government, whilest they considered the temperance of his youth, how cleare he had lived from personall vice, being growne to the age of 23. how untainted of those licentious extravagances, which unto that age and fortune

are not only incident, but almost thought excusable.

But some men suspended their hopes, as doubting what to finde of a Prince so much and so long reserved; for he had never declared himselfe of any Faction, or scarse interposed in any State affaires, though some things had been managed in his father's Reigne, with much detriment to his owne present and future fortunes. Yet that by the people in generall was well censured, as an effect of his piety and obedience to the King his father, and happy presages were gathered from it, "That so good an Obeyer would prove a just Ruler."

They wondered also to see him suddenly linked in such an intire friendship with the Duke of BUCKINGHAM; for extraordinary Favourites do usually eclipse and much depresse the Heire apparent of a Crowne, or else they are conceived so to do; and, upon that reason, hated and ruined by the succeeding Prince; in which

kinde all ancient and moderne Stories are full of examples.

In the beginning of King Charles his Reigne, a Parliament was called, and His first Parliament adjourned to Oxford, (the plague raging extremely at London,) where the Duke of Buckingham was highly questioned, but by the King (not without the griefe and sad presage of many people, that private affections would too much prevaile in him against the publike) he was protected against the Parliament, which for that onely It is dissolved, purpose was dissolved, after two Subsidies had been given and before the Kingdome received reliefe in any one grievance; as is expressed in the first and general Remonstrance of this present Parliament, where many other unhappy passages of those times are briefly touched; as that the King immediately after the dissolution of that Parliament, contrived a Warre against Spaine, in which the designe was A war with Spain unhappily laid, and contrary to the advice which at that time had been given by wise men, who perswaded him to invade the West-Indies; a way, no doubt, farre more easie and hopeful for England to prevaile against Spaine than any other: instead of that, the King, with great expence of Treasure, raised an Army and

This Remonstrance was passed by the House of Commons on Wednesday the 15th of December, 1641. It is intitled, A Remonstrance of the State of the Kingdom, and is expressed in clear and temperate language, and has a great approximate of being true. See Husbands's Collection of all Remonstrances, Declarations, &c. of this Parliament, published in the year 1642.

Fleet to assault Cales, the Duke of Buckingmam bearing the Title both of Admirall and Generall, though he went not himselfe in person. But the matter was so ordered that the expedition proved altogether successelesse, and as dishonourable as expensive.

Of the siege of Rochelle.

They complained likewise of another designe (which indeed was much lamented by the people of *England* in generall) about that time put in practice,—a thing destructive to the highest interest of the Nation, the maintenance of the Protestant religion: a Fleet of English Ships were set-forth, and delivered-over to the French, by whose strength all the Sea-forces of Rochell were scattered and destroyed,—a losse to them irrecoverable, and the first step to their ruine.

Neither was this loane of Ships from E_{ii} gland (for such was the people's complaint and suspicion against those who at that time stood at the Helme) supposed to proceed so much from friendship to the State of France, as from designe against Religion; for immediately upon it, the King, by what advice the people understood not, made a breach with France, by taking their Ships, to a great value, without making any recompence to the English, whose Goods were thereupon imbarr'd, and confiscate in that Kingdome.

In revenge of this, a brave Army was raised in England, and commanded by the Duke of Buckingham in person, who landing at the Isle of Rhea, was at the first encounter victorious against the French; but, after few Moneths stay there, the matter was so unhappily carried, (the Generall being unexperienced in Warlike affaires,) that the French prevailed, and gave a great defeat, where many gallant Gentlemen lost their lives, and the Nation much of their ancient Honour.

The town of Ro-French king.

From thence proceeded another step to the ruine of Rochell; the sick and wounded chelle compelled by English were sent into that City, and relieved by the besieged Rochellers, out of ramine to surrender that little provision which they then had, upon faithful promise of supplies from England in the same kinde. The provisions of Rockell were little enough for their owne reliefe at that time, if we consider what ability the French King had to continue that siege; when to the proper wealth and greatnesse of his Crowne was added that reputation and strength which his late successe against all the other Protestant Garrisons in France had brought.

> The besieged Rochellers, not doubting at all of the due and necessary supply of Victuall from England, sent their Ships thither for that purpose; but those Ships, whose returne with bread was so earnestly expected, were stayed in England by an Imbargo; and so long stayed, till that unhappy Towne was enforced to yield by famine, the sharpest of all Enemies.

> But in the meane time, whilest these Ships with Victuall were detained, a great Army was raised in England for reliefe of Rochell; but too great was the delay of those preparations, till time was past, and that Army in the end disbanded by the sad death of the Duke of Buckingham their Generall, who was stabbed at Ports. mouth by a private Gentleman, John Felton.

The Death of the Duke of Buckingham.

This FELTON was a Souldier of a low stature, and no promising aspect; of disposition serious and melancholy, but religious in the whole course of his life and conversation;

conversation; which last I do not mention out of purpose to countenance his unlawful act, as supposing him to have had (as some did then talke) any inspiration or calling of God to it: His confessions to his friends, both publike and private, were, That he had often secret motions to that purpose, which he had resisted and prayed against, and had almost overcome, untill he was at last confirmed in it, by reading the late dissolved Parliament's Remonstrance against the Duke: That then his conscience told him it was just and laudable, to be the executioner of that man, whom the highest Court of Judicature, the Representative body of the Kingdome, had condemned as a Traytor. But, let Posterity censure it as they please; certain it is, that Felton did much repent him of the unlawfulnesse of the fact, out of no feare of death, or punishment here; for he wished his hand to be cut-off before the execution, which his Judges could not doome by the Lawes of England.

The King had not long before broken-off another Parliament, called in the A second Parliasecond years of his Reigne, in which the Petition of Right was granted, to the ment, in which the great rejoycing of the people. But it proved immediately to be no reliefe at all granted. to them: for, the Parliament presently dissolved, the King acted-over the same The King dissolves things, which formerly he had done; and that grant, instead of fortifying the it. Kingdome's Liberty, made it appear to be more defencelesse than before, [seeing] that Lawes themselves were no barre against the King's will. The Parliament, in hope of gracious Acts, had declared an intent to give his Majesty five Subsidies; the full proportion of which five Subsidies was, after the dissolution of that Parliament, exacted by Commission of Loane from the people, and those imprisoned which refused the payment of that Loane: Great sums of money were required and raised by privy Seales: A Commission for squeezing the subject by way of Excize: Souldiers were billited upon them: And a designe laid to inslave the Nation by a force of German Horse: with many other things of that nature.

Those affairs of State which concerned Confederates abroad, had been managed with as much disadvantage, and infelicity to them, as dishonour to the English

Nation, and prejudice to the Cause of Religion itselfe.

Peace was made with Spaine without consent of Parliament; by which all hope Peace with Spain. was utterly lost, of re-establishing the King's neerest kindred in their just Dominion; and the Protestant Religion much weakened in Germany. What Counsells had then influence upon the Court of England, might be the amazement of a wise man to consider; and the plaine truth must needs seeme a paradox to posterity; as that the Protestant Religion, both at home and abroad, should suffer much by the Government of two Kings; of whom the former in his own person wrote more learnedly in defence of it; and the latter in his owne person lived more conformably to the Rules of it; than any of their Contemporary Princes in Europe. But the Civil Affaires of State were too ill managed, to protect, or at least to propagate, true Religion; or else the neglect of Religion was the cause that Civill Affaires were blessed with no more honour and prosperity. The right waies of Queen Elizabeth, who advanced both, had been long ago forsaken,

and the deviation grew daily farther, and more fatall to the Kingdom. appeared in a direct contrariety to all particulars of her Reigne. Titles of Honour were made more honourable by her, in being conferred sparingly, and therefore probably upon great desert; which afterwards were become of lesse esteem, by being not onely too frequently conferred, but put to open sale, and made too often the purchase of Mechannicks, or the reward of vitious persons.

The people rejoiced at the death of the Duke of Buckingham.

At the Death of that Duke, the people were possessed of an unusuall joy, which they openly testified by such expressions as indeed were not thought fit nor decent by wise men, upon so tragicall and sad an accident, which in a christian consideration might move compassion, whatsoever the offences of the man were.

To such people that distick of Seneca might give answer:

Res est sacra miser; noli mea tangere fata: Sacrilegæ Bustis abstinuêre manus. Sacred is woe; touch not my death with scorne: Even sacrilegious hands have Tombs forborne.

And it may be that God was offended at the excesse of their joy, in that he quickly let them see, the benefit was not so great to them as they expected by it; but his judgements are too high for men to search. True it is, that the people in generall loving the King's Person, and very unwilling to harbour the least opinion of ill in him, looked-upon the Duke as the onely hinderance of the Kingdomes happinesse; supposing, that, though other Statesmen might afterwards arise, of as bad or worse intentions, than the Duke; yet none would have so great a power for execution of them; nor any other Genius be ever found, to have so great a mastery over the King's Genius. But it is certaine, that men did much therefore rejoyce at the death of this Duke, because they did before much feare what mischiefe might befall a Kingdome, where that man, who knew himselfe extremely hated by the people, had all the keyes of the Kingdome in his hand, as being Lord-Admirall and Warden of the Cinque-Ports; having the command of all the Souldiers, and the onely power to reward and raise them.

A third Parliament most eminent memand persecuted.

These joyes and hopes of men lasted not long: for in the same year (being the is dissolved, and it's fourth of King CHARLES) and after the death of the Duke of Buckingham, bers are imprisoned another Parliament was dissolved; and then the Priviledges of that high Court were more broken than ever before. Six Members of the House of Commons, who had been forward in vindicating the Priviledges of Parliament, were committed close Prisoners for many moneths together, without the liberty of using books, pen, inke, and paper, while they were detained in this condition; and not admitted to baile according to Law: They were also vexed with informations in inferiour Courts; where they were sentenced and fined for matters done in Parliament; and the payment of such Fines extorted from them. Some were enforced to put-in security of good behaviour, before they could be released: The rest

Digitized by Google

who

who refused to be bound, were detained divers yeares after in custody, of whom Sir John Elliot dies one Sir John Elliot, a Gentleman of able parts, that had been forwardest in of his imprisonment. expression of himselfe for the freedome of his Country, and in taxing the unjust actions of the Duke of BUCKINGHAM, while that Duke lived (though the truth be, that those Speeches of his were no other than what carried the publicke consent in them) dyed by the harsheness of his imprisonment, which would admit of no relaxation, though, for health's sake, he petitioned for it often, and his Physitian gave-in testimony to the same purpose. The freedome that Sir John Elliot used in Parliament, was by the people in general applauded, though much taxed by the Courtiers, and censur'd by some of a more politike reserve (considering the times) in that kind that TACITUS censures THRASEAS PŒTUS, as thinking such freedom a needlesse, and therefore a foolish, thing, where no cure could be hoped by it. Sibi periculum, nec aliis libertatem.

After the breaking off this Parliament (as the Historian speaketh of Roman The People lose the liberty, after the battel of Philippi, nunquam post boc pralium, &c.) the people hope of being goof England for many years never looked-back to their ancient liberty. A Declara-currence of Parliation was published by the King, wherein aspersions were laid upon some Mem-ment, bers; but indeed the Court of Parliament itselfe was declared-against. which the dejected people were forced to read with patience, and allow, against

the dictate of their own reason.

The people of England from that time were deprived of the hope of Parliaments; and all things so managed by publike Officers, as if never such a day of account were to come.

I shall, for method's sake, first of all, make a short enumeration of some of the chiefe grievances of the Subjects, which shall be truly and plainly related; as likewise some vices of the Nation in general; (that the Reader may the better judge of the causes of succeeding troubles,) during the space of seven or eight yeares after the dissolution of that Parliament; and then shall give some account concerning the several dispositions of the people of ENGLAND, and their different censures of the King's government during those years; touching, by the way, somewhat of the manners and customs of the Court of England; and then briefly of the condition of Ecclesiastical affaires, and the censures of men concerning

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

A briefe Relation of some grievances of the Kingdome. The various opinions of men concerning the present Government. The condition of the Court and Clergy of England. Some observations of a stranger, concerning the Religion of the English people.

IT cannot but be thought, by all wise and honest men, that the sinnes of England were at a great height, that the injustice of Governours, and vices of private men were very great; which have since called-down from Almighty God so sharpe a judgement; and drawn-on, by degrees, so calamitous and consuming a Warre. Those particular crimes an English Historian can take no pleasure to relate, but might rather desire to be silent in, and say with STATIUS:

Nocte tegi nostræ patiamur crimina gentis.

Let us be silent, and from after times

Conceale our own unhappy Nation's crimes.

But to be silent in that, were great injustice and impiety toward God;—to relate his judgements upon a Kingdome; and forget the sinnes of that Kingdom, which were the cause of them. The Heathen Historians do well instruct us in that point of piety; who never almost describe any Civil Warre, or publike affliction, without relating at the beginning, how vitious and corrupted their State was at that time grown; how faulty both the Rulers and People were, and how fit to be punished, either by themselves or others. Nor doe any of the Roman Poets undertake to write of that great and miserable Civil Warre, which destroyed the present State, and enslaved posterity; without first making a large enumeration of such causes; how wicked the manners of Rome were growne, how the chiefe Rulers were given to avarice and oppression, and the whole State drowned in luxury, lusts and riot,

as you may see upon that subject in two the most elegant of them. And shall we Christians, who adore the true God, and live under the Gospel-light, not be sensible, under so heavy a judgement, of our owne offences?

To begin with the faults of the higher powers, and their illegal oppression of the people, during these eight or nine yeers, in which parliaments were denyed to England, which I briefly touch, referring the Reader to a more full narration in the Remonstrance; multitudes of Monopolies were granted by the King, and laid Monopolies upon all things of most common and necessary use, such as Sope, Salt, Wine, Leather, Sea-cole, and many other of that kinde.

Regia privatis crescunt araria damnis. Claud. By losse of private men th' Exchequer growes.

Large sums of Money were exacted thorow the whole Kingdome for default of Exactions of Money Knighthood, under the shadow of an absolute Law. Tonnage and Poundage for default of Knighthood.

Were received without the ordinary course of Law; and, though they were taken, Tonnage and Poundunder pretence of guarding the Seas, yet that great Tax of Ship-money was set age.

on foot under the same colour; by both which there was charged upon the Ship-Money. people some years neere 700,000. li. though the Seas at that time were not well guarded.

These things were accompanied with an enlargement of Forrests, contrary to Many other illegal Magna Charta, the forcing of Coat and Conduct-Money, taking-away the Armes oppressions. of Trayned Bands in divers Counties, disarming the people by engrossing of Gunpowder, keeping it in the Tower of London, and setting so high a rate upon it, that the poorer sort were not able to buy it; nor could any have it without license; whereby several parts of the Kingdome were left destitute of their necessary defence.

No Courts of Judicature could give redresse to the people for these illegal sufferings, whilest Judges were displaced by the King, for not complying with his will, and so awed, that they durst not do their duties: For to hold a rod over them, the clause, Quandiu se bene gesserint, was left out of their Patents, and a new clause, Durante bene-placito, inserted.

New Illegal Oathes were enforced upon the Subjects, and new Judicatories erected without Law; and when Commissions were granted for examining the excesse of Fees, and great exactions discovered, the Delinquents were compounded-with, not onely for the time past, but immunity to offend for the time to come; which, instead of redressing, did confirme and encrease the grievance of the Subjects.

By this time, all thoughts of ever having a parliament againe, were quite banished; so many oppressions had been set on foot, so many illegal actions done, that the onely way to justifie the mischiefes already done, was to do that one c 2 greater,

greater, "To take away the meanes which was ordained to redresse them, the lawful Government of England by Parliaments."

Opinions of serious cerning the Govern-

Opinions of the Part of the Gentry.

Whilest the Kingdome was in this condition, the serious and just men of Engand just men con-land, who were no way interessed in the emolument of these oppressions, could not but entertaine sad thoughts and presages, of what mischiefe must needs follow so great an injustice; that things carried so farre on in a wrong way, must needs either inslave themselves and posterity for ever, or require a vindication so sharpe and smarting, as that the Nation would groane under it; and, though the times were jolly for the present, yet, having observed the judgements of God upon other secure Nations, they could not chuse but feare the sequel. Another sort of men, and especially Lords and Gentlemen, by whom the pressures of the Government were Lords and the richer not much felt, who enjoyed their owne plentiful fortunes, with little or insensible detriment, looking no farther then their present safety and prosperity; and the yet undisturbed peace of the Nation, whilest other Kingdomes were embroyled in calamities, and Germany sadly wasted by a sharpe Warre, did nothing but applaud the happinesse of England, and called those ungrateful and factious spirits, who complained of the breach of Lawes and Liberties; That the Kingdome abounded with wealth, plenty, and all kinde of elegancies, more than ever; That it was for the honour of a people, that the Monarch should live splendidly, and not be curbed at all in his Prerogative, which would bring him into the greater esteeme with other Princes, and more enable him to prevaile in Treaties; That what they suffered by Monopolies, was insensible, and not grievous, if compared with other States; That the Duke of TUSKANY sate heavier upon his people in that very kinde; That the French King had made himselfe an absolute Lord, and quite depressed the power of Parliaments, which had beene there as great as in any Kingdome, and yet that France flourished, and the Gentry lived well; That the Austrian Princes, especially in Spaine, layed heavy burdens upon their Subjects.

Thus did many of the English Gentry, by way of comparison, in ordinary dis-

course, pleade for their owne servitude.

Indisposition of the Courtiers towards · Parliaments.

The Courtiers would begin to dispute against Parliaments in their ordinary discourse, That they were cruel to those whom the King favoured, and too injurious to his Prerogative; That the late Parliament stood upon too high termes with the King; and that they hoped the King should never need any more Parliaments. Some of the greatest Statesmen and Privy-Counsellors, would ordinarily laugh at the ancient Language of England, when the word Liberty of the Subject was named. But these Gentlemen, who seemed so forward in taking-up their owne yoake, were but a small part of the Nation, (though a number considerable enough to make a Reformation hard) compared with those Gentlemen who were sensible of their birth-rights, and the true interest of the Kingdome; on which side the common people in the generality, and the Country-Freeholders, stood, who would rationally argue of their owne Rights, and those oppressions that were layed upon them.

But the sins of the English Nation were too great, to let them hope for an easic

Digitized by GOOGLE

easie, or speedy, redresse of such grievances; and the manners of the people so Great luxury and much corrupted, as by degrees they became of that temper, which the Historian corruption of manspeakes of his Romans, ut nec mala, nec remedia, ferre powent, they could neither ple. suffer those pressures patiently, nor quietly endure the cure of them Prophannesse too much abounded every where; and, (which is most strange,) where there was no Religion, yet there was Superstition: Luxury in diet, and excesse both in meat and drinke, was crept into the Kingdome in an high degree, not only in the quantity, but in the wanton curiosity. And in abuse of those good creatures which God had bestowed upon this plentiful Land, they mixed the vices of divers Nations, catching at every thing that was new and forraigne.

- Non vulzo nota placehant Petronius. Gaudia, non usu plebejo trita voluptas. -Old, knowne, delight They scorne, and vulgar, bare-worne, pleasure sleight.

As much pride and excesse was in Apparel, almost among all degrees of people, Excess in Apparel. in new-fangled and various-fashioned attire; they not only imitated, but excelled their forraigne patternes; and in fantastical gestures and behaviour, the petulancy of most Nations in Europe.

> Petr. Et laxi crines, & tot nova nomina vestis. Loose haire, and many new-found names of clothes.

The serious men groaned for a Parliament; but the great Statesmen plyed it the harder, to compleat that worke they had begun, of setting-up Prerogative above all Lawes.

The Lord WENTWORTH (afterward created Earle of STRAFFORD for his ser- Of the Lord vice in that kinde) was then labouring to oppresse Ireland, of which he was De-Wentworth. puty; and to begin that worke in a conquered Kingdome, which was intended to be afterward wrought by degrees in England: And indeed he had gone very farre and was very prosperous in those waies of Tyranny, though very much to the endamaging and setting-backe of that newly-established Kingdome.

He was a man of great parts, of a deepe reach, subtle wit, of spirit and industry to carry-on his businesse; and such a conscience as was fit for that worke he was designed to. He understood the right way, and the Liberty of his Country, as well as any man; for which, in former Parliaments, he stood-up stiffely, and seemed an excellent Patriot. For those abilities he was soone taken off by the King, and raised in honour, to be employed in a contrary way, for enslaving of his Country, which his ambition easily drew him to undertake. To this man, in my opinion, that character which Lucan bestowes upon the Roman Curio in some sort may suit.

Haud

THE HISTORY OF THE

Haud alium tanta civem tulit indole Roma,
Aut cui plus Leges deberent recta sequenti:
Perdita tunc urbi nocuerunt sæcula, postquam
Ambitus, & Luxus, & opum metuenda facultas,
Transverso mentem dubiam Torrente tulerunt,
Momentumque fuit mutatus Curio rerum.
A man of abler parts Rome never bore,
Nor one to whom (whilest right) the Lawes ow'd more.
Our State itselfe then suffer'd, when the tide
Of Avarice, Ambition, factious pride,
To turne his wavering minde quite crosse began:
Of such high moment was one changed man.

Of the Court of England.

The court of England, during this long vacancy of Parliaments, enjoyed itselfe in as much pleasure and splendour, as ever any Court did. The Revels, Triumphs, and Princely Pastimes, were for those many yeares kept-up at so great a height, that any stranger which travelled into England, would verily believe, a Kingdom that looked so cheerfully in the face, could not be sick in any part.

The Queene was fruitful, and now growne of such an age, as might seeme to give her priviledge of a farther society with the King than bed and board; and make her a partner of his affaires and businesse; which his extreme affection did more encourage her to challenge: That conjugal love, as an extraordinary vertue of a King, in midst of so many temptations, the people did admire and honour.

But the Queenes power did by degrees give priviledge to Papists (and, among them, to the most witty and Jesuited,) to converse, under the name of civility and Courtship, not only with inferiour Courtiers, but with the King himselfe, and to sowe their seed in what ground they thought best; and, by degrees, as in complement to the Queene, Nuntios from the Pope were received in the Court of England, Panziane, Con, and Rosetti; the King himselfe maintaining in discourse, That he saw no reason why he might not receive an Embassadour from the Pope, being a Temporal Prince. But those Nuntios were not entertained with publike Ceremony; so that the people, in general, tooke no great notice of them; and the Courtiers were confident of the King's Religion, by his due frequenting Prayers and Sermons.

Of the Clergy of England. The Clergy, whose dependance was meerely upon the King, were wholly taken-up in admiration of his happy Government, which they never concealed from himselfe, as often as the Pulpit gave them accesse to his eare; and not onely there, but at all meetings, they discoursed with joy upon that Theam; affirming confidently, that no Prince in Europe was so great a friend to the Church, as King Charles; That Religion flourished no where but in England; and no reformed Church retained the face and dignity of a Church but that: Many of them used to deliver their opinion, That God had therefore so severely punished the Palatinate, because their Sacriledge had beene so great in taking-away the endowments of Bishopricks.

Queen

Oueen FLIZABETH herselfe, who had reformed Religion, was but coldly praised; and all her vertues were forgotten, when they remembered how she cut-short

the Bishoprick of Ely.

HENRY the Eighth was also much condemned by them, for seizing upon the Abbies. and taking so much out of the several Bishopricks, as he did in the 37th yeer of his To maintaine, therefore, that splendour of a Church, which so much pleased them, was become their highest endeavour; especially after they had gotten, in the yeare 1633, an Archbishop after their owne heart, Doctor LAUD; who had before, for divers yeares, ruled the Clergy, in the secession of Archbishop Abbot, a man of better temper and discretion; which discretion, or vertue, to conceale, would be an injury to that Archbishop. He was a man who wholly followed the true Of Archbishop Abinterest of England, and that of the Reformed Churches in Europe; so farre as that bot in his time the Clergy was not much envied here in England, nor the Government of Episcopacy much dis-favoured by Protestants beyond the seas. Not onely the pompe of Ceremonies was daily increased, and Innovations of great scandal brought into the Church, but in point of Doctrine, many faire approaches were made towards Rome; as he that pleaseth to search may finde in the Books of Bishop LAUD, MONTAGUE, HELYN, POCKLINGTON, and the rest; or, in briefe, collected by a Scottish Minister, Master BAILY. And as their friendship to Rome encreased, so did their scorne to the Reformed Churches beyond the seas; whom, instead of lending that reliefe and succour to them, which God had enabled this rich Island to do, they failed in their greatest extremities, and, instead of harbours, became rocks to split them.

Archbishop Laun, who was now growne into great favour with the King, made Of Archbishop use of it especially to advance the pompe and temporal honour of the Clergy, pro. Laud. curing the Lord Treasurer's place for Doctor Juckson, Bishop of London, and, endicavouring, as the general report went, to fix the greatest temporal preferments upon others of that coat; insomuch as the people merrily, when they saw that Treasurer, with the other Bishops, riding to Westmins'er, called it the Church Triumphant: Doctors and Parsons of Parishes were made every where Justices of Peace, to the great grievance of the Country in civil affaires, and depriving them

of their spiritual edification.

The Archbishop, by the same meanes which he used to preserve his Clergy from contempt, exposed them to envy; and, as the wisest could then prophecy, to a more than probability of losing all: As we reade of some men, who, being foredocumed by an Oracle to a bad fortune, have runne into it by the same meanes they used to prevent it. The like unhappy course did the Clergy then take to depresse Puritanism, which was, "toset-up irreligion itselfe against it," the worst weapon which they could have chosen to beat it downe: which appeared especially in point of The Court encoukeeping the Lord's day; when not only books were written to shake the morality rages a neglect of the of it, as that of Suncas no Sabbath, but sports and pastimes of jollity and lightnesse Sabbath-day. were permitted to the Country-people upon that day, by publike Authority, and the Warrant commanded to be read in Churches: which, instead of producing the intended

intended effect, may credibly be thought to have been one motive to a stricter observance of that day, in that part of the Kingdome, which before had been well-devoted; And many men, who had before been loose and carelesse, began upon that occasion to enter into a more serious consideration of it, and were ashamed to be invited, by the authority of Church men, to that which themselves, at the best, could but have pardoned in themselves, as a thing of infirmity,

The example of the Court, where Playes were usually presented on Sundaies, did not so much draw the Country to imitation, as reflect with disadvantage upon the Court itself, and sowre those other Court-pastimes and jollities, which would have relished better without that in the eyes of all the people, as being things that had

ever been allowed to the delights of great Princes.

The countenancing of loosenesse and irreligion, was no doubt, a good preparative to the introducing of another Religion: And, the power of godlinesse being beaten-downe, Popery might more easily by degrees enter; men quickly leave that, of which they never took fast hold: And, though it were questionable, whether the Bishops and Great Clergy of England aimed at Popery, it is too apparent that such was the designe of Romish Agents; and the English Clergy, if they did not their owne worke, did theirs. A stranger of that Religion, a Venetian Gentleman, out Venetian Gentleman of his owne observations in England, will tell you how farre they were going in this of the Roman Catho-kinde: his words are?

Observations of a
Venetian Gentleman of his owne observatio
of the Roman-Catholick Religion, concerning the Religion
of the people of
England.

THE Universities

THE Universities, Bishops, and Divines of England, do daily imbrace Catholike opinions, though they professe it not with open mouth, for feare of the Puritans: For example, They hold that the Church of Rome is a true Church; That the Pope is superiour to all Bishops; That to him it appertaines to call generall Councils; That it is lawfull to pray for soules departed; That Altars ought to be erected; in summe, they believe all that is taught by the Church, but not by the Court, of Rome.

The Opinions of Archbishop Laud concerning Popery.

The Archbishop of Canterbury was much against the Court of Rome, though not against that Church, in so high a kinde: For the Doctrine of the Roman Church was no Enemy to the pompe of Prelacy; but the Doctrine of the Court of Rome would have swallowed-up all under the Pope's Supremacy, and have made all greatnesse dependant upon him: Which, the Archbishop conceived, would derogate too much from the King in Temporals, (and therefore hardly to be accepted by the Court) as it would from himselfe in Spirituals, and make his Metropolitical power subordinate, which he desired to hold absolute and independent within the Realme of England, as if he had been an English Pope.

It is certaine, that the Archbishop of *Canterbury* (as an English Gentleman observes) would often professe against those Tridentine Papists, whom he hated only as *Papists*, properly so called. For at the Council of *Trent*, all matters con-

cerning

cerning the Court of Rome, (which are of themselves but disputable,) were determined as points of faith, to be believed upon paine of damnation: But matters of faith indeed concerning the Church of Rome, were left disputable, and no Anathema annexed to them. But that Venetian Gentleman, whom before we cited, declares in what state, for matter of Religion, England at that time stood; and how divided, namely, into Papists, Protestants, and Puritans. Papists are well knowne. The Protestant party (saith he) consists of the King, the Court-Lords and Gentlemen, The Protestant with all that are raised by favour to any honour: Besides almost all the Prelates, Party. and both the Universities.

What the Protestants are, he farther declares, viz.

They hate Puritans more than they hate Papists; That they easily combine of the Protestants of with Papists to extirpate Puritans; and are not so farre engaged to the Reformed the Church of Eng-Religion, but that they can reduce themselves agains to the old practice of their fore-fathers; That they are very opinionative in excluding the Pope's Supremacy.

He speaks then concerning the Puritans, and saies: That they consist of some Rishops, of almost all the Gentry and Commonalty; and therefore are far the most

potent party.

And further declares what they are. viz. They are such as received the Discipline Of the Puritum of of the French and Netherlanders, and hold not the English Reformation to be so England.

perfect as that which Calvin instituted at Geneva; That they hate Papists far more than they hate Protestants, &c.

Thus farre of this stranger's Observation, concerning England.

CHAP. III.

The condition of the Scottish State and Clergy, when the new Booke of Liturgy was sent unto them; how it was received; with some effects which followed. The King's Proclamation sent by the Earle of Traquare; against which the Lords make a Protestation.

In this condition stood the Kingdome of England, about the yeare 1626, when the first coale was blowne, which kindled since into so great a combustion as to deface, and almost ruine, three flourishing Kingdomes. Neither was this coale blowne by the grieved party of England, the Commonalty, and those religious men that prayed for Reformation, but by the other side, who had oppressed them. No commotion at all was raised from the oppressed party, though it consisted of the body of the Nation, and was therefore strong enough to have vindicated themselves, would they have risen in illegal tumults.

The Land was yet quiet, and that storme which the people had feared before the death of the Duke of Buckingham, was not, in so long a time, fallen upon England, although the causes in Government which made them feare it, had continued at the height ever since. They onely wished for a Parliament, but durst not hope it, unlesse some strange accident, not yet discovered by them, might necessitate such a cure. The Commons, therefore, quietly endured their yoke; the Court freely enjoyed its greatnesse and splendour; and the then Clergy, without control, their dignity: Untill too great a care of securing and increasing that dignity, made them endeavour those courses, which proved the ruine of it; for from the Clergy this fire began, though the State was not innocent. The tyranny of Civil Government moved the same pace that the ambition of Prelacy did: And the King's Council had gone so farre, as they could not be content, that the people were patient, unlesse they could take-away all possibility, for the future, of the people's redresse.

But

But the name of Religion was used at the beginning of the businesse, and a conformity in Church-Worship betweene the two Kingdomes of England and Scotland pretended to be introduced: But the meanes proved unhappy, and were defective

both in policy and justice, as will anon more particularly appeare.

The Archbishop of Canterbury was a maine Agent in this fatal worke; a man vigilant enough, of an active, or, rather, of a restlesse, minde; more ambitious to undertake, then politick to carry-on; of a disposition too fierce and cruel for his Coat; which, notwithstanding, he was so farre from concealing in a subtle way, that he increased the envy of it by insolence. He had few vulgar and private vices, as being neither taxed of covetousnesse, intemperance, or incontinence; and, in a word, a man not altogether so bad, [in his personal character] as unfit for the State of England.

To bring-about the worke in hand, long preparation had been made in Sootland; Of the State of the and, though that Kingdome was hardly brought to endure the Rule and Pompe of Clergy in Scotland. Prelacy, yet now it seemed perfectly to be wrought; The Bishops there, no lesse than in England, had gotten all the Ecclesiastical power into their hands, and had as

great a share in Civil Government.

Of fourteene Bishops, (which is all the Scottish number), eleven were Privy-Counsellors; the Archbishop of St. Andrewes, Primate of Scotland, was Lord Chancellor; and the Bishop of Rosse, (a great Favourite of the Archbishop of Canterbury,) was in election and assured hope to be Lord High Treasurer; many of them besides were gotten into state-employment, and gainful Offices.

To establish that Episcopal Power, the High-Commission Court, like that in Canons for the England, was erected, and a Booke of Canons for that Church was, by the King's Church of Scotland Authority, published and ratified; wherein all Subjects to the Crowne of Scotland King's authority,

are commanded, in all Articles, to submit themselves to the Episcopal Censure.

The whole structure of Ecclesiastical policy, so long used in Scotland, and established by so many Acts of Parliament, was at one blow throwne-downe (as many of their Writers did then complaine) their Consistories, Classes, and Presbyteries, were held in the nature of Conventicles; and all decision of Ecclesiastical controversies confined only to the Tribunal of a Bishop. Although (say they) after that unhappy Synod of Perth, which was held in the yeare 1618, we never had any National Synod, or Assembly; yet there remained a kinde of face, or name, of Provincial Synods, Presbyteries, and Sessions: (though indeed but vaine names and shadowes): but after the monstrous birth of those Canons, that very shadow was quite lost.

On vera fides Libertatis obit; Nunc & ficta perit.

Lucan, Book 9th.

Yet for all this, the Power of Prelacy was not so firmly rooted in Scotland as in England, nor so well fortified by the affections of the one Kingdome as of the other. Besides, the Reformation of England had never abrogated, nor scarce shaken, the Prelatical Dignity in any Parliament.

But

But in Scotland it was once quite ruined, and had been by degrees built-up againe, not without many difficulties;—not without great reluctancy of the Peeres, Gentry, and most of the Ministers;—not without extraordinary interposition of Regal Authority, and great art used by two Kings in managing the businesse, and raising it to that height in which it then stood; as you may reade at large in some late Writers of that Kingdome.

Neither were the Peeres and Gentry of that Kingdome so impatient of this new yoake, onely out of zeale to preservation of Religion in purity, (though that, no doubt, were their greatest reason; that Church having been ever much addicted to the Reformation of Geneva and those other Churches, as it appeared by their great unwillingnesse to receive those few Ceremonies of the English Church, at their Synod of Perib;) but also as being loath to suffer any diminution of their Temporal Liberties; which could not be avoided in admittance of Episcopal Jurisdiction, and was manifested in that Kingdome, by divers examples of rigorous proceedings, which some Bishops used against Gentlemen of quality, by way of Fines and Imprisonments, and the like; which particulars are too large to be here inserted in this Narration.

The King sends a Booke of Common Prayer to be used in the Churches of

In the yeare 1637, a Booke of Liturgy was composed, and sent out of England, (which they complained of, because it was not before allowed by their Church in a National Synod, as was fit for a businesse of so great import) with an expresse Scotland. A.D. 1637. command from the King, that they should reverently receive it, and publikely reade it in their Churches, beginning on Easter-day, and so forward; against which time the Privy Council of Scotland had commanded that every Parish should buy two, at the least, of them.

That Service-Booke was the same with the Common-Prayer Booke of England, excepting some few alterations, of which some (as they observed) were alterations

for the better, but others for the worse.

For the better, they esteemed, that so many Chapters of the Apocrypha were not appointed to be read, as in the English Prayer-Booke; and where the English retained the old vulgar Latine Translation, especially in the Psalmes, that Booke

followed the last Translation, commonly called that of King JAMES.

Those alterations for the worse were divers, observed by the Scots, especially in the Lord's Supper, of which some were these: The expresse command for situation of the Altar (so called) to the Easterne Wall; together with many postures of the Minister, whilest he officiated, expressed in their exceptions; but especially this, that in the consecrating prayer, those words, which in the English Common Prayer Booke, are directly against Transubstantiation, were quite leftout in that Booke, and instead of them, such other words, as in plain sense agreed 'with the Roman Masse-Booke.

As for example: Heare us, O most merciful Father, and of thy Omnipotent goodnesse grant, so to blesse and sanctifie by thy Word and Spirit, these creatures of bread and wine, that they may be to us the body and blood of thy beloved Sonne.

Many other alterations the Scots have observed and expressed in their writings, · and, and, in one word, affirmed, that, wheresoever that Booke varies from the English Liturgy, it approaches directly to the Roman Missall; and offered to prove, that

all the material parts of the Masse-Booke are seminally there.

It was thought by many, that, if the Booke, without any alteration at all, had been sent into Scotland, though the Scots, perhaps, would not have received it, they would not have taken it in so evil part: And it might have been construed onely as a brotherly invitation to the same service which England used. But what the reasons were of those alterations, I finde no where expressed, but onely where the King, in his Declaration concerning that businesse, is pleased to say thus:

WE, supposing that they might have taken some offence, if we should The King's declarahave tendred them the English Service-Booke, totidem verbis; and saidbook of Common that some factious spirits would have endeavoured to have misconstrued Prayer. it, as a badge of dependance of that Church upon this of England, which we had put upon them to the prejudice of their Lawes and Liberties; We held it fifter that a new Booke should be composed by their owne Bishops, in substance not differing from this of England, that so the Roman Party might not upbraid us with any weighty or material differences in our Liturgyes; and yet in some few insensible alterations, differing from it, that it might truly and justly be reputed a Booke of that Churches owne composing, and established by Our Royal Authority, as King of Scotland.

These were the King's expressions, which, as it seemed, were not satisfactory to the Scots in that point.

For they were (as it before specified) not well-affected to their owne Bishops, whose power and jurisdiction over them was rather enforced than consented-to. Neither did they suppose that a conformity in Church Worship, had it been such as their consciences could well have imbraced, had beene any badge of their dependancy upon England, as being a people not conquered, but united in an equal

freedome under the same King.

Besides, they could not relish it well, that the Archbishop of Canterbury, and other English Bishops, who in many points of Ceremony and Worship, which they accounted things tolerable, did make as neere approaches to the Church of Rome, as possibly they could; for no other reason (as they professe in their writings) than that they laboured to bring union into the Christian Church, if it were possible; should now invite the Church of Scotland (whom they accounted more puritanical than themselves) to union, by a quite contrary way; as, instead of framing their Service neerer to the Scottish profession and Discipline, to urge them to a Liturgy more Popish than their own: So that it seemed, for unity they were content to meet Rome, rather than Scotland.

To

To returne to the Narration; The Service-Booke, according to the King's command, was offered to the Church of Scotland, and the Council there, and published by Proclamation; a day for the reading of it in all Churches appointed,

which was the Easter-day following, 1637.

But then upon some considerations, and further trial of mens minds (as the King declares) the first reading of it was put-off until the 23d of 7u/y next enouing, to the end that the Lords of the Session (their Session being the same with the Terme in England) and others, who had any Law-businesse, might see the successe of it before the rising of the Session, which alwaies endeth upon the first of August; and that so, upon their returne into their several Countries, they might report the receiving of this Booke at Edenburgb; it being ordered, That on that Sunday the Booke should be read only in the Church of Edenburgh, and some other Churches neere adjacent; and warning was printed, and published in those several Pulpits, the Sunday before, "that it was to be read."

The said Booke of Common-Prayer is read in the great Church at Eden-

On the 23d day of July, being Sunday, the Booke was read in Saint Gyles Church, commonly called, the great Church at Edenburgh, where were present, many of the Privy Council, both Archbishops, and divers other Bishops, the burgh, July 23, 1637. Lords of the Session, the Magistrates of Edenburgh, and a great auditory of all sorts.

It is opposed in a violent manner by the people.

But the people, especially the meanest vulgar, (for they first appeared against it) and some women, expressed so great a detestation of the Booke, not onely in words and outcries, but actions; that the City-Magistrates were troubled much to get the Service performed; and the Bishop who read it, coming out of the Church, had probably beene slaine by the multitude, if he had not been rescued by a Nobleman.

Between the two Sermons the Council and Magistrates met about preventing future tumults; but, though the Booke were read more quietly in the afternoone. yet the tumult was farre greater after evening Prayer, from the people who had stayed in the streets; and the Bishop, in the Earle of Roxborough his Coach,

hardly escaped from being stoned to death.

The greatest men and Magistrates of Edenburgh, to excuse themselves to the King (some of them also writing to the Archbishop of Canterbury) layed all the fault upon the Rabble; for as yet none of quality had appeared, insomuch as that the Privy Council and Magistrates of Edenburgh, the next morning, held some consultation about finding-out and punishing the ringleaders of that uproare.

The reading of it is then suspended till the King's further pleasure is known.

But not long after, upon the appearing of some others of higher ranke, and Petitions from divers Ministers, "That the reading of that Booke might be a while " respited, till his Majesty might be further petitioned and informed;" the Council yeelded so far, as that it should not be urged by the Bishops, till his Majesties pleasure were further knowne.

Upon which, many Gentlemen and Ministers, who had resorted to Edenburgh with Petitions not long before, returned in part satisfied to their owne habitations; and at many places met-together, with fastings, and Prayer, That God would be pleased pleased to direct the King's heart in that way which they conceived most conducible

to the happinesse of the Church and State of Scotland.

Upon the 18th of Octuber following, harvest being now ended, a great conflux of all sorts was at *Edenburgb*, to heare what the King was pleased to determine of the businesse: where they finde an Edict against them, "That, upon paine of being The King publishes guilty of Rebellion, all should, within few houres warning, depart the City; and an Edict against the because the Citizens of Edenburgh had twice tumultuously opposed the Prayer-burgh. October 18, Booke, and assaulted the Bishop of Edinburgh; as a punishment to that City, 1637. the Terme was to be removed to the Burgh of Linksbow; and the next Terme, after the ordinary vacants, to be held at the Burgh of Dendie, there to remaine during his Majesties pleasure."

The Petitioners (as they were then called) were much moved at this Edict; and on the 19th of that October, presented to the Privy-Council a great complaint against the Bishops, whom they conceived to be the Authors of all this businesse, and desired justice against them, as well for other crimes, as for introducing, con-

trary to Law, that superstitious and idolatrous Book.

To this complaint a great number of all ranks subscribed, and professed to the Council, that they could not depart out of Edenburgh till some way were found-

out to settle the present grievances.

Whilest they staved there, their number daily increased, from all the remotest The opposers of the Provinces, so that the Council were enforced to give way, that till the King's plea-Service-book chuse Commissioners to sure were yet further knowne, they might chuse some out of their number of all represent them. ranks, to represent the rest, and follow the cause in the name of all the rest: Upon which they chose foure of the higher Nobility, foure of the lower ranke of Nobility, as representers of Provinces; as many Burgesses of Townes; and foure Pastors, as representers of the Classes; having settled this, the rest quietly departed to their owne homes.

The King, hearing of these things, sent a command to the Council of Edenburgh, not to take upon themselves any more the decision of this controversie, which he reserved in his owne power: And Proclamation was made in December, 1637, concerning the King's intentions, that they were not to infringe the Lawes

or Liberties of the Kingdome. When therefore the Commissioners petitioned the Council to give way to them, to bring their Actions against the Bishops, the Council answered, That the King had commanded them to receive no more Petitions, against either the Bishops, or **Booke** of Service.

Whereupon the Commissioners, discontented, prepare a Protestation against the King's Council, declaring, That what mischiefe soever might afterwards ensue, was to be all imputed to the King's Council, for denying Justice.

The Council, fearing what effects might follow, desired the Bishops to absent These Commissionthemselves, and gave leave to the Commissioners to appeare before them; where Scotch Bishops as the Lord of Lowden, in name of all the rest, made an Oration, in which, charging being the advisers of the Bishops with other crimes, besides these stirres, he desired them to be altothe new Service-

gether book.

gether removed from the Council-Table, till they had answered and cleered them-To the like purpose spake one of the Ministers.

The Council seemed sorry, that it lay not in their power (since the King's Command was peremptory) to give satisfaction to their desires; but intreated their patience for so small a time, as till they might againe receive notice of his Majesties pleasure.

The King, further certified by them, sent for the Earle of TRAQUARE into England, who was soone dispatched againe into Scotland; and in February, tion of the King in 1638, caused the King's Mandate in Sterlin (where the Council then sate) to be published.

The Proclamation declared, that the Bishops were wrongfully accused, as Authors of sending the Prayer-Booke; That his Majesty himselfe was Author of it, and all was done by his Command; That he condemned all tumultuous proceedings of his Subjects to exhibite Petitions, or complaints, against the innocent Bishops, and Booke of Liturgy, and all subscriptions to that purpose hitherto, as conspiring against the publick peace; pronouncing pardon to these which repented, and the punishment of High Treason to such as persisted; promising to heare the just Complaints of his Subjects, so they offended not in matter or forme.

After the Proclamation was made at Sterlin, the Earl of HUMB, Lord LINDmake a protestation sey, and others, in name of all the Petitioners, made a Protestation against it; which Protestation was afterward repeated at Lithgow, and last at Edenburgh.

> The effect of that Protestation was (for we cannot here insert it at large) That the Service-Booke was full of Superstition and Idolatry, and ought not to be intruded upon them, without consent of a National Synod, which in such cases should judge; That it was unjust to deny them liberty to accuse the Bishops, being guilty of high crimes, of which till they were cleered, they did reject the Bishops as Judges or Governours of them. They protested also against the High-Commission Court, and justified their owne meetings, and superscriptions to Petitions, as being to defend the glory of God, the King's Honour, and Liberties of This Protestation was read in the Market-place at Sterlin, and the Copy hung-up in publike.

quair pulishes at Stirling a Proclamajustification of the Bishops, in February,

The Earl of Tra-

The Commissioners against the Service-

CHAP.



CHAP. IV.

The Scots enter into a Covenant. The Marquesse HA-MILTON is sent thither from the King. A National Synod is granted to them, but dissalved within few daies by the Marquesse, as Commissioner from the King. The King declares against the Covenanters, and raises an Army to subdue them.

FROM Sterlin the Commissioners resorted to Edenburgh, whither many from all parts met to consult of the present businesse; and concluded there to renew solemnly among them that Covenant, which was commonly called, The lesser Confession of the Church of Scotland, or, The Confession of the King's family; which was made and sealed under King JAMES his hand, in the yeare 1580, and afterwards confirmed by all the Estates of the Kingdome, and Decree of the National Synod in 1581. Which Confession was againe subscribed by all sorts of persons in Scotland, in the year 1590, by authority of Council and National Synod; and a Covenant added to it, for defence of true Religion, and the King's Majesty; which Covenant the aforesaid Lords, Citizens, and Pastours, in the yeare 1638, did renew, and tooke another according to the present occasion.

The Covenant itselfe (expressed at large in the Records of that Kingdome) The Scots enter into consisted of three principal parts: The first was a re-taking, word for word, of a Covenant for the that old Covenant, 1580, confirmed by Royal Authority, and two National gion. In February, Synods, for defence of the purity of Religion, and the King's Person and Rights, 1698. against the Church of Rome. The second part contained an enumeration of all the Acts of Parliament made in Scotland, in defence of the reformed Religion.

both in Doctrine and Discipline, against Popery.

The third was an application of that old Covenant to the present state of things, where, as in that all Popery, so in this all Innovations in those Bookes of Liturgy unlawfully

unlawfully obtruded upon them, are abjured; and a preservation of the King's Person and Authority; as likewise a mutual defence of each other; in this Covenant, are sworne-unto.

The King makes ol> jections to this Covenant.

Against this Covenant the King, much displeased, made these foure principal objections: First, By what authority they entred into this Covenant? or presumed to exact any Oath from their fellow-Subjects? Secondly, if they had power to command the new-taking of this Oath, yet what power had they to interpret it to their present occasion? it being a received Maxime, That no lesse authority can interpret a Law than that which made it, or the Judges appointed by that Authority to give sentence upon it. Thirdly, What power they had to adde any thing to it, and interpose a new Covenant of mutual assistance to each other, against any other power that should oppose them, none excepted? And, fourthly, That all Leagues of Subjects among themselves, without the privity and approbation of the King, are declared to be seditious by two Parliaments in Scotland, one of the tenth Parliament of James the Sixth, Act the twelfth; and the other the fifteenth Act of the ninth Parliament of Queene Mary.

What answer the Covenanters made to these objections, and what arguments the King used to enforce the contrary, are largely expressed in many writings; being such, indeed, as not onely then, but since, in the sad calamities of England, have been discoursed of in whole volumes; containing all that can be said con-

cerning the true Rights and Priviledges of Princes and People.

The Covenantis subscribed by almost all the Protestants in Scotland before the end of April, 1638.

The Covenant, notwithstanding, was generally subscribed by all there present at Edenburgh, in February, 1638, and Copies of it sent abroad to those who were absent, and were so fast subscribed by them also, that, before the end of April, he was scarce accounted one of the Reformed Religion, that had not subscribed to this And the Church and State were divided into two names, of Cove-Covenant. nanters, and Non-Covenanters; the Non-Covenanters consisting, first, of Papists, whose number was thought small in Scotland, scarce exceeding six hundred: Secondly, of some Statesmen in Office and favour at that time: Thirdly, of some, who, though they were of the Reformed Religion, were greatly affected to the Ceremonies of England and the Booke of Common-Prayer.

Many Bishops at that time came from thence to the Court of England, and three Lords of the Council of Scotland, whom the King had sent-for, to advise about the affaires of that Kingdome; where, after many debates what course to take, whether of reducing the Covenanters by Armes, or using more gentle meanes: The King at last sent the Marquesse Hamilton, together with those

three Lords, into Scotland.

The Marquis of Hamilton is sent into Scotland by the

The Marquesse arrived at Dulketh, and within few daies entred Edenburgh, in June, being met and conducted into the City by a great multitude of all ranks, in King, in June, 1638, which number were seven hundred Pastors of Churches.

> The Marquesse, by the King's Command, dealt with the Covenanters, to renounce their Covenant, or else told them, there was no hope to obtaine a Na-

tional Synod, which they so much desired, for settling of the Church, which, they affirmed, could not be done, without manifest perjury and profanation of God's Name.

But when nothing was agreed upon, they be sought the Marquesse, at his returne into England, to present their humble desire to the King: But before his de-He publishes a Proparture, in July, he published the King's Proclamation, wherein his Majesty pro- clamation of the King in July, 1638. tests to defend the Protestant Religion; and that he would no more presse upon them the Booke of Canons, or Service-Booke, but by lawful Mediums; That he would rectifie the High Commission, and was resolved to take a speedy opportunity of calling both a Parliament and a Synod.

When the Proclamation was ended, the Covenanters read their Protestation; The Covenanters of which the heads were: That they never questioned his Majesties sincerity in make a Protestation the Protestant Religion; That these grants of his were not large enough to cure in answer to it. the present distempers; for he doth not utterly abolish that Service-Booke, nor the High Commission, being both obtruded against all Law upon them; That their meetings are not to be condemned in opprobrious words, being lawful, and such as they would not forsake, until the purity of Religion, and peace, might be fully settled by a free and National Synod.

The Marquesse went into England, to returne at a prefixed day, the twelfth of August. In the meane time the Scots keepe a solemne Fast; and the Covenanters, not hoping from the King so quick a call of a National Synod as the present malady required, published a writing, wherein they endeavour to prove, That the Church in such a condition may provide for itselfe; That the power of calling a Synod, in case the Prince be an enemy to the truth, or negligent in promoting the Churches good, is in the Church itselfe. And that the State of the Church of Scotland at that time was necessitated to such a course; which they endeavour to prove by reciting all their particular grievances, and by answering all arguments of the contrary side, for the Right of Princes, howsoever affected to Religion; as appeares at large in their Tractate concerning the necessity of Synods.

The Marquesse returned into Scotland before the appointed day, and brought The Marquis of Hamilton proposes Articles from the King, to which the Covenanters, if they would have either Part to the Covenanters

liament or Synod, were required to consent.

But they utterly rejected those Articles, as too invalid for their purpose of the King, August 12, But the Cosetling things; so that the Marquesse, fearing least the Covenanters, weary of de-venanters reject layes, would call a Synod without staying the King's consent, earnestly per-them. swaded them to forbeare it onely till his next returne from Court, whither he would presently go to perswade the King. Which request of his, with much ado, was granted by them, and the day for his returne appointed the 22 of September: by which time, unlesse the Marquesse returned, it was free for the Covenanters to provide for their owne affaires.

But the Marquesse, with singular diligence, prevented his day, and published R 2

certain Articles from

The Marquis publishes another Proclamation of the King; in September, 1638.

the King's Proclamation, of which the chiefe heads were: First, The King did abrogate all Decrees of Council for the Booke of Canons and Common-Prayer, and abrogate the High Commisson. Secondly, That none should be pressed to the five Articles of Perth. Thirdly, That Bishops should be subject to the censure of a Synod. Fourthly, That no Oath should be given at Ordination of Pastors, but by Law of Parliament. Fifthly, that the lesser Confession of 1580, should be subscribed-to by all the Kingdome. Sixtly, That the King called a National Synod, to begin at Glasco the 21st of November, 1638, and a Parliament at Edenburgh the 15th of May, 1639. Lastly, for peace sake, he would forget all their offences past.

The Covenanters, at the first hearing of this peaceful Message, were much joyed; but, looking neerely into the words, they found (as they affirme) That their precedent actions were tacitly condemned, and the just freedome of a National

Synod taken-away.

The Covenanters make a Protestation in answer to it.

Therefore, loath to be deceived, they frame a Protestation, not (as they alledged) mis-doubting the candor of the King, but not trusting those in favour with him; by whose destructive Counsel they supposed it was, that the King had not snewed this clemency at first.

The chiefe heads of their Protestation were these: First, after humble thanks to God and the King, they conceived this grant no sufficient remedy for their sores.

For His Majesty calls that a panick feare in them, which was upon no imaginary, but just, grounds, as a real mutation both of Religion and Lawes, by obtrusion of those Bookes directly popish.

Secondly, whereas the King in his former Mandates so highly extolled those Bookes, as most religious, and fit for the Church; they could not be satisfied with a bare remission of the exercise of them, unlesse he would utterly abrogate and condemne them; or else itching Innovators would not be wanting hereafter to raise new troubles to the Church about them.

Thirdly, the just liberty of National Synods is diminished, and Episcopacy setup, they being allowed, as Bishops, though not deputed by the Churches, to give

their voices in a Synod.

Fourthly, the subscribing againe of that old Covenant, could not be admitted, for many reasons there at large expressed; of which some are, That it would frustrate their late Covenant, and make it narrower than before, and not able to suit to the redresse of present grievances, and be a needlesse multiplying of Oathes, and taking the Name of God in vaine; with many other objections, which cannot be fully here inserted.

That Covenant, notwithstanding, was solemnly taken at Edenburgh by the Marquesse of Hamilton, the King's Commissioner, and all the Privy Coun-

-Cli.

The Marquesse then gave Order for the Synod, fearing least the Covenanters,

if he delayed to call it, would do it themselves, and on the 16th of November

came to Glasco in great state.

Where, after many meetings for preparation to the businesse, on the 21st of the A National Synod of same Moneth, according to the King's Edict, the National Synod began: But the Church of Scotwithin seven daies that Synod was dissolved by the Marquesse Hamilton, in the gow, on the 21st of November, 1638. King's Name, and they commanded to sit no more. But it is dissolved

The Marquesse alleadging, for reason of it, that they had broken the Lawes within seven days. of a free Synod in many proceedings, not onely in those few daies of their sitting, but before it began, in their manner of Elections, with other such-like

But they protested against that dissolution, and continued the Synod when the But the Synod con-Marquesse was gone. What were the Acts of that Synod, what proceedings it tinues it's sittings notwithstanding the had, and what impediments it met withal, you may reade in two large descrip-Dissolution. tions, the one published by the King, the other by the Synod; how the Bishops protested against the Synod; how the Synod answered their Protestation; how the Synod wrote to the King; how they proceeded against the Bishops, deposing them all from their Dignities; how of all the fourteene Bishops, eight were excommunicated, foure excluded from all Ministerial Function, and two onely allowed to officiate as Pastours; how the five Articles of Perth, the Booke of Liturgy, the Booke of Canons and Ordination, were all condemned, the High Commission taken-away, and whatsoever else had crept into the Church since the yeare 1580, when that National Covenant was first established.

The Scots Covenanters, when themselves broke-up the Synod, wrote a Letter The Covenanters of thanks to the King, and immediately after published a Declaration, dated the publish an Address fourth of February, 1638, from Edenburgh, and directed To all the sincere and England; in February good Christians in England, to rindicate their actions and intentions, from those ary, 1888-9. aspersions which enemies might throw upon them.

That Declaration was welcome to the people of England in general, and especially to those who stood best-affected to Religion, and the Lawes and Liberties of their Country: But by the King's Authority it was suppressed, as all other papers that might be sent from the Scots; and a Proclamation soone after, bear-The King publishes ing date the 27th of February, 1638, was published by the King, and commanded a Proclamation in to be read in all Churches of England; the Title of it was, A Proclamation and Scottish Covenant-Declaration to informe our loving Subjects of England, concerning the seditious ers, on the 17th of Actions of some in Scotland, who, under false pretence of Religion, endeavour February, 1638-9. the utter subversion of our Koyal Authority.

The Declaration was filled with sharpe invectives and execrations against the Scottish Covenanters; but the truth is, it wrought little upon the hearts of the English People; who conceived a good opinion of the Scots; and were more confirmed in it, because the King had carried the whole businesse so closely from the English Nation, as not onely not to declare unto them in a Parliament, (which former Princes used to call upon lesse occasions) but not

Those Courtiers that were of a graver discourse, did likewise sceme to feare the consequence of this businesse, and, I remember, would daily mention the Story of CHARLES Duke of Burgundy, his pressing of a Warre upon the Swissers; and what PHILLIP DE COMMINES relates about the Battel of Granson, that the Duke lost to the value of three millions of Crownes; all which he fondly ventured against so wretched a people, that it is there expressed, if all the Swissers had been taken Prisoners, they would not be able to pay a Ransom to the value of the Spurres and Bridle-bits in his Campe: And very frequent in their mouthes was that Verse:

> Curandum imprimis ne magna injuria fiat Fortibus & miseris.

Juvenal.

Take heed of offering too great injuries To people stout and poore.

But the people of England, though they abhorred the very thought of that unnatural Warre; yet glad they seemed to be, that such an occasion happened, which might in reason necessitate the King to call an English Parliament, and so, by accident, redresse the many grievances of England: Which might also prevent the feare of such Warres for the future, and bring a just punishment upon those who were found to be the Authors, or assistors, of this present disturbance.

The King raises an army in England, against the Scots' Covenanters.

But the King, though resolved to pursue his designe of Warre, yet, rather than take the advice of a Parliament, was content to want the aid of it; and to seeke supplies of a lower condition. Great sums of money he borrowed from the chiefe Nobility; and required proportionable Loanes from all the Judges and Officers; but specially the Clergy, of all ranks, were liberal in contribution to this War; which was then called by many men, Bellum Episcopale.

All Courtiers, as well entraordinary as ordinary, were summoned to attend the King in Person with Horse and Armes, in a proportion suitable to their rankes.

By whom, and such voluntiers of the Gentry as came-in to gaine His Majesties favour, with old Souldiers, that imbraced it as their profession, a gallant Army was The Army is assem- made-up, Yorke was appointed for the Rendezvouze, and the Earle of ARUNDELL Commander in chiefe.

bled at York under the command of the Earl of Arundel.

The King, as it was well knowne, had beene advertised by many, and especially by the prosecuted Bishops, who were fled out of Scotland, that the Scottish Covenanters were in no sort able to resist him; That scarce any English Army at all would be needful to fight, but onely to appeare, and His Majesty would finde a party great enough in Scotland to do the worke.

And, indeed, much might have been done in that kinde, if the Lords of the Covenant had not used a most dexterous and timely prevention, which is as necessary in a defensive, as in an offensive, Warre.

For besides the feared incursion of the English upon their Borders, and what invasion the Deputy of Ireland, on the Westerne Coast, might make, together with

with the Earle of ANTRIM, and his Forces from the Hebrides; the Marquesse. HUNTLEY in the North, and Marquesse Duclas towards the Southerne parts, with the Earle of HETH, were to be feared, and the Towne of Aberdeen to be secured, before it could fortifie to receive the King's Fleet.

All which, with timely care, was undertaken and provided-against by several The Scots take vigo-Lords, as Angile for the West, Montrosse for the North, Colonel Monroe defence of Scotland.

for the South.

The most considerable forts in that Kingdome were taken-in at the beginning, without any blood or resistance, and furnished by them with Ammunition, as Edenburgh, and Dun-Britain; and the Haven of Leath, to secure Edenburgh, suddenly fortified. All Neuters, or suspected persons, they disarmed without tumult. The Castle of Dalheth they scaled and tooke, with all the warlike provision which had beene brought into it by Marquesse HAMILTON the yeare before. In that Castle they found the King's Crowne, Scepter and Sword; which, in great state and solemnity, were carried from thence by the greatest Noblemen, and layed-up in Edenburgh Castle.

The Covenanting Lords at the same time published a long Remonstrance, in answer to the King's Proclamation against them, the 27th February, and to satisfic

the people of *England* concerning their proceedings and intents.

The Marquesse Hamilton arrived at Forth with a Fleet in May, and sent letters to the Governour of Edenburgh to obey the King's Commands, and especially to publish in Edenburgh that Proclamation, which had been by the King proclaimed at Yorke, upon the 25th of April; wherein, among other things, the Rents and Debts due to Covenanters, from Tenants and other, are forbidden to be paid to them.

The Governour desired the Marquesse to expect an answer till the Parliament sate, which was to begin within few daies; who, [when they were assembled,] returned answer to the Marquesse, That they could not in that obey his Command,

for many reasons, expressed at large in their Commentaries.

In the meane time the King commanded the Parliament to dissolve, which im. mediately obeyed; And, being threatned with Warre on every side, elected Sir ALEXANDER LESLEY, an experienced Commander in the German Warres, to be
The Scots chuse Sir their great General; to whom all the greatest Earles and Lords of the Covenant, Alexander Lesley swore obedience in all warlike Commands; taking an Oath of him for performance for the General of of his duty; and immediately betook themselves every man to his charge, through, their army, out all parts of the Kingdome, according as they were commanded by Lesley.

Whilest the Armies on both sides advanced forward, and no decision of this difference seemed with reason to be hoped-for, but such as the stroke of Warre must allow; the Scottish Covenanters did, neverthelesse, continue their first course of petitioning the King; and, by many addresses to him, protested their loyalty to his Crowne and Person; and did not omit by Letters and Messages, to solicite, as Advocates,



Advocates, those English Noblemen, whom they esteemed the best and truest Patriots, as the Earles of Essex, Pembrooke, and Holland, as supposing that this Warre was not approved of by any that were firme to the Cause of Religion and Liberties of both Kingdomes, (for so themselves expresse it.)

The Earle of DUMFERLING, having free passage about that time to the English Army, assured his follow-Covenanters, that those Noble fore-named Earles, and almost all the English Nobility, were much averse from this Warre, and favourers

of their suit to the King.

A treaty of Peace between the King and the Scotsis opened on the 10th of June, 1699.

Which did so much encourage the Covenanters to continue their humble Petitions to the King, (and God being pleased to give his blessing) that, after some few Messages to and fro, the King was pleased to give leave, that six of them should come and personally treat at the Earle of Arundell his Tent, upon the tenth of June, with some of the English Nobility; at which Discourses, some few daies after, the King himselfe vouchsafed to be present: At last, after many humble expressions of the Covenanters, and some expostulations of the King with them, by the happy mediation of wise and noble Counsellors, a Pacification was solemnly made upon such Articles as gave full satisfaction to all parties, save onely that the Scottish Covenanters were not pleased with some expressions which the King had used in the Preface to the Pacificatory Edict, as calling their late Synod, Pseudo-Synodus Glasguensis; and aspersing their proceedings in Armes, with such Epithites, as tumultyous, illegal, and rebellious.

Which notwithstanding, at the humble suit of them, the King was pleased to moderate, to expunge some of those harsh phrases; as likewise to explaine more cleerely other ambiguous sentences, to take-away all suspicions from peoples hearts; the Copies of which were delivered to divers of the English Nobility, who had taken faithful paines in procuring that happy peace; that, if any doubts should afterwards happen, their judgements might be taken concerning the intention of the

The King also declared, for satisfaction of the Scots, That, though his expressions at some places might seeme harsh, yet his meaning to them was never the worse; That care must be taken of his owne reputation in forraigne parts; and that litigation about words was vaine, when the matter was cleere, and their suit wholly granted.

The King granted them a free National Synod, to be holden upon the sixth of August following, and a Parliament to begin upon the 20th day of the same Moneth, to confirme and ratifie what the Synod should decree; which the Scots thankfully receive, esteeming that to be the only proper and efficacious way to settle a firme peace both in Church and State.

They were also joyful, that the King had promised to be there himselfe in person. But that hope afterwards failed them; for the King excused himselfe, affirming, that urgent and weighty affaires at London, as he was certified by Letters from his Queen and Council, required his presence there; but that he would send a Deputy

a Deputy thither, with full power to make good whatsoever he had promised; which was the Earle of TRAQUARE.

This Pacification, to the great joy of good men, was solemnly concluded on the The Pacification is 18th of June, 1639, and both Armies, within eight and forty houres, to be disbanded: concluded on the which was accordingly done, and both the English and Scots returned home. 18th of June, 1639. which was accordingly done, and both the English and Scots returned home,

praising God; who, without any effusion of blood, had compounded this difference, and prevented a Warre so wickedly designed.

But that joy lasted not long; for the Earle of TRAQUARE, the King's Commis. The Scottish Parliasioner, could not agree with the Scottish Parliament; the Scots complaining. that the king does not pernothing was seriously performed, which the King had promised at the Pacification; form the articles of the Pacification. as shall more appeare afterward.

But, however it were, within a little time after that the King had been at London, that paper which the Scots avowed to containe the true conditions of that Pacification, was by the King disavowed, and commanded by Proclamation to be burned by the hands of the hangman: though the Contents of that Paper were not named at all in the Proclamation, nor the people of England acquainted with any of them. Which put the English in great feare that the former Counsels of divisions yet prevailed in the Court, especially discerning a shew of preparation for Warre againe.

But (leaving the Scots at their Parliament a while,) in the meane time, the Lord Went-WENTWORTH, Deputy of Ireland, arrived in England, and was received by the England. King with great expressions of grace and favour, dignified with a higher Title, and And is created Earl

created Earle of Strafford.

of Strafford.

Great was the expectation of all the English, what might be the effect of his coming-over; great was the opinion which men in general had conceived of his ability and parts; looking at him as the onely hinge, upon which the State was now likely to turne. But very different and various were the conjectures of Gentlemen at that time, in their ordinary discourses, (for I will relate the truth,) what use this great Statesman would make of his ability and favour.

Some (as they wished) did seeme to hope, when they considered his first right Principles, that whatsoever he had acted since his greatnesse, was but to ingratiate himselfe perfectly with the King; that so at last, by his wisdome and favour, he might happily prevaile both upon the King's judgement and affection, and carry him from those evil Counsels which he had long beene nurtured-in, to such waies as should render him most honourable and happy; That the Earle was so wise as to understand what most became a wise man, and would make greatnesse beloved and permanent.

But others durst not hope so much from him, when they considered his. Government in Ireland, and the ambition of the man: They feared that neither his vertue was great enough to venture his owne fortunes, by opposing any evil -Counsels about the King, nor his favour great-enough to prevaile in over-ruling; That he was sent-for onely to compleat that bad worke, which others, of lesse braine than he, had begun.

Which

Which [bad worke] he would sooner venture to do, than to make himselfe the author of a new and good one; seeing, it hath been observed, that few Statesmen have ever opposed Princes, but rather seconded and assisted them in their bad inclinations.

From whence it comes, that few Statesmen have converted Princes from ill courses, but been themselves perverted from that goodnesse which seemed to be before in them. Historians, therefore, neither imputed the goodnesse of Augustus to Marcus Agrippa, or Statilius Taurus; nor the faults of Tiberius to SE-According to that sentence of MACHIAVEL, Recta consilia, à quocunque profiscuntur, à Principis prudentia; non autem Principis prudentia à rectis consilis derivatur.

The king declares an intention of calling an English Parliament, to meet in April, 1640.

December, 1639, to summon an Irish Parliament.

The Parliament of Scotland is prorogued on the 18th of December, 1639.

The Scots send four

his breaches of the late Pacification.

At that time the King declared to his Council an intention that he had of calling a Parliament in England, to begin in April following. The people seemed to wonder at so great a novelty as the name of a Parliament; but feared some further designe, because it was so long deferred: whilest, in the meane time, preparations The Earl of Strafford for a Warre against Scotland seemed to go forward, and the Deputy of Ireland returns to Ireland in was first to go-over, and summon a Parliament in Ireland, which he accordingly did, crossing the Seas about the end of December.

> What worke he was to do there, the people knew not, but wished that the English Parliament might have begun before the Scottish businesse had proceeded too farre; which [meeting of the English Parliament] they supposed, might happily prevent so sad a Warre, and save those charges which would before April grow upon such warlike preparations, and require a supply from that Parliament: [for] that it were better to prevent such a necessity than purposely to stay till that necessity were made.

> On the 18th day of that December, the Earle of TRAQUARE, by a Command from the King, under his Privy Seale, broke-up the Parliament in Scotland, and prorogued it till the second day of June in the following years.

> The Scots complained that it was a new example and breach of their liberties, not heard-of before in twenty ages; That a Parliament, fully assembled, and compleat in all her Members, whilest businesse of moment was depending, should be dissolved without the consent of the House itselfe; That, whatsoever Kings in other Kingdomes might do, it concerned not them to enquire; but it was absolutely against their Lawes, according to which, the King had lately promised them he would onely:proceed.

> TRAQUARE, immediately upon the dissolution of the Scottish Parliament, hastened to the Court of England to certifie the King of all proceedings.

And the Parliament-Deputies of Scotland dispatched-away, with special in-Earls, as their Com-structions to the King, also foure Commissioners, the Earles of DUMFERLING and missioners, to the King, to complain of Lowden, Duclasse, and BARCLAY.

Their instructions were, That before the King himselfe, not the Council of Fingland (because of the independency of that Kingdome) they should complaine of those injuries, and intreat redresse, which had been offered to them since the Pacification; The dissolving of their Parliament; the Garrisoning of Edenburgh Castle with three times as many [soldiers] as would serve for defence; The garrisoning

Digitized by GOOGLE

risoning of Dun-Britain Castle with English Souldiers; That the Scots trading in England, but more especially in Ireland, were enforced to new Oathes, damning their late Covenant, and contrary to the Articles of Pacification.

They sent withal an information to the English Nation in general, touching all their proceedings and intentions, and expressing at large (as may be there read) what particular injuries they had received since the Pacification, and how much

contrary to that Agreement.

The foure Scottish forenamed Commissioners, after some audiences before the The king commits King, and divers of his English Council, were in March committed to Prison, the the four Scottish Commissioners to King intending shortly to charge them, the Parliament being neere; Lowden to Prison, in March,

the Tower, and the other three to other custody.

About this time the Earle of STRAFFORD, returning out of Ireland, where he The Earl of Strafford had held a short Parliament, and gotten foure Subsidies from them, came to the comes over to Eng-King againe; and, the English Parliament being presently to begin an accusation 1640. was drawne against Lowden, then Prisoner in the Tower, concerning a Letter written from the Scottish Covenanters to the French King; to which Epistle the said Earle had set his hand.

The matter of accusation was, That the Scots, weary of obedience to their owne King, had recourse to a forraigne Prince for assistance, and by that meanes might

draw the Armies of France into this Island.

His answer was, The Letter was written in May, 1639, when Scotland was threatned with a grievous invasion, and they had notice, that, by Ambassadors and Agents, their Cause was represented odious to all forraigne Princes and States: That their intention was to clear themselves from those aspersions abroad, and especially to the King of France, whose Ancestors had been ancient friends to the Kingdome of Scotland; and for feare least that King might possibly be wrought-

upon to be their Enemy otherwise.

That it was not to draw Warlike assistance from the King of France (which neverthelesse they thought lawful in an extreame necessity and persecution) but only his mediation in their behalf to their owne King; and that the Letter, well examined, would beare no other sense; Though there were mention of aid, yet their secret instructions to their Messenger had specified what kinde of aid it was which they desired; But, howsoever, they alledged, that the draught of that Letter did not then please them, nor was it at all consented-to, nor intended to be sent.; besides that, the Superscription, To the King, at which so great exception was taken, as if they acknowledged the French King for their Soveraigne, was not written at all by them, but added by some Enemy after that it was gotten-out of Besides all this, the thing was done before the Pacification and Act of Oblivion, and ought not now to be remembred against them. Whether their answer were sufficient or not, true it is, that nothing at all was made of that businesse. though the King himselfe at the beginning of the English Parliament, mentioned it against the Scots, as a proofe of their disloyalty, and justification of those Warlike preparations which he had made against them.

The

The Scots send an Parliament, in justification of their proceedings.

The Scots, in the meane time, had written to the English Parliament a large address to the English Justification of all their proceedings, intreating them, by the way of Brotherly advice, To be wary in vindicating their owne Lawes and Liberties, to frustrate the designe of those evil Counsellors, who had prosured this Parliament for no other end, than to arme the King with warlike supplies against his Scottish Subjects, and by that Warre to enslave, if not ruine, both the Nations; That, after so many violations and dissolutions of Parliaments in England, this was not called to redresse grievances, but to be so over-reached (if they were not careful and couragious) that no possibility should be left for the future of redressing any; That some dangerous practise might he well suspected, when, at the same time, a Parliament was denyed to Scotland, though promised by the word of a King; granted to England, when not expected; and obtruded upon Ireland, when not desired.

Many particulars of that nature were expressed in the Scottish Remonstrance.

CHAP.



CHAP. VI.

The Parliament beginneth in England, but is soone dissolved. The Clergy continue their Convocation. The Scots enter into England. Some passages of the Warre. A Parliament is called to begin on the third of November. A Truce betweene the Armies for two Moneths.

PON the thirteenth of April the Parliament began; when the King produced The English Parliathat forenamed writing of his Scottish Subjects to the French King, as an apparent neets on the token of their disloyalty, and a necessity in him of chastising them by Armes; for which he had already made so great a preparation, as required a present supply of money from this Parliament. To the same purpose that the King had briefly expressed himself, the Lord Keeper Finch, in a long and eloquent Oration, dilated the businesse.

Twelve subsidies were demanded by the King, in lieu of which, the release of Ship-Money was promised; to which demand answer was made by divers Members of the House in several Speeches, "That Redresse of grievances was the chiefe end of assembling Parliaments, and ought to precede granting of Subsidies. Which not onely Reason, but the constant Practise of all ages, had confirmed; That there was never more need of redressing grievances than at this time; without which the people would repine to part with twelve Subsidies; That the sum was extraordinary great, especially to be given for releasing of that which they never conceived the King had any Title-to, but had taken by power against the Lawes."

The King promised that grievances should be afterwards redressed, but required the Money first, because there was a necessity of hastening the Warre; without which the opportunity of Summer would be lost. To which it was answered by many, "That the people had no reason to pay for that which was never caused nor desired by them, nor could any way prove to their good, but, quite contrary, to the danger and detriment of the whole Kingdome; That the same people would undoubtedly

undoubtedly pay with more willingnesse so many Subsidies to prevent that unhappy Warre, to settle the State, and punish the principal contrivers or assistors of that disturbance."

Among all the Gentlemen of the House of Commons, who spake to that purpose, the Lord George Digby, Sonne to the Earle of Bristol (a young Nobleman of extraordinary abilities) was eminent for a Speech there; wherein complaining that the House was required to give present answer concerning supplies to the King, to ingage himself in a Warre, and that a Civil Warre; For, said he, so I must needs call it, seeing we are of the same Religion, and under the same King. He divided his Complaint into five heads:

- 1. We are not permitted to redresse grievances at all.
- 2. We are not permitted so much as to represent to His Majesty the dis-affection of his Subjects to this Warre.
- 3. We are not permitted to say, That we thinke they are the same persons that are the causers of our grievances, and the grievances of Scotland; and that the cutting-off of those Incendiaries of State, would be a safe, easie, and honourable cure.
- 4. That Warre will make the breach wider, and the remedy desperate.
- 5. That the best Justice is, to fill the pits which are made to intropothers, with the bodies of those that digged them, &c.

Master Pym also, a grave and religious Gentleman, in a long Speech of almost two houres, recited a Catalogue of all the grievances which at that time lay heavy upon the Common-wealth.

Of which many abbreviated Copies, as extracting the heads onely, were with great greedinesse taken by Gentlemen, and others throughout the Kingdom; for it was not then in fashion to print Speeches of Parliament.

Divers of the Members besides (too many to be here named) did fully descant upon such particular grievances, as they had informed themselves of, in their several Counties and Burroughs.

But it is most true, though it have been said, Quicquid multis peccatur, inultum est, That there was never any Parliament which was more unanimous in apprehension of grievances, and yet more moderate in the Language and manner of declaring against them. And so great seemed to be their care of offending in this Parliament, (being the first that in so many yeares had been granted to England;) that, notwithstanding they perceived that the Money they were to give to the King, must be employed against their owne interest, yet they took the Subsidies into consideration;

consideration; by which they might, perchance, gaine the King's affection to Parliaments; and were content to hope, that, whilest the Houses sate, the bad Council about the King might be awed into moderation; and the Warre against Scotland, by wise and honest interpositions, might be againe composed, as it had been the Summer before.

But whilest the businesse was in debate, whether they were not quick enough in granting, or the Conditions were too much feared by the King, I will not

judge, but onely relate what was done.

The King in Person came into the House upon the fifth of May, and dissolved The King dissolves the Parliament, but used faire language to them, protesting that he would it on the 5th of May, governe as much according to I aw as if a Parliament were constantly sixting. governe as much according to Law, as if a Parliament were constantly sitting: Yet, the next day after the dissolution of it, some Members were imprisoned; the And the next day Lord Brooke was searched for Papers, his Study, Cabinets, and Pockets; Master commits some of the Bellosis, and Sir John Hotham, were committed to Prison for Speeches, but on account of their soone discharged; Master CREW, who was a Member of the House of Commons, Speeches in Parliaand was in the Chaire for Petitions concerning Ministers, was committed to the ment. Tower, for not discovering some Petitions delivered to him in Parliament, and continued a Prisoner almost to the beginning of the next Parliament.

After the dissolution of this Parliament, the Convocation of Divines continued The Convocation of their sitting, and by authority from the King, made divers Canons, and an Oath to sit after the Disso-

to be imposed not onely upon Clergymen, but on many of the Laiety.

That continuance of the Convocation, (whatsoever themselves, perchance igno-ment. rant of the Law, might thinke of it,) was judged to be very illegal; as it appeared by the Votes of the succeeding Parliament, and the opinion of Lawyers delivered there.

When Master Bagshaw, the November following, inveighing against those Canons which were made whilest they sate, proved the Bishops and Clergy in a premunire: The Lord Diggy at the same time affirming, that their Convocation was a new Synod, patched out of an old Conventicle Many other Lawyers of

note, at several times, argued the case concerning those Canons.

Insomuch that the House of Commons, in December following, nullo contradicente, resolved that those Canons were against the fundamental Lawes of the Kingdome, the Property and Liberty of the Subject: And, in the following April, 1641, falling againe upon the late Convocation, for their Canons and other misdemeanours, they voted the Convocation-House in 200,000 pounds fine to the King; The Archbishop of Canterbury to pay 20,000 pounds, the Archbishop of Yorke 10,000 pounds, the Bishop of Chester 3000 pounds; and the rest of the Clergy, according to their abilities proportionably, to make-up the summe.

Certaine it is, it was not in any substantial way advantageous to the King; but onely to give them time and opportunity to taxe the Clergy in Money for supply-

ing his Majesty in the Warre then on foot against the Scots.

The King must needs be driven to a great exigent at that time, having so expensive a Warre in hand, and wanting the assistance of Parliament.

The courses that were then taken by the King, to supply that defect, were partly

lution of the Parlia-

ney by illegal methods.

The King raises mo- partly the contribution of the Clergy, to whom that Warre was lesse displeasing, than to the Laiety.

> Collections were made among the Papists; Writs of Ship-money were issuedout againe, in a greater proportion than before; great Loanes were attempted to be drawne from the City of London, to which purpose the names of the richest Citizens were by command returned to the Council-Board. But, these waies being not sufficient, some others were made use of, which were of a nature more unusual, as the seizing of Bolloine [or Bullion] in the Tower; the Lord Cotting-TON also, for the King's use, tooke-up a great Commodity of Pepper at the Exchange, to be sold againe at an under-rate.

> A consultation was also had of coyning 400,000 l. of base Money, upon allegation that Queen Elizabeth had done the like for her Irish Warres: but the King waved that, upon reasons which the Merchants gave of the inconveniencies of it.

The Scots resolve to march an Army into England, in June, 1640.

The Scots, hearing of the breach of this English Parliament, thought it high time to provide for their owne safety; and, being restrained in their Trade, and impoverished by losse of Ships seized in divers parts, resolve to enter England with a sword in one hand, and a Petition in the other; signifying in the meane time to the people of England in two large Remonstrances, what their intentions were to that Nation, and the reasons of their entrance; which who so pleases, may reade at large in their printed Booke.

The King raises an When the King had notice of the Scots intentions, a Fleet was forthwith sent English Army to meet at York, under to annoy the Maritime Coasts of Scotland, and a Land-Army to meet at Yorke, the command of the where the Earl of STRAFFORD, as President of the North, commanded in Chief, though the Earle of Northumberland, at the time of raising the Army, was named Generalissimo, but, for want of health, could not be present.

A great Magazine of Ammunition had been sent to Hull, Newcastle, and Berwick, the Castle of Edenburgh being kept by RIVEN, a firme man to the King's side.

The common Soldiers of the English Army shew a great dislike of this war.

Earl of Strafford.

But in the Expedition of the King's Army towards the North, it was a marvellous thing to observe in divers places the aversenesse of the Common Souldiers from this Warre.

Though Commanders and Gentlemen of great quality, in pure obedience to the King, seemed not at all to dispute the cause, or consequence, of this Warre; the Common Souldiers would not be satisfied, questioning in a mutinous manner, "Whether their Captaines were Papists or not," and in many places were not appeased till they saw them receive the Sacrament; laying violent hands on divers of their Commanders, and killing some, uttering in bold speeches their distaste of the Cause, to the astonishment of many, that common people should be sensible of publike Interest and Religion, when Lords and Gentlemen seemed not to be so.

By this backwardnesse of the English Common Souldiers, it came to passe that the Warre proved not so sharpe and fatal to both Nations, as it might otherwise have done.

Some

Some blood was shed, but very little, first, at Newburne, a Towne five miles The Scots take posdistant from Newcastle, where part of the English Army encamped to intercept session of the Counties of Northumberthe passage of the Scots, as they marched toward Newcastle.

land and Durham,

But many of the English Souldiers forsooke their Commanders and fled, sooner in August, 1640. than the use of that Nation is to do in Warre: But the English Horse made good a fight, and with great courage and resolution charged upon the Scots, but all in vaine, their number being too small.

In this Skirmish, which happened upon the 28th of August, the number of men A skirmish at New. slaine on both sides is not related, either by the English or Scottish Relation; but August, 1640.

certaine it is, that it was not great.

Three valiant and active Commanders of the English Army were taken Prisoners, Colonel WILMOT, Sir John DIGBY, and ONEALE, the two latter being Papists, and both Captaines of Horse.

This fight opened that rich Towne of Newcastle to the Scots, and within few daies after, they put a Garrison into Durham, commanded by the Earle of Dumferling, and, taking that Fort of Newcastle upon Tine, intercepted some Ships which were newly-arrived there with Provision of Corne for the King's Army.

Some blood was also shed about the same time, when part of the English Garrison at Berwick, hearing that some Ammunition was layed-up in a little Towne Another at Dunsian of Scotland, Dunsian, made an attempt upon it, but found it better fortified near Berwick. than was expected, and were repelled with some slaughter; from whence, hearing that a greater power of Scots was making toward them, under the command of the Lord Hadinton, (who unfortunately perished afterward, blowne-up with powder at Dunglasse) they returned to Berwick.

The King, during these Skirmishes, had, by Proclamation, warned all the English Nobility, with their followers and Forces, to attend his Standard at Yorke against the Scots, on the 20th of September; where, whilest himselfe in Person resided, he received an humble Petition from the Scots, containing an expression of their loyalty to him, and the innocence of their intentions toward England.

But their expressions were in such general termes, that the King returned answer to the Earle of LANURICK, Secretary for Scotland, Commanding them to specifie their demands more particularly: Which, whilest the Scots prepared to do, it pleased God to open the hearts of many English Lords, who, considering and A great number of bewailing the great calamity and dishonour which England was then throwne into attended the King at by these unhappy proceedings of the King, framed an humble Letter, subscribed York petition him by all their hands, and sent it to his Majesty, wherein they represent to him the in September, 1640, miserable condition of the Kingdome, and mischiefes attending that wicked Warre; liament as the danger of his Person, the waste of his Revenue, the burden of his Subjects. the rapines committed by that Army which he had raised; wherein Papists, and others ill-affected to Religion, are armed in Commands, who are not by the Lawes permitted to have Armes in their owne houses; The great mischiefe which may fall upon the Kingdome, if his intentions, which are reported, of bringing-in Irish and forraigne Forces, should take effect; The urging of Ship-money; The multitude

multitude of Monopolies and other Patents, to the great and universal grievance of his people; The great griefe of the Subjects, for the long intermission of Parliaments, for dissolving of the last, and former dissolutions of such as have been called, without any good effect: For remedy whereof, and for prevention of future dangers to his owne Royal Person, and the whole State, they humbly intreat his Majesty, That he would be pleased to summon a Parliament within some short and convenient time, whereby the causes of these, and other great grievances. which the people lye-under, may be taken-away, and the Authors and Counsellors of them may be brought to legal tryal and condigne punishment; And that this Warre may be composed without blood, in such manner as may conduce to the honour and safety of his Majesty, the comfort of the people, and uniting of both Kingdomes against the Common Enemy of the Reformed Religion. scribed by almost twenty Earles and Barons.

The King complies with this advice, and summons another Parliament to meet at Westminster, on the 3d of November,

The King, receiving this Message from the Peeres of England, by his Proclamation ordained a day, which was upon 24th September, for all the Lords to meet at Yorke, to whom he declared, that, of his owne free accord, he had determined to call a Parliament in England, to begin as soone as possibly could be, allowing the usual time for issuing out of Writs, which was upon the third of November ensuing, 1640.

But he desired, first, to consult with them, what answer to returne to the Scots demands, and how with his honour he might deale with them, who had so boldly invaded England.

And, to make them understand the whole state of the businesse, he commanded the Earle of Traquare, who had been his Commissioner there, to relate all occurrences since the beginning.

He desired likewise their advice, how his Army might be payed before the sup-

plies of Parliament could come.

A treaty with the Scots for a Cessation tober, 1640.

After many debates, and different opinions in point of honour and convenience, of Hostilities, in Oc. it was at last agreed by the greater part of Peeres, and so concluded, that sixteene Lords should be chosen to treat with the Scots, and agree upon what Conditions they thought fit.

> Eight Earles were named, Bedford, Essex, Hartfort, Salisbury, War-WICK, HOLLAND, BRISTOLL, and BARKSHIRE; as likewise eight Barons, WHARTON, PAGET, KIMBOLTON, BROOKE, PAWLET, HOWARD, SAVILE, and DUNSMORE.

> The Scots were required to send as many, with full Commission, to whom Letters of safe-conduct in the amplest manner were granted.

> When the matter came to debate, the Earle of Bristoll for the most part was

Prolocutour to the English, and the Earle of Lowden to the Scots.

After many demands on both sides, and expostulations upon slighter matters, which were easily reconciled, there was one point, which seemed too hard a case in the eyes of the English Peeres, that the Scottish Army should be payed by the English, whilest their owne Army was in great distresse by reason of Arreares.

But

But in conclusion, those honest Lords, who understood the condition of that unhappy Warre, were content upon any termes to make an end of it; and in conclusion an agreement was made upon these termes:

- 1. A Truce, or Cessation of Armes, for two Moneths, till the 16th Treaty agreed on October 16, 1640.
 - 2. That 850 l. a-day should be paid to the Scots, during that Truce.
- 3. That, if it were not payed, the Scots might force it from the Counties of Northumberland, Cumberland, Westmorland, and Durham.
- 4. That those Counties should be allowed the Scots for their winter-Quarters.
 - 5. No new preparations for Warre to be made.
- 6. That private injuries should not breake the Truce, so satisfaction were made upon complaint.
- 7. That Merchants might freely traffique in either Kingdome, without Letters of safe-conduct, but Souldiers without leave might not passe their limits.

Upon such termes was this unnatural Warre (although the Armies could not as yet be disbanded) brought to a Cessation; and both Nations rested in assured confidence, that a peace must needs follow, since the whole matter was now to be debated in the English Parliament, which was to begin about a fortnight after; for it was likely that a Parliament should put a period to that Warre, which could never have been begun, but for want of a Parliament. They were also confident, that that freedome which the fundamental Lawes and Constitution of the Kingdome of England allow to Parliaments, could not be denyed to this (though to many others it had long been) as being that Parliament, to which the King was necessitated; and the onely way which was now left him to tread, after so many deviations unfortunately tried; and upon which the people had set-up their utmost hope, whom it seemed not safe, after so long suffering, to provoke any further.

In what a desperate condition the Kingdome of England was at that time, what necessity there was of a present cure, with how much difficulty that cure was to be wrought, and with what warinesse and wisdome it concerned both King and people to play their parts, a judicious Reader may partly conjecture by the

former passages already related.

But

-46

But further to enlighten the Reader (for in this plaine Relation I shall be sparing to use any descants of my owne) I will referre him to Speeches which at the beginning of this Parliament were made by judicious Gentlemen, and those of greatest moderation, labouring, as much as they could possibly, to spare the King, and touch tenderly upon his Honour; which I shall mention anon.

According to the reason of the Parliament and Kingdome, went along the sense of Courtiers themselves (as was expressed in an ingenuous Treatise found in the privy Chamber) concerning the condition in which the King and Kingdome of England were, when this so-much-expected Parliament was to begin.

CHAP.



CHAP. VII.

The beginning of the English Parliament. Grievances examined. Sufferers relieved. Delinquents questioned. The Archbishop of Canterbury committed to the Tower. The flight of Secretary Windebanke, and of the Lord Reeper FINCH.

ON the third of November 1640, the Parliament began; where the King ex-The beginning of the pressed himselfe very well, in a Speech gracious and acceptable to both Houses; English Parliament, November 8, 1640. who did not expect from him any such acknowledgement of former errours, as November 3, 1640. might seeme too low for the Majestie of his Person; but onely desired to gaine

his affection for the future. Very pleasing to them all was that gracious expression, that He did now cleerly and freely put himselfe upon the love and affections of his English Subjects, desiring them to consider the best way for the Safety and Security of the Kingdome of England; and in order to it, for satisfaction of their just grievances, wherein he would so heartily concur, that the world might see his intentions were to make it a glorious and flourishing Kingdome. In which businesse he did freely and wil. * lingly leave it to them where to beginne.

He desired also that all Jealousies and Suspicions might be layed-aside by them, which he promised to doe on his part. And withal, to give some reasonable colour to his former Warre, whether to excuse or justifie the Proceedings of it, he seemed as yet much distasted with the boldnesse of the Scots, who had entred England with an Army against his will; calling them by the name of Rebels; and that it concerned the honour of him and England, to drive them out againe.

And, in his second Speech, two daies after, I told you (said he) that the Kebels must be put out of this Kingdome; it is true, I must needs call them so, so long as they have an Army that do invade us; although I am under Treaty with them, and under my Great Seale doe call them Subjects; for so they are too.

His

His desire to have them out, was sweetned with that reason, That he was sensible how much his English Subjects of the North would suffer otherwise.

All which, with more particulars, was set-forth in a long Oration by the Lord Finch; who likewise justified the King's intention of calling this Parliament, before the Peeres petitioned him at Yorke.

Though the King were thanked for his Grace towards his English Parliament; yet that motion, of expelling the Scots, was otherwise considered of by the Houses, as will appeare in the particulars of it: For about a weeke after it was ordered by House of Commons, That 100,000 l. should be paid to the two Armies, to be levied rateably upon all the Counties of England, (except the Northerne Counties, which were then charged) and, till it could be levied, the Money to be taken-up at interest.

Scottish Commissioners come to London, November, 19, 1640.

And Scottish Commissioners were allowed to come and exhibite their complaints, and dispute the businesse at London; who accordingly came thither about the nineteenth day of the same Moneth; for the business was not yet ended, but still in Treaty, which Treaty (as the King said in his Speech) was but transported from Rippon to London.

Before the great cure, which was expected from this Parliament, could go-on, it was necessary that some time should be spent in searching and declaring the wounds; which, in divers elegant and judicious Speeches, was done by some Members of both Houses.

The abuses which of late yeares had been committed about Religion, and the manifold violations of Lawes and Liberties, were upon the first day after the House of Commons was settled, being the ninth of November, enumerated and discoursed-upon by Master Grinston, Sir Benjamin Rudyerd, Master Pym, and Master Bagshaw; and the abuses of Ireland, reflecting much upon the Earle of Strafford, were opened by Sir John Clotworthy, of Devon, but living in Ireland.

The like Speeches for many daies following, were made by divers Gentlemen of great quality; where, in the midst of their complaints, the King was never mentioned, but with great Honour; They alwaies mixing thanks for the present hope of redresse, with their complaints of former grievances.

The first of which they rendred to the King, and threw the other upon his Ministers; of which if the Reader would see a perfect exemplar, Sir Benjamin Rudyerd's Speech (the second that was delivered in the House) will best discover the present state of grievances, and the way of sparing the King; he being a Religious, Learned, and Judicious Gentleman,

Cujus erant mores qualis facundia.

Whose Speech I shall wholly insert, that the condition of the State may the better be understood.

Master

Master Speaker:

WEE are here assembled to doe Goa's businesse, and the King's, in which A speech of Sir Benour owne is included, as we are Christians, as we are Subjects: Let us, jamin Rudyerd, on first, feare God; then shall we honour the King the more: for I am afraid we have beene the lesse prosperous in Parliaments, because we have preferred other matters before him. Let Religion be our Primum quærite; for all things else are but Et cæteras to it: yet we may have them too, sooner and surer, if we give God his preceedence.

We well know what disturbance hath been brought upon the Church for vaine, petty, trifles; How the whole Church, the whole Kingdome, hath

been troubled, where to place a Metaphor, an Altar.

We have seene Ministers, their wives, children, and families, undone, against Law, against conscience, against all bowels of compassion, about not dancing upon Sundaies: What do these sort of men thinke will become of themselves, when the Master of the House shall come and finde them thus beating their fellow-Servants?

These inventions were but sieves, made of purpose to winnow the best

men; and that is the Devil's occupation.

They have a minde to worry preaching; for I never yet heard of any but diligent Preachers that were vext with these and the like devices.

They despise Prophecy, and, as one said, they would faine be at something were like the Masse, that will not bite; a muzzled Religion. They would evaporate and dis-spirit the power and vigour of Religion, by drawing it out into solemne and specious formalities, into obsolete, antiquated, Ceremonies, new furbish d-up. And this (belike) is that good worke in hand, which Doctor Heylin hath so celebrated in his bold Pamphlets: All their acts and actions are so full of mixtures, involutions, and complications, as nothing is cleare, nothing sincere, in any of their proceedings. Let them not say, That these are the perverse suspicions, malicious interpretations, of some factious spirits amongst us, when a Romanist hath bragged and congratulated in print, That the face of our Church begins to alter, the Language of our Religion to change: and Sancia Clara hath published, That, if a Synod were held Non intermixtis Puritanis, setting Puritans aside, our Articles and their Religion would soone be agreed.

They have so brought it to passe, that, under the name of Puritans, all our Religion is branded; and, under a few hard words against Jesuits, all

Popery is countenanced.

Whosoever

Whosoever squares his actions by any rule, either divine or humane, he is a Puritan: Whosoever would be governed by the King's Lawes, he is a Puritan.

He that will not do whatsoever other men would have him do, he is a Puritan. Their great worke, their Masterpiece, now is, to make all those

of the Religion, to be the suspected party of the Kingdome,

Let us further reflect upon the ill effect these courses have wrought, what by a defection from us on the one side, a separation on the other; some, imagining whither we are tending, made haste to turne, or declare themselves Papists before-hand; thereby hoping to render themselves the more gracious, the more acceptable. A great company of the King's Subjects, striving to holdcommunion with us; but seeing how farre we were gone, and fearing how much further we would go, were forc'd to fly the Land, some into other inhabited Countries, very many into savage Wildernesses, because the Land would not beare them. Do not they that cause this, cast a reproach upon the Government?

Master Speaker:

Let it be our principal care, that these waies neither continue, nor return upon us; if we secure our Religion, we shall cut-off and defeat many plots that are now on foot by them and others. Beleeve it, Sir, Religion hath been for a long time, and still is, the great designe upon this Kingdome. It is a knowne and practised principle, That they who would introduce another Religion into the Church, must, first, trouble and disorder the Government of the State, that so they may worke their ends in a confusion, which now lies at the doore.

I come next, Master Speaker, to the King's businesse more particularly; which indeed is the Kingdomes; for one hath no existence, no being, without the other, their relation is so neere; yet some have strongly and subtilly laboured [to make] a divorse [between them], which hath been the very bane of both King and Kingdome.

When foundations are shaken, it is high time to looke to the building. He hath no heart, no head, no soule, that is not moved in his whole man, to looke upon the distresses, the miseries, of the Common-wealth;—that is not forward, in all that he is and hath, to redresse them in a right

way.

The King, likewise, is reduced to great streights, wherein it were undutifulnesse beyond inhumanity to take advantage of him: Let us rather make it an advantage for him, to do him best service, when he hath most

need, not to seeke our owne good, but in him, and with them; else we shall commit the same crimes ourselves, which we must condemne in others.

His Majesty hath cleerly and freely put himself into the hands of this Parliament; and I presume, there is not a man in this House, but feeles himself advanced in this high Trust: but, if he prosper no better in our hands, than he hath done in theirs, who have hitherto had the handling of his affaires, we shall for ever make our-selves unworthy of so gracious a confidence.

I have often thought and said, "That it must be some great extremity, that would recover and rectifie this State; and when that extremity did come, it would be a great hazard, whether it might prove a remedy or ruine." We are now, Master Speaker, upon that vertical, turning-point; and there-

fore it is no time to palliate, to foment our owne undoing.

Let us set upon the remedy; we must, first, know the disease; But to discover the diseases of the State, is (according to some) to traduce the Government; yet others are of opinion, That this is the balfe-way to the Cure.

His Majesty is wiser then they that have advised him; and therefore he cannot but see and feele their subverting, destructive, Counsels, which speak lowder than I can speak of them; for they ring a doleful, deadly, knell, over the whole Kingdome: His Majesty best knowes who they are. For us, let the matters bolt-out the men, their actions discover them.

They are men that talk largely of the King's Service, yet have done none

but their owne; and that is too evident.

They speak highly of the King's power; but they have made it a miserable power, that produceth nothing but weaknesse, both to the King and Kingdome.

They have exhausted the King's Revenue to the bottome,—nay, through

the bottome, and beyond.

They have spent vast sums of money wastefully, fruitlessly, dangerously; so that more money, without other Counsels, will be but a swift undoing.

They have alwaies peremptorily pursued one obstinate, pernicious, course; first, they bring things to an extremity; then they make that extremity (of their owne making,) the reason of their next action, seven times worse than the former; and there we are at this instant.

They have almost spoiled the best-instituted Government in the world, for Soveraignty in a King, and Liberty to the Subject; the proportionable temper of both which, makes the happiest State for power, for riches, for

dur ation.

They have, unmannerly and slubbringly, cast all their projects, all their machinations,

machinations, upon the King; which no wise, or good, Minister of State ever did, but would still take all harsh, distastefull, things upon themselves, to cleare, to sweeten, their Master.

They have not suffered His Majesty to appeare unto bis people in his

owne native goodnesse.

They have eclipsed him by their interpositions. Although grosse, condense, bodies may obscure and hinder the Sun from shining-out, yet be is still the same in his owne splendour. And, when those bodies are removed, all creatures under him are directed by his light, and comforted by his Beames.

But they have framed a superstitious, seeming, Maxime of State for their owne turne, That, if a King will suffer men to be torne from him, he shall never have any good service done him. When the plaine truth is, That this is the surest way to preserve a King from having ill servants about him; and the Divine truth likewise is, Take-away the wicked from the King, and his Throne shallbe established.

Master Speaker: Now we see what the sores are in general; and, when more particulars shall appeare, let us be very careful to draw-out the cores of them, not to skin them over with a slight, suppurating, festering, cure, least they breake-out againe into a greater mischiefe: Consider of it, consult,

and speake your minds.

It bath heretofore been boasted, That the King should never call a Parliament, till be had no need of his people. These were words of division, and Malignity. For the King must alwaies, according to his occasions, have use of the people's power, hearts, hands and purses; and the people will alwaies have need of the King's Clemency, Justice, and Protection: And this recipro-

cation is the strongest, the sweetest, union.

It bath been said too of late, That a Parliament will take-away more from the King, than they will give bim. It may well be said, That those things which will fall-away of themselves, will enable the Subject to give him more than can be taken any way else. Projects and Monopolies are but leaking Conduit-Pipes; The Exchequer itselfe, at the fullest, is but a Cisterne; and now a broken one: Frequent Parliaments onely are the fountaines; and I do not doubt, but in this Parliament, as we shall be free in our advices, so shall we be the more free of our purses, that His Majesty may experimentally finde the real difference of better Counsels, the true, solid, grounds of raising and establishing his Greatnesse, never to be brought againe (by God's blessing) to such dangerous, such desperate, perplexities.

Master Speaker: I confesse I have now gone in a way much against my nature, and somewhat against my custome heretofore used in this place.

Digitized by Google

N. B.

But the deplorable, dismal, condition, both of Church and State, hath so farre wrought upon my judgement, as it hath convinced my disposition; yet am I not vir sanguinum; I love no man's ruine: I thank God I neither hate anyman's person, nor envy any man's fortune; onely I am zealous for a thorow Reformation, in a time that exacts, that extorts, it. Which, I humbly beseech this House, may be done with as much len'ty, as much moderation, as the publike safety of the King and Kingdom can possibly admit.

In so great a concurrence of businesse, and weighty affaires, concerning the safety, and the very being, of three Kingdomes, as farre as the Parliament had leisure to consider and redresse the damages, or other injuries, of particular persons; Their first care was to vindicate distressed Ministers, who had been imprisoned, or deprived, by the Bishops, and all others who, in the Cause of Religion, had been persecuted by them: Many of those Ministers, within few weeks after the beginning of the Parliament, were released from durance, and restored to their Charges, with damages from their oppressours; Many Doctors and other Divines, that had been most busic in promoting the late Church-innovations about Altars and other Ceremonies, and therefore most gracious and flourishing in the State, were then questioned and committed; insomuch as the change, and the suddennesse of it, seemed wonderful to men, and may worthily serve as a document to all posterity,

Quam fragili loco starent superbi, In what fraile places stand the proudest men.

Among divers others of this Kinde, and the most remarkable of all, was that The Parliament gives reliefe which the Parliament, immediately upon their first sitting, gave to three relief to Dr. Bast-persecuted Gentlemen, Doctor Bastwick, a Physitian, Master Prunke, a Lawyer, and Mr. Burton. and Master Burton, a Minister.

The whole passage of whose Story we will here insert in one continued discourse, that it may not hereafter interrupt any other Relations of businesse.

These three men, for the same offence, or very little differing in substance, (as those that read their extant Bookes may perceive) not being able to containe themselves in such a cause, had written against the manner of English Episcopacy, and those inconveniences, or extravagancies, which, as they conceived, flowed from it, to the prejudice of Purity in Religion; For which offence they were all three heavily censured in the High-Commission Court, at several times, and committed to several Prisons, where they long remained in durance, till afterward their cause was brought into the Starre-Chamber, where they received a sad doome; and the same day stood all three upon Pillories in Westminster Palace-yard, where there eares were likewise cut-off*.

-It

On the 30th day of June, 1637. The Lords, or Members of the Court of Starr-Chamber, who were principally concerned in passing this cruel sentence, were Sir Fhomas Coventry, the Lord Keeper

They return to Lon.

don with great pub-

the 28th of Novem-

ber, 1640.

It seemed, I remember, to many Gentlemen (and was accordingly discoursed-of) a spectacle no lesse strange than sad, to see three of several Professions, the noblest in the Kingdome, Divinity, Law, and Physick, exposed at one time to such an ignominous punishment, and condemned to it by Protestant Magistrates, for such Tenents in Religion, as the greatest part of Protestants in England held, and all the Reformed Churches in Europe maintained.

But the Court of Starre-Chamber seemed to take cognizance onely of their unlawful publishing those Tenents, and disobedience to the Authority then in being.

This was but the beginning of their punishment; they were afterward banished to remote places of the Kingdom, and there kept in close and solitary confinement, not allowed pen and paper, nor the sight of any friends, no not so much (for two of Their imprisonments, at several rethem were married) as of their owne wives. moves, were in the Castles of Lanceston, Lancaster, Carnarvon, and the Isles of Scylly, Garnsey, and Jersey.

These three, within five daies after the Parliament began to sit, were sent-for home from their banishment; and accordingly Master PRYNNE, and Master BURTON, upon the 28th of November came into London, (Doctor BASTWICK lick acclamations, on within few daies after, in the same manner) being met upon the way, some few miles from London, and brought into the City by five thousand persons, both men and women, on horseback, who, all of them, wore in their hats Rosemary and

Bayes, in token of Joy and Triumph.

The discourses of men upon this action, were very different: some both of the Clergy, of the Court, and other Gentlemen besides, did not conceale their dislike of it, affirming that it was a bold and tumultuous affront to Courts of Justice, and the King's Authority: Others, who pitied the former sufferings of those men, and they that wished Reformation in matters of Justice, were pleased with it; hoping that it would worke good effects in the King's minde, and make him sensible how his people stood disaffected to the rigour of such proceedings; and esteemed it as a good presage of the ruine of those two Courts, the High-Commission, and the Star-Chamber: Which proved true within halfe a yeare after.

How it wrought at that present upon the King, is not knowne. But actions of that nature, where the people, of their owne accords, ina seeming tumultuous manner, do expresse their liking or dislike of matters in Government, cannot have alwaies the same successe, but worke, according to the disposition of the Prince or Governour, either to a sense causing Reformation, or to an hatred of them as upbraiders of his actions; aut corrigunt, aut irritant.

Within a moneth after, the businesse of these three men was, by Order of

the Parliament, referred to Committees to examine and report.

Upon which reports, not two Moneths after, it was voted by the House of

Keeper of the Great Seal, Lord Cottington, and Sir John Finch, who was, at that time, Chief Justice of the Court of Common Pleas. See the Selection from the Harleian Miscellany, in one volume, quarto, printed for Kearsley, bookseller, in Fleet-Street, Number 46, in the year, 1793, in pages 314, 315, 316, &c .- 324 of the said Volume.

Commons,

Commons, That those Judgements so given against them (but severally for every one of the three) were illegal, unjust, and against the liberty of the Subject; and, within a moneth after, voted that they should receive damages for their great sufferings; and that satisfaction should be made them in money, to be paid by the Archbishop of Canterbury. the High-Commissioners, and those Lords who had voted against them in the Star-Chamber; That they should be againe restored to their callings, and receive Master Burton 6000 L and Master Prynne 5000 L. Doctor BASTWICK, in a vote by himself, was given the like summe.

As these were comforted after their sufferings, so other Divines (for the begin- Proceedings against ning of this Parliament seemed a little Doomesday,) after a short pleasure, were scandalous clergy-

brought to their torment.

A Committee was made to enquire of scandalous Ministers; which appeared in two kindes (and were accordingly censured) either loose livers, and men of a debauched behaviour, (for many such were gotten into good preferments, and countenanced to affront the Puritans;) or else offendours in way of Superstition; of the former sort many were in a short time accused, by degrees censured, and turnedout of their livings: Of the latter sort there was no small number of offendors; nor in likelihood could that (which had beene the way to all high preferments) want walkers in it.

Among all the men of his ranke, Dr. Coosens, Master of Saint Peter's Col. Dr. Coosens. ledge in Cambridge, was most noted for superstitious and curious observations in many kindes; a man not noted for any great depth of learning, nor yet scandalous for ill-living, but onely forward to shew himselfe in formalities and outward Ceremonies concerning Religion, many of which were such as a Protestant State might not well suffer.

This man was questioned upon many Articles; some by himselfe; some, where other Divines were joyned with him; imprisoned he was, and afterwards bailed; and, though deprived of some preferments, yet escaped without any great punishment, and was one of them, in that crowd of offendors, who might rejoyce that

the Parliament had so much businesse.

But greater Clergymen than Doctor Coosens were then to come upon the Dr. Wrenne, Bishop Stage, Bishop WRENNE, a man guilty of the same crime in Superstition, that of Norwich. Cousens was, as farre as concerned his owne person, but farre more guilty as a Magistrate, and able to impose it upon others, was upon the 19th of December accused of Treason, and entred into a recognizance of 30,000 l. to appeare, with three sureties engaged, each of them, in bonds of 10,000 l.

This WRENNE, being Bishop of Norwich, a Diocese in which there were as many strict Professors of Religion (commonly called Puritans) as in any part of England, had there violently pressed superstitious Ceremonies, or such as they conceived so, upon them, put-downe accustomed Lectures, and deprived many Ministers much beloved and reverenced among them. By which rigour he grew, accidentally, guilty of a wonderful crime against the wealth and prosperity of the State.

For

For many Tradesmen (with whom those parts abounded) were so afflicted and troubled with his Ecclesiastical censures and vexations, that, in great numbers, to avoid misery, they departed the Kingdome; some into New England, and other parts of America; and others into Holland, whither they transported their Manufactures of Cloth; [which was] not onely a losse by diminishing the present stock of the Kingdome, but a great mischiefe by impairing and endangering the losse of that peculiar Trade of Clothing, which hath been a plentiful fountaine of Wealth and Honour to the Kingdome of England, as it was expressed in the Parliament-Remonstrance. But more particular crimes were laid against the Bishop, which there may be occasion to discourse of hereafter, in the proceedings against him.

Dr. William Laud, terbury, Dec. 18, 1640.

The day before Bishop WRENNE was accused, being the 18th of December, a Archbishop of Can- greater man, both in Church and State, WILLIAM LAUD, Archbishop of Canterbury, was voted in the House of Commons guilty of High Treason; Master DENZILL HOLLIS, a Member of that House, was sent-up to the Lords, to appeach him there; upon which he was sequestred, and confined to the Black Rod. He was also charged by the Scottish Commissioners, together with the Earle of Strafford, as a chiefe Incendiary in the late Warre betweene both Nations; and divers Articles laid against him; which to examine and discusse further, a Committee was appointed.

He is impeached of 23, 1640-1.

Upon the 23d of February, Master PYMME made report to the House of Com-High Tresson, Feb. mons, what hainous and capital crimes were objected against him: Upon which the House fell into a serious debate, and a Charge of High Treason in fourteene Articles was drawne-up against him; which Charge two daies after was sent from the House of Commons by Master Pymme up to the Lords.

> The Archbishop was that day brought before the Lords, to heare that Charge read; and it was there voted, That he should immediately be sent to the Tower; but, upon his earnest suit, for some special reasons, he was two daies longer suffered to abide under the Black Rod, and then accordingly sent to the Tower; where we will leave him, till the course of this Narration bring him to further trial upon those Articles.

> Civil offenders, as well as Ecclesiastical, must needs be many, in so long a corruption of Government; of whom one, as he was first in time, and soone left the Stage, besides his chiefe Crime concerning matters of Church and Religion, so he shall first be named.

Sir Francis Winde-12, 1640.

Sir Francis Windebanke, Principal Secretary of Estate, a great Favourite banke is accused of and friend to the Archbishop of Canterbury, and by his friendship, as was thought, illegally discharging Popish priests from advanced to that place of Honour, was, upon the 12th of November, questioned in November an high kinde concerning Popish Priests; of whom, in that seven or eight yeares that he had been Secretary, he had bailed a great number, and released many by his power, contrary to the Lawes made, and then in force, against them; which being examined by a Committee, and certaine to prove foule against him, as it did afterward; (for upon examination there were proved against him 74 Letters of grace to Recusants, within foure yeares, signed with his owne hand; 64 Priests discharged

from

from the Gate-House, 29 discharged by a verbal Warrant from him;) he thought it his best course, before trial, to fly the Land; so that, upon the fourth of Decem- He flies to France in ber, newes was brought to the House, that Secretary WINDEBANKE, with Master December, 1640. READ, his chiefe Clarke, was fled; and soone after, notice was given that he arrived in France, where he long continued.

About that time came the great businesse of Ship-Money into debate in Parlia- A Debate upon Shipment; and was voted by both Houses to be a most illegal Taxation, and unsuf-money, December, ferable grievance; in reference to which case, almost all the Judges were made Delinquents, for their extrajudicial opinions in it, as more particularly will afterward appeare. As for other petty grievances, (such as were the multitude of Monopolies upon all things and Commodities of greatest and most familiar use;) the House daily condemned them; and the Delinquents of meaner note in that kinde who were examined and censured, were too many to be here named: Nay, so impartial was the House of Commons in that case, that many of their owne Members, who had been guilty of such Monopolies, were daily turned-out of the House for that offence.

But the businesse of Ship-money did reflect with a deeper staine of guilt upon Sir John Finch, Lord the then Lord Keeper Finch, than upon any of the other Judges whatsoever, Keeper of the Great for his great activity and labouring in it, by threats and promises working upon the other Judges, as we finde alledged against him.

Sir John Finch, in the yeare 1636, when that Taxation of Ship-money was first plotted and set on foot, was newly made Lord Chiefe-Justice of the Common Pleas, a man in favour with the King, and many of the greatest Lords in Court, having before been the Queenes Attorney; a Gentleman of good birth, of an high and Imperious spirit, eloquent in speech, though in the knowledge of the Law not very deepe.

Upon the death of the Lord Keeper Coventry, about December, 1639, the King was pleased to conferre that high Trust of keeping the Great Seale upon him;

which Office at this time he held.

Upon the seventh of December, when Ship-money was fully debated, and absolutely damned by the House of Commons, and the offence of the Judges began to be scanned, sixteene Gentlemen of that House were chosen to examine those Judges, that had given their extrajudicial opinions for it (for three gave their opinions otherwise: The arguments of two of them, Judge CROOKE, and Judge HUTTON, were very famous; Baron DENHAM, who was the third, by reason of sicknesse, could not declare his opinion in so large a manner;) in order to discover, what threats, or promises, had been used to them, and by what persons.

Upon which examination, and further light given, the next day a Committee was named to draw-up Charges against the Judges, and against the Lord Finch, then Lord Keeper, a Charge of High Treason. He, not many daies after, became an humble Suitor to the House of Commons, That before the Charge of High Treason were delivered against him, they would be pleased to heare him, Ore Tenùs,

in their owne House.

His

His suit was granted; and the next day save one, in a long Oration, he endeavoured to cleare himselfe; but all in vaine was that endeavour; though his deportment were very humble and submissive, and his Speech full of perswasive Rhetorick, it could not prevaile to divert the Judgement, though many in the House were moved to a kinde of Compassion.

He flies to Holland on the 23d of December, 1640. He, either secretly informed by friends, or himselfe perceiving by evident signes, how things were likely to go with him, conceived it best to use a imely prevention, and the next day, disguised, fled, and soon crossed the Seas into Holland.

After his flight, he was voted by the House of Commons guilty of High Treason

for foure causes:

1. Disobeying the House, in refusal to speake at their command, when he was Speaker in Parliament, in the fourth yeare of King Charles.

2. For threatening some Judges in the matter of Ship-money.

3. For his illegal and cruel Judgements in the Forrest-businesse, when he was Lord Chiefe-Justice of the Common Pleas.

4. For drawing that injurious Declaration after dissolution of the last Parliament.

Upon which a Charge was drawne-up against him, and carried-up to the Lords upon the 14th of January, 1640-41, three weeks after his flight, by the Lord FAWKELAND; who presented it with a pithy and sharpe Oration against the man.

These two last Delinquents (though men of eminent place in the Commonwealth) as they did not long trouble the Parliament, nor much retard the progresse of publike businesse, preventing their Trials by timely flight, so can they take-up no large roome in this Historical Narration.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. VIII.

The Tryal and death of the Earle of Strafford. Conspiracies detected during the agitation of it. An Act for continuance of this present Parliament. With a mention of that Grant of the Triennial Parliament in February before.

BUT now a greater Actor is brought upon the Stage, THOMAS WENT-worth, Earle of Strafford, Lieutenant of Ireland, a man too great to be let escape;

no sooner accused but surprized, and secured for a Tryal.

Which Tryal of his, if we consider all things,—the high nature of the Charge against him; the pompous circumstances, and stately manner of the Trial itselfe; the time that it lasted; the pretiousnesse of that time so consumed; and, lastly, of what moment and consequence the successe of it must prove,—I may safely say, that no Subject in *England*, and probably in *Europe*, ever had the like.

So great it was, that we can hardly call it the Trial of the Earle of Strafford onely; the King's affections toward his People and Parliament, the future successe of this Parliament, and the hopes of three Kingdoms depending on it, were all

tryed, when Strafford was arraigned.

Many Subjects in Europe have played lowder parts upon the Theater of the world, but none left it with greater noise; nor was the matter of his accusation confined within one Realme; three whole Kingdoms were his Accusers, and eagerly sought, in one death, a recompence of all their sufferings: That we may say of his case, as CLAUDIAN says of RUFFINUS,

Offensis Ruffinum divide terris.

Within ten daies after the Parliament began, the Earle of Strafford, newly- The Earl of Strafford returned from the North, was sitting in the House of Lords; when Master Pymme, is impeached by the House of Commons an of High Treason.

an ancient Gentleman of great experience in Parliamentary affaires, and no lesse knowne fidelity to his Country, came up to the Lords, and, in the name of all the Commons of England, accused Thomas, Earle of Strafford, Lord Lieutenant of Ireland, of High Treason; and desired their Lordships that he might be sequestred from Parliament, and forthwith committed to Prison; as also to let them know, that the Commons, within very few daies, would resort to their Lordships with the particular Articles and grounds of this Accusation.

And is taken into custody on the 13th of November, 1640.

And sent to the

December, 1640.

The Earle was required to withdraw; and after a debate thereof, called in, was committed to safe custody to the Gentleman Usher; And immediately after, upon the 13th day of November, a Serjeant at Armes was sent into Ireland for Sir George RATLIFFE, a great Favourite of the Earles, and one that, under him, had beene very active in the oppression of *Ireland*; a man of subtle wit, and knowledge of the Law; as having before beene educated at the Innes of Court, and taken the degree of Barrister.

Sir George accordingly, upon the fourth of December, came-in and yeelded himselfe to the Speaker; from whence he was committed to custody. And, Tower on the 8th of foure daies after, the Lords of Parliament sent the Earle of Strafford to the Tower, with a strict command to the Lieutenant, that he should keepe a close guard upon him.

> Much time was interposed betweene the several proceedings against this Earle of Strafford, by reason of the multiplicity of weighty businesse which the Parliament then had. But before the end of January, a long Charge was read against him in the House of Commons, and a Message, not long after, sent to the Lords, to desire that he might be sequestred from all his places of Dignity and Honour, in England and Ireland.

The charge against him, January 31, 1640-1.

The Charge against him consisted of nine Articles, which, afterwards upon a further impeachment, were extended to eight-and-twenty. All those Articles are to be seene at large in the Records: But, for further satisfaction of the Reader, I will give a briefe touch of the scope of them. The first and second being much alike, concerning his ruling of Ireland, and those parts of England, where his Authority lay, in an Arbitrary way, against the fundamental Lawes of the Kingdome, which Lawes he had endeavoured to subvert. Thirdly, his retaining part of the King's Revenue, without giving a legal account. Fourthly, The abusing of his Power, to the increase and encouragement of Papists. Fifthly, That he maliciously had endeavoured to stir-up Hostility betweene England and Scotland. Sixthly, That, being Leiutenant-General of the Northerne Army, he had wilfully suffered the Scots to defeat the English at Newburne, and take Newcastle; that by such a losse and dishonour, England might be engaged in a National and irreconcileable quarrel with the Scots. Seventhly, That to preserve himselfe from questioning, he had laboured to subvert Parliaments, and incense the King against Eighthly, and lastly, That these things were done during the time of his Authority as Deputy of Ireland, and Lieutenant-General of the Northerne Armies in England.

The

The Commons, saving to themselves a liberty of further impeachment against

the said Earle, &c. do require his legal answer to all.

The further impeachment, consisting of 28 Articles, was, for the most part, branched out of these, and insisted-upon in more particulars, concerning his Tyranny, in Ireland, over divers persons, contrary to Law. Concerning which the Reader must be referred to the Records themselves, as being too large to be here inserted.

The Earle of Strafford, upon the 28d of February, was brought before the The Earle gives-in Lords, to give-in his answer; which he accordingly did; the King himselfe being his answer Februthere present to heare it read.

It was very large; and, when it was done, he was sent-back to the Tower, there

to remaine till further Order.

A Committee being appointed to consider of that businesse, upon the fourth of March following made report in the House, That they would manage and maintaine their Accusation of Treason against him; and thought it not fit to reply to his Answer, but call him to speedy trial.

Immediately upon which, a Conference was had with the Lords concerning that

Trial, and some Circumstances which were thought fit to be used at it.

The Commissioners of Scotland had likewise a Charge against the Earle of Strafford; concerning those injuries, which, as they conceived, their Nation and Kingdome had suffered from him. But the substance of that Charge was implyed in those Articles before-specified, which the Parliament of England had exhibited against him.

Upon the 22d of March, 1640. [1640—1.] that remarkable Tryal of the Earle His trial begins. March 22, 1640-1.

of STRAFFORD began.

Westminster-Hall was the place chosen, where Scaffolds were raised on both sides, nine degrees in height; whereof seven were appointed for the Members of the House of Commons to sit-on, who were all there in a Committee: The two upper degrees of the Scaffold, were appointed for the Commissioners of Scotland, and the Lords of Ireland, who were then come-over.

In the midst, on a lower ascent, sate the Peeres of England, the Earle of Arundel being Lord High Steward, and the Earle of Lindsey Lord High Constable. The Throne was placed for the King: But the King, coming thither (which he did every day of the Tryal) sate private with the Queene and other Ladies, in a close Gallery, made of purpose to heare the proceedings, and tooke notes of them himselfe, in writing.

The Earle of Strafford answered daily at the Barre, whilest the whole House of Commons, having put themselves into a Committee, had liberty to charge him, every man as he saw occasion: But, though many of them did sometimes speake, yet the accusations were chiefly managed by two expert Lawyers, Master GLYNNE,

and Master MAYNARD, both Members of the House.

Many foule misdemeanours, committed both in Ireland and England, were daily proved against him: But that ward which the Earle, being an eloquent man, His principal ground especially of Defence.

especially lay at, was to keepe-off the blow of High Treason, whatsoever misdemeanours should be layed upon him; of which, some he denied, others he ex. cused, and extenuated with great subtility; contending to make one thing good, "That misdemeanours, though never so many and so great, could not, by being put-together, make one Treason, unlesse some one of them had been Treason in its owne nature."

Every day the first weeke, from Munday to Saturday, without intermission, the Earle was brought from the Tower to Westminster-Hall, and arraigned many houres together; and the successe of every daies tryal, was the greatest discourse, or dispute, in all companies.

For by this time the people began to be a little divided in opinions; The Clergy in general were so much fallen into love and admiration of this Earle, that the

Archbishop of Canterbury was almost quite forgotten by them.

The Courtiers cryed him up, and the Ladies, (whose voices will carry much with

some parts of the State,) were exceedingly on his side.

It seemed a very pleasant object, to see so many Sempronias (all the chiefe Court-Ladies filling the Galleries at the Tryal) with penne, inke, and paper in their hands, noting the passages, and discoursing upon the grounds of Law and They were all of his side; whether moved by pity, proper to their Sex, or by ambition of being thought able to judge of the parts of the Prisoner.

But so great was the favour, and love, which they openly expressed to him, that

some could not but thinke of that Verse:

Non formosus erat, sed erat facundus Ulysses, Et tamen æquoreas torsit amore Deas. Ulysses, though not beautiful, the love Of Goddesses by eloquence could move.

But his Trial in this manner lasted, with few daies intermission, from the 22d of March, till the midst of April following, the Earle having personally answered fifteene daies.

The House of Commons abandon their prosecution by Im-

After all this long Trial, the House of Commons fell into debate about a Bill of Attainder against the Earle of Strafford; and voted him guilty of high Treason in peachment, and pro- divers particulars of that Accusation, in which they had proceeded against him; ceed against the Earl and in more particular he was voted guilty of High Treason, for his opinion given by Bill of Attainder, before the King, at a secret Council, which was discovered by some notes of Sir HENRY VANE, who was also a Privy-Counciller, and present at that time; in which notes it was found that the Earle of Strafford had said to the King, That he had an Army in Ireland, which his Majesty might employ to reduce this Kingdome to obedience.

hese notes Sir Henry Vane, eldest Sonne to the before-named Sir Henry, had found as he alledged to the House) in his Father's Cabinet, and produced before the House without his Father's knowledge; who seemed extreme angry with his Sonne for it.

This

This is related the more at large, because it was the first occasion (that was open and visible) whereby so eminent a Member, as the Lord George Digry, was lost This Bill is opposed from the House of Commons, as will afterward appeare: For that Vote was op-several other mem-

posed by the Lord Diggy, and some others.

Neverthelesse a Committee was appointed to draw-up the Bill of Attainder, Commons; in all, fifty-nine members. which was accordingly done, and read in the House of Commons, on the 21st day of April, when the Earle was againe voted guilty of High Treason; which was carried by farre the greater part; for on the other side, were but nine and fifty, of whom the Lord Diggy was one; who made to that purpose a very elegant, though much displeasing, Speech in the House; Of which more hereafter.

That Bill of Attainder was sent-up to the Lords; where, after the reading of it,

a great division was in that House, and many of the Lords much opposed it.

But Master St John, the King's Solicitour, and a Member of the House of Commons, was appointed within few daies after, to make good the Bill by Law, and give the Lords satisfaction, which was accordingly done upon the 29th of April, in Westminster Hall; where the Earle of Strafford was present at the Barre, and the King and Queene seated in their usual places.

Master St. John opened the Branches of the Bill, and in a Discourse of two It is passed by the houres made it good by preceedent Statutes, and the like, to the satisfaction of al-House of Lords.

most all that heard him.

But the King was not satisfied in conscience, (as he declared to both Houses, The King refuses to two daies after,) to condemne him of High Treason; and told them, No feares, consent to it. or respects whatsoever, should make him alter that resolution, founded upon his conscience: But confessed, that his misdemeanors were so great, that he held him unfit to serve him in any office whatsoever; with other expressions of that kinde.

The King's Speech was somewhat displeasing to the Houses; but the City were out of patience, and within foure daies after, came to Westminster, about five thousand of them, crying for Justice against the Earle of Strafford; and following the Lords, complaining that they were undone, and trading decayed, for want of

due execution of Justice.

The Lords gave them good words, and promised them to acquaint the King with it. But the next day they appeared agains with the same complaint. Their feares being more aggravated, by reason of reports, that attempts were made to get the Earle out of Prison; upon which occasion some Lords were sent to keepe the Tower, and assist the Lieutenant there.

But the King was hard to be removed from his resolution, although the Judges in the meane time had delivered their opinions in the House of Lords, concerning the Earle of Strafford; and the Lords had voted him guilty of High Treason upon the fitteenth Article, for levying of money in Ireland by force of Armes; and upon the nineteenth, for imposing an Oath upon the Subjects in Ireland, That they should not protest against any of the King's Commands.

The King at last, wearied with these complaints, called a Privy-Council at But afterwards con-White-Hull, where he spent a great part of the day, calling also the Judges to sents to it.

deliver their opinions before him, concerning the Earle of otrefford; and sent for

by Lord Digby, and bers of the House of



foure Bishops, to resolve him upon scruple of conscience. After which he granted a Commission to the Earle of Arundel, the Lord Privy-Seale, and the two Lord-Chamberlaines, to signe that bill for the execution of the Earle of Strafford, three daies after, being Wednesday, the 12th of May, 1641; which was accordingly

The Earle is beheaded on the 12th of done upon the Scaffold on Tower-Hill. May, 1641.

This was the unfortunate end of that Earle of Strafford, whose character and actions have been in some manner before described.

Of whom we may truly say, That, as his life and Counsels had been of great moment and concernment in the State before, so did his death and Tryal, by unhappy accidents, prove to be.

The divisions and disturbances which his life could make, were not greater than

those that his death occasioned.

But his Execution gives rise to great divisions in Parliameut.

Applanus observes of Sylia the Dictator, That, as his living power had rob'd the Roman Senate of their freedome; so did his very Funeral: Where so many of his old Souldiers and Hacsters followed the solemnity, that the Senators who were present, durst not with freedome expresse their thoughts of him; but were inforced to flatter him dead, as well as living.

How farre the Earle of Strafford did, in his life-time, divide the King's affections from his People and Parliaments (which was part of the Charge against him) I cannot surely tell; But certaine it is, That his Tryal and death (which has made me insist the longer upon it) did make such a division in that kinde, as, being unhappily nourished by degrees afterward, has almost ruined the three Kingdomes *.

The length of his Tryal, whilest two Armies at an heavy expence were to be paid, and other businesse at a great stand, did divide some impatient people (at least in some degree) from the Parliament; The manner of his condemnation divided the Parliament in itselfe; and the eager pressing of his death did discover.

or cause, a sad division of the King from his Parliament.

Nine and fifty Members of the House of Commons dissented in Vote from the rest, upon the Bill of Attainder: upon which some indiscreet persons (for so I must needs esteeme them, though it was never knowne who they were, or by whose notice it was done) the next day set-up a paper upon the Exchange, with the names of those nine and fifty, and a Title over it, The names of those men, who, to save a Traytor, would beiray their Country.

They that were thus posted-up, supposing it to be done, or caused, by some of their House, were much provoked at it, many of them growing by degrees disaffected to the Parliament, (not all, for there were among those dissenting Gentlemen very wise and learned men) and, upon that unhappy distraction that fell-out

about a yeere after, forsooke the Parliament.

Upon the same Bill of Attainder, the Lord DIGBY made his foresaid Speech, which, by a Command from the House (for he had printed it) was to be burnt by the Hangman; which was the visible cause of his deserting the Parliament, and proving so great an Actor against it as shall hereafter be declared.

* This was written in the year 1647.

The

The worst consequence of all was, that the King's heart did upon this occasion

appeare to be quite alienated from the Parliament.

For, to prevent the Earle of Strafford's death, an escape for him out of the A Conspiracy had Tower was contrived. To further which, and to curbe the Parliament in other the Parliament in things by force of Armes, a great conspiracy was entred-into by many Gentlemen order to save the Earl of rank and quality, The designe of this conspiracy had many Branches, as shall of Strafford's life.

appeare in the Narration.

The persons of chiefest note in it, were Master HENRY PERCY, brother to the Earle of Northumberland; Master HENRY JERMIN, the great Favourite of the Queene, to whom he was Master of the Horse; Master Goring, eldest Sonne to the Lord Goring; Master Wilmot, eldest Sonne to the Lord Wilmot; Colonel Ashburnham; Captaine Pollard; Sir John Suckling; Oneale, an Irish man and a Papist; with divers others of a more inferiour ranke, such as were privy but to some part of the designe: For it seemes their Counsels were divided, and they were not all guilty of the same things; as by their several examinations upon Oath appeared.

But that which grieved the hearts of honest men, and made them almost despaire of that happinesse which was before hoped-for by this Parliament, was, That they discovered the King himself to be privy to this conspiracy against them; which The King himself was plainly testified by Colonel Goring's examination; as likewise by a Letter was privy to this written by Master Percy to his Brother the Earle of Northumberland; where he names the King's discourses with him, and the desire which the King had to joyne

such as he thought fit with them.

The Conspirators had taken an Oath of secrecy among themselves.

The Report made in Parliament from Committees after the Examination of several Gentlemen, concerning this conspiracy, discovered many branches of their

designe.

One was concerning the Tower of London, That Souldiers should have been put into it. For Sir John Suckling, and some others of the Conspirators, under pretence of raising Forces for the Portugal, had gathered men in London, who

were to possesse themselves of the Tower.

The Lieutenant, Sir WILLIAM BALFORE, was commanded by the King himselfe to admit those Souldiers into the Tower. But he, perceiving that it was a Plot to let the Earle of Strafford escape, disobeyed that Command of the King's; as appeared by his Examination.

In which is likewise specified, that the Earle offered 2000l. in Marriage with his daughter to the Lieutenant's Sonne, if he would consent to the Earles escape.

Another branch, and that the chiefe of this designe, was to bring up the English Army, which was in the North, as yet undisbanded, and to engage it against the Parliament, to awe the Houses in divers things concerning the King's Prerogative, and maintaining Episcopacy, as Master Parcy signified in the forementioned Letter.

Digitized by Google

To joyne with these Forces, and strengthen the Plot, a French Army was to be landed at *Portsmouth*, and that Towne, for the same purpose, was to be put into Master Jermin's hands.

The Irish Army, consisting of eight thousand, almost all Papists, when the Earle of Strafford had escaped out of the Tower, was to be brought-over under his conduct, and engaged in the same Service.

All these things were confessed upon several Examinations.

The Parliament were most grieved to finde the King so farre in it; and then recalled to minde, how His Majesty, on the 28th of April before, had told the Houses, That he could not allow of the disbanding of the Irish Army, for divers reasons best knowne to himselfe.

The Conspiracy being in some part detected, Percy, Jermyn, and Suckling, fled the day before they should have been examined, being the sixth of May, and

passed into France, where Suckling not long after dyed.

But afterwards, upon the reading of a Letter in the House upon the 14th of June, sent by Master Percy out of France to his Brother the Earle of Northumberland, Wilmot, Ashburnham, and Pollard, (three Members of the House of Commons, mentioned in that Letter, as privy to this Conspiracy) were commanded to withdraw, and then called in severally, examined, and committed, Wilmot to the Tower, Ashburnham to the King's Bench, and Pollard to the Gate-House; from whence they were not long after released upon Baile, as being found guilty not in so high a degree as others were.

GORING, upon his Examination, dealt so electly with them, and so farre purged himselfe from evil intentions, that he was not at all committed by the

Parliament,

ONEALE, who proved most guilty of that part of the Conspiracy, for bringingup the English Army against the Parliament, was presently after apprehended, and committed to the Tower; whence it was generally thought he would be brought

to Tryal for his life, and suffer: but he made an escape.

The Parliament, considering what great disturbance they began to finde in settling the State, what conspiracies had been on foot; and doubtful of the King's sincere affection towards them; considering also what great disbursements of money were to be made for payment of two Armies, and other charges for settling the State, to which purpose money was to be borrowed upon the Publike faith; by a joint consent of both Houses, moved the King to signe a Bill for continuance of this present Parliament, That it should never be dissolved till both Houses did consent, and agree that publike grievances were fully redrest.

A Bill was drawne-up to that purpose, and the King, the same day that he signed the Bill for execution of the Earl of Strafford, being the 10th of May, 1641,

Parliament, May 10, signed that also for continuance of the present Parliament.

But in this place it is fit to insert what had past before in this kinde.

The King upon the 15th-of February before, had signed a Bill, presented to

The King peases a rbilt for the continuance of the present Parliament, May 10, 1649.

He had before passed a bill, for Triennial Parliaments, on the 15th of February, 1640-41. him by both Houses, for a Parliament to be held in *England* every third yeare; That the Lord Keeper, and the Chancellor of the Dutchy, for the time being, should

be sworne to issue-forth the Writs, and, upon default, to lose their places.

The same day in the afternoone there was a Conference betweene the two Houses, to returne the King thankes; upon which it was concluded that the whole House should go to the King to White-Hall, and that the Lord Keeper, in the name of both Houses, should returne their thankfulnesse to his Majesty; which was accordingly done.

Expressions of joy, by Order from the Parliament, were that night made about London, with ringing of Bells, making of Bonefires, with such usual

things.

It is observable in the course of Histories, how much Kings, in such limited Monarchies as that of *England*, do, in time, by degrees, gaine upon the peoples Rights and Priviledges: So that those things, which, by the constitution of the Government, the people may challenge as due from the Prince, having been long forborne, become at last to be esteemed such Acts of extraordinary grace, as that the Prince is highly thanked for granting of them.

Such was the case of this Triennial Parliament, as both Houses afterward, when the unbappy division began, and the King upbraided them with this favour, could plainly answer, "That it was not so much as by Law they might require, there

being two Statutes then in force, for a Parliament once a yeere."

The King himselfe also, at the time when he granted that Triennial Parliament, could not forbeare to tell them, That he put an obligation upon them in doing it, which they had scarce deserved.

For hitherto (said he) to speak freely, I have had no great encouragement to grant it; if I should looke to the outward face of your actions or proceedings, and not to the inward intentions of your hearts, I might make question of doing it

But that Grant which the King since passed, upon the tenth of May, for conti-Reflection on the Act nuance of the present Parliament, not onely afterward by himselfe was much up-for the continuance of the Parliament. braided to them, but by many Gentlemen, who were not well affected to their Parliament, and by all the Faction of Prelatical Clergy, in their ordinary discourse, was censured as a greater grace than it was fit for the King to grant.

To such men, their discourses and writings, afterward, when the great distraction happened, and the Warre was breaking-out, the Parliament, in many of their

Declarations, answered:

That, though there were in it some seeming restraint of the Regal Power in dissolving Parliaments; yet really it was no taking that Power from the Crowne, but suspending the execution of it for this time and occasion only. Which was so necessary for the Publike Peace, that without it they could not have undertaken any of those great Charges; but must have left both the Armies to disorder and confusion, and the whole Kingdome to blood and ruine.

For to pay the Armies, and defray other necessary charges, money was to be borrowed N. B.

N. B.

borrowed upon the Publike Faith; which had been nothing worth; if that Parlia-

ment could have been dissolved at the King's pleasure.

And where it was objected, That no King ever granted the like before; they answered, It was evident, that no King before ever made so great a necessity for a Parliament to require it. And besides that, in the constitution of Englands Government, it was never the meaning of the Law-givers, that the King should dissolve any Parliament, whilest the great Affaires of the Kingdome were depending; and though the King had used to do so, it was neverthelesse unlawful.

The Scots in their Remonstrance 1640, told the King, That he had broken their Lawes in dissolving the Parliament there, against the consent of their House.

And it is very well understood by those that are skilful in Lawes of both Nations,

that English Parliaments have originally the same freedome.

It was reverthelesse probably then thought by all, that the King would not have assented to that Act, if at that time the freshnesse of those fore-mentioned grievances in the peoples hearts, and the present discovery of that odious Treason, of bringing an Army against the Parliament, had not made it unsafe for him to deny it.

That opinion was more confirmed by the following Actions, since time, and the unconstancy of some Lords and Gentlemen, had raised him a Party. When that knot, which by Law he could not againe untie, he endeavoured to cut asunder by

the Sword; as was afterwards observed in the Parliament's Declarations.

CHAP. IX.

Allowance of money from the English Parliament to the Scots. The vast Charge of disbanding the two Armies. The great Taxations for that purpose, and the manner of Poll-money. The people take a Protestation. Act for putting-downe the High-Commission Court, and the Starre-Chamber; with other occurrences of that The Queene-Mother of France departeth from England. The King goeth into Scotland.

I HE Parliament, conceiving themselves somewhat strengthened and secured by The Parliament rethat Act of continuance, began to fall upon the maine businesse of the Kingdome; solves that the but their first desire was to ease themselves, of that unsupportable charge of keeping two Armies in pay. It was therefore resolved, that both the Armies should of England shall be disbanded.

The Earle of Holland was nominated by the King, and well-approved of by the Parliament, to go-down as General, for disbanding of the English. And for the speedy disbursement of so great a summe, which was to be raised out of the Poll-Money (of which I shall speake anon) and the six Subsidies, much Plate was appointed, with more than ordinary haste, to be melted and coyned.

The Reader will here, perchance, desire to be satisfied, by what meanes the Scottish Army, which the King, in the beginning of the Parliament, was so desirous to have driven-out of the Kingdome, and styled Rebels, should continue undisbanded till this time.

The Cessation of Armes, which was made before to expire about the end of December last, was at that time renewed by the Parliament for a Moneth longer; who presently after tooke it into consideration, that the Scots should be satisfied for all their charges they had been at, and losses sustained, since that unhappy Warre that the King had raised against them.

In the February following, after a serious debate concerning that businesse, the necessities

necessities of the Scots being well-weighed, and their demands considered, it was not onely agreed that their Ships, taken since that Warre, should be restored, and 40001. in ready money given to them to rigge those Shipe; but for the maine of all, it was resolved-upon by both Houses, to give the full summe of 300,000 l. in these words expressed, Towards a supply of the losses and necessities of our Brethren of Scotland; and that the Parliament would in due time take into consideration the manner of raising it and the dairs of payment.

Whereupon the Scottish Commissioners, three daies after, returned thankfulnesse to the Parliament, not onely for that great summe of 300,000 l. but for the

style of Brethren which they had given them.

And the same weeke, to continue and further strengthen the amity of both Nations, the Parliament of England Ordained than all Books, Libels, and Proclamations against the Scots, should be called in; and a thanksgiving to God should be in all Churches thorow England, for the happy conclusion of that peace.

But before the time came that the Parliament, pressed with so many great and weighty Affaires, could have leisure to consider and fully determine the times for payment of that great summe to the Scots (which was not till the 19th day of the following June, when it was concluded, that they should receive 100,000 L of it at Midsummer come twelve Moneths, and the other 200,000 l. at Midsummer two yeares after) the Scots presented many Papers to the House at several times, for money to supply the wants of their Army; which were friendly entertained and considered by the Parliament. For that Army was kept long undisbanded: insomuch as about the end of the following May, there was in Arreare due to the Scottish Army (besides the gift of 300,000 /.) 120,000 L

So great a charge was the Parliament of England content to be at, rather than suffer the Scots to go, till busifiesses were better settled; which gave occasion to many of the Clergy, and others not well-affected to the Parliament, not onely in discourse, but also in written Libels; to taxe the Parliament, and impute it to them as a crime, of too much distrust of the King; and that they kept a forraigne Army to

awe their owne Prince.

But certaine it is, that since that time, when the forenamed Conspiracies began to breake out, the Houses, not well assured of the King, nor fully trusting the English Army, were content that the Scots should not be disbanded, until the others were; being also doubtful of that Irish Army, which the King (as is before expressed,) had told them he could not disband, for some reasons best knowne to himselfe.

The Scottish army are both disbanded at the same time in August, 1641.

A Poli-tax laid for this purpose.

Nor was that Army of Scots disbanded till August, at the same time when the and the English army English Army was, by the Earle of Holland, appointed General to that purpose. And both the Armies quietly departed, conducted to their owne homes by Order from Justices of Peace, through the several Counties.

> To defray so vast a charge as the payment of two great Armies, the Parliament, besides the grant of six Subsidies, imposed a Taxe seldome or never knowne, which was that of the Poll-Money, wherein the whole Kingdome were to be personally assessed. Every Duke at 100% a Marquesse at 80% Earles at 60%. Viscounts and Barons

Barons at 40 l. Knights of the Bathe 30 l other Knights 20 l. Esquires 10 l. every Gentleman dispending 100l. per annum, was seized or assessed at 5l. and all others of ability, to pay a competent proportion; the meanest head of the whole Kingdome was not excused under six-pence.

This Bill of Poll-Money was offered by the Houses to the King, together with two others of great concernment, one for putting-downe the High Commission

Court, and the other for putting-downe the Starre-Chamber.

But the King shewed some reluctancy in that businesse, desiring to passe only that Bill of Poll-Money for the present, and to deliberate about passing of the other two. At which the House of Commons, being certified so much by the Lords, were not well contented, and voted, that his Majesty should passe all three, or none at all.

Notwithstanding, the King, upon the second of July, did, accordingly, passe the Poll-Money, and demurred upon the other two. But, understanding that the matter was so ill taken, and being loath, upon mature deliberation, to displease the King-The Court of Highdome at that time, he came againe apon the following Tuesday, being the fifth of Commission, and the July, and passed the other two, for putting-downe the High-Commission Court and ber, are abolished, the Starre-Chamber July 5, 1641.

Many of the Courtiers, and neerest servants about the King, were very sorry that his Majesty, seeing that he passed those two Bills so soone after, had not freely done it at the same time (as was desired) together with the Poll-Money: Because it might be thought an unwillingnesse in him, and that his heart (which was then feared did not perfectly concurre with his People's desires: Whereby much of the thanks, which so great a grace, freely and ferwardly expressed, might have deserved, did soome in a manner lost.

The King, therefore, at the passing of those two Bills, told them as much, That He could not but be sensible of those reports of discontent, which he had heard was taken by some, for his not passing them before; and thought it very strange, that two things of so great importance should be expected from him, without an allowcance of time to consider of them: That he wondred they could harbour any discontent, if they remembred how wuch he had done this Parliament, as his granting that the Judges hereafter should hold their places quam diù se benè gesserint; Lounding the Forrest-Lawes; saking-away Ship-money; establishing the Subjects property in Tonnage and Poundage; granting the Triennial Parliament; free Justice against Delinquents. With other things; Concluding graciously, That He would omit nothing which might give them just content.

And, when he had signed the forenamed Bills, after a short mention of the journey which he intended speedily to take into Scotland; he propounded to them a thing very acceptable, concerning his Nephew, the Prince Elector Palatine, that The King publisher he could not but (at the desire of that Prince) send an Ambassadour to assist him a Manifesto, to the at the Dyet at Ratisbone with the Emperour: and, fearing that he should not remany, in favour of -ceive so good an Answer as might in justice be expected, he (for the better coun-his nephew, the tenancing that businesse,) intended to publish a Munifesto in his owne name; Prince Elector Pala-

Digitized by Google

but would not do it but by consent and advice of Parliament; without which he conceived it would be a thing of no validity.

Which Manifesto was afterwards made by the full consent of both Houses, and Sir Thomas Roe, a Member of the House, and a Gentleman of great abilities, was sent to the Emperour at Ratisbone about it; but without any good successe.

The Queene-Mother of France withdraws from England, in July, 1641.

At the same time the Queene-Mother of France, as was before desired by the Parliament, was to take her leave of England. The King consented to her departure; but, Money being wanting for the Provision of her Journey, the Parliament allotted ten thousand pounds to her, out of the Poll-Money. This great Lady had arrived in England almost three years before, and so long been entertained by the King, her Sonne in Law, with great respect, and an allowance answerable to support her State, 100 l. per diem.

Of her Character and conduct.

It was her misfortune, (how farre her crime, I cannot tell) that, during her abode here, the two Kingdomes of England and Scotland were embroyled in great troubles; which the People were apt to impute in some measure to her counsels, knowing what power the Queene, her Daughter, had with the King.

Others taxed her not at all, but looked-upon other causes, the same counsels, which, long before her arrival, had distempered England; but the people made their

judgement upon it, from her actions, or successes, in other places.

But, however it were, the Queene was feareful of the people here, and had, not long before, desired to have a guard allowed her, pretending feare of her life, by reason of some attempts, which she conceived to have been made against her:

upon which a Guard was set about her house.

Her Regency in France had not beene happy, nor according to the interest of that Kingdome; though that, perchance, may be accounted a fault, not so particular to her as commonly incident to the Regency of Queene-Mothers in that Land: In so much as Thuanus commends the saying of Charles the Ninth (a Prince whom otherwise he doth not praise) upon his death-bed, That, since he must dye at that age, (being foure and twenty) he thanked God he had no Sonne, least France should fall under a Regency, of which he had found the sad effects. His Mother was Katharine De Medicis, of the same Family with this Queene.

After the time of her Regency, her actions had been such, that the King her Sonne would not harbour her in his owne Kingdome; nor was she welcome into the Territories of her Sonne in Law, the King of Spaine. But the people there

were no lesse desirous of her departure than afterward in England.

Insomuch as she became a strange example of the instability of humane fortunes, that so great a Queen, and Mother to so many mighty Princes, should want a

quiet Harbour for her age.

And soon after dies at Cullein, or Cologn, in Germany. Not long after her departure from England, she died at Culleine, and might seeme a parallel, in some things, to the famous Empresse of Rome who founded that City, and there planted a Roman Colony, AGRIPPINA, the wife of CLAUDIUS CESAR, and the Mother of Nero. They both had tasted of power, been active in it, but not pleasing to the people. They were both taught, that the greatnesse of their Sonnes,

Digitized by Google

was not so much advantage to their Power, as they had hoped; and had learned, that all power dependent upon another, is of small validity, and lesse stability; as TACITUS observes, speaking of the same AGRIPPINA, Nihil rerum mortalium tame enstabile & fluxum est, quam fama potentiæ non sud vi nixæ.

About two Moneths before the departure of this Queene, the Princesse Mary, The Princess Mary, eldest daughter to the King, not yet ten yeares of age, was married with great eldest daughter of the King, is married triumph at White-Hall. to the young Prince of Orange, WILLIAM; Bishop to the Prince of WRENNE, being then Deane of the King's Chappel, performed the solemnity, on Orange, May 2, Sunday the second of May, 1641.

The Marriage had been before debated of in Parliament, and consented to; The King himselfe, upon the ninth of Frebruary, having declared to the Lords what large Propositions the Ambassadours of the States had made to him upon that

parpose.

The people in general were pleased with this Marriage, and glad the King had chosen-out for his Son-in-LawaProtestant Prince, and one who was also a servant to a State which had been long confederate with England, and whose Interest carried them the same way, they being Professors of the same Religion, and in that kinde of Discipline, to which the greatest part of the Parliament and the People of England were inclined, and to which they hoped (though that hope was not at that time so fully declared as it was afterward) to reforme the Church of England, as that of Scotland had been reformed to it already. By this Match of the King's owne chusing, they beganto hope that the Spanish Faction in Court was not now at all prevalent, but that things might hereafter be carried on according to the right English way.

In this hope they were the more confirmed, seeing the Parliament go-on without any opposition from the King; no dissension having yet happened, nor being likely to happen, as they conceived: for that Conspiracy, of bringing-up the Army against the Parliament, which we touched before, was not yet discovered, nor at all

thought-of; though, within few daies after, it broke-out.

But some there were, who suspended their joy, and were not much confident that this Marriage would bring happinesse to England, unlesse the King were perfectly right with his People, and wished the same thing as they did; considering on the one side the condition of the Prince of Orange, and that he might be ambitious of more power than was due to him; and, for that reason, might engage himselfe in a reciprocal way for the King against his People, if occasion served.

On the other side, they considered the States as Politicians of this world, and men who had other interests in view than that of Religion; and, if dissension should in England happen between Prince and People, (which was never but feared in some degree) might be apt to side with the King against the just freedome of the Subject; which must needs depresse the strength of England, and keepe it from so much greatnesse as might eclipse their owne; the King of Spaine being now weake, and they having no such feare of him as might enforce them to need England's strength, as heretofore.

But the Parliament, about the beginning of this July, were busied in such a stultiplicity of Affaires, (which, by several Committees, they daily transacted,) con-

Digitized by Google

cerning

cerning the reformation of domestical abuses, that it were an endlesse, and indeed are improper, thing for an Historian to describe them all. The Records of Parliament will at large satisfie those that are curious in particulars; onely some of the chief I will briefly touch, which happened before the King went into Scotland.

Proceedings in the Wrenne, Bishop of Ely, in July, 1641.

Upon the fifth of July, 1641, the Committee, appointed for that purpose, made House of Commons their report to the House of Commons, of the charge against MATTHEW WRENNE, against Dr. Matthew Bishop of Fly, (whose accusation was before mentioned,) consisting of many Articles; which all tended to the introducing of Superstition, and too neare approaches to the Roman Religion, as those Articles will declare.

After some time spent in debate upon the Articles, it was resolved upon the question, and voted, That it was the opinion of the House, That Bishop WRENNE. was unworthy and unfit to hold, or exercise, any Office, or Dignity, in Church, or Commonwealth; And further voted, That there be a Message sent to the Lords, to desire them to joyne with the Commons, in petitioning His Majesty to remove the said Bishop both from his Person and Service.

Charges brought against several Judges for their conduct relating to Shipmoney.

About the same time also, the Charges against those Judges before-mentioned. who gave their extrajudicial opinions for levying of Ship-money, being five in number, (Judge Bramston, Baron Trever, Baron Weston, Baron Daven-PORT, and Judge CRAWLEY,) were read in the House of Commons, and several Members appointed to present those particular Charges against every Judge; which they all did, making large Speeches in aggravation of their Crimes: Against Judge Berkley there was a higher Charge, so great as amounted to High

The King was now wholly intent upon his journey into Scotland, which he determined to take upon the tenth of August, to which both Houses had once agreed; but afterwards, upon mature consideration, desired the King to deferre it fourteene daies longer for divers reasons.

That the distempers of the Kingdome were such, as could not well be composed, unlesse His Majesty would stay the desired time, there being many weighty affaires to be taken into consideration, and no course yet set-downe for the Government of the Kingdome in his absence.

The King, notwithstanding their often and earnest pressing this suit, was sted-Fast to the first day, alledging that the affaires of Scotland did necessarily require his presence there at that time, and that he would passe any thing of just concerne before he went, and that he had to the same purpose many times desired them to hasten their businesse for him before such a time.

The King goes to 1641.

The King accordingly, upon the tenth of August, departed out of London toward Scotland, August 10, Scotland; but the same day, before he tooke his journey, coming to the Lords House, he passed divers Bills which the Houses had prepared for him; some concerning the publike, (as the Bill for Knighthood, the Bill for free making of Gunpowder and Saltpeter;) and others concerning the Estates and affaires of private men.

He likewise signed the Commission for passing of Bills in his absence; the Commissioners appointed were, the Lord Keeper, the Lord Privy-Seal, the Earle

Digitized by GOOGLE

of Lindsey, the Earle of Essex, Marquesse Hartford, the Earle of Bath, and the Earle of Dorset.

He signed them also another Bill, whereby he made the Earle of Essex General of all his Forces on this side Trent, by which he had power to raise Forces in case of necessity.

But to another request, which both Houses had made to him the day before, which was, That the Earle of Pembrooke might be made Lord-Steward, in the Earle of Arundel's place, during his absence, (for the Earle of Arundel was then going-over with the Queene-Mother) and that the Earle of Salisbury might be appointed Lord-Treasurer; he said he would take further time to consider of it.

By this time many jealousies began to arise in the hearts of the people, many The Parliament bedivisions, and differences of opinions concerning the Parliament; which, (being by gins to be less popudegrees fomented by such persons as were disaffected to it, by reason of their at first. In August, owne losses, and particular interests; whose number could not be small:) did fatally 1641.

prepare the way to that miserable confusion which after followed.

Bishops had been much lifted-at, though not yet taken away; whereby a great The causes of this party, whose livelihood and fortune depended on them, and farre more, whose change.

hopes of preferment looked that way; most of the Clergy, and both the Universities, began to be daily more dis-affected to the Parliament; complaining that all rewards of learning would be taken-away; which wrought deeply in the hearts of

the young, and most ambitious, of that Coat.

Another thing which seemed to trouble some who were not bad men, was that extreame License, which the Common People, almost from the very beginning of the Parliament, tooke to themselves, of reforming, without Authority, Order, or decency; rudely disturbing Church-Service, whilest the Common-Prayer was reading; tearing those Bookes, Surplices, and such things: which the Parliament, (either too much busied in a variety of affaires, or, perchance, too much fearing the losse of a considerable Party, whom they might have need of against a real and potent Enemy,) did not so farre restraine as was expected, or desired, by those men.

To this were added those daily reports of ridiculous Conventicles, and preachings made by Tradesmen, and illitterate people of the lowest ranke, to the scandal and offence of many: Which some in a merry way would put-off, considering the precedent times, by saying, "that these Tradesmen did but take up that Duty which the Prelates and the great Doctors had let-fall, the preaching the Gospel; 'I'hat it was but a reciprocal invasion of each others callings, that Chandlers, Salters, Weavers, and such like, preached, when the Archbishop himselfe, instead of preaching, was daily busied in Projects about Leather, Salt, Sope, and such

commodities as belonged to those Tradesmen."

Many people, by degrees, grew disaffected to the Parliament, being daily poysoned by the discourses of the friends, kindred, and retainers, to so many great Delinquents, as must needs feare such a Parliament; who, though they be no considerable party, in respect of the whole Common-wealth; vet plied their particular interests with more eagernesse than most men do that of the publike.

Some are taken-off by time and their owne inconstancy, when they have looked for quicker redresse of grievances than the great concurrence of so many weighty businesses (in a long-discontinued and reforming Parliament) can possibly admit, how industrious soever they might be, distracted as they were with so great a variety. Those people, after some time spent, grew weary againe of what before they had so long wished to see; not considering that a Prince, if he be averse from such a Parliament, can finde power enough to retard their proceedings, and keepe-off for a long time the cure of the State. When that happens, the people, tired with expectations of such a cure, do usually, by degrees, forget the sharpnesse of those diseases which before required it; or else, in the redressing of many and long disorders, and to prevent them for the future, there being for the most part a necessity of laying heavy Taxes, and draining of much Money from the people, they grow extreamly sensible of that present smart, feeling more paine by the Cure for a time, than they did by the lingering disease before, and not considering that the causes of all which they now endure, were preceedent, and that their present suffering is necessary

for their future security.

It was the general opinion of all Gentlemen at that time, That a Parliament, so much and so long desired as this had been, after so great and constant a violation of the Lawes and Liberties of England in the King's former Government, could scarce, in possibility, ever grow into the dislike of the people, or, at least, of so great a part of the people as might be able (which yet, within one yeare, was after seene) to make a Warre against it, and endanger the utter ruine and subversion of it. But I have spoken before of some causes, which might seeme strong enough to engage a part of the people against Parliament; whose particular interests and livelihoods were neerely touched. How farre any proceeding might distaste others, who were uninterested in their private fortunes or callings, I cannot tell any certaine reason: But I remember that, within the compasse of a yeare after, (when this Civil Warre began to breake-out over all the Kingdom, and men in all companies began to vent their opinions in an argumentative way, either opposing or defending the Parliament-Cause; and Treatises were printed on both sides:) many Gentlemen who forsooke the Parliament, were very bitter against it for the proceedings in Religion, in countenancing, or not suppressing, the rudenesse of people in Churches (which I related before) when they were acting those things which seemed to be against the Discipline of the English Church, and might introduce all kindes of Sects and Schismes. Neither did those of the Parliament-side agree in opinions concerning that point: Some said, it was wisely done of the Parliament, not to proceed against any such persons, for feare of losing a considerable party, as is said before; Others thought and said, That, by so doing, they would lose a farre more considerable party of Gentlemen than could be gained of the other sort. They also affirmed, That, Lawes and Liberties having been so much violated by the King. if the Parliament had not so farre drawne Religion also into their cause, it might have sped better; for the Parliament frequently at that time, in all their expressions, whensoever they charged the corrupt Statesmen withinjustice and Tyranny, would put Popery, or a suspicion of it, into the first place against them. I remember,

when the Warre was begun, among those little Treatises, which were then published, (as many there were without any names to them,) I found one, in which the case is thus expressed, to recite the words of it. Perchance (saith he) too much insisting upon Religion, and taxing the King for affecting Popery, hath, by accident, weakened the Parliament, and brought Parties to the King. It may seem a great Paradox that the best and onely necessary of all things, Religion, being added into the scale of Lawes and Liberties, should make the scale lighter than before. ther can it be true but by accident; as thus: The strange intercourse betwixt Rome and the English Court; The King's owne Letters to the Pope; His favouring of Priests, and such things; though they may give a State just cause of suspicion, that their Religion is undermining: Yet, because it cannot be so absolutely proved to the sight of all the people, that the King favoured Popery, as that he violated the Lawes and Liberties of the Kingdome; (which latter was visible to all;) the former, concerning Religion, remaines; in the people's reason, as a controverted question (the King still protesting for Religion) and the disputes about that, amusing the People, make them by degrees forget that crime of the King's which was without controversie and evident, " the violation of their Lawes and Liberties:" And more than so; for some, supposing that the Parliament unjustly taxed him in Religion, did, in time, believe, that he was not so guilty of the other, as they would make him; which I have heard some of late maintaine. From whence may follow a strange conclusion; That the King's dealing so much with Rome, to the disadvantage of the Protestant Religion, should now turne to his owne advantage in a Protestant Kingdome. And we may make this as paradoxical a supposition, That, if the King had never done any thing prejudicial to the Protestant Religion, he would have found fewer Protestants this Parliament to take his part. For then; there being no dispute at all about Religion, the crimes of his State mis-government would have plainly and inexcusably appeared to all; as we have seene that some of our former Kings, for the like violation of Lawes and Liberties, when there was but one Religion, and therefore no dispute about it, have been heavily censured in Parliament, no man appearing in their justification. And why should not a Parliament thinke that such things are cause enough to be stood-upon, and to justifie their quarrel before God? as if the Almighty did not abhorre Injustice, Oppression, Tyranny, and the like, in any Kingdome, unlesse the profession of Religion were also depraved. Nay, he abhorreth it more in that place where the purest profession of Religion is.

Besides, that frequent naming of Religion, as if it were the onely quarrel, hath caused a great mistake of the question; in some by reason of ignorance; in others, of subtility, whilest they wilfully mistate, in order to abuse, the Parliament's Cause, writing whole Volumes in a wrong-stated case; as, instead of disputing "whether the Parliament of England lawfully assembled, where the King virtually is, may by Armes defend the Religion established by the same power, together with the Lawes and Liberties of the Nation, against Delinquents, who detain with them the King's seduced Person:" They make it the question, "Whether Subjects, taken in a general notion, may make Warre against their King for Religion's sake?"

Such

Such was the sense of many Gentlemen at that time, who adhered to the Parliament. But to proceed in the Narration.

The Parliament had been of late sensible of the losse of some from them, and (having detected divers Conspiracies and Machinations of dis-affected people against them, and fearing more,) had, in May last, framed a Protestation, which was solemnly taken by all the Members of both Houses, and sent through-out England to be taken by the people; the forme of it was in these words:

A Protestation in support of the Priviment is framedin May, 1041.

I A. B. in the presence of Almighty God, promise, vow, and protest leges of the Parlia- to maintaine and defend, as farre as lawfully I may, with my life, power, and estate, the true Reformed Protestant Religion, expressed in the Doctrine of the Church of England, against all Popery and Popish Innovations within this Realme, contrary to the said Doctrine; and according to the duty of my Allegiance, I will maintaine and defend his Majesties Royal Person, Honour and Estate, as also the Power and Priviledge of Parliaments, the lawful Rights and Liberties of the Subjects, and every Person that shall make this Protestation, in whatsoever he shall do in the lawful pursuance of the same; and to my power, as farre as lawfully I may, I will oppose, and, by all good waies and meanes, endeavour to bring condigne punishment on all such as shall, by force, practice, counsels, plots, conspiracies, or otherwise, do any thing to the contrary in this present Protestation contained: And further, That I shall, in all just and honourable waies, endeavour to preserve the union and peace betwixt the three Kingdomes of England, Scotland, and Ireland, and neither for hope, feare, or any other respects, shall relinquish this Promise, Vow, and Protestation.

It were not amisse in this place briefly to mention some alterations, which had been made before the time that the Kinge tooke his journey into Scotland; (though they were not done immediately about that time, but some weekes, or Moneths, before,) because they concerne some Noblemen, of whom we shall have occasion hereafter to make mention in the course of this History.

Several changes in May, 1641.

The Lord Cottington, upon the 17th of May, 1641, had resigned his place of the great Officers of Master of the Wards; and the Lord Viscount SAY and SEALE succeeded him in that Office.

> Within few daies after, the Lord-Treasurer, Doctor Juckson, Bishop of London, resigned his Staffe, and the Office was committed to five Commissioners. About that time the Earle of Leicester, who had lately returned from being Ambassadour in France, was, by the King, made Lord Lieutenant of Ireland. The Earle of Newcastle was removed from being Governour to the Prince, and the Marquesse of Hartford appointed in his roome.

> > 小田島

THE

HISTORY

OF THE

PARLIAMENT OF ENGLAND.

THE SECOND BOOK.

CHAP. I.

A Standing Committee during the Recesse of both Houses of Parliament. The Rebellion of the Irish, and Massacre of the Protestants there. Some endeavours of the English Parliament for relief of that Kingdom.

THE businesse of England, by this absence of the King, was at a great stand. In such a concurrence of high affairs, and so great an expectation to find redress of pressing Grievances, nothing was so irksome to the People as Delay. To retard the cure, was little better than to destroy. And the Sequel, within a short time, proved worse than the wisest men could imagine, or the most jealous possibly suspect; though jealousies and fears were then grown to a great height, and the Parliament of angland was less than ever assured of the King's real affection to them. Nothing of State was transacted in Parliament during the King's absence. Some debates

The King proposes England, to permit the Soldiers of the of Spain.

debates there were only about Church-service, and alterations to be made in the Book of Common-prayer; in which, notwithstanding, nothing was concluded. One businesse only came to be discussed; of which the King himself gave the occasion; who, within few daies after his arrival in Scotland, signified by a Letter to the Lords, That he was engaged to the Spaniard by promise, to let him have four to the Parliament of thousand souldiers out of that lately-disbanded Irish Army, which the Earle of Strafford had before raised; his desire was to make good his promise by consent of army lately disban- Parliament. But the House of Commons (whom the Lords had invited to a Conded in Ireland to en ference for that purpose,) would not consent that any Irish should go to assist the the army of the King Spaniard. Some reasons were then given; but more particular cause was shewed about ten daies after, when a second Letter came from the King, in which his Majesty declared, That the Spanish Ambassadour claimed his promise, from which in honour he could not recede. Notwithstanding, since he had found that Ambassadour so reasonable, as that he was content to accept of two thousand; he hoped the Parliament would not deny that. The House tooke it into consideration; and within two dayes, the Lord of FAWKLAND, a Member of the House of Commons, at a conference delivered to the Lords, gave reasons in the name of that House, why it was very unfit to grant the King's desire, because the Spaniard was not only an Ally, and confederate, but an assistant, to the Emperour against the Prince Elector, his Majesties Nephew; who, by the power and oppression of that Emperour, had been long deprived of his Inheritance: And at this time, when the King had pub. lished a Manifesto in behalf of his Nephew, and to that purpose sent an Ambassadour to the Dyet of Ratisbone, it would seem to be a contradiction in the King to assist the Enemies of the said Prince Elector, which might be considered as a drawing of his own Sword against himself: besides the great prejudice it must needs bring to the Protestant cause, which this present Parliament so much intended and laboured to promote. Upon these reasons it was thought fit not to consent to the King's desire in that point. And immediately the two Houses of Parliament adjourned themselves from that day, being the eighth of September, till the twentieth of October, and appointed a standing Committee of fifty Members during that recesse.

But the Parliament refuses its consent.

Before the Accesse and meeting-again of the Parliament, Letters came from the English Committee in Scotland, and were read before that standing Committee of Westminster, importing the discovery of a Treasonable plot against the lives of Marquesse HAMILTON, and others, the greatest Peeres of Scotland; the conspirators against the Lives of being the Earle of Crayford, and some others. How it was discovered, or how the Marquis of Ha- prevented, or whether the King had any privity to it (though one of that country have since written very plainly, charging the King with it) because the States of Scotland were were silent in it, the Parliament of England took the lesse notice of it: Only the standing Committee, for avoiding the like attempts at London, and fearing that such might flow from the same spring, appointed strong guards to be placed in many parts of the City, till further directions might be given from the two Houses at their Accesse. The malignancy, which at that time began to appear in people of that condition and quality which were before mentioned, and was

A report of a Plot milton and other great Peers of Scotland, in October. 4641.

Digitized by GOOGLE

not

not only expressed in usual discourse among their companions, but vented in scurt rilous and bitter Libels against those Lords and Commons who were generally reputed the most sedulous for the Common-wealth, was cause sufficient to increase the feares and jealousies of the Parliament.

But that fatal fire, which so sadly wasted the three Kingdoms, broke-out in that The Papists of Irein which it was least feared; and those that seemed most secure, were the first sufferers. and massacre the For about the end of October, 1641, during the King's abode in Scotland, the most Protestants, in Octobarbarous and bloody Rebellion that ever any age or Nation were guilty of, broke, ber, 1641. The atrocity of it is without a parallel; and as full of wonder was the close carriage of so black and far-reaching a Designe. The innocent Protestants were, upon a suddain, disseised of their Estates, and the persons of above two hundred thousand men, women, and children, murthered,—many of them with ex-

quisite and unheard-of tortures,—within the space of one month.

That which encreased the amazement of most men, was, The consideration that the ancient hatred, which the Irish (a thing incident to conquer'd Nations) had formerly borne to the English, did now seeme to be quite buried and forgotten; forty years of peace had compacted those two Nations into one body, and cemented them together by all conjunctures of alliance, intermarriages, and consanguinity, which was in outward appearance strengthened by frequent entertainments, and all kinds of offices of good neighbourhood. There seemed in many places a mutual transmigration (as was observed by a noble Gentleman, whose place in that King-Sir John Temple. dom gave him means to know it, out of whose faithful relation of that Rebellion and Massacre, I have partly collected my discourse of it) into each others manners. Many English strangely degenerating into the Irish manners & customes, and many Irish, especially of the better sort, having taken-up the English language, apparel, and decency of living in their private houses. The present Government was full of lenity and moderation; and some redresse of former grievances had then been newly granted by the King to his Irish subjects. The same Gentleman, in his History of the Irish rebellion, (where the Reader may more fully informe himself of particulars) affirms, that he could never hear of any one Englishman that received any certain notice of this conspiracy, till that very evening before which it was to be put in execution. Some intimations had been given by Sir WILLIAM COLE, in a Letter to the Lords-Justices, Sir WILLIAM PARSONS, and Sir John Burlace, with the rest of the Council, concerning dangerous resorts, and meetings of some persons who were judged fit instruments for such a mischief.

This horrid plot, contrived with so much secrecy, was to take effect upon the The Castle of Dublin 23d of October. The Castle of Dublin, the chief strength of that Kingdome, and is saved from the principal Magazine of the King's Armes and Ammunition, (where all those Armes by a lucky discovery which were taken from the late disbanded Irish Army, and others, which the Earl of the intended atof Strafford had provided, were deposited,) was to be seized by nine of the clock tackupon it, the night before it was to that day by the Rebels; for which purpose many of the Irish Gentry of great be made. quality, were, the night before, come to Dublin, to be in readinesse for the performing of that exploit. It was further agreed among those conspirators, that,

Digitized by Google

upon the same day, all other his Majesties Forts and Magazines of Armes and Ammunition in that Kingdom should be surprized, and all Protestants and English, that would not joyn with them, should be cut-off. But it pleased God to prevent the seisure of that Castle, and so to save the Kingdom from being wholly lost in one day; and that by a means strange and unexpected. Hugh Mac Mahon, Esquire, grand-son to the famous Rebel Tyrone, a Gentleman of a plentiful fortune in the county of Monagan, and one that had served in Armes under the King of Spain as Lieutenant-Colonel, a principal Agent in this Rebellion, being come with others (as aforesaid) into Dublin the day before that great Designe was to be put in execution, being the 22nd of October, admitted into his company at a Tavern in that City, one Owen Conally, of Irish extraction, but a Protestant, and servant to Sir John Clotworthy, a Member of the English To this Owen he revealed so much, as they were drinking, that the honest man, escaping from him, (though not without great danger to himself, at the present,) informed the Lord-Justice PARSONS, that night, about nine of the clock, of a dangerous Designe upon the whole Kingdom; which being taken into present consideration, MAC MAHON was apprehended, and, after his examination, the Lord MAQUIRE also, another principal actor; who were both committed to close custody, and the Castle secured with all diligence. But many conspirators of great note escaped that night out of Dublin, as BIRNE, MORE, PLUNKET, and others.

A Proclamation bels, by the Lords of

The Lords of the Council, amazed at the discovery of so horrid a Treason, did, against the Irish Re- notwithstanding, endeavour (since there was no prevention; for MAC MAHON had the Council at Dub plainly told them, when he was examined, that by that time all the counties of Ireland were risen,) to use the best remedies to that desperate disease; and hoping that, perchance, the news how the plot for seizing of Dublin-castle was disappointed, might somewhat dishearten the conspirators in remote parts, and encourage the good Subjects with more confidence to stand upon their guard; issued-forth a Proclamation presently, and, by careful messengers, spread it into as many parts of the Kingdom as they could. The effect of which proclamation was, to signifie the discovery of the Treason, and exhort all men to do their duty in suppressing

> But the general Designe was past prevention; and that very day there came in some poor English Protestants, and others in a short time, every day, and almost every hour; shewing how they had been robbed, and their houses surprised, by the Rebels. whose outrage daily increased in rapine and murdering, and fireing Towns and Villages in divers counties. To oppose, therefore, the growth of that desperate malady, the Lords-Justices (dispatching Letters to the King in Scotland, and to the Earle of Leicester, lately made Lieutenant of Ireland by the King, and yet resident at London, of their lamentable condition,) examined with all diligence how they were provided for such a War. They found in Dublin, Stores, and Armes for ten thousand men, with Artillery, Powder, Match and Lead proportionable, laid-in by the late-Earle of Strafford; which, though designed by himanother way, were yet reserved,

Military Stores in Dublin Castle.

Digitized by GOOGLE

by God's providence, for this service. But the Officers and souldiers of the old standing army were so much dispersed into remote places of the Kingdom, for the guard of other Forts, that there was scarce any possibility of drawing a considerable company together to defend Dublin, or make head against the Rebels in the North. The greatest mischief to the State, and advantage to the Rebels, was, That there was no Money in the Exchequer; and besides, the King's Revenues, and the Rents of English Gentlemen due for that halfe-year, were either in the hands of the Tenants, or of the Collectors, in the country, and must unavoidably fall into the Rebels power; so that, although their disease were present, the only means of cure was remote, which was a dependance upon some supplies from the Parliament of England.

Upon the very day designed for the surprisal of the Castle at Dublin, the 23rd of The Irish rebellion October, the Northern Rebels broke-out in the Province of Ulster, and in few the Ulster, and the province of Ulster, and the dayes got possession of so many Towns, Forts, and Gentlemen's Houses, within ster, October 23, the counties of that Province, as might seeme almost incredible, if we consider 1641. only the chief actors, men of no great skill in Martial affairs, or any policy: such as Sir Phelim Oneale, and his Brother, with the rest; and not rather (which indeed was the true reason,) the general engagements of the Irish, and their deep dissimulation, concurring with the great credulity of the English, upon the causes aforementioned, of so long intermixed co-habitation, and friendly Relations betwixt them. Both these were the causes which afterward encreased the Massacre of the English, who, when the fire brake-out, implored the friendship of their Irish neighbours, Landlords, or Tenants; committing into their hands and protection their treasure, wives and children, with all that was dear unto them, in hope that former friendship might prevail. But they, generally, either betrayed them into the power of other Rebels, or perfidiously and cruelly murdered them with their own hands: which extreme falshood and cruelty in the Irish was thought to be much encreased by the charmings of their Priests, who told them, "That it was a mortal sin to protect, or relieve, any of the English."

That intermixture of the Nations did also, at this sad time, make the English lesse able to defend themselves than if they had lived singly by parties of their own. For, where the English were able to make any head, or stand upon their guard, (though in such an amazement and suddain surprisal) they defended themselves beyond belief, till the Irish (principled by their Priests) offered them fair Quarter; with assurance of lives and goods, safe conduct, and free passage to what places they pleased; confirming such covenants with deep oathes, and protesta- The treachest and tions, and sometimes under their hands and Seales. But, when they had the deceived cruelty of the Irish English in their power; the Souldiers spoiled, stripped, and murdered them at English protestants. their pleasure. So were many served; as, at Armagh, by Sir PHELIM ONEALE and his Brother; at Belterbert, by PHILIP ORELLEY; and at Longford, Tullough, and other Castles in the County of Fermanagh, by others of those Rebels. But, if the English, (who stood to defend their private houses, and so were the more easily cut-off,) could have deserted their habitations at the first rising, and joyned them. selves into bodies, they might, happily, have made a better resistance.

these

Digitized by GOOGLE

these inhumane cruelties and Massacres were acting in miserable Ireland, and daily spreading themselves in every part of that Kingdom; many Counties in several Provinces declaring themselves, and following the barbarous example of those in

Ulster; the sad newes was brought to the Parliament of England.

Vigorous proceedings of the English Parliament, for the suppression of the 27, 1641.

The first Letters, which before were mentioned, sent from the Lords-Justices upon the 25th of October, were carried, and delivered at London, on the last day of that month by Owen 6 Conally, the happy discoverer of the first Plot; with Irish Rebellion, Oct. a full information of all particulars within his knowledge: which by the Lords, who were first acquainted with it, was delivered at a Conference to the House of Commons; who presently ordered, That the House forthwith should be resolved into a Committee, to consider the matter offered concerning the Rebellion in Ireland, as likewise to provide for the safety of England. By which Committee, it was agreed that 50,000 pound should presently be provided; and that the Loane of it should be entreated from the City of London upon Publick security. 2. That a Select Committee of both Houses should be named to consider the affairs of Ireland. 3. That OWEN O CONALLY, who discovered this great Treason, should have 500 pound presently paid him; and 200 pound per annum Pension, till Provision in Land of a greater value be made for him. 4. That Papists of quality be secured in their several Counties within England. 5. That no persons whatsoever, except those who are Merchants, shall be admitted to go over into Ireland, without Certificates from the Committee of both Houses appointed for the affairs of Ireland.

These things were reported to both Houses, and willingly assented to, within two daies after the discovery first made unto them of that Rebellion. And (notwithstanding those present distractions in England, which began then to appear) part of every day, during that November, was allotted to the consideration of Ireland. Within four dayes after the beginning of which month, they ordered many particulars of great import for the relief of it, consisting of supplies of Money, Magazines of Victuals, Ammunition of all sorts, courses to be taken for raising Forces for the occasions of that Kingdom; and shipping for guard of their

Sea-coasts; as more particularly appeareth in the records of Parliament.

Whilst the English Parliament were thus ordering the affaires of bleeding Ireland: other Letters from the Lords-Justices bearing date the fifth of November were brought, and communicated to both Houses. Who, in earnest zeal to the promotion of that businesse, voted two hundred thousand pounds to be raised for suppressing the Irish Rebellion, securing England, and payment of the Publick debts. For which, the City of London must of necessity be made use of, (collections through the Kingdom being too slow for such an urgency). And, to encourage the City in it, an Order was made to secure them for monies formerly lent, and to allow them the full Interest of eight percent. for all-together.

Whilest the English Parliament were thus busied about the relief of Ireland; the horrid Rebellion with a swift motion ran throughout that unhappy Kingdom, many Counties daily joyning with them; and divers Lords and Gentlemen, who for many daies had lived unsuspected in Dublin, went into the Country to side

with

Digitized by GOOGLE

And in November 1641.

with the Rebels, and act their parts in those inhumane outrages: the Lords-Justices and Privy Council were enough troubled to secure Dublin, to victual the Castle, and prepare defence against those dangers, which threatned the City, and were made much more by the feares of spoyled people resorting thither.

But the care of the Privy-Council extended further, (notwithstanding the troubles there) than to the City of Dublin; and, having a Magazine of Armes within the Castle, they resolved so to dispose of them as that resistance might be made against the Rebels in other parts. Some Armes were happily disposed of to such Gentlemen (Sir Henry Tichborns, Sir Charles Coote, and others, of whom more hereafter) as, to their lasting honour, did excellent service. But another part of them were worse than lost, namely, those which were distributed to the Lords and The treachery of the Gentlemen of the English Pale; who afterwards declared themselves for the Rebels, Lords of the English and used the Arms to the destruction of those who had put them into their hands. That English Pale is a large circuit of Land, possessed at the first conquest of Ircland by the English, and ever since inhabited by them; containing divers Counties, as Dublin, Meth, Lowth, Kildare, &c.

The Lords of the Council thought fit to trust those Lords and Gentlemen of the Pale both with Commissions and Armes (though many of them were professed Papists) hoping that this great Confidence would work so far upon their hearts, (if any truth or loyalty were left there,) as to keep them, at least, from joyning with the enemy; and, if they were honest, would enable them to oppose the threatning incursions of the Northren Rebels. This great Trust the Council were more encouraged to repose in these perfidious Lords and Gentlemen of the Pale, because themselves had appeared at Dublin of their own accords, professing truth and loyalty, with deep and solemne Protestations, and declaring that they were most forward and ready to concur with their Lordships in that service.

But so great an affliction was to fall upon unhappy Ireland, that all those Lords Suchof them as were that were Papists, after they had received Commissions and Armes, notwithstand-papists, break their ing all their deep vowes, did most perfidiously, soon after, desert their houses, and of Loyalty, and join openly declare themselves in actual Rebellion; such as were Viscount Mongan-the Irish rebels. NET, GORMANSTON, and COSTELOE, DILLON, BIRNE; BELLER, TALBOT, and many others.

The Condition of Dublin was more lamentable every day than other; and not so much afflicted were they with feares and dangers which threatned themselves, as by that extream sorrow, which compassion must needs work in them, toward all the suffering English which resorted thither. Dublin was the Sanctuary of all the despoiled Protestants; and, by that meanes, became the sad stage, upon which all horror was represented; and what mischiefes soever were acted in other parts, were there discovered and lamented. Their eyes were sad witnesses of the Rebels cruelty, in those despoiled English which daily resorted to the City; but their eares were much more afflicted with the relation of those horrid tortures, which had been used to those who died in other parts. Their eyes could not but extremely suffer from such wretched Spectacles as daily, from all parts, presented themselves; People of all conditions,

CHAP. II.

The King returneth out of Scotland, and is pompously entertained by the City of London. The Remonstrance is published by the Parliament. The King entreth into the House of Commons. The Protestation of the twelve Bishops; and how it was censured by the Lords and Divers unhappy obstructions of the relief Commons. of Ireland.

BUT, to leave Ireland struggling against her sad and woeful calamities, and returne again to the Affairs of England;—at that same time about the end of November, 1641, the King, being returned from Scotland, was by the City of London enterfrom Scotland at the tained, feasted, and conducted to his Palace at White-hall, with as pompous Solemnity, and costly expressions of Love and Duty, as ever any King of England was.

> Of which extraordinary testimonies of affection toward him, the King seemed very sensible, and returned Thanks to the City; inviting, within few dayes after, the chiefe of them to Hampton-Court, where they were feasted, and divers Alder-

men were knighted by his Majesty.

The English House a grand Remonof the people throughout the

The King returns

end of November,

1641.

While the King resided at Hampton-Court, the House of Commons presented of Commons present to him a Remonstrance, or Declaration of the state of the Kingdom; wherein all strance to the King, the chiefe grievances and oppressions, which the Nation had groaned-under since containing a recital the beginning of his Reign until that time, were recited; but with as much tenderof all the gilevances nesse of expression, and respect to his Person (for such care they took, as it appeared in that Petition of theirs which accompanied the Remonstrance) as in the utterance King sreign, Decem- of so much truth could possibly be shewn. For all the fault is laid upon ill Ministers, who are called a Malignant Party.

That Remonstrance, some little time before the King's return out of Scotland,

had been with much earnestnesse debated in the House of Commons: and at that time when it was Voted, so much divided was the House, that not above nine voices carried it.

So fierce and long were the disputations about it, and arguments urged on both sides, that not only the day, but a great part of the night was spent in it. For the House arose not until two of the clock in the morning.

The prevailing part alledged for it (as it was afterward expressed in their Petition to the King) that Their intention was only to inform his Majesty, his Peers, and all other his loyal Subjects; with no purpose at all of laying the least blemish upon his Person, but to represent how much his Royal Authority and Trust had been abused to the great prejudice and danger of his Majesty, and all his good Subjects.

It was alledged by many Gentlemen in ordinary discourses, who were of the same opinion that the prevailing Voters in Parliament were, That such a Remonstrance might be of good use, and that the King, (having, perchance, been ignorant, in some degree, of how much evil had formerly been wrought) might, by this Remonstrance, be not only brought to a knowledge of his past Errors, but to a salubrious fear of offending again, by considering how publick and manifest to the World the defaults of Princes in point of Government must needs appear.

The other side were of opinion, That this Remonstrance, instead of directing him for the future, would teach him only to hate the makers of it, as upbraiders of his crimes, and as persons that went-about to lessen, or blemish, (and so the King seemed to relish it, as appeared in his Answer printed,) his Reputation with the people. They held it fitter at such a time, when the King's Affections were dubious toward the Parliament, to win him by the sweeter way of concealing his Errors, than, by publishing of them, to hazard the provocation of him, with whom it was not behoveful to contest, unlesse they were in hope to change his disposition for the future, or ascertained of their own power, and resolved to make full use of it.

For mine own part, I will make no judgement at all upon it; nor can we truly judge by the successe of things. But such an unhappy Genius ruled those times (for Historians have observed a Genius of times, as well as of climates, or men,) that no endeavours proved successful; nor did any actions produce the right (though probable) effects.

Who would not in probability have judged that the forementioned costly and splendid entertainment, which the City of London gave to the King, would have exceedingly endeared them unto him, and produced no effects but those of love and concord? Yet accidentally it proved otherwise. For many people, ill-affected to the Parliament, gave it out in ordinary discourse (Non ignota loquor, it is a known truth;) that the City were weary of the Parliament's tedious proceedings, and would be ready to join with the King against them. Whether it begat the same opinion in the King or not, I cannot tell; but certainly some conceived so, by some of the King's actions which immediately followed, expressing a greater confidence against the Parliament

Parliament than before, displacing some from such Trusts, as had been conferred on them: Insomuch that the City presently after, finding what ill use was made of these expressions, were enforced to declare themselves in a Petition to both Houses; "That, since some ill-affected People had interpreted their Loyal and "affectionate entertainment of the King, as a sign that they would wholly adhere to him, and desert the Parliament; they openly professed the contrary; and "that they would live and die with them for the good of the Common-wealth."

After which, the City, no lesse than the Parliament, did seem to be distasted both

by the King and Queen.

The fears and jealousies that now reigned, were of a sadder nature than the fears Fears and Jealousies of any former times had been. Two years before, the people feared, that whilest between the King and this King lived, they should never see a Parliament; but now they began to fear that no Parliament could do them good.

At this time began that fatal breach between King and Parliament to appear visibly, and wax daily wider, never to be closed, until the whole Kingdom was, by

sad degrees, brought into a ruinous War.

From henceforth no true confidence appeared between him and that high Court; every day almost contributed somewhat to the division; and Declarations upon several occasions were published to the world; of which, though the language, for the most part, were fairely couched, and sweetened with frequent intermixtures of gracious expressions from the King, and affectionate professions from the Parliament; yet the substance was matter of expostulation: and many intervening actions (which we shall endeavour to expresse particularly) did so far heighten them, and sharpen, by degrees, the style, till those Paper-contestations became a fatal Prologue to that bloody and unnatural War which afterward ensued.

The King, to answer that Remonstrance before mentioned, published a Declaration to justifie his own Honour and Government; and at the same time sent a Message to the Common-Council of London, complaining of tumultuary assemblies of People from the City, daily resorting to Westminster, to the disturbance of that

place, and his Palace of White-hall.

For people about that time, in great numbers, used to present Petitions to the Parliament, and make Protestations of their fidelity to them, in these times of fears and jealousies, which grew now so great that the House of Commons, upon the same day that the King sent that complaining Message to the City, Petitioned him to allow them a Guard for security of their Persons while they sate: alledging in the Petition that there was a Malignant Party bitterly envenomed against them, who did daily gather strength and confidence, and were now come to that height of boldnesse, as to give-out insolent and menacing speeches against the Parliament itselfe. It was therefore their humble desires that they might have a Guard out of the City, commanded by the Earl of Essex, Lord-Chamberlain of his Majesties Houshold, of whose fidelity to King and Common-wealth no question was ever made.

Which

Which Petition was denied by the King; but with a solemn engagement of himself by the Word of a King, that the security of all, and every one of them, from violence was, and ever should be, as much his care, as the preservation of himself and his Children; and, if this general assurance would not suffice to remove these apprehensions, he would command such a Guard to waite upon them, as he

would be responsible for to Almighty God.

The next day after that the King had thus answered the Petition of the House, The King goes to being the fourth of January, 1641, he gave unhappily a just occasion for all men the House of Comto think that their fears and jealousies were not causelesse. For upon that day the armed men, to arrest King came to the Parliament in Person, attended with a great number of Gentle-five of the members. men, Souldiers, and others armed with Swords and Pistols, to the number of about January 4th, 1641-2. three hundred, who came-up to the very door of the House of Commons, and placed themselves there, and in all passages neer unto it: The King in Person entered the House of Commons, and demanded five Members of that House to be delivered to him. The manner of it was, seating himself in the Speaker's Chair, he asked him whether those five Members were there, or not? The Speaker, Mr. WILLIAM LENTHALL, returned to his Majesty an humble and discreet answer, "That he had neither eyes to see, nor tongue to answer, any thing, but what he

was commanded by the House."

The names of those Members whom he demanded were, Mr. DENZILL HOLLIS, second Sonne to the Earl of Clare, Sir ARTHUR HASLERIG, Mr. Pym, Mr. HAMDEN, and Mr. STRODE: All Gentlemen of great esteem and reputation in the House: Two of whom, Mr. Hollis, and Mr. Strode, had before suffered many years of sharp and harsh imprisonment from the King (after the dissolution of that Parliament, in the fourth year of his Reign.) for matters done in Parliament; which was contrary to the Priviledges of that High Court. The King had the day before, by his Attorney General, Sir EDWARD HERBERT, (a Member also of the House of Commons,) demanded the deliverance of those five forementioned Gentlemen; and sent a Sergeant at Armes to apprehend them, pretending that he meant to charge them, and together with them, the Lord MANDEVILB, (eldest son to the Earl of MANCHES-TER,) a Member of the House of Lords, with Articles of High Treason, and other misdemeanors, which Articles were to this purpose;

- 1. That they had endeavoured to subvert the Government, to deprive the King of his legal power and to place on Subjects an arbitrary and tyrannical power.
- 2. That they had endeavoured, by foule aspersions upon his Majesties Government, to alienate the affections of his people from him.
- 3. That they endeavoured to draw His late Army from His Obedience, to side with them in traiterous Designes.

4. That

Digitized by Google

- 4. That they trayterously invited and encouraged a forraigne power to invade His Majesties kingdom of England.
- 5. That they trayterously endeavoured to subvert the very Rights and Beings of Parliament.
- 6. That they have endeavoured, by force and terror, to compel the Parliament to joyne with them in their trayterous designes, and to that end have actually raised and countenanced tumults against the King and Parliament.
- 7. That they have trayterously conspired to Levy, and actually have Levyed, Warre against the King.

But the House of Commons, hearing this demand, to prevent such further breaches of Parliament-Priviledges as might ensue upon the same day, ordered upon the Question; That, if any persons should come to the lodgings of any member of that House, and there offer to seale their Trunkes or Doors, or to seize upon their Persons, That then such Members should require the aide of the Constable to keep such persons in safe custody, till the House did give further Order. And they further declared, That, if any Person should offer to arrest, or detain, the Person of any Member of that House, without first acquainting the House therewith, and receiving further order from thence; that it should be lawful for such a Member, or any Person in his assistance, to stand upon his, and their, guard of defence, and to make resistance, according to the Protestation taken to defend the Priviledges of Parliaments.

These things had passed the day before that the King had so entered into the House of Commons. His Majesty finding those five Members were not there (for they, by consent of the House, upon some informations of what would happen, had absented themselves) from the Speaker's Chair, where he sate, made a Speech to the House, wherein he told them, That he was very sorry for that occasion; but yet, no King of England that ever was, should be more careful to maintain the Priviledges of Parliament than he would be; that those five Members were dangerous men; but he protested, in the word of a King, That he never intended any force; but to proceed against them in a legal and fair way. But sithence he could not now do that which he came for, he would trouble them no more; but expected, as soon as those five members came to the House, that the House would send them to him: or else he would take his own course to find them.

But this great breach of Priviledges of Parliament was encreased by many circumstances. For the day before, being the third of January, contrary to the forementioned order of the House of Commons, the Chambers, Studies, and Trunks

Trunks of those five Members, by a Warrant from the King, were sealed-up; Sir WILLIAM KILLIGREW, and Sir WILLIAM FLEMEN, with others, being employed in that service. And within two dayes after, upon the sixth of January, a Proclamation was made by the King for the apprehending and imprisoning of those five Members; wherein it was suggested, that, through the conscience of their own guilt,

they were absent and fled, not willing to submit themselves to justice.

Whereupon the House of Commons, in vindication of their own Priviledges and those five Gentlemen, published, within a few dayes after, a Declaration; in which that Proclamation of the King's (entituted there, A Printed Paper) is declared to be false, scandalous, and illegal; and that, notwithstanding the said Printed Paper, or any Warrant issued-out, or any other matter yet appearing against them, or any of them, they may and ought to attend the service of the said House of Commons, and the several Committees then on foot: And that it was lawful for all Persons to lodge, harbour, or converse with them, or any of them; and that whosoever should be questioned for the same, should be under the protection and Priviledge of Parliament.

The House of Commons further declared, That the publishing of several Articles purporting a form of a Charge of High Treason against the Lord MANDEVILL, and the forenamed five Members, by Sir WILLIAM KILLIGREW, Sir WILLIAM FLEMEN, and others, in the Innes of Court, and elsewhere, in the King's name, was an high breach of the priviledge of Parliament, a great scandal to his Majesty and his Government, a seditious act manifestly tending to the subversion of the Peace of the Kingdome, and an injury and dishonour to the same Members, there being no legal charge, or accusation, against them.

Whereas there is mention made in the late recited words of this Declaration, concerning the Innes of Court, we cannot omit, that about the same time (so unhappy a Genius of division reigned among all sorts) there wanted not some men disaffected to the Parliament, who went up and down, perswading the young Gentlemen of the Innes of Court to make offer of their service to the King, as a guard of defence, if any danger threatened his Person. Upon which, divers of those young Gentlemen, to ingratiate themselves, repaired to the Court, and were kindly received by

the King and Queen.

The Parliament at that time further declared, That the Priviledges of Parliament, and the Liberties of the Subject, so violated and broken, could not be fully and sufficiently vindicated, unlesse his Majesty would be pleased to discover the names of those persons, who advised his Majesty to issue-out such Warrants for sealing of the Chambers and Studies of the said five Members; to send a Sergeant at Armes to the House of Commons to demand those members; to issue-out Warrants for their apprehension; to come thither himself in Person; to publish Articles in the forme of a Proclamation against the said Members in the fore-declared manner; to the end that all such persons, who advised him to these actions, might receive condigne punishment.

According to this, the Houses humbly desired his Majesty that he would so

Far satisfie their just and legal request, as to let them know those informers: (for the Law, in two several Statutes, provides that satisfaction, that, if, in time of Parliament, the King accuse a Member of the same, of what crime soever, he ought to signifie to the Parliament, who were the informers;) but the King refused to do it. Upon which the House of Commons examined his Atturny-General, Sir Edward HERBERT, who had preferred the aforesaid Articles; he confessed nothing to thema concerning any other Person, or informer; but only that he received the Command from the King himself, and knew nothing further of it. The same the King testifield concerning the said Atturny in a Letter to the Lord-Keeper; wherein he justifieth the Atturny's action, as being no otherwise than the duty of a servant required. But the Parliament made another judgement of it; as namely, that Sir EDWARD HERBERT had broken the Priviledge of Parliament in preferring the said Articles, and done an illegal act; upon which he was committed to prison. These actions of the King did exceedingly afflict all honest Protestants, espe-

cially at such a time, when the affairs of bleeding *Ireland* did so much, and so speedily, require the assistance of England; which must needs, by these unhappy distractions, be retarded; and the total losse of the Protestant Cause there much

endangered. But the City of London was not the least sensible of it; who, in a deep and sorrowful apprehension of this designe, Petitioned the King, with an

expression of all the feares and dangers which they conceived themselves in at The things which they enumerate in their Petition are, That his Majesty had put out a Person of Honour and Trust from being Lieutenant of the Tower; That he had lately fortified Whitehall with men and munition in an unusual manner: Some of which men had abused, with provoking language, and with drawn swords wounded, divers unarmed Citizens passing-by. To explain this branch of their Petition, the Reader must be informed, That the King, the very next day after he had entred the House of Commons, as aforesaid, went in his Coach into the City of London, whither he had heard that those five Members had retired themselves; and was everywhere humbly entreated by the Citizens, in flocks about his Coach, That he would be pleased to agree with his Parliament. and not infringe the Priviledge thereof. The King, perceiving which way the affections of the City went, returned again to White-hall, where he staid about a week after. During which time (by what advice, or to what intention, I cannot tell,) he built there a little Court of Guard, and entertained some Gentlemen, and others, who, as the Petition declares, gave those affronts to divers Citizens that passed-by. They complain likewise in the Petition of the late endeavours used to the Innes of Court: the calling-in divers Canoniers, and other assistants into the Tower: the late discovery of divers Fire-works in the hands of a Papist. But most of all (say they) our feares are encreased by your Majesties late going into the House of Commons, attended with a great number of armed men, besides your ordinary Guard, for apprehending divers Members of that House, to the endangering of your sacred Person, and of the Persons and Priviledges of that Honourable Assembly. The effects of all which fears tend, not only to the overthrow of the whole

The City of London that time. petition the King.

whole trade of this City and Kingdom; which your Petitioners already feel in a deep measure; but also to the utter ruine of the Protestant Religion, and the Lives and Liberties of all your loyal Subjects. The Petitioners therefore most humbly pray your sacred Majesty, that, by the advice of your great Council in Parliament, the Protestants in Ireland may be speedily relieved, the Tower put into the hands of Persons of Trust, that, by removal of doubtful und unknown Persons from about White-hall and Westminster, a known and approved Guard may be appointed for the safety of your Majesty and Parliament; and that the Lord Mandeville, and the five Members of the House of Commons lately accused, may not be restrained of Liberty, or proceeded-against otherwise than according to the Priviledges of Parliament.

The King, though he conceived this petition (as himself expressed) of an unusual nature, yet willing to give content to the City, returned a Gracious Answer to their particulars; That for Ireland, he conceived he had expressed as much care on his part as possibly he could, and would not fail for the future. What he had done concerning the Tower, had been to satisfie their fears before, in displacing one of good Trust, and putting-in another of unquestionable Reputation; and what preparation of strength soever he made there, was with as great an eye of safety and advantage to the City, as to his own Person. For his Guard entertained at White-hall, he alledged the disorderly and tumultuous conflux of people to Westminster, to the danger of his Royal Person, not punished at all by course of Law; and, if any Citizens were wounded, he was assured it happened by their own ill demeanours: that he knew no other endeavours to the Innes of Court, than a gracious Intimation, that he accepted the tender of their loyal affections, encouraging them to continue the same upon all occasions. That he knew of no Fire-works in the hands of Papists. For his going to the House of Commons, that he intended no course of violence, though that way had been justifiable; for he was assured that no Priviledge of Parliament could extend to Treason; which, he knew, would be proved against them upon clear grounds; and they in due time should be acquainted with it; and that his proceedings against them should be according to the Lawes.

The King, presently after his answering of that Petition, sent another Message to the Parliament, that, for the present, he would wave his proceedings against those five Members; and returned a gentle Answer at that time to the Petitioners of Buckinghamshire, who came, to the number of about 2000, in behalf of their Knight, Mr. Hamden, a Gentleman much honoured by them, and by most of the whole Kingdom; in which Petition they prayed that Mr. Hamden, and the rest, that lie under the burden of that accusation, might enjoy the just priviledges of Parliament.

It was then grown a custom, which proved accidentally very unhappie to the Kingdom, (however it were meant,) to come in great numbers to Westminster, when they presented Petitions to the Parliament; though the people petitioning were unarmed, and no just fear from them in the opinion of those who affected the Parliament;

ment; yet those who thought themselves not well relished by the people in general, took occasion from thence, either to fear indeed, or at least to pretend fear, alledging that the Parliament was disturbed by such a numerous confluence of people, and the freedom of the Houses in some degree infringed, that some of the meaner sort were too apt to cast-out rude words against such as they thought to be no good members of the Common-wealth, of what degree soever they were.

From hence was occasion taken by some, to justifie that Guard about Whitehall, and afterwards to excuse the King's absenting himself from the Parliament: And from this ground did the twelve Bishops, about a week before this City-Petition, frame their Petition and Protestation (for so it was called) to His Majesty and the

Peers, which was to this Purpose:

A Protestation of twelve Bishops against all proceed-Lords since the 27th

They protested themselves to abominate all actions or opinions tending to Poperie, or any Malignity against the State; but were willing and ready ings in the House of to perform their duties in Parliament: But, whereas, coming to perform of December, 1641. that duty and service, they have been rudely menaced, affronted, and put in fear of their lives by multitudes of people, and can finde no redresse or protection upon complaint made, they therefore humbly protest before His Majestie and the noble Peers, that, saving to themselves all their Rights and Interests of sitting and voting in that House at other times, they dare not sit, or vote, in the House of Peers, until his Majestie shall further secure them. And, because their fears are not vain, but upon true grounds and objects, they do, in all duty and humility, therefore protest before his Majestie and the Peers, against all Laws, Orders, Votes, Resolutions and Determinations, as in themselves null, and of none effect, which in their absence, since the 27th of this instant December, 1641, have already passed, as likewise against all such as shall hereafter passe, during this their enforced absence from the said House. Which Protestation they desired the King to command the Clerk of that House to record.

> The Lords of Parliament immediately delivered by the mouth of the Lord Keeper, at a Conference, to the House of Commons, That seeing this Protestation was of dangerous consequence, and deeply entrenching upon the fundamental Priviledges and Being of Parliament, therefore they thought fit to communicate it to the House of Commons. The Commons thanked their Lordships for imparting it to them with so much affection and speed, and for expressing their sense thereof; and came to this resolution, To accuse those twelve Bishops of high

In consequence of Master Glynn, therefore, was sent to the Lords; who, at their Bar, in the name this Protestation they are accused of of all the Commons of England, accused those twelve Prelates of high Treason, High Treason by the for endeavouring to subvert the fundamental Laws of the Realm, and the very Commons, and com-Being mitted to prison.

Being of Parliaments; and to desire the Lords that they might be forthwith sequestred from Parliament, and put into safe custodie; and that their Lordships would appoint a speedie day for the Commons to charge them. The Lords instantly sent the Black-Rod to finde out these Bishops, and apprehend them: so that by eight of the clock at night they were all taken, and brought upon their knees to the Bar, and ten of them committed to the Tower: two of them, in regard of their age, were committed to the Black-Rod. The twelve Bishops were these: Jo. Eborac. Thomas Duresme, Robert Coven. and Lichfield, Jos. Norwich, Jo. Asaph, Guill. Bath & Wells, Geo. Hereford, Rob. Oxon. Matth. Ely, Godfrey Gloucester, Jo. Peterborough, Mor. Landaff.

Such work as this was daily made to the Parliament of England; whereby not of the condition of onely the relief of Ireland was wholly obstructed, but all redresse of the grievances Ireland, in December, 1641.

Kingdoms were at last involved in the same War and Confusion. It was a strange thing that so barbarous and bloody a Rebellion should break-out in Ireland, without any the least suspicion or fear of such a Calamity, without any cause given by the innocent English Protestants: and surely it may seem as strange a thing, if well considered, that the revenge of so horrid and inhumane a Massacre should be thus hindered; and indeed it might be thought almost impossible, unlesse the raising of the one, and hindering the other, proceeded from the same cause.

There was a great hope about the beginning of December, that Ireland would speedily be relieved, and Forces transported out of Scotland within a short time to that purpose, considering what careful provisions the Parliament of England (as is before related) had made upon the first notice of it. But at that time the King was returned from Scotland; and in a Speech to the Parliament, in which he conjured them to proceed in the businesse of relieving Ireland, he likewise took notice of a Bill for pressing of Souldiers for Ireland, depending in the House of Peers, and declared his dislike of putting it in that way; being, as he said, a great infringement and diminution of his Royal Prerogative; telling them withal, that he was little beholding to that man, who began such a dispute concerning the bounds of his ancient and undoubted Prerogative. But he offered at last that the Bill might passe with a Salvo jure both to King and People, leaving such debates to a time that might better bear it.

This Speech of the King's was much distasted by both Houses, as a great breach of Parliament-priviledge, insomuch as they framed a Petition to him, wherein they expresse, That the King, by taking notice of the debate in the House of Lords concerning a Bill for pressing of Souldiers, had broken the fundamental Priviledge of Parliament, which is, that he ought not to take notice of any matter in agitation or debate in either House, but by their information and agreement; and that he ought not to propound any condition, or limitation, to a Bill in debate and preparation, or to manifest his approbation, or dislike, of the same, until it be presented to his Majestie in due course of Parliament; and that every particular Member, of

Digitized by Google

either House, kath free liberty of speech, to propound or debate matters according to Order of Parliament; and that the King ought not to conceive displeasure against him for such opinions or propositions. They intreated likewise a reparation for that great breach of Priviledge; and for prevention of the like, that the King would make known who they were, by whose mis-information and evil counsel he had done it, that they might receive condign punishment.

This businesse took-up some time, and was one unhappie impediment to the sudden relief of Ireland, notwithstanding the high necessities of that Kingdom, and the affections of England in general to it; and so heavily went-on all preparations, that it was long before the House of Commons could finde means to emable the Lord-Lieutenant to send-over so much as one Regiment, for defence An English regiment of the Castle and City of Dublin, which was commanded by a worthy Gentleman, Sir Simon Harcourt; who being designed Governour of the City of Dubling, was sent-away by Order of Parliament with his Regiment, and landed there on the last day of December, 1641, to the great comfort of that City, being much

distressed and terrified by the neer approach of the Irish Rebels. Another obstruction of the relief of Ireland happened about three weeks after,

when the Scots delivered eight Propositions to the English Parliament, touching the sending-over of Two thousand five hundred Scots, which were then in readinesse, into the north of Ireland. Both Houses of Parliament consented to all the Propositions; but the King excepted against one of them, being the third, which was, That the Scots desired to have the keeping of the Town and Gastle of Carrickfergus, with power to remain there, or enlarge their Quarters at discretion; and, if any Regiments, or Troops, in that Province should joyn with them, that they receive Orders from the chief Commander of the Scotish Forces. Against this Article the King took exceptions, and desired the Houses to take it again into consideration, as a thing of importance, which he doubted might be prejudicial to England: But, if the House desired it should be so, himself would speak with the Scotish Commissioners, to see what satisfaction he could give them therein. The Scots told his Majestie, that, since it was agreed-upon by both Houses of Parliament, and that the strength of his Majesties argument was, "That article implied too great a Trust for Auxiliary Forces," they were in good hope that his Majestie, being their native King, would not shew lesse trust in them, than their neighbour-Nation had freely done. Upon which the King at last was content to admit the Article, and the advice of his Parliament.

This fatal obstruction of Ireland's relief did but second another immediately before: For at the first, the Commissioners of Scotland had not power given them from the State there, to treat for sending-over a lesse number than ten thousand men; which the Lords were unwilling to yeeld to. But that obstacle seemed to be removed by the zealous affection of the House of Commons; who according to those Instructions of the State of Scotland to their Commissioners, voted the sending over of ten thousand Scots. But the House of Lords, after long debate,

Digitized by Google

is landed at Dublin on the S1st of December, 1641.

would not yeeld unto it, unlesse the House of Commons would give assurance that ten thousand English might be as speedily sent-over: which the Commons as much desired, and promised their endeavour in it; but that the English then could not be so soon raised, much lesse transported, as the Scots, every man understood. There was no other reason given, that ever I understood, but onely That it was dishonourable for England, that Ireland should be reduced by the Scots: and this was the discourse of Papists, and other persons disaffected to the Cause, among

the people every where.

Though it were much wondered at by all good Protestants, that so nice a point of Honour should be stood-upon, when their Religion and Cause lay bleeding in Ireland after so sad and deplorable a kinde; which began to deject the spirits of the poor Protestants in Ireland, and make them suspect some secret workings under-hand against the good affections expressed by the House of Commons, and those Lords who were well-affected to the State: for they by the greater number were over-voted, so many Popish and ill-affected Lords, besides four and twenty Bishops (for the Bishops voices in Parliament were not then taken-away) sitting in that House.

It was then also generally talked, and much complained-of among the well-af- The King seems very fected people, that the King had been so backward in proclaiming those barbarous unwilling to proclaim, Rebels: and not onely talked among the people, but alledged by the Parsurgent in Ireland liament itselfe (in their own Declaration afterward, when the breach between King to be rebels. and Parliament grew greater) as a signe that these inhumane Rebels had been countenanced by the Court of England, in that the Proclamation whereby they were declared Traitors, was so long with-held, as till the first of January, though the Rebellion broke-forth in October before; and then no more than fourty Copies were appointed to be printed, with a special command from His Majestic not to exceed that number; and that none of them should be published, till the King's pleasure were further signified, as by the Warrant appears, a true copie whereof was printed: so that a few onely could take notice of it. And this (say they) was made more observable by the late contrary proceedings against the Scots, who were in a very quick and sharp manner proclaimed, and those Proclamations forthwith dispersed with as much diligence as might be, thorow all the Kingdom; and ordered to be read in every Church, accompanied with Publike Prayers and Execuations.

That Declaration of the Lords and Commons, in which this is expressed concoming the King's slowe proclaiming of the Irish Rebels, was published when the King was gone to York; at which he was much distasted in many particulars, and returned Answer to them. Among others, because that of Ireland seemed to lie heavie upon his reputation, it is just that the Reader should see the King's own



Answer to that point, that he may the more fairly judge; which shall be fliere-fore inserted, in the very words of the King's Declaration.

To countenance those unhandsome expressions whereby usually they have implied Our connivence at, or want of zeal against, the Rebellion of Ireland. Yso odious to all good men) they have found a new way of exprobation. That the Proclamation against those bloodie Traitors came not out till the beginning of January, though that Rebellion broke-out in October; and then by special Command from Us, but forty Copies were appointed to be printed. It is well known where we were at that time, when that Rebellion broke-forth, in Scotland; — that we immediately from thence recommended the care of that businesse to both Houses of Parliament bere, after We had provided for all fitting Supplies from our Kingdom of Scotland; -that after Our return kither, We observed all those Forms for that service, which We were advised-to by Our Council of Ireland, or both Houses of Parliament bere: and if no Proclamation issued-out sooner (of which for the present We are not certain, but think that others before that time were issued by Our directions,) it was, because the Lords-Justices of that Kingdom desired them no sooner; and when they did, the number they desired was but twenty, which they advised might be signed by Us; which we for expedition of the service, commanded to be printed (a circumstance not desired by them) thereupon we signed more of them than Our Justices desired :- all which was very well known to some Members of one or both Houses of Parliament, who have the more to answer, if they forbore to expresse it at the passing of this Declaration; and, if they did expresse it, We have the greater reason to complain, that so envious an aspersion should be cast upon Us to Our People, when they knew well how to answer their own Objection.

This was the King's Answer to that point of the Parliament's Declaration concerning Ireland. But the House of Commons, in another Declaration, though long after, charge the King upon the same particular, with more circumstances of aggravation: as, That, although the Rebels had most impudently styled themselves The Queen's Army, and professed that the cause of their rising was, "To maintain the King's Prerogative, and the Queen's Religion, against the Puritan Parliament of England;" and thereupon both Houses of Parliament did humbly and earnestly advise His Majestie to wipe-away this dangerous Scandal, by proclaiming them Rebels and Traitors to His Majestie and the Crown of England, which then would have mated and weakned the Conspirators in the beginning,

and have encouraged both the Parliaments here, and good people there, the more vigorously to have opposed their proceedings: yet such was the power of evil council about him, that no Proclamation was set-forth to that purpose, till almost three months after the breaking-out of this Rebellion; and then Command given that but forty should be printed, nor they published, till further direction should be given by His Majestie.—But the businesse of Ireland was more particularly touched in subsequent Declarations, which in their due time and place may hereafter be related.

That Proclamation against the Irish Rebels, came not out above two days before the King entred the House of Commons, as is before expressed; by which act so great a disturbance was made, and the relief of *Ireland* so much

rétarded.

It was likewise complained of to the King by the House of Commons, within three weeks after, that, since the Ports by order of both Houses (as is before mentioned) had been stopped against all Irish Papists, many of the chief Commanders, then in the Head of the Rebels, had been suffered to passe by His Majesties immediate Warrant. Of which the King cleared himself, in Answer to them, that by examining his own memory, and the notes of his Secretaries, he could not finde himself guilty of granting any such Warrants.

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

The Queen passeth into Holland, with her daughter the Princesse MARY. Difference between the King and Purhament concerning the Militia. The King goeth toward York, and is followed with a Petition from the Lords and Commons to Theobalds, and another Declaration to Newmarket. The King is denied entrance into Hull by Sir John Hotham.

for suppressing the Rebellion in Ireland,

IT was wonderful that nothing at all could advance, or further, this great and necessary work of reducing Ireland, when so many courses were propounded and undertaken: as about the middle of February, both Houses of Parliament had A proposal of a Fund found a way, which they conceived to be most substantial and firm to carry-on that War; namely, by adventuring for proportions of Land in Ireland; there in February, 1641, 2 being, by their account, within the four Provinces of Ulster, Connaught, Munster and Leinster two millions and an half of Acres of Land forfeitable from the Rebels in those Provinces, to be shared among those Adventurers in the City of London, or other Counties thereabout, that would bring-in, or subscribe, such Sums of money as were thought fit, and which were, upon good and serious consideration. set-down in particular; whereby, if an happie Conquest were made upon those bloody Rebels, a large recompence might be made to all those English who either in Person or Purse had contributed to so good a work. The King was well contented with these Propositions, offering withal to go himself in Person into Ireland (but that was not thought fitting by the Parliament); and so far it passed, that an Anact of Parliament Act was made to that purpose, enabling the Parliament with power to carry-on is made for that pur- that War, until Ireland should be declared to be wholly subdued; and that no Peace, or Cessation of Arms, should be at any time made with those Rebels, unlesse both Houses of Parliament assented to it.

pose.

But while these things were acting, other businesse, wherein the safety and security

security of England was concerned, fell into debate; which was touching the Disputes concerning Militia of the Kingdom of England and Dominion of Wales, to be settled in every the Militia of England, January 20, County upon such persons as the Parliament should approve. A petition to this 1641, 2. purpose was sent to the King, presently after they had received a Message from A message from the him, dated the twentieth of January, wherein the King in fair language desires King to the Parliathe Parliament, since that particular Grievances and Distractions were too many, 1641, 2. and would be too tedious to be presented by themselves, that they would comprise and digest them into one entire Body, that so His Majestie and themselves might be able to make the more clear Judgement of them; and that it should then appear, by what His Majestie would do, how far he hath been from intending or designing any of those things, which the too-great fears and jealousies of some persons, seem ₹o apprehend; and how ready he would be to equal, or exceed, the greatest examples of most indulgent Princes in their Acts of Grave and Favour to the People.

This Message was received with thanks by the Parliament, who resolved to take it into speedie and serious consideration. But to enable them with security to discondiscaled a Petition to charge their duties in those affairs, they desired the King to raise-up to them a sure the Kingia anamyer ground of safety and confidence, by putting in the mean time the Tower, with to it. other principal Forts, and the whole *Militia* of the Kingdom, into the hands of such persons as the Parliament might trust, and should be recommended to him by both Houses. This Petition of theirs was not well relished by the King, as appeared by his Answer. But the thing was of so great consequence, that one Answer could not suffice.

Many re-iterated Petitions were presented, and many Answers returned upon this subject, which are extant upon Record; where the King often promiseth to be careful, that no hands, but those who are very faithful to the Common-wealth, shall be by him entrusted with any part of the Militia; but the nomination of any persons to those places he will reserve to himself, it being a principal and inseparable flower of his Crown, vested in him, and derived to him from his Ancestors, by the Fundamental Laws of the Kingdom. The Parliament on the other side affirming, that nothing could enable them to suppresse the Rebellion in Ireland, and secure themselves, but the instant granting of that humble Petition; which they hoped the King would not absolutely deny: That it was their duty to him and the Common-wealth, to represent unto him whatsoever they found so absolutely necessary; for the preservation of both which, the Laws both of God and man enjoyn them to see it put in execution.

During the debate of this businesse, and before any absolute conclusion was made of it, the King took a journey to Canterbury; upon what reasons, shall be anon declared. It was before related, that the King, after his entring into the House of Commons to surprise the five Members, had stayed a week at Whitehall, and then retired to Hampton-Gourt; the next day after, divers Citizens, with a great shew of Boats, and Guns in them, brought the five Members to Westminster, with many expressions that they would not forsake them, who salte to defend their Religion, Laws and Liberties.

The

The King, now resident at Hampton-Court, seemed extremely distasted at the Citie, and pretended the reasons of his absence from Parliament to be fear for his Person, by reason of Tumults that might be raised: but true it is, after this time, he never could be brought neer the Citie, or Parliament, either in body or minde.

Within few days after the King had been at Hampton-Court, he sent for divers of his servants, who were then Members of the Parliament, to leave the House, and give their attendance upon his Person: But two, the chief of them, ROBERT Earl of Essex, lately made Lord Chamberlain of his Houshold, and HENRY Earl of Holland, Groom of the Stool, chose rather to obey his Writ, whereby they were called to assist in Parliament about the highest affairs of England, than to obey this private Command of his, to come and attend at Hampton-Court, alledging in excuse, that their attendance in Parliament was truer service to him as King, than any other could be. For this, the King presently after sent a Messenger to demand the Staff of the one, and the Key of the other, being the Ensignes of their Offices; which they willingly resigned to the Messenger's hands.

The King and Queen go to Canterbury daughter, in the middle of February, 1641, 2.

From Hampton-Court, about the midst of February, the King and Queen went to Canterbury, and so to Dover, with the Princesse MARY their eldest daughter, and Dover, with the married, not a yeer before, to WILLIAM, son to the Prince of Orange. The Queen herself passed from thence into Holland, under pretext of keeping her daughter company to her husband, (the Lady was then about ten yeers of age) which was not at all hindered by the Parliament. But the Queen carried with her all, or the greatest part of, the Crown-Jewels of England, which immediately she pawned in Holland, and with that money bought Arms and Ammunition for that sad War which ensued not long after, between the King and the Parliament of England.

The King's stay at Canterbury and Dover was not long, nor the places so remote, but that some businesse might passe, though with great trouble of those Lords, and others, Members of the House of Commons, who posted between, The King at Canter- upon all occasions. The greatest thing which was done in that time, was that the bury gives his royal King at Canter harry signed the Bill for taking away Bishops Votes in Parliament King at Canterbury signed the Bill for taking-away Bishops Votes in Parliament.

When the Queen and her daughter had taken Sail, the King came back to Greenwich, whither he sent for the Prince and Duke of York to come to him, and attend him in his journey to the City of York, which was the place which he intended to reside at, and to that purpose immediately went on his way as far as A Petition from the *Theobalds*; to which place he was followed with a Petition from both Houses, Parliament is presented to him upon the first of March 1641. The substance of it was, to sented to the King at presented to him upon the first of March 1641. Theobald's in Hert- intreat his Majestie that he would at last be pleased to grant their necessary Petition fordshire, on the 1st concerning the Militia of England; which if he did refuse, in these times of distraction, they must be enforced, and did resolve, to dispose of it for the safety of the Kingdom, in such manner as had been propounded to his Majestie. likewise intreated him to continue his abode neer London, and his Parliament, and not to take his son, the Prince, out of those parts: and, in conclusion, desired his Majestie to be informed by them, his great Council, that, by the Laws of England,

assent to a Bill for taking-away the Bishops right of Voting in Parlia-

of March, 1641-2.

the power of raising, ordering, and disposing-of the Militia, within any Citie, Town, or other place, cannot be granted to any Corporation by Charter, or otherwise, without the authority and consent of Parliament.

The King denied to give any other Answer concerning the Militia, than what The King's answer he had before done; That he conceived himself not safe in any place neer London; to it. and that he would take such a care of the Prince his son, as should justifie him to

God as a Father, and to his Dominions as a King.

The Parliament, upon occasion of that short Answer of the King to their Petition, Proceedings of the voted presently that that Answer was a flat Denial; and that all was truth which Parliament therethey had averred in their Petition, concerning the danger of his removal so far from the Parliament, and likewise carrying of his son away. It was likewise ordered by the Lords and Commons, that the Earl of Northumberland, Lord-Admiral, should give speedie directions for all the Ships belonging to the Navie Royal, to be speedily rigged, and fitted for the service of the Common-wealth-

A Declaration was drawn then by both Houses, and presented to the King at A Declaration of the Newmarket, upon the ninth of March, by the Earls of Pembroke and Holland, sented to the King at with some Members of the House of Commons, wherein were represented to him Newmarket, March some of the old Grievances expressed in the first Remonstrance at his return out 9, 1641-2. of Scotland: as, That the designe of altering Religion had been carried-on by those of greatest authority about him, for divers yeeres: That the War against Scotland was procured in order to that designe: That the Rebellion in Ireland was contrived here in England, out of many presumptions gathered from several examinations there. They speak likewise of his attempt for bringing his Army against the Parliament, of which before mention was made; of his Warrants granted, contrary to promise, for transportation of JERMYN, DIGBY, and other Delinquents; of that great breach of Parliament-Priviledge, in coming to the House of Commons to surprise those Members: by all which they endeavour to prove their fears and jealousies to be grounded upon true substantial reasons, and necessary for the safety of the Common-wealth entrusted to them; and that the King's fear to reside neer London, is altogether without ground, and pretended for nothing but to perplex the Common-wealth, proceeding from evil and traiterous Counsels; affirming, that His Majesties absence would cause men to believe, that it was out of designe to discourage the undertakers, and hinder the other provisions for relieving Ireland; that it would hearten the Rebels there, and all dis-affected persons in this Kingdom.

The King expressed much indignation when he received this Remonstrance, complaining of the manner of it, that it was onely an upbraiding, not an invitation or perswasion of him to return to the Parliament; and told them, that in all ARISTOTLE'S Rhetoricks there was no such argument of Perswasion; and that The King publishes he would answer it in another Declaration, which, within few days after, was drawn- a Declaration in up, and published; wherein, with deep protestations, he vindicates the truth of answer to it. his Religion, and justifies his other proceedings, denying those Warrants for trans-

porting Master Jermyn, and others, in that manner which they urge them: taxes them with their needlesse fears, and uncertain expressions of advertisements from Rome, Venice, Paris, and other places: recites the many gracious Acts which he had already passed this Parliament, to satisfie his People; and protests, in conclusion, that he is most desirous to reside near his Parliament, and would immediately return to London, if he could see, or hear of, any provisions made for his security.

The King sends the Parliament another mesinge from Huntingdon, March 15, 4641-2.

The King sent them another Message from Huntingdon, on the 15th of March, being then upon his removal to the City of York; wherein he expresses his care of Ireland, and not to break the Priviledge of Parliament; but chiefly, to let them know that he understands his own Rights; forbidding them to presume, upon any pretence of Order, or Ordinance, (to which he is no party) concerning the Militia, or any other thing, to do, or execute, what is not warranted by those Laws; and, withal, recommending to them the substance of his Message of the twentieth of January last; that they compose and digest with all speed, such Acts as they shall think fit, for the present, and future, establishment of their Priviledges.

These were the heads of some Declarations, Petitions, and Answers: for about this time, and for three months after, such Messages, Remonstrances, Petitions and Answers, grew so voluminous, upon all occasions, as might, recited vebatim,

make a large History.

The King goes to

Thus is the King gone to York, while the Parliament sit at London, declaring in vain, and voting (as they did upon receipt of his last Message) by consent of both Houses.

Votes of both Houses

- 1. That, the King's absence so far remote from his Parliament, is not of Parliament there-onely an obstruction, but may be a destruction, to the affairs of Ireland.
 - 2. That, when the Lords and Commons, in Parliament, shall declare what the Law of the Landis, to bave this not onely questioned and controverted. but contradicted, and a Command that it should not be obeyed, is an high breach of the Priviledge of Parliament.
 - 3. That they which advised the King to absent himself from the Parliament, are enemies to the peace of this Kingdom, and justly to be suspected as favourers of the Rebellion in Ireland.

It may seem strange to a Reader, that the King, without any, but such bootlesse opposition as Pen and Paper can make against him, even in the sight and notice of a Parliament, whilst they not onely beheld his actions, but seemed to discern the designes, and foresee the effects which would flow from them, could be able to carry the work on so clearly and so far, until the whole Kingdom were thereby vinvolved in a most calamitous and destructive War. I will not presume to publish

Digitized by Google

any opinion of mine own, how, or when, this ruine of the Kingdom should have been prevented; but onely relate what was then done, that posterity hereafter may

judge of it.

It was not unknown to the Parliament, at least not unsuspected, (for it was usually talked among the people of that time) that the Queen, when she passed into Holland, carried with her the Crown-Jewels, to pawn, or sell, there: which, if she did, they could not be ignorant what the intention was, or what the effect was like to prove; nor could it be unknown to them how unlawful the act was, and therefore how fit to be prevented. For they indicted her afterwards of High Treason for that fact, and were able to tell the world, in a Declaration, how great a crime it is in a King himself to make-away the Ornaments of the Crown, and, in particular, the Jewels of it; yea, in such Kings as did it onely to spend, or give-away, not to maintain War against their own People; for whose preservation not onely those Jewels, but whatsoever else they possesse, was first bestowed on them.

They seemed to oppose the Prince's departure from Hampton-Court, to attend the King his Father into the North, because it might increase fears and jealousies

in the People: but the King carried him away.

Above all the rest, they were not ignorant how wonderful an obstruction to all businesse of Parliament, and to the settling of England, or relieving of Ireland, that far removal of the King's Person from the Parliament must needs prove, and which themselves sufficiently expressed: That the very Journey itself, though no worse designe were in it, was in no kinde excusable, as being most inconvenient, for the reasons aforesaid, and convenient in nothing that was ever alledged for it. Yet the King passed quietly thither.

One designe of the King, which, indeed, was thought the chief of that his Nor- The King intends to take possession of the thern Expedition, was prevented by the Parliament by an open and forcible way; Town and Fort of which was, the seizing upon the strong Town and Fort of Hull, with all that Maga-Hull. zine of Arms which was there deposited: But it was very remarkable what means had been used on both sides, to prevent, if it had been possible, that open denial of the King's entrance into Hull, and that the matter should not have come so far; Which the King conceived so great an affront to him, that it grew the subject of

many large and voluminous Declarations afterward, from either Part.

For the prevention of that, before it happened, the King from York had sent a He communicates Message to the Parliament, upon the eighth of April 1642, that he intended to go his intention to the in Person over into Iréland, to chastise, by force of Arms, those barbarous and sage, April 8, 1642. bloodie Rebels; and to that purpose, he thought fit to advertise the Parliament, that he intended to raise, forthwith, by his Commissions, in the Counties neer Westchester, a Guard for his own Person (when he should come into Ireland) consisting of two thousand Foot, and two hundred Horse, which he would arm at Westchester, from his Magazine of Hull.

But at the same time, the Lords and Commons in Parliament had sent a Petition the King for tition to the King, for leave to remove the Magazine at Hull to the Tower of leave to remove the London; alledging, that the Stores of Arms and Ammunition in the Tower were Hull, to the Tower

much of London.

Digitized by Google

much diminished, and that the necessity of Supplies for the Kingdom of Ireland (for which they had been issued from thence) daily increased: That the occasion for which the Magazine was placed at Hull, was taken-away, there being no danger now from Scotland. They likewise alledged, that it would be kept in the Tower with lesse charge, and more safety, and transported from thence with much more convenience for the service of Ireland.

The King seemed very angry at this Petition, alledging, among other things, that, if any of those Arms were designed for Ulster or Leinster, the conveyance of them would be more easie and convenient from Hull than from London. But most of all he seemed to be exasperated (for the Parliament had used timely pre-The Parliament ap- vention) that they had sent to keep out from thence the Earl of Newcastle, whom points Sir John Hothe King, in that Answer, termeth A Person of honour, fortune, and unblemished tham Governour of the Town and Fort reputation, and committed that Town and Fort (without his consent) to the hands of Sir John Hotham.

of Hull.

The Parliament, as it appeared by their expression in a Declaration at that time, were much confirmed in that opinion, which they had, of the King's aiming at Hull, when he went Northward, by an intercepted letter from the Lord Grorge Digby, dated from Middleborough, in Zealand, the 20th of January, 1641, to Sir LEWIS DIVES, wherein he writes, that, if the King will declare himself, and retire to a safe place, he should be able to wait upon him from thence, as well as out of any part of England, over and above the service which he might do for him there in The like expressions he used in another Letter to the Queen, the mean time. intercepted in the same Packet, intimating some service he might do her in those parts; and desired a Cypher, whereby to hold correspondence with her in writing.

Lord Digby takes part with the King against the Parliament.

This young Lord, of whom we spake before, about the death of the Earl of Strafford, (a man of excellent parts, and one that had been acceptable to the Parliament, until his Speech about that businesse, and some other miscarriage, detected upon the same occasion,) was much alienated in heart from the Parliament, because that Speech of his (which he had printed against Command) was ordered to be burned by the hands of the Hang-man; so that, afterward, he became a great cherisher, (as appeared in divers things,) of those divisions which were growing between the King and Parliament, and was voted-against in the House of Commons, as a disturber of the publike peace, for appearing armed at Kingston upon Thames, in an unusual and illegal manner, with other circumstances thereto belonging. Whereupon, the Lords in Parliament sent for him; and, if he appeared not within twenty days, proclaimed him Traitor. But he in the mean time was transported by Sir John Pennington into Holland, by a Warrant under the King's hand, as the Declaration of the Lords and Commons to the King, in March followmg, expressed.

The Parliament settles the Militia of England without the King's concurrence.

During the time that the King and Parliament were (as aforesaid) busied about getting the Magazine of Hull, the Parliament proceeded, by degrees, in settling the Militia in divers Counties, and putting the Commands into such hands as they reposed confidence in; as likewise to take charge of the Navie, and provide by that

means

means against any forraign force that might assault the Kingdom. And, because the Earl of Northumberland, Lord Admiral, by reason of indisposition of health, was disenabled then for commanding the Fleet in his own person, they thereupon recommended to his Lordship the Earl of Warwick, (a man of such ability in Seaattairs, and such untainted reputation, as they durst highly trust) to supply his Lordship's room in that employment. But, understanding that the King had chosen Sir John Pennington into that Command, a Message was sent from both Houses to the King, on the 28th of March, to intreat him that the employment might no longer be detained from the Earl of Warwick, as a noble person, chosen by both Houses of Parliament in that Service, the Charge whereof was to be born by the Common-wealth.

The King refused to admit of the Earl of Warwick, taking great exception at the Message from both Houses, as appeared by his Letter, to the Lord-Keeper, concerning it, that they would take upon them the nominating of the chief Sea-Com- The Earl of Warmick, by the appointment. But the Earl of Warmick, within few months after, (though not without ment of the Parliasome opposition of divers Gentlemen, who had before been placed in Command ment, takes upon him by the King, and strove to carry-away their Ships to His Majestie,) was possessed the command of the English Navy. of the whole Navie: of which some more particulars may hereafter be related.

Upon the 23d of April, 1642, the King, attended by some Noblemen, and no Sir John Hotham great train of Gentlemen and Souldiers, came before the walls of Hull, to demand refuses to admit the great train of Gentlemen and Souldiers, came before the walls of Hull, to demand refuses to admit the great train of Gentlemen and Souldiers, came before the walls of Hull, to demand refuses to admit the great train of Gentlemen and Souldiers, came before the walls of Hull, to demand refuses to admit the great train of Gentlemen and Souldiers, came before the walls of Hull, to demand refuses to admit the great train of Gentlemen and Souldiers, came before the walls of Hull, to demand refuses to admit the great train of Gentlemen and Souldiers, came before the walls of Hull, to demand refuses to admit the great train of Gentlemen and Souldiers, came before the walls of Hull, to demand refuses to admit the great train of Gentlemen and Souldiers, came before the walls of Hull, to demand refuses to admit the great train of Gentlemen and Souldiers, came before the walls of Hull, to demand refuses to admit the great train of Gentlemen and Souldiers, came before the walls of Hull, to demand refuses to admit the great train of Gentlemen and Souldiers, came before the walls of Hull, the great train of Gentlemen and Gentleme entrance there; but he found the Gates shut, and the Bridges drawn-up, by of Hull, April 23, the command of Sir John Hotham, a member of the House of Commons, who was, 1642. by the Parliament, entrusted with the Government of that Town. Sir John Ho-THAM appeared upon the Wall, and, kneeling-down there, intreated his Majestie that he would be pleased not to command that, which he must be enforced (though extremely grieved to disobey his Majesty in any thing) to deny at that time; alledging that he could not admit his Majestie, without breach of trust to the Parliament, beseeching the King to give him leave to send to the Parliament, to acquaint them with his command, and take their direction.

The King, upon this denial, grew into choler, and, after some hot words, seeming not to believe that the Parliament had commanded any such thing; and to that purpose speaking, demanded of Sir John Hotham, that, if he had Order from the Parliament to keep-out his Person, he should shew it in writing; for, otherwise, he would not believe it. But Sir John Hotham, because the Order was not in those express words, as naming the King's particular person, though he knew the sense and meaning of the Parliament, did not produce any Writing; onely continued beseeching the King not to command him that which he might not do: Whereupon the King, after some hours spent in vain about the Town, proclaimed Sir John Ho-THAM, a Traitour; and returned, when he had received, out of the Town, his Son, the Duke of York; and his Nephew, the Prince Electour; whom Sir John, the day before, had admitted into the Town, entertained, and lodged there that night.

The next day the King, in a Message to the Parliament, complained of that affront offered by Sir John Hotham, accusing him for that he had traiterously

and seditiously strived to put his disobedience upon the Parliament, the King seeming to believe that Hotham had done it upon his own head, without any direction or authority from them: And within two dayes after, sent another Message to the Parliament, complaining, in a sharper manner than before, of that great indignity, which, if they afforded him no reparation, would make the World believe that his priviledges were lesse then any Subject's in the Land; and that is was more lawful to rob him of his proper Goods, than the meanest Member of the Kingdom. He sent also, at the same time, a Letter to the Mayor of Hull, commanding him, and all Officers of that Town, to take care that no part of the Magazines should be removed, or transported, out of the Town, under any pretence of Order, or Power, whatsoever, without his Royal Assent, under his Hand. He caused likewise all Passages between Hull and London, to be stopped-up, and by that means apprehended a servant of Sir John Hotham's, going with a Letter to the Parliament concerning the proceedings before-mentioned.

The Parliament immediately, upon notice of these things, declared their reasons for Hull, and that the stopping of Passages, and intercepting of Messengers, or Letters, to, or from, the Parliament, or in their service, was an high breach of the Priviledges of Parliament, which by the Laws of the Land, and their Protestation, they were bound to defend, and punish the violaters; authorizing, by Ordinance of both Houses, all Sheriffs, Justices, Constables, and other Officers, to aid the persons employed in the said service, for their more speedie, free, and safe passage; giving Order also to the said Officers within the Counties of York and Lincoln, to suppresse any Armies raised to force Hull, or stop the passages before-mentioned, in

disturbance of the Kingdom's peace.

The Parliament justifies Sir John Hotham's conduct It was voted by them, two days after, that Sir John Hotham, had done nothing but in obedience to the Command of both Houses of Parliament. Resolved, also it was upon the Question, That this declaring of Sir John Hotham, Traitor, being a Member of the House of Commons, was an high breach of the Priviledges of Parliament. Resolved again, That declaring Sir John Hotham, Traitor, without due Processe of Law, was against the Liberty of the Subject, and Laws of the Land.

An Order of Assistance was then given to the Earl of Stamford, the Lord WILLOUGHBY of Parham, Sir Edward Ayscough, Sir Christopher Wray, Sir Samuel Owfeild, and Master Hatcher, as Committees of both Houses, sent down to Hull, and the two Counties of York and Lincoln, for service of the Kingdom, that all Sheriffs, Justices, Mayors, &c. should be assisting to them upon all occasions.

To that Declaration, Votes, and Orders of Assistance, of both Houses of Parliament, the King, on the fourth of May, returned an Answer, wherein at large he expresses how hainous the affront was, and how much he accounts himself injured by the Parliament, in not repairing him against HOTHAM; labouring to prove by ancient Statutes there cited, that Sir John HOTHAM's denial of entrance to him, was absolutely High Treason by the Law of the Land.

Upon,

Upon this subject, within the space of one week, two other Declarations and Answers passed between the King and both Houses, too large to be here inserted: but the scope of the King's Declarations in general, are to vindicate his own Rights and dignity allowed him as King, by the Laws of the Land; wherein he seemeth not to take notice of the present occasion, or such things as are conceived dangers and thought necessary to be prevented by a Parliament sitting. The Parliament, on the other side, with all humility, and reverent expressions to the King's Person, seeming to take no notice of any affront offered or intended to his Majestie himself, but onely of preserving Hull, the Militia, and Navy, out of the hands of those wicked Counsellors whom they conceived to be too prevalent with him, to the danger of ruining the Kingdom and himself; both which they laboured to preserve, and were lawfully called to it by that Authority which belongs to Parliaments, by the Fundamental Constitution of the English Government. They desire to inform the King, that his Interest in Towns, Arms, or the Kingdom itself, is not of that kinde which private men have in their Goods, to sell or dispose of them at pleasure; but onely as entrusted to him for the good of all: in performance of which trust, none but the Parliament, while it sitteth, are or ought to be his Counsellors and directors: that there can be no good or useful disputation, where the Principles are not granted: and it was ever heretofore taken (say they) for a certain Principle, That the Parliament sitting is the onely Judge of what is dangerous to the Commonwealth, and what useful, as likewise what is lawful in those cases; which the King, by advice of no private Council whatsoever, ought to control, or contradict: which Principle, till the King will be pleased rightly to apprehend, Disputations and Declarations are endlesse, and no true understanding between him and his people can be begotten.

Of all these things, if a Reader desire to be satisfied in particular, he may finde the questions all fully stated by the Parliament, and the King's desires expressed by himself, in two large Declarations; one called the Parliament's third Remonstrance, dated the 26th of May, 1642; and the King's Answer to

that Remonstrance.

But things began to go-on in an high manner; the Parliament authorizing Sir The King summone JOHN HOTHAM to issue-out Warrants to Constables, and other Officers, to the Gentry of Yorkcome with Arms for the defence of Hull: and the King, on, the other side, for at York, May 12th, bidding any such Warrants, bringing, or training, without an expresse Authority 1642. under his hand.

The King had summoned the Gentry of that County to attend him at the City of York; which they accordingly did, upon the 12th of May, 1642, where he caused, after he had spoken some few words to them, to be read aloud in their hearing, his Answer to the Declaration of both Houses concerning Hull, the Answer of the Parliament to his two Messages concerning Hull, together with his Reply to the same, and his Message to both Houses, declaring the reasons why he refused to passe that Bill of the Militia: after which he proceeded in a Speech to them, wherein he strove to make them appreheud, that traiterous attempts might

Digitized by Google

be made against his Person; and for that reason he desired a Guard of Horse and Foot to be levied there for his defence. He complained likewise, that the Committee of Parliament consisting of four Members of the House of Commons. FERDINANDO LOTH FAIRFAX, SIR HUGH CHOLMLEY, SIR PHILLIP STAPLETON, and Sir Henry Cholmley, refused to obey his Command. For they, being there employed, in their own Country, by the Parliament, to do service to the State, were commanded by the King to depart out of the County; which they durst not do, against the intention of the Parliament, who employed them there. But the King in that Speech to the County, bade them take heed of those four Gentlemen, not knowing what doctrine of disobedience they might preach to the people, under colour of obeying the Parliament. The King's Speech and Declaration read, seemed to be much applauded by many Gentlemen, and their servants: as, when those things which came from the Parliament were read, the same persons expres-

sed much scorn, hissing and reviling the language and reason of them.

But divers of the Gentry, and the greatest part of the Free-holders, began with sorrow to consider that this division of the King from his great Council could produce nothing but misery to the Kingdom, and dishonour to himself: and therefore they humbly answered his Propositions concerning a Guard, That they were willing to do any service, or expose their lives to any hazard, for the safety of his Majesties Royal Person; yet they thought themselves unworthy to advise him in a thing of so high consequence; but humbly beseeched him to impart the grounds of his fears and jealousies to his high Court of Parliament, of whose loval care and affections to the King's honour and safetie, and to the prosperitie of the whole Kingdom, they were most confident. And in behalf of the four fore-mentioned Members of Parliament, lately employed to attend your Majestie (said they) from both Houses, being all Gentlemen of quality and estate in the County; we humbly crave your Majesties leave to expresse our confidence in their unstained loyalty to your Majestie, so far as that you may securely admit their attendance to negotiate their employments, until they shall be recalled by the Parliament. And we do all engage ourselves for their fidelity, as being most assured that your Royal Person shall be secure in the General loyalty of your Subjects in this County, without any extraordinary Guard.

A Petition is presengreat numbers of ment.

The King was presented also the next day with a Petition from many ted to the King from thousands, who termed themselves, peaceably-affected Subjects in the people in Yorkshire County of York, in which, expressing their loyalty and affection to him, to comply with the they speak thus: We are confident that no so absolute and hearty observance of your Majesties just commands can be demonstrated, as when you shall in Parliament declare them: If they be divided (which God forbid) our bearts even tremble to consider the danger, and diminution of the honour and safety of your Self and Kingdom; since it is clear to every understand.

Digitized by Google

ing, that it is not a divided part of one or several Counties can afford that honour and safety to your Majestie as the whole Kingdom: Which you may command, no ground of fear or danger remaining, if a good confidence were begot betwixt your Majestie and the Parliament; whose grave and loyal Counsels are, as we humbly conceive, the visible way, under God, to hut a speedie end to the troubles in Ireland, and establish your Throne in Righteousnesse. And, lastly, we humbly supplicate that we may represent our unfitnesse to become Judges betwixt your Majestie and Parliament in any thing, or dispute the Authority of either; which we humbly conceive do fortifie each other, &c.

The King was not well satisfied, or pleased, with this Petition, but persisted still The King continues in his former way of raising Forces, under the name of a Guard; whilst the Particle in the name of a Guard the name of a Guard liament were voting to maintain those Gentlemen, their Committee in the North, to his person. in such things as they have done, and shall further do, in obedience to their commands, for preservation of the Kingdom's Peace; as also to maintain their Ordinance concerning the Militia, and to issue-out Commissions into all parts of the And the Parliament Kingdom, and appoint certain days for all the Trained-Bands to be exercised in raises the Militia. each County according to that Ordinance; and that some Members might be sent into the several Counties, to see the Ordinance performed; and the Magazines of those several Counties in England and Wales to be forthwith put into the power of the Lord-Lieutenants of the said Counties, being such as were entrusted by the Parliament. And, whereas the King had made Proclamation for all the Gentlemen and others of that County to attend him in Arms as a Guard; the Parliament three days after declared, that it was against the Laws and Liberties of the Kingdom, that any of the Subjects thereof should be commanded by the King to attend him at his pleasure, but such as are bound thereto by special service; and that whosoever, upon pretence of his command, shall take Arms, and gather together with others in a warlike manner, to the terror of the King's people, shall be esteemed disturbers of the publike peace: and that the Sheriffs of those Counties where such raising, or drawing, of armed men should be, should immediately raise the power of the Countie to suppresse them, and keep the King's Peace according to Law.

So different and directly contrary, at this time, were the Commands of the King and Parliament, in all things, that the Lords in Parliament, having been informed that the King was resolved to adjourn the next Term from Westminster to York, and had given command to the Lord-Keeper to issue Proclamations and Writs to that purpose, voted that such a removal of the Term, while the Parliament sate, was illegal; and ordered that the Lord-Keeper should not issue any Writs, or seal any Proclamation, tending to that end.

CHAP

CHAP. IV.

Many Members of both Houses leave the Parliament, and repair to the King. Nine of the Lords who first wentaway, are impeached by the Commons, and censured by the Peers. The Great Seal is carried-away from London to York. Some Votes of Parliament concerning the King's proceedings. A Petition, with nineteen Propositions, sent from the Parliament to the King.

THE King proceeded in his earnest endeavour of raising Forces, as a Guard for his Person: which in some measure he had effected, by many fair expressions of love and grace to the people of those Northern Counties, and serious Protestations of the clearnesse of his intent from any violation of Laws and Liberties of the Kingdom, or making War against the Parliament. But the Kingdom was not much affrighted with any Forces which the King could so raise; nor could any other attempt of his in the Northern parts, make the people fear a Civil War. until they saw that great defection of the Parliament-Members, which began before the end of April, and continued for the greatest part of that May: for at that time did the Lords, one after another, and sometimes by numbers, abandon the Parlia-Apriland May, 1642 ment sitting, and go to the King at York: insomuch that, in a very short space, those Lords became the greater number; and their departure began therefore to seem lesse strange, than the constant sitting of the rest. The Lords who left the Parliament, were these: the Duke of Richmond, Marquesse Hartford, the Earls of Lindsey, Cumberland, Huntingdon, Bath, Southampton, Dorset, Salisbury, (although Salisbury, within few days after, repenting himself, made a secret escape from York to London, and joyned himself again to the Parliament, with whom he continued constant ever after) Northampton, Devonshire, Bristol, Westmerland, Barkeshire, Monmouth, Rivers, Newcastle, Dover, Carnarvan, Newport; the Lords Matrevers, Willoughby of Eresby, Rich, Howard of Charleton, - NEWARK,

Many members of both houses of Parliament repair to the King at York, in

Newark, Paget, Chandoys, Fawconbridge, Pawlet, Lovelace; Savile; COVENTRY, MOHUN, DUNSMORE, SEYMOUR, GREY of Ruthen, CAPEL. in the same compasse of time, many of the House of Commons, (though no great number, in respect of those who continued in that house,) did likewise so far break that trust which was reposed in them, as to forsake their seats in Parliament; some of them, as was reported, invited by Letters from the King, and others of their own accord.

At the revolt of so many members from the Parliament, the Kingdom in gene- Various reflections ral began to fear; and all that loved the Nation's Peace, were in an high measure of the people on the dismayed; among whom nothing was to be heard, in all meetings and discourses, Parliament by many but sad presages of misery to the Kingdom, if Almighty God did not in a miracu- of it's members. lous way prevent it: They concluded, that no other way could have been foundout to endanger the overthrow of that Parliament, which many open attempts and secret conspiracies could not do: That, as the ruine of England could not in probability be wrought but by itself; so the Parliament could not be broken (a Prologue to the other) but by her own Members, and that sentence verified, Perditio tua ex te. Though the opinions of men differed concerning the censure of those Members; while some condemned, others in some degree excused them, according as affection and private interests did lead them: yet concerning the Effects which that Revolt in all probability must produce, all rational men concurred in opinion, that nothing but Calamity and Ruine could flow from it. What else (said they) can this Revolt do, but nourish and increase the King's disaffection to the Parliament? What, but encourage his distance from it, and attempts against it? What, but secure the Irish Rebels, and endanger the losse of that Kingdom: cherish Papists, obstruct Justice, and give impunity to all Delinquents? Nothing else had power to undermine and shake the dignity and reverence belonging to that high Court; whilest not onely the People, by that diminution of their number, were perswaded to esteem of it as an imperfect Parliament; but the King might take that advantage of it (which proved true in his succeeding Declarations and Writings, what he never did before) as to call them a Faction, or pretended Parfiament, and such like.

In censuring those Lords and Commons who deserted the Parliament, the People, as was said before did much differ. Some, considering how great the number was, and that many of them were of whole estates, of good reputation, and able parts, began to think, or at least to say, that the Parliament was not free enough; that those Members (which was also their own excuse) were curbed by a prevalent faction in the Houses, and over-awed by tumults from the City of London. Upon that occasion, they called to minde in what manner the names of nine and fifty Members of the House of Commons had been posted-up at the Exchange, for dissenting from the rest about condemning of the Earl of Strafford; besides the menacing speeches which had been given by rude people to some Lords, whom they thought

ill-affected.

Others answered, that although such things had been rashly and foolishly done

by some unadvised persons, yet it could not be feared that any tamults from the Citie would ever violate a Parliament sitting; and that the tumultuous appearance of such multitudes from the Citie, was rather intended for encouragement and security of the Parliament against such invasions as might be made upon them, to awe their just freedom, and treacherous Conspiracies which by report were made against them by people disaffected to that high Court; which that Plot of bringing the Army against them formerly, and late resorts of armed persons about Whitehall, gave them cause to fear: That no fears of danger could be pretended from the House itself against any Member, but such as that Member was bound to undergo and suffer, rather than betray so great a trust of the people: That it was to be presumed, no Member of Parliament who was well-affected to his Country, could suffer any thing from the house itself; whose ends and counsels must needs be supposed to tend to the publike good, or else our Ancestours, who constituted that Frame of Government, were much deceived: That it was very improbable the Liberty of Subjects should be violated by that Court, which is the onely defence and conserver of it, and without which, it had always suffered from Princes, yea, such Princes as were not very wicked.

They alledged that it was very dishonourable for those Lords, being the greater number, to pretend fear for deserting the Parliament: for, if it were upon a true dislike of any proceedings there, they were enow to have stayed, and perchance have cured those inconveniences, and too many to have suffered in a good Cause; though Honour would command one man alone, lawfully called to it, to maintain a truth with any hazard. On the other side, they were too many to flee, to encourage the King against his Parliament, and thereby foment that dissention which

It was alledged by many men, that some of those Lords were Noblemen of honourable and vertuous repute. Though that were not denied, nor could any certain signe from the former demeanours of the Lords in general, arise, to distinguish who were likely to adhere to the Parliament, and who to desert it (for they were deceived on both sides, in some particulars) yet certainly it was averred, that those Lords whom the people had most especially trusted-in, as true Patriots, proved to be part of those who continued in the House; and those whom the people in general distasted, or distrusted, happened to be among those, who, upon this occasion, forsook the Parliament.

It was likewise frequently spoken, that those Members of the House of Commons who deserted it, were men generally of as able parts as any that continued there. It was no wonder, (replied others) but very probable that they were such men, and such as had, or thought they had, good parts enough to be looked-upon by a Prince: for those men (though we should esteem them all of equal honesty,) were likeliest to fall-off. There is a difference between Wisdom and good Parts, such as we count Eloquence, Wit, polite Learning, and the like: and that Wisdom which is least adorned with such dresses as these, is usually at such times most safe in itself, and free-est from being corrupted; as that Beauty is, which is set-off

N .

N.B.

Digitized by Google

with

with the least witchery of Attire: for that Beauty which is curiously decked, as it is most subject to be tempted by others; so it is most apt to be proud of itself, and by consequence, to betray itself to such a temptation as is great enough. it hath been often seen in this case (as was observed by an old Parliament-man) that those Gentlemen of fine parts, when other men of a plainer wisedom have had the honour in a constant way to do excellent service for the Common-wealth, have been won from their Countrey's cause, as soon as Majestie hath at all vouchsafed to tempt them, or that, perchance, their opinion of themselves hath made them meet. or seek, such a temptation. Besides that danger of invitation from a King, it hath been too often known, that men of such parts, or that think so of themselves, have been apter to take pet, and grow angry, when any Speech of theirs hath not received that honour which they expected, or any other affront hath been offered to Them; and what such an anger may make proud and ambitious spirits to do, eyen against their own Country, and the dictates of their Conscience and Reason, the world hath been taught by many examples, some of high consequence, and very remarkable, such as Coriolanus the Romane, and Julian the Spanish, General, which for the eminence of the persons, and extraordinary effects which they wrought in the world, must needs fall into Record; when the actions of mean and private men are buried in oblivion. Besides, there are many, whose Callings make them capable of easier and greater gratifications from the King than other men; as Lawyers and Divines; who will therefore be apt to lean that way where the preferment lies. Such discourses were frequent in all companies at that time; for different affections did at all meetings beget such argumentative language.

What sense and apprehension the Parliament had of so many Members forsaking their station, shall appear anon, by a Vote passed in the House of Commons. and presented to the Lords by Master Denzil Hollis, after some intervening

passages have been related.

Whilst the King, encouraged and strengthened by this great accession of reputation to his side, pursued his designe of raising Forces in the North; the Parliament, after they had on the twentieth of May petitioned the King to disband such Forces, and rely for his security (as his Predecessours had done) upon the Laws, and the affections of his People, contenting himself with his usual and ordinary Guards; declared that otherwise they held themselves bound in duty towards God, and the Trust reposed in them by the People, and by the Fundamental Laws and Constitutions of the Kingdom, to employ their care and utmost power to secure the Parliament, and preserve the Kingdom's Peace; and immediately it was voted in The Parliament pas-Parliament, and resolved upon the Question, That it appears that the King, se see a Vote, "that it duced by wicked Counsel, intends to make War against the Parliament, who, in all intends to make War their consultations and actions, have proposed no other end unto themselves, but the upon them," May care of his Kingdoms, and the performance of all duty and loyaltie to his Person. 20, 1642. It was likewise resolved upon the Question, That, whenso ver the King maketh War upon the Parliament, it is a breach of the Trust reposed in him by his People, contrary to his Oath, and tending to the dissolution of this Government. As also, .That

That whosoever shall serve or assist him in such Wars, are Traitours by the Fundamental Laws of this Kingdom, and have been so adjudged in two Acts of Parliament; 11 RICH. 2. and 1 HEN. 4: and that such persons ought to suffer as Traitours.

The Parliament orders nine Lords who had deserted them, to rejoin

fusal to obey this order, the House of Commons imthe House of Lords, June 15, 1642.

But those Lords who had forsaken the Parliament continuing still with the King in the Northern parts, the Parliament by an Order of the 30th of May, summoned nine of them, who first had gone away, to appear at Westminster; viz. the Earls of Northampton, Devonshire, Dover, and Monmouth; the Lords Howard of them, May 30, 1649. Charleton, RICH, GREY of Ruthen, COVENTRY, and CAPEL: but they utterly refused to come-away, returning an Answer in writing; which the Parliament And, upon their re-judged to be a slighting and scornful Letter: Upon which, a Vote was passed against them in the House of Commons, and presented on the 15th of June to the Lords, by Master Hollis; with an Oration of his own concerning the importance peaches them before of the businesse; the greatest part of which Speech being here inserted, may give light to the Reader concerning the condition of the Kingdom at that time, and the judgement of the Houses upon it.

His Speech began thus:

The Speech of Mr. descriion.

"My Lords, By command of the Knights, Citizens and Burgesses of the House Denzill Hollis, before " of Commons, I come hither to your Lordships in behalf of the Parliament, or the House of Lords, or rather in behalf of the whole Kingdom; labouring with much distraction, many nine Lords for their " fears, great apprehensions of evil and mischief intended against it, and now "hatching and preparing by that malignant party, which thirsts after the destruc-"tion of Religion, Laws and Liberty; all which are folded-up, cherished, and

" preserved in the careful bosome of the Parliament.

" It hath ever been the policie of evil Counsellors (who are the greatest enemies "we have in the world, or can have) to strike at Parliaments, keep-off Parliaments, " break Parliaments, or divide Parliaments, by making Factions, casting-in Diver-" sions and Obstructions, to hinder and interrupt the proceedings of Parliament; " all against the Parliament.

"Your Lordships have had experience of this Truth this. Parliament; a suc-

"cession of designes upon it: First, to awe it, and take-away the freedom of it "by the terrour of an Army; then, to bring Force against it, actually to assault "it, and with the Sword to cut in sunder this onely Band which ties and knits-up "King and People; the People among themselves, and the whole frame of this "Government, in one firm, and, I hope, indissoluble, knot of Peace and Unity. "God diverted those designes, did blowe upon them; presently, another is set-"upon, which was, To obstruct and hinder our proceedings, that in the mean

"time the flame of Rebellion might consume the Kingdom of Ireland, and distempers, distractions, and jealousies, be fomented here at home, to tear-out the " bowels of this Kingdom, the Parliament being disabled from helping it, by " occasion of so many diversions, so much businesse cut-out unto it, many ob-66 structions

te structions and difficulties, especially that great one, from whence all the rest " receive countenance and support, his Majestie's absenting himself, not concur-"ring with us, and so withdrawing both his presence and influence; by which " means such remedies could not be applied as were necessary, and what was done, " was done with infinite trouble to the Parliament, and excessive charge to the "Subject, double, treble, of what otherwise would have served the turn: So the "Subject is grieved, and oppressed with charge, and the blame of all is laid upon "the Parliament, and the Parliament unjustly said to be the cause of all these " Evils, which the authors of them had made so great, and so confirmed and " secured by the reequent interruptions of the Parliament, that they could not " suddenly, nor easily, be suppressed or removed

"Well, by God's infinite blessing, the Parliament was in a fair possibility to "wade thorow this likewise; and, though the Night had been black and stormy, "some Day began to appear: miraculously our Armies have prospered in Ireland; "and, God be praised, the malevolent practices of these Vipers at home, as they "appeared, were in some sort mastered; and the Parliament began to act and "operate towards the settling of the great Affairs, both of Church and State, and " providing for the defence and safety of this Kingdom, against either forraign in-

"vasion, or any striving of the disaffected party among themselves.

"Then three ways are together assayed for the weakening and invalidating the " proceeding and power of the Parliament, and making-way for the utter subver-" sion of it.

1. "Force is gathered together at York, under pretence of a Guard for His "Majestie's Person, to make an opposition against the Parliament, and by strong "hand to support and protect Delinquents; so as no Order of Parliament can be "obeyed, but on the other side is slighted and scorned, to make the Parliament " of no reputation, to be but Imago Parliamenti, a meer shadow, without sub-

"stance, without efficacie.

2. "To send-out in His Majestie's name, and as Declarations and Messages "from him, bitter invectives against the Parliament, to perplex it, and engage it "in expence of time to answer them: and besides, cunningly to insinuate and in-" fuse into the people, by false colours and glosses, a disopinion and dislike of the "Parliament, and, if it be possible, to stir-up their spirits to rise against it, to "destroy it, (and, in it, all other Parliaments,) to the ruine of themselves, their wives and children.

3. " The third Plot is: The Members are drawn-away, and perswaded to for-" sake their duty and attendance here, and go-down to York, thereby to blemish " the actions of both Houses, as done by a few and an inconsiderable number, and " rather a Party than a Parliament, and perhaps to raise and set-up an anti-Parlia-" ment there.

" My Lords, this is now the great Designe, whereby they hope, by little and " little, the Parliament shall even bleed to death, and moulder to nothing, the members dropping-away one after another: a desperate and dangerous practice, "and, as your Lordships well observed (when you were pleased to communicate the businesse to us) an effect of the evil Counsels now prevailing, and tending to the dissolution of the Parliament, of this Parliament, which, under God, must be the preserver of three Kingdoms, and keep them firm and loyal to their King, subject to his Crown, save them from being turned into a Chaos of disorder and confusion, and made a dismal spectacle of misery and desolation; this Parliament, which is the last hope of the long-oppressed, and, in other Countries even almost wholly destroyed, Protestant Religion: this Parliament which is

"the onely means to continue us to be a Nation of freemen and not of slaves; to be owners of any thing: in a word, which must stand in the Gap, to prevent an in-let and inundation of all misery and confusion.

"My Lords, this Parliament they desire to destroy; but I hope it will destroy the destroyers, and be a wall of Fire to consume them, as it is a wall of Brasse to us, to defend King, and Kingdom, us and all we have.

"Your Lordships wisely foresaw this Mischief, and as wisely have endeavoured to prevent it, by making your Orders to keep your Members here; as that of the ninth of April, and several other Orders, enjoyning them all to attend: thereby restraining them from repairing to York, where the Clouds were observed to gather so fast, threatning a storm, and such preparations to be made against the Parliament, That it necessitated both Houses to pass a Vote, That the King, seduced by wicked Counsel, intended to make War against the Parliament: and all who shall serve and assist in such Wars are declared to be Traitours: which Vote passed the 20th of May: so setting a mark upon that place, and their opinion concerning those who should at this time resort thither.

"Yet now, in such a conjuncture of time, when the Kingdom had never more " need of a Parliament, and the Parliament never more need of all the help and assistance, of the best endeavour and advice, of every member; the Safety, and " even Being, of three Kingdoms depending on it; after such Orders and Com-" mands of your Lordship's House to the contrary; such a Vote of both Houses; " and expressly against their Duty; being called thither by Writ under the Great 66 Seal, which is the King's greatest and highest Command, and not controllable " nor to be dispensed-with by any other Command from him whatsoever; and called to treat and consult de Arduis Regni, the great, urging, and pressing " affairs of the Kingdom, never more urgent, never more pressing: notwith-" standing all this, these Lords, the Earls of Northampton, Devonshire, Dover, " Monmouth; the Lords Howard of Charlton, Rich, GREY, COVENTRY, and " CAPEL, have left their stations, withdrawn themselves and are gone to York; " and, being summoned to appear by an Order of the 30th of May, instead of " obedience, return refusal, by a slighting and scornful Letter, which hath been so 46 adjudged both by your Lordships and the House of Commons.

"My Lords, the House of Commons hath likewise, upon the consideration

"and debate of this businesse, finding it so much to concern the safety of the Kingdom and the very Being of the Parliament, passed this Vote; "That the Departing of these nine Lords from the Parliament without leave, after such a time as both Houses had declared, 'That the King, 's seduced by wicked Counsel, intended to make War against the Parliament;' and their still continuing at York, notwithstanding their Summons and Command, is an high Affront and Contempt of both Houses; and that the said Lords did as much as in them lay, that the service of Parliament might be deserted, and are justly suspected to promote a War against the Parliament.

"The House, in further prosecution of their duty in this particular, and in pursuance of their Protestation, which obliges them to endeavour to bring to condign punishment all such high offenders against, not onely the Priviledges, but the very Essence, of Parliament, have sent me up to impeach these Lords,

" and desire that speedy and exemplary Justice may be done upon them. " And accordingly, I do here, in the name of the Knights, Citizens and " Burgesses of the Commons House assembled in Parliament, and in the " name of all the Commons of England, Impeach SPENCER Earl of Nor-" thampton, WILLIAM Earl of Devonsbire, HENRY Earl of Dover, "HENRY Earl of Monmouth, CHARLES Lord Howard of Charleton, "ROBERT LOrd RICH, CHARLES LORD GREY of Ruthen, THOMAS " Lord Coventry, and Arthur Lord Capel, for these high Crimes and " Misdemeanours following; viz. For, that, contrary to their duty, they " being Peers of the Realm, and summoned by Writ to attend the Parlia-" ment; and contrary to an Order of the House of Peers of the ninth of "April last, and several other Orders, requiring the attendance of the " Members of that House; and after a Vote past in both Houses the twen-" tieth of May last, 'That the King, seduced by wicked Counsel, intended. " to make War against the Parliament; and that whosoever served or "' assisted bim in that War, was adjudged a Traitour;' did, notwith-" standing, afterwards, in the same month of May, contemptuously, baving " notice of the said Votes and Orders, withdraw themselves from the " said House of Peers, and repair to the City of York, where the prepa-" rations of the said War were, and yet are, in contrivance and agitation; " they knowing of such preparations: and being, by an Order of the thir-" tieth of May, duly summoned by the House of Peers, to make their appear-" ance before that House upon the eighth day of June last past, they refused " to appear, and returned a scornful Answer by a Letter under their hands,

- " directed to the Speaker of the Lords House, and remaining there upon " Record.
- " For which Crimes and Misdemeanours, to the interuption of the pro-" ceedings of Parliament, and great Affairs of the Kingdom, and tending " to the dissolution of the Parliament, and disturbance of the Peace of the "Kingdom; I am commanded, in the name of the said Commons, to "demand of your Lordships, that the said Lords may be forthwith put to "their Answer, and receive speedy and exemplary punishment, according " to their demerits. The Commons saving to themselves liberty, at all times " hereafter, to exhibite any other, or further, Impeachment, or Accusation, " against the said Lords, or any of them."

The House of Lords pa: ses a sentence against them, in, July, 1649.

Upon this Impeachment of the nine Lords, the House of Peers, about a month after, being in their Robes, entred into debate of the said Impeachment; and, after divers Speeches made by some Lords, setting-forth the greatnesse of their Offence, they were censured, 1. Never to sit more as Members of that House. 2. That they should be utterly incapable of any benefit, or priviledges, of Parlia-3. That they should suffer Imprisonment during their pleasure. After which Censure, it was concluded that the said Lords should be demanded, in the behalf of both Houses of Parliament, to submit to the said Censure.

About that time, when the Members of both Houses of Parliament did daily forsake their station, and repair to the King at York, another accident fell-out, which gave a great wound to the Parliament, and much encouragement to the King in his designes; which was, the carrying away of the Great Seal of England from London to York.

The Lord-Keeper York.

EDWARD Lord LITTLETON, on whom the King, (when the Lord-Keeper Finch Liteton sends the fled out of England, as is before related,) had conferred the keeping of the Great Great Seal of Eng. led out of England, as is before related,) had conferred the keeping of the Great land to the King at Seal (he being before Lord Chiefe-Justice of the Common-Pleas,) and had created him a Baron of the Realm, had continued for some space of time, after the rest were gone to York, firm to the Parliament in all appearance, and upon all occasions had voted according to the sense of those that seemed the best-affected that way; and, among other things, had given his Vote for settling the Militia by Ordinance of Parliament; insomuch that there seemed no doubt at all to be made of his constancy; till at the last, before the end of the month of June, a young Gentleman, one Master Thomas Eliot, Groom of the Privy-Chamber to the King, was sent closely from York to him; who being admitted by the Lord-Keeper into his private Chamber, where none else were by,) so handled the matter, (whether by perswasions, threats, or promises, or whatsoever,) that, after three hours time, he got "the great Seal into his hands, and rid post with it away to the King at York.

And the next day. sees thither himself The Lord-Keeper LITTLETON, after serious consideration with himself what he · had

had done, or rather suffered, and not being able to answer it to the Parliament; the next day, early in the morning, rode after it himself, and went to the King.

Great was the complaint at London against him for that action; nor did the King ever shew him any great regard afterwards. The reason which the Lord-Keeper LITTLETON gave, for parting so with the great Seal, to some friends of his who went after him to York, was this; That the King, when he made him Lord-Keeper, gave him an Oath in private, which he took, That, whensoever the King. should send to him for the great Seal, he should forthwith deliver it. This Oath (as he averred to his friends) his conscience would by no means suffer him to dispense withal; he onely repented (though now too late) that he had accepted the

Office upon those terms.

The Parliament, to prevent so sad a War, sent-out two Orders; one, to all The Parliament Sheriffs, Justices, and Other Officers within 160 miles of the City of York, that to prevent the King they should take special care to make the city of York, they should take special care to make stay of all Arms and Ammunition carrying from raising forces. towards York, until they have given notice thereof to the Lords and Commons, and received their further direction; and to that purpose, to keep strict Watches within their several limits, to search-for, and seize, all such Arms, and apprehend the persons going with the same: The other was to the Sheriff of Lancashire, and other adjacent Counties, to suppresse the raising and coming-together of any Souldiers, Horse or Foot, by any Warrant from the King, without the advice of the Lords and Commons in Parliament; as likewise to declare all that should execute any such Warrant from the King, disturbers of the peace of the Kingdom; and to command the Trained-Bands to be assistant to the Sheriffs in that service.

These Orders of the Parliament were immediately answered by a Proclamation The King publishes from the King, forbidding all his Subjects belonging to the Trained-Bands, or a Proclamation in answer to them. Militia of this Kingdom, to rise, march, muster, or exercise by vertue of any Order, or Ordinance, of one or both Houses of Parliament, without Consent or Warrant from his Majesty. The Parliament, notwithstanding, proceed in settling the Militia of the Kingdom, (having made, on the second of June, an Order for those revolted members to return to their duty again before the 16th of that month, under the for feiture of an hundred pounds, to be disposed of towards the Wars in Ireland, besides undergoing such punishments as the Houses should whink fit) and had by this

time at many places began to settle the said Militia.

Upon the same second of June also, the Lords and Commons sent a Petition to The Parliament the King, with nineteen Propositions; which the King received with great indig-presents a Petition nation, as appeared in his Answer to them both in general, and in divers particular to the King, connation, as appeared in his Answer to them both in general, and in divers particu- taining nineteen lars concerning those Propositions, as esteeming himself injured in restraint of his Propositions, on the Power and Prerogative. The Petition and Propositions were as followeth.

2nd of June, 1642.

The

The humble Petition and Advice of both Houses of Parliament; with Nineteen Propositions, and the Conclusion, sent unto His Majesty the second of *June*, 1642.

Your Majesties most humble and faithful Subjects, the Lords and Commons in Parliament, having nothing in their thoughts and desires, more precious and of higher esteem (next to the honour and immediate Service of God) than the just and faithful performance of their duty to Your Majestie, and this Kingdom; And, being very sensible of the great distractions and distempers, and of the imminent dangers and calamities which those distractions and distempers are like to bring upon Your Majestie and Your Subjects; all which have proceeded from the subtil informations, mischievous practices, and evil counsels of men disaffected to God's true Religion, Your Majesties Honour and Safety, and the publike Peace and Prosperity of Your People; after a serious observation of the causes of those Mischiefs; Do, in all humility and sincerity present to Your Majestie their most dutiful Petition and Advice, that, out of Your Princely Wisdom for the establishing Your Own Honour and Safety, and your gracious tendernesse of the Welfare and Security of Your Subjects and Dominions, You will be pleased to grant and accept these their humble Desires and Propositions, as the most necessary and effectual Means, through God's blessing, of removing those Jealousies and Differences which have unhappily fallen betwixt Your Majesty and Your People, and of procuring to both Your Majestie and Them a constant course of Honour, Peace, and Happiness.

The Propositions.

- 1. That the Lords and others of Your Majesties Privy-Council, and such great Officers and Ministers of State, either at home, or beyond the Seas, may be put from Your Privy-Council, and from those Offices and Employments, excepting such as shall be approved-of by both Houses of Parliament: And that the persons put into the places and Employments of those that are removed, may be approved-of by both Houses of Parliament. And that Privy Counsellors shall take an Oath for the due execution of their places, in such form as shall be agreed upon by both Houses of Parliament.
- 2. That the great Affairs of the Kingdom may not be concluded, or transacted, by the advice of private men, or by any unknown, or unsworn, Counsellors; but that such matters as concern the Publike, and are proper for the high Court of Parliament, (which is Your Majesties great and supreme Council,) may be debated, resolved, and transacted, onely in Parliament, and not elsewhere: and such as shall presume to do any thing to the contrary, shall be reserved to the censure and judgement of Parliament: And such other matters of State as are proper for Your

Your Majesties Privy-Council, shall be debated and concluded by such of the Nobility, and others, as shall from time to time be chosen for that place, by approbation of both Houses of Parliament. And that no publike Act concerning the Affairs of the Kingdom, which are proper for Your Privy Council, may be esteemed of any validity, as proceeding from the Royal Authority, unlesse it be done by the Advice and Consent of the major part of Your Council, attested under their hands. And that Your Council may be limited to a certain number, not exceeding twenty-five, nor under fifteen. And if any Counsellour's place happen to be void in the interval of Parliament, it shall not be supplied without the assent of the major part of the Council; which voice shall be confirmed at the next sitting of Parliament, or else to be void.

- 3. That the Lord High Steward of England, the Lord High-Constable, the Lord Chancellour, or Lord-Keeper of the Great Seal, the Lord-Treasurer, the Lord Privy-Seal, the Earl Marshal, the Lord-Admiral, the Warden of the Cinque-Ports, the chief Governour of ireland, the Chancellour of the Exchequer, the Master of the Wards, the Secretaries of State, the two Chief-Justices, and the Chief-Baron, may always be chosen with the approbation of both Houses of Parliament; and in the intervals of Parliaments, by assent of the major part of the Council, in such manner as is before exprest in the choice of Counsellours.
- 4. That he, or they, unto whom the Government and Education of the King's Children shall be committed, shall be approved-of by both Houses of Parliament; and in the intervals of Parliament, by the assent of the major part of the Council, in such manner as is before exprest in the choice of Counsellours: And that all such Servants as are now about them, against whom both Houses shall have any just exceptions, shall be removed.
- 5. That no Marriage shall be concluded, or treated, for any of the King's Children, with any forraign Prince, or other person whatsoever, abroad or at home, without the consent of Parliament, under the Penalty of a *Præmunire* unto such as shall be concluded, or treat any Marriage as aforesaid: And that the said Penalty shall not be pardoned or dispensed-with, but by the consent of both Houses of Parliament.
- 6. That the Laws, in force, against Jesuites, Priests, and Popish Recusants, be strictly put in execution, without any Toleration or Dispensation to the contrary: And that some more effectual course may be enacted by Authority of Parliament, to disable them from making any disturbance in the State, or eluding the Law by Trusts, or otherwise.
- 7. That the Votes of Popish Lords, in the House of Peers, may be taken-away, so long as they continue Papists: And that Your Majestie will consent to such a Bill as shall be drawn, for the education of the children of Papists by Protestants, in the Protestant Religion.

8. That

- 8. That Your Majestie will be pleased to consent that such a Reformation bemade of the Church-Government, and Liturgie, as both Houses of Parliament
 shall advise; wherein they intend to have Consultations with Divines, as is expressed in their Declaration to that purpose: And that Your Majestie will contribute Your best assistance to them, for the raising of a sufficient Maintenance
 for preaching Ministers throughout the Kingdom: And that Your Majestie will
 be pleased to give Your Consent to Laws for the taking-away of Innovations, and
 Superstition, and of Pluralities, and against scandalous Ministers.
- 9. That Your Majestie will be pleased to rest satisfied with that course that the Lords and Commons have appointed for ordering of the Militia, until the same shall be further settled by a Bill: And that Your Majestie will recal Your Declarations and Proclamations against the Ordinance made by the Lords and Commons concerning it.
- 10. That such Member of either House of Parliament as have, during this present Parliament, been put out of any Place and Office, may either be restored to that Place and Office, or otherwise have satisfaction for the same, upon the Petition of that House whereof he or they are members.
- 11. That all Privy-Counsellours and Judges may take an Oath, the Form whereof to be agreed-on and settled by Act of Parliament, for the maintaining of the Petition of Right, and of certain Statutes made by this Parliament, which shall be mentioned by both Houses of Parliament: And that an enquiry of all the breaches and violations of those Laws, may be given in charge by the Justices of the King's Bench every Term, and by the Judges of Assize in their Circuits, and Justices of the Peace at the Sessions, to be presented and published according to Law.
- 12. That all the Judges, and all the Officers placed by approbation of both Houses of Parliament, may hold their places quam div bene se gesserint.
- 13. That the Justice of Parliament may passe upon all Delinquents, whether they be within the Kingdom, or fled out of it: And that all persons cited by either House of Parliament, may appear, and abide the censure of Parliament.
- 14. That the general Pardon offered by Your Majestie, may be granted with such Exceptions as shall be advised by both Houses of Parliament.
- 15. That the Forts and Castles of this Kingdom may be put under the Command and Custodie of such persons as Your Majestie shall appoint, with the approbation of Your Parliament; and in the intervals of Parliament, with approbation of the major part of the Council, in such manner as is before expressed in the choice of the Counsellours.
- 16. That the extraordinary Guards and Military Forces now attending Your Majestie, may be removed and discharged; and that, for the future, You will

taise no such Guards, or extraordinary Forces, but according to the Law, in case of actual Rebellion, or Invasion.

- 17. That Your Majestie will be pleased to enter into a more strict Alliance with the States of the United Provinces, and other Neighbour Princes, and States of the Protestant Religion, for the defence and maintenance thereof against all designes and attempts of the Pope, and his adherents, to subvert and suppresse it; whereby Your Majestie will obtain a great accesse of strength and reputation, and Your Subjects be much encouraged and enabled in a Parliamentary-way, for Your aid and assistance in restoring Your Royal Sister, and her Princely Issue, to those Dignities and Dominions which belong unto them, and relieving the other distressed and Protestant Princes who have suffered in the same Cause.
- 18. That Your Majestie will be pleased, by Act of Parliament, to clear the Lord Kymbolton, and the five Members of the House of Commons, in such manner, that future Parliaments may be secured from the consequence of that evil precedent.
- 19. That Your Majestie will be graciously pleased to passe a Bill for restraining Peers made hereafter from sitting or voting in Parliament, unlesse they be admitted thereunto with the consent of both Houses of Parliament.

And these, our humble Desires, being granted by Your Majestie, we shall forthwith apply ourselves to regulate Your present Revenue in such sort as may be for Your best advantage, and likewise to settle such an ordinary and constant increase of it, as shall be sufficient to support Your Royal Dignity in Honour and Plenty, beyond the proportion of any former Grants of the Subjects of this Kingdom to Your Majesties Royal Predecessours. We shall likewise put the Town of Hull into such hands as Your Majestie shall appoint, with the consent and approbation of Parliament, and deliver-up a just account of all the Magazine, and cheerfully employ the uttermost of our endeavours in the real expression and performance of our most dutiful and loyal affections, to the preserving and maintaining the Royal Honour, Greatnesse, and Safety, of Your Majesty and Your Posterity.

· Hen. Elsynge, Cler. Parl: D. Com.

Answer as shewed that he was much displeased with the whole Businesse: For Answer to this Petibefore his particular inswers to the several Propositions, he complaineth in genetion, expressing great displeadure at ral, and those very sharp, expressions of the method of their proceedings against many of the Proposition: and that the Catalists of this businesse (for so he calls them) have used sittons.

great

great art and subtility against him, first to strengthen themselves with unlawful power, before they make their illegal demands. He taxes them, that first they had removed the Law itself, as a rub in their way, and pressed their own Orders. and Ordinances upon the people (tending to a pure arbitrary power) as Laws, and required obedience to them, without the consent or concurrence of himself. they had wrested from him the command of the Militia, (a thing inherent in his Crown) countenanced the Treason of HOTHAM against him, and directed to the people invectives against his Government, to weaken his just authority and due esteem among his Subjects; casting upon him aspersions of a strange nature, as that he should favour a Rebellion in the bowels of his Kingdom. He complains likewise that they had broached (for so he calls it) a new Doctrine, namely, that the King is bound to passe all Laws that shall be offered to him by both Houses of Parliament: a point of policie fit for their present businesse, as destructive to all his Rights. That they have overawed his Subjects, in stifling all Petitions that did not please them; and filled the peoples ears with needlesse fears, and jealousies, and such like things, before they thought his Majestie sufficiently prepared to take those bitter Pills. For (saith he) if they had unseasonably vented such Propositions, as the wisdom and modestie of their Predecessours never thought fit to offer to any of Our Progenitours, nor We, in honour or regard to Our Regal Authority, (which God hath intrusted Us with for the good of Our People) could receive without just indignation (for such many of the Propositions are) their hopes would soon have been blasted, and those persons to whom Offices, Honours, Power, and Commands were designed, by such ill-timing of their businesse, would have failed of their expectation, not without a brand upon the Attempt. Therefore he saith, that they had made before-hand those fore-named preparations. The King seems to doubt likewise, (because the Parliament have not told him that this is all they desire of him,) that these Propositions are probably intended to make way for a Superfetation of a (yet) higher nature. And, in the Propositions in general, he observes, that the Contrivers of them (the better to advance their true ends) disguised, as much as they could, their intents, with a mixture of some things really to be approved by every honest man, others specious and popular, and some already granted by him: All which (saith he) are cunningly twisted, and mixed with other things of their main designe of ambition and private interest.

But the King desires not to be understood so, as if he intended to fix this designe upon both, or either House of Parliament: for he utterly professeth against it, being most confident of the loyalty, good affections, and integrity of the intentions of that great Body, and knowing well that very many of both Houses were absent, and many dissented from all those particulars of which he complains: but that he believes, and accordingly professes to all the world, that the malignity of this designe hath proceeded from the subtil informations, mischievous practices, and evil counsels of some ambitious, turbulent, spirits, disaffected to God's true Religion (using their own language) the Unity of the professours thereof, his

Honour

Honour and Safety, and the publike peace and prosperity of the people. (And such other like general expressions).

In particular, the King expressed himself with great indignation against ten of their Propositions, which were the 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 9, 10, 15, 16, 19; averring, that, if they did intend the establishment of his honour, together with the security of his people (as their profession is) they would not offer him such Propositions: for that Profession, joyned to these Propositions, appeared to his judgement as a mockery and scorn.

He averreth further, that their Demands are such, as that he should be unworthy of his Royal descent from so many famous Ancestours, and unworthy of the Trust reposed in him by the Laws, if he should divest himself of such a power so inherent in his Crown, and assume others into a participation of it; protesting, that, if he were both vanquished and a prisoner, in worse condition than any, the most unfortunate, of his predecessours had ever been reduced unto, he would never stoop so lowe as to grant those demands, and to make himself, of a King of England, a Duke of Venice.

The several Answers that the King made, and Arguments that he used to each several branch of those Propositions, are too large to be here inserted, and may be read by those that would be further informed, in the printed Book of Parliament-Declarations and Ordinances *.

*The Book here referred-to was printed in this very same Year 1642, at London, for Edward Husbands, J. Warren, and R. Best, and sold at the Middle Temple, and at Gray's-Inn-gate, and at the White Horse in Paul's Church-yard: and it's Title was as follows; AN EXACT COLLECTION of all Remonstrances, Declarations, Votes, Orders, Ordinances, Proclamations, Petitions, Messages, Answers, and other remarkable passages between the King's most Excellent Majesty and his High Court of Parliament; Beginning at his Majestie's return from Scotland, being in December. 1641, and continued until March the 21st, 1643.

WHICH were formerly published either by the KING'S Majestie's Command, or by Order from

one, or both Houses of Parliament.

With a Table, wherein are most exactly digested all the fore-mentioned things according to their several Dates and Dependancies.

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

An Order for the bringing-in of Plate and Money into Guildhall. The King's Declaration to the Lords about him: Their Profession and Protestation to him. King layeth Siege to Hull; but raiseth it again. Earl of Warwick taketh possession of the Navie, as Lord-Admiral. The Earl of Essex is voted in Parliament to be Lord-General of all their Forces.

Troops and Money without the King's concurrence, June 10, 1642.

The two Houses of UN the tenth day of June following, an Urder was made by Dolli Frauses of Parliament pass Or Parliament, for bringing in of Money and Plate, to maintain Horse, Horse-men, dinances for raising and Arms for Preservation of the Publike Peace, and defence of the King's Person, (for that the Parliament, in their expressions, alwaies joyned together with their own safety) and both Houses of Parliament. Wherein it was expressed, that whosoever should bring in any Money or Plate, or furnish any Horse-men and Arms for that purpose, should have their Money repayed with Interest, according to eight in the hundred; for which both Houses of Parliament did engage the Publike Faith.

Four Treasurers were ordained, whose Acquittances for the receipt of any Sum. should be a sufficient ground to the Lenders to demand their Money and Plate again, with the Interest belonging thereunto. The Treasurers were, Sir John WOLLASTON, Knight, and Alderman of London, Alderman Towns, Alderman WARNER, and Alderman ANDREWES. Commissaries, also, were appointed to value the Horse and Arms which should be furnished for that service.

It was desired in that Order, that all men resident in, or about, London, or within 80 miles, would bring-in their Money, Plate, or Horse, within a formight after notice; and they that dwell farther-off, within three weeks: and that those who intended to contribute within the time limited, but were not, for the present, provided of Money or Horse, should subscribe, that it might be soon known what

provision would be for effecting of that great and important Service. And, in conclusion, it was declared, that whatsoever was brought-in, should be employed to no other purposes but those before-mentioned; the maintenance of the Protestant Religion, the King's Person, dignity, and authority, the Laws of the Land,

the Peace of the Kingdom, and the Priviledges of Parliament.

Whilest this Order was drawing-up, advertisement by Letters was given to the Parliament, that the Crown-Jewels were pawned at Amsteldam, and other places of the Netherlands; upon which money was taken-up, and Warlike Ammunition provided in those Parts, as Battering-pieces, Culverins, Field-pieces, Morter-pieces, Granadoes, with great store of powder, pistols, carabines, great saddles, and such Whereby the Parliament thought they could not otherwise judge than that the King did plainly intend a War against them, and had designed it long before.

They received intelligence, at the same time, that the King had sent a Commis- The King issues a sion of Array into Leicestershire, directed to the Earl of Huntington, the Earl of Commission of Array to raise the Mili-Devonshire, and Mr. Henry Hastings, second son to the Earl of Huntington; tia of Leicestershire, (for the Lord Hastings, eldest son to that Earl, did then adhere to the Parliament) in June, 1642. which three were chief in the Commission; but many other Knights and Gentlemen of that County were named in it. Together with this Commission of Array, the King sent a Letter also, containing the reasons of it, wherein he complaineth that the Parliament, by their Ordinance for the Militia, would divest him of that power, which is properly inherent in his Crown. And for the occasion and reason of that Commission, he urgeth a Declaration of their own, using their very expressions and words in his Letter; that, whereas it hath been declared by Votes of both Houses of Parliament, the fifteenth of March last, that the Kingdom hath of late been, and still is, in evident and imminent danger, both from enemies abroad, and a Popish discontented party at home; he concludes, that for the safeguard both of his own Person and People, there is an urgent and inevitable necessity of putting his people into a posture of defence, &c. Thus did the Parliament's Prologue to their Ordinance of Militia, serve the King's turn for his Commission of of Array, totidem verbis. The copie of which Commission and Letter coming into the hands of the Parliament, it was resolved upon the Question by the Lords. and Commons assembled in Parliament, that this Commission of Array for Leicester is against Law, and against the Liberty and Property of the Subject: and resolved again upon the Question, within two days after, That all those that are actours in putting the Commission of Array in execution, shall be esteemed as disturbers of the Kingdom's Peace, and betrayers of the Liberty of the Subject. It was also ordered by both Houses, that this Commission of Array, and the forementioned Votes, should be forthwith printed, and published throughout the Kingdom.

The King was not wanting to his own designe in the mean time, and whatsoever might give countenance to the businesse he had in hand: but made a short Declaration



claration to the Lords who then attended him at York, and others his Privy-Council there, in these words:

The King's Declaration to the Lords at York.

We do declare, that We will require no obedience from you, but what u warranted by the known Laws, as We expect that you shall not yeeld to any Commands not legally grounded, or imposed by any other. We will defend all you, and all such as shall refuse any such Commands, whether they proceed from Votes and Orders of both Houses, or any other way, from all danger whatsoever. We will defend the true Protestant Religion established by the Laws, the lawful Liberties of the Subjects of England, and just Priviledges of all the three Estates of Parliament; and shall require no further obedience from you, than as We accordingly shall perform the same. We will not (as is falsely pretended) engage you in any War against the Parliament, except it be for Our necessary defence against such as do insolently invade, or attempt against, Us and Our Adherents.

Upon this Declaration of the King, those Lords and others of his Council made a Promise to him, and subscribed it with their hands, as followeth.

Their Profession būn.

We do engage our selves not to obey any Orders or Commands whatsoand Protestation to ever, not warranted by the known Laws of the Land. We engage our selves to defend Your Majestie's Person, Crown and Dignity, with Your just and legal Prerogative, against all Persons and Power whatsoever. We will defend the true Protestant Religion established by the Law of the land, the lawful Liberties of the Subjects of England, and the just Priviledges of Your Majestie, and both Houses of Parliament. Lastly, we engage our selves not to obey any Rule, Order, or Ordinance, whatsoever, concerning any Militia, that bath not the Royal Assent.

Subscribed by,

L. Keeper, D. of Richmond, Ma. Hertford, E. of Lindsey, E. of Cumberland, E. of Huntington, E. of Bath, E. of Southampton, E. of Dorset, E. of Salisbury, E. of Northampton, E. of Devonshire, E. of Bristol, E. of Westmerland, E. of Barkeshire, E. of Monmouth, E. of Rivers, E. of Newcastle, E. of Dover, E. of Carnarvan, E. of Newport, L. Mowbray and MATREvers, L. Willoughby of Eresby, L. Rich, L. Charles Howard of Charleton, L. Newark, L. Paget, L. Chandoys, L. Falconbridge, L. Paulet, L. Lovelace, L. Coventry, L. Savile, L. Mohun, L. DUNSMORE, L. SEYMOUR, L. GREY OF Ruthen, L. FAWLKLAND, the Controller, Secretary Nicholas, Sir John Gulpeper, Lord Chief Justice "BANKS.

The

The King immediately wrote a Letter to the Lord Mayor of London, the Aldermen and Sheriffs, forbidding by expresse Command any Contribution of Money or Plate, toward the raising of any Arms whatsoever for the Parliament; and that they should lend no Money, unlesse toward the relief of Ireland, or payment of the Scots. He published then a Declaration to all his Subjects, inveighing bitterly against the Parliament, for laying a false and scandalous imputation upon him of raising War against the Parliament, or levying Forces to that end: in which he invites all his loving Subjects, to prevent his own danger, and the danger of the Kingdom from a malignant party (taking-up the Parliament's language) to contribute Money or Plate to him, and they shall be repayed, with consideration of eight in the hundred. And immediately upon it made a Profession before those forementioned Lords and Councillors about him (calling God to witness in it) disavowing any preparations or intentions to levie War against the Parliament: upon which, those forementioned Lords, and others, then present at York, made this Declaration and Profession, subscribed under their hands.

We whose names are under-written, in obedience to His Majestie's Desire, A Declaration of the and out of the Duty which we owe to His Majestie's Honour, and to Truth, their belief of the being here upon the place, and witnesses of his Majestie's frequent and King's professions of earnest Declarations and Professions of His abhorring all designes of his resolution to support the Protestant making War upon the Parliament; and not seeing any colour of Prepara-Religion, and the Liberties of his tions or Counsels that might reasonably beget the belief of any such Designe, subjects. do professe before God, and testifie to all the world, that we are fully perswaded that His Majestie hath no such intention; but that all his endeavours tend to the firm and constant settlement of the true Protestant Religion, and the just Privileges of Parliament, the liberty of the Subject, the Law, Peace, and Prosperity of this Kingdom.

The King, strengthened with Arms and Ammunition from Holland, and more strengthened (for as yet he wanted hands to weild those Arms) by this Protestation of Lords in his behalf concerning his intention of not making War against the Parliament, whereby the people might more easily be drawn to side with him, proceeded in his business with great policie and indefatigable industry. His pen was quick in giving answer to all Petitions or Declarations which came from the Parliament; and with many sharp expostulations, in a well-compiled Discourse, on the 17th of June, answered a Petition of the Parliament; which Petition was to this effect, that he would not disjoyn his Subjects in their duty to himself and Parliament, destroying the Essence of that high Court; which was presented to him at York by the Lord Howard, Sir Hugh Cholmley, and Sir Philip Sta-*PLETON: and within three weeks, both in his own Person, and by his Messengers,

with Speeches, Proclamations, and Declarations, advanced his businesse in a wonderful manner. At Newark he made a Speech to the Gentry of Nottinghamshire in a loving and winning way, commending their affections towards him; which was a great part of the perswasion for the future, coming from a King him-Another speech he made at *Lincoln*, to the Gentry of that County, full of Protestations concerning his good intentions, not onely to them, but to the whole Kingdom, the Laws and Liberties of it. In that short time also, by the help of many subtil Lawyers, whom he had about him, he returned a very long and particular Answer, with arguing the case in all points *, to a Declaration which the Parliament had before made against the Commission of Array, expounding that Statute 5 Hen. 4, whereupon that Commission was supposed to be warranted. The proofs and arguments on both sides, are to be read at large in the Records. or in the printed Book of Ordinances and Declarations, where a Reader may satisfie his own judgement. Within that time also the King sent-out a Proclamation against levying Forces without his Command, urging Laws and Statutes for it: And another long Proclamation to inform the people of the legality of his Commissions of Array, and to command obedience to them. Another he sent-forth against the forcible seizing or removing any Magazine of Ammunition of any County; and another, forbidding all relieving or succouring of Hull against him. Upon which, the Parliament declared, that those Proclamations, without their assent, were illegal; and forbade all Sheriffs, Mayors, &c. to proclaim them, and all Parsons and Curates to read or publish them.

From York the King removed to Beverley; from whence he sent a Message to. both Houses, and a Proclamation concerning his going to Hull, to take it in; requiring, before his journey, that it might be delivered-up to him. But that Message of his came to the House of Peers, after they had agreed upon a Petition, which was drawn-up, to move the King to a good accord with his Parliament, to prevent a Civil War; to be carried to him, and presented at Beverley, by the Earl of Holland, Sir John Holland, and Sir Philip Stapleton. That very Petition seemed to them so full an answer to the King's Message, that both Houses resolved to give no other answer to that Message, but the said Petition. But immediately after, a Declaration was published by both Houses of Parliament, for the preservation and safety of the Kingdom, and the Town of Hull; with assurance of both Houses to satisfie all losse sustained by any service done for the safety of the said Town, by reason of overflowing of water upon the grounds there, to all persons who should be found faithful in their several services.

The King makes preparations for besieging the town of Hull.

The King continued resolute in his intention of gaining Hull: By what means he attempted it, and how those attempts proved to be frustrate, is now the subject of a short Discourse.

The

These answers of the King were, for the most part, drawn-up by Mr. Edward Hyde, who was afterwards Earl of Clarendon, and Lord Chancellor of England.

The Town of Hull was not more considerable to the Kingdom as a Maritime and strong place, than it was now made remarkable to the world in many high and famous circumstances of this Civil War: for which cause, I shall the more particularly insist upon it.

Hull was the place which (being intrusted with so rich a Magazine of Ammunition) did probably allure the King to forsake a Parliament sitting at London, and visite the North. Hull was the place where the King in person did, first, finde his Commands denied, and his attempts resisted in an actual way; which proved the subject of so many Declarations and Disputations of State and Government: and Hull is the place which must now bear the first brunt of his armed Indignation.

The King, with an Army of three thousand foot, and one thousand horse, was removed from York to Beverley, a Town distant from Hull six miles; and intending to besiege Hull by Land (expecting also that Sir John Penington with some of his ships should stop the passages, and cut-off provisions from relieving the Town by Sea, though that expectation were made frustrate by the Earl of Warwich, his seizing on the Navie Royal) proclaimed that none, on pain of death, should convey any provision or relief thither. He disposed many men in cutting of Trenches, to divert the current of fresh water that ran to Hull, and sent two hundred horse into Lincolnshire under the command of the Lord WILLOUGHBY, son to the Earl of Lindsey, and Sir Thomas Glenham, to stop all relief of it from Burton upon Humber.

Sir John Hotham perceiving the King's intentions and endeavours, and knowing him to be in person within an hour and half's march of the Town, having, first, sent three Messengers, one after another, with humble Petitions to him, who were all laid-fast by the King, and not suffered to return; called a Council of War, in which it was debated, Whether or not they should permit the enemies to march neer the Town with their Ordnance, holding them play from off the Walls and Out-works, until the Tide came to its height, and then draw-up the Sluce, and let them swim for their lives. But a more merciful advice prevailed, which was, (for prevention of so many deaths) to draw-up the Sluce presently, having the ad. vantage of a Spring-tide, and drown all the Countrey about Hull. But Sir John HOTHAM, before it was done, gave the inhabitants and owners of land thereabout sufficient and timely notice to remove their Cattel, and all their goods, and assured them (which was ratified by the Parliament upon the Publike Faith) that whatsoever damage they received thereby, should be repaired by the authority of Parliament, out of the estates of those persons who had been most active and assistant to the King in that designe.

Sir John by Letters informed the Parliament in what condition the town was, desiring onely (so it might speedily be done) a supply of Money and Victuals, with five hundred men. Upon which, by command of Parliament, Drums were beatup in London, and other adjacent places, for Souldiers to be sent to Hull by Sea. Sir John Meldrum The Earl of Warwick was desired by the Houses to send two of the King's ships is sent by the Parliament to assist Sir from the Downs to Hull, to do as Sir John Hotham should direct for his best John Hotham in the

assistance, defence of Hull



assistance. And Sir Joun Meldrum, a Scottish Gentleman, an expert and brave

Commander, was appointed to assist Sir John in that service.

The King's Army were not confident to carry the Town by plain force, making their approaches with great difficulty and disadvantage, and those for the most part in the night-time, when, undiscovered, they burnt two Mills about the Town; they therefore had recourse to subtilty; and, knowing some within the Walls fit for their purpose, a Plot was therefore laid to fire the town in four places, which whilst the souldiers and inhabitants were busie in quenching, two thousand of the King's Army should assault the walls. The signe to those within the town, when to fire those places, was, when they discerned a fire on Beverley-Minster, this should be assurance to them within the town that they without were ready for the assault. But this treason had no successe, being discovered by one of the instruments, and confessed to Sir John Hotham. Many particular services were done both by Land and Water, by Barks and Boats upon the River Humber.

The Townsmen of *Hull* were so far provoked by this treacherous designe of their enemies, and so much animated against them, that they all entered into Pay; and now the Walls could not contain them; but five hundred of the town, conducted by Sir John Meldrum, issued-out, about the end of July, upon their besiegers; who, seeing their approach, prepared couragiously to receive and encounter them: but they were but a small part of the King's Forces which were resolute to fight; the other part, which consisted of the Trained-Bands of that Countrey, were not forward to be engaged against their neighbours: the King's Horse, and most resolute assistants, seeing themselves deserted by the Foot, retired as fast as they could to Beverley: but Sir John Meldrum pursued them, slew two, and took thirty prisoners in the pursuit. And not long after, when the supplies from London arrived at Hull, Sir John Meldrum, with a greater Force, made so fierce a sally upon his enemies, as caused most of the Leaguer to retire disorderly, one and twenty of them being slain, and fifteen taken prisoners. Sir John Meldrum. following the advantage of his successe with a swift motion, arrived suddenly at a Leaguer-town called Aulby, between three and four miles from Hull; where the King's magazine was kept in a Barn, in which was a great quantity of Ammunition, Powder, and Fire-balls, and certain Engineers employed there for making of Fire-works: Sir John suddenly set upon it in the night, drove-away the Guard, who consisted most of Trained-Bands, and other Yorkshire men, bearing no great affection to the War, and therefore ran more speedily away, leaving their Arms behinde them: much of the Ammunition and other Arms they took-away with them, fired the Barn, the Powder, and Fireworks, and what else they could not carry with them, and returned safely again into Hull.

The King abandons the siege of Hull.

The King, calling a Council of War, and (considering the ill successe of his proceedings, and the preciousness of that time which he consumed there,) by their advice resolved to break-up his siege before Hull, and march away; the chief men about him laying the fault of this failing upon the unskilfulnesse of the Countrey Captains, and cowardice of the Trained Bands. The King probably might have

Digitized by GOOGLE

sped better, if Sir John Penington could have brought part of the Navie to his assistance: but that was seized by the Earl of Warwick; of which it will be now

time to speak more particularly.

The Earl of Warwick had, in former times, been so great a lover of the Sea-service, Of the Earl of Warand so well experienced in those affairs (being, besides, a man of Courage, of Re-wick. ligious life, and known Fidelity to his Country,) that, among all the Noble-men at this time, he was esteemed by the Parliament (in this important businesse of settling their Militia by Land and Sea) the fittest man to take Command of the Navie, as Lord-Admiral. According to that, an Ordinance of both Houses was drawn- He is appointed by up, to confer the Office on him.

the Parliament to the Office of Lord-Ad-

The King had given the employment to Sir John Penington, a man who had miral. long been Vice-Admiral, and a successeful Commander; and he had written his Letters to the Earl of Warwich, with a strict Command to quit the Place. Earl of Warwick was in a great straight between two such high Commands, being gone-downto take possession of the Navie; and he therefore called a Council of War, acquainting them all, both with the Ordinance of Parliament, and the King's Letters. But the Earl himself was swayed in conscience to give obedience rather to the Ordinance of Parliament; and the reason of it himself gives in a Letter directed to a Lord of the House. When I considered (saith he) the great care which I have seen in the Parliaments of this Kingdom, for the good and safety both of King and Kingdom, and every man's particular in them; and that they are the great Council, by whose authority the Kings of England have ever spoken to their Subjects; I was resolved to continue in this employment, until I shall be revoked by that Authority that hath intrusted me with it.

Most of the Captains took-up unanimously the same resolution that the Earl And is admitted to did, excepting five, which were the Rere-Admiral, Captain Fogge, Captain the command of the BAILY, Captain SLINGSBY, and Captain WAKE, who alledged that they had the whole Fleet. King's Command to obey Sir John Penington, whom he had appointed Admiral instead of the Earl of Northumberland. These five had gotten-together round, to make defence against the Earl: but he came to Anchor about them, and having begirt them, summoned them again; upon which three of them came-in, and submitted: two onely, Captain SLINGSBY and Captain WAKE, stood-out. The Earl let flie a Gun over them, and turned-up the Glasse upon them, sending his Boat, and most of the Boats in the Fleet, to let them know their danger, if they came not within that space. But so peremptory was their answer, that the Masters and Sailors grew impatient; and, although they had no Arms, assaulted them, seized upon those Captains, being armed with their Pistols and swords, strook their Yards and Top-masts, and brought them to the Earl. Thus by the wonderful courage of these unarmed men, the businesse was ended without effusion of any blood, when the Earl was ready to give fire upon them.

Within few days after, another addition of strength was brought to the Earl of ·Warwich by an accident. A great and strong ship of the King's, called the Lion, putting to Sea from Holland, and bound for Newcastle, being much distressed with



with foul weather, was driven into the Downs. Captain Fox2, who commanded that ship, saluted the Earl of Warwick, who presently acquainted the Captain with the Ordinance of Parliament, whereby his Lordship had command of those ships, requiring his submission thereunto. The Captain at first refused to yeeld obedience to the Ordinance, and thereupon was presently clapt in hold: but all his Officers in the ship submitted themselves, and strook their Sails and Top-yards in token of obedience to the said Ordinance. This ship was very considerable, carrying two and fourty great Pieces of brasse Ordnance; besides, a little Vessel laden with Gun-powder of a great value, was taken also together with this ship. The Earl was informed by some of her men, that young Prince RUPERT and Prince MAU-RIGE, with divers other Commanders, intended to have come from Holland in this ship, the Lion. But after three days and three nights storm at Sea, those two Princes (in a sick and weak condition) landed again in Holland.

The King hearing of the surprisal of the Lion, sent a Messenger to the Earl of Warwick, to demand her again, with all the goods therein, and that she should be brought to Scarborough. But the Earl returned an Answer to this effect, that the Parliament had intrusted him with the Care of the Fleet, and that that ship was a part thereof: therefore he humbly besought his Majestie to pardon him; for without their consent he might not part with her; and that he knew of no goods

within her belonging to his Majestie.

But, leaving the Earl of Warwick to his Sea-employments, it is time to return to those warlike Levies and Preparations which were made by Land: for now the fatal time was come, when those long and tedious Paper-conflicts of Declarations, Petitions, and Proclamations, were turned into actual and bloody Wars, and the

Pens seconded by drawn swords.

The Parliament orbe raised; July 12, 1642.

On the twelfth of July, 1642, the Parliament voted that an Army should be ders a Land-army to raised for the safety of the King's Person, and defence of the Parliament; for so they called it, desiring to joyn together what seemed to be at so great a distance and enmity.

And appoints the Earl of Essex to be General of it.

The Earl of Essex was by a great and unanimous consent of both Houses chosen General of that Army, and of all Forces raised for the Parliament; with whom

they protested to live and die in that Cause.

The Earl of Essex was a Gentleman of a noble and most untainted reputation. of undoubted loyalty to his Country and Prince; having always (what course soever the Court steered) served in an honourable way, the right interest of the English Nation, and the Protestant Religion; and to that end had formerly engaged himself in the Palatine War, and service of the Netherland United Provinces: insomuch as at this time, when they sought a Lord to undertake the high charge of commanding in chief, there seemed to be no choice at all; but we may say of this Election, as PATERCULUS did of another, Non quærendus erat quem eligerent, sed eligendus qui eminebat.

The Parliament at that time were very able to raise Forces, and arm them well, by reason of the great masse of Money and Plate which to that purpose was heaped-

up in Guild-hall, and daily increased by the free Contribution of those that were well-affected to the Parliament Cause: where not onely the wealthiest Citizens and Gentlemen who were neer-dwellers, brought-in their large bags and goblets; but the poorer sort, like that widow in the Gospel, presented their mites also; insomuch that it was a common Jeer of men disaffected to the Cause, to call it the Thimble and Bodkin-Army.

The Earl of Essex was very careful and industrious in raising of his Army; in which he desired to have as great a Body of Horse as could conveniently be gotten, by reason that he conceived his chief work was to seek-out the King's Forces, and prevent their spoiling of the Country, and disarming several Counties, to furnish themselves. And indeed, his Forces, considering the long Peace of England, and unreadinesse of Arms, were not onely raised, but well-armed in a short time. Many of the Lords who then sate in the House of Peers (besides those Lords who went into divers Counties to settle the Militia. and therefore raised Forces for safety of those several Places) listed themselves in the Lord General's Army, and took Commissions as Colonels; the Lord ROBERTS, the Lord SAINT-JOHN, eldest son to the Earl of Bullenbrook, the Lord of Rochford, eldest son to the Earl of Dover: and many Gentlemen of the House of Commons, of greatest rank and quality there, took Commissions for Horse and Foot-service in that Army, of whom these were some: Sir John Merric, who was made Serjeant-Major-General of that Army; the Lord GRRY of Grooby, son to the Earl of Stamford; Master DENZIL HOLLIS, Master HAMDEN, Sir PHILIP STAPLETON, Sir WILLIAM WALLER, Sir SAMUEL LUKE, Sir HENRY CHOLMLY, Master Grantham, Master Whitlock, with divers others. The Earl of Bed- The Earl of Bedford ford, within two days after that the Earl of Lesex was chosen Generalissimo, was Parliament their voted to be General of the Horse.

General of the Horse,

CHAP. VI.

A brief Relation of the condition of divers Counties in England, when the Parliament's Ordinance for the Militia, and the King's Commission of Array, were put in execution. With a mention of some Lords and others who were actors on either side. The Lord Mayor of London committed to the Tower, and sentenced by the Parliament. A mention of some Declarations, Messages, and Answers, that passed between the King and the two Houses of Parliament.

DURING the time that this Army was raising for the Parliament, to be conducted by his Excellency in person, the King, with small strength as yet, was removing from place to place to gather Forces, and draw people to his side, Of whose proceedings, and by what degrees he encreased in power, I shall speak hereafter in a continued Series, to avoid confusion in the Story. But in the mean time, the Parliament's Ordinance of Militia, and the King's Commission of Array, were justling together almost in every County: the greatest of the English Nobility on both sides appearing personally, to seize upon those places which were deputed to them either by the King or by the Parliament. No Ordinances from the One, or Proclamations from the Other, could now give any further stop to this general and spreading Mischief. God was not pleased that one Chimney should contain this Civil fire; but small sparks of it were daily kindling in every part of the Land.

Let it not therefore seem amisse, if in the first place I make a brief Relation into what posture every particular County, or most of them, had endeavoured to put themselves, during that time, which was since the twelfth of July, when the first apparent denouncing of War began, and the General was elected in Parliament;

Digitized by Google

till the three and twentieth of October, when it broke-out into a fierce and cruel Battel. But let not the Reader expect any full, or perfect, Narration of this, which would take-up too great a time, and prove as tedious as unnecessary. The onely reason why I have entered into it, is to inform the Reader what Lords and Gentlemen did first appear in action on either side, in those particular Counties, that in the progresse of the Story he may be better acquainted with those names, whose Actions proved of so high concernment in the future War. Nor can any perfect Judgement be made of the affections or condition of any one County in this brief Narration of so short a time: for scarce was there any City or Shire, but endured in processe of time many Changes, and became altered from their first condition, either by unconstancy of affections, or else enforced to take a new side, as they were threatned by approaching Armies of either party, when the War grew to a

greater height.

In some Counties there was no struggling at all, one side wholly prevailing, and The inhabitants of the People's affections bending the same way: as it appeared in *Lincolnshire* at the to the Parliament. first, (which was the first account given to the Parliament of their Militia, and where some circumstances are of that note, as to make it justly deserve a more particular recital than other places) when the Lord Willoughby of Parham went-down thither, being chosen by the Parliament Lord-Lieutenant of that This young Lord, being come to Lincoln, expresseth to the Parliament what cheerful and hearty obedience he found from the Captains and Officers of the Trained-Bands, and in how good a posture they were, beyond all expectation; considering the unhappinesse of the Plague being then in the Town, which hindered the appearance of some: but that was fully supplied by a Company of Voluntiers, equal in number and goodnesse of Arms to the Trained-Bands. Yet that Change which I spake of before, did afterwards sadly appear in this County, which was afterwards as much divided in itself as any part of England, and by that means became a most unhappie seat of War, often gained and lost again by either side. Lincolnshire was then very forward for the Lord WILLOUGHBY (however afterward he found some resistance from the Earl of Lindsey, who sided with the King) as he wrote-up to the Parliament, and sent also to them the King's Letter, and his own Answer: Which are both fit to be inserted into the Story, being the first of that kinde, and much unfolding the nature of the businesse.

The King's Letter to the Lord WILLOUGHBY of Parham.

CHARLES REX.

Right Trusty and Wellbeloved, We greet you well. Whereas We understand that you have begun to assemble, train and muster the Trained-Bands of Our County of Lincoln, under pretence of an Ordinance of Parliament whereto We have not given Our consent, which is not onely contrary to the Low,

Law, but to Our Command and Pleasure, signified by Our Proclamation sent to Our High Sheriff of that Our County. Wherefore, that you may not hereafter plead ignorance of such Our Prohibition, We do by these Our Letters command and charge you, upon your Allegiance, to desist and forbear to raise, train, exercise or assemble together, any part of the Trained $oldsymbol{B}$ and $oldsymbol{s}$ of Our said County, either by yourself, or by any others employed under you, or by warrant from you. And because you may, for what you have already done concerning the Militia of that Our County, plead, that you had not so particular a Command, We shall passe by what you have already done therein, so as presently, upon your receipt bereof, you shall desist and give-over medling any further with any thing concerning the Militia of that Our County. But if you shall not presently desist, and forbear medling therewith, We are resolved to call you to a strict account for your disobedience therein, after so many particular and legal Commands given you, upon your Allegiance, to the contrary; and shall esteem and proceed against you, as a disturber of the Peace of the Kingdom.

Given at our Court at York, the fourth of June, 1642.

To Our Right Trusty and Wellbeloved, the Lord WILLOUGHBY of Parham.

The Lord WILLOUGHBY of Parham, his Letter in Answer to His Majestie.

SIR.

As there can be nothing of greater unhappinesse to me, than to receive a Command from Your Majestie whereunto my endeavours cannot give so ready an obedience as my affections; so I must confesse the difficulty at this time not a little, how to expresse that Duty which I owe to Your Majestie's late Commands, and not falsifie that Trust reposed in me by Your high Court of Parliament; through whose particular directions I am now come into this County to settle the Militia, according to the Ordinance of Parliament, which by the votes of my Lord LITTLETON, and others in the House of Peers, better versed in the Laws than myself, passed as a legal thing; and hath since been confirmed (if I mistake not) by his example, and Your Majestie's Chief Justice Sir JOHN BANKS, both in accepting their Ordinance, and nominating their Deputy-Lieutenants: how much further they proceeded, I know not.

- But,

But, Sir, if the opinions of those great Lawyers drew me into an act unsuitable to Your Majesties liking, I hope the want of yeers will excuse my want of judgement. And, since, by the Command of the Parliament, I am now so far engaged in their Service as the sending-out Warrants to summon the County to meet me this day at Lincoln, and afterwards in other places; I do most humbly beseech Your Majesty not to impose that Command on me, which must needs render me false to those that relie on me, and so make me more unhappie then any other misery that can fall upon me.

These things, Sir, I once more humbly beseech Your Majestie, may be taken into Your Gracious consideration; and that You would never be pleased to harbour any misconceit of me, or of this Action; since nothing hath yet passed by my Commands here, or ever shall, but what shall tend to the honour and safety of Your Majesties Person, to the preservation of the Peace of Your Kingdoms, and to the content (I hope) of all Your

Majestie's Subjects in these parts, amongst whom I remain,

Your Majestie's most humble and most dutiful Subject and Servant, FRANCIS WILLOUGHBY.

Upon the receipt of these Letters, the Lords sent a Message to the House of Commons, in which they expressed how much they did value and approve the endeavours of this Lord in a service so much importing the safety of this Kingdom, not doubting of their readinesse to concur with them, upon all occasions, to manifest the sense they have, and shall retain, of his deservings, which appear the greater, by how much the difficulties (appearing by the circumstances of those Letters) have been greater. The Lords, therefore, as they resolved to make his Interest their own, in this Service for the publike good and safety of the Kingdom; so they desired the Commons to joyn with them in so just and necessary a work. To this the House of Commons consented, and resolved to joyn. with the Lords in this Vote, making the like resolution also for the Deputy-Lieutenants for the County of *Lincoln*, and desired the Lords concurrence therein. Upon which it was ordered by the Lords in Parliament, that they agree with the House of Commons for the resolution concerning the Deputy-Lieutenants of the County of Lincoln.

In Essex also, (which proved a most unanimous County, and by that means con- The people of the tinued in peace and happinesse,) the Earl of Warwick (whose care and action was adhere zealously to not confined onely to the Sea) had been chosen Lord-Lieutenant by the Parliament, the Parliament. and, when he went-down to muster and exercise the Country, was received with great applause. The Trained-Bands were not onely compleat, but increased by Voluntiers to unusual numbers; and so affectionate to that Cause they were in general,

that they presented a Petition to the Earl of Warwick and the Deputy-Lieutenants, in the name of all the Captains and Lieutenants of the several Companies, and in the name of all persons belonging to the Trained-Bands. To which Petition, when it was read in the field, they expressed a full consent by their general acclamations and applause in every Company. The Earl of Warwick therefore sent the Petition to the Parliament, to let them see the extraordinary alacrity and affection of that County of Essex to them: which was in these words, which follow.

To the Right Honourable ROBERT Earl of Warwick, Lord-Lieutenant of the County of Essex; and to the worthy Gentlemen the Deputy-Lieutenants of the same County, confided in by the most Honourable the high Court of Parliament.

"We, the Captains and Lieutenants, with the full consent of the Trained-Bands and Voluntiers of the County now assembled, having, before the accesse of this present Parliament, seen our Religion, our Laws and Liberties, brought to the brink of ruine and subversion, by the results of most desperate and wicked Counsels, could not but with exceeding joy behold the assembling and continuance of so great and faithful a Council (the Representative Body of this Kingdom) and with most certain confidence commit thereto all that was dear unto us.

And, having also seen the late hellish designes and actings of a malignant party in this Kingdom, and the bloody Rebellion in Ireland, all working to retard the progresse, or subvert the being, of this worthy Parliament, and therein to bereave us of all our hopes of Reformation, or future peace and happiness to this Church or State; we cannot but ascribe all glory and praise unto the Lord of lords, and expresse most hearty thankfulness to his blessed Instruments, that great Assembly, for their undaunted resolutions, unparallell'd endeavours, and happie proceedings for the common good. And herein (as not the least means of our safety) for the most necessary and seasonable Ordinance of theirs touching the Militia, whereby we are put under the Command and Guidance of so noble a Lord, and such worthy Gentlemen, whereunto we humbly desire this present day and meeting may be an evidence and pledge of our free and willing obedience.

"
great and most faithful Council, the Parliament, whose care and fidelity we have
so abundantly found; we even bleed to see the heart and actions of our Royal
King (contrary to his own Royal expressions) declining from the Counsels of
his Parliament; and carried after other Counsels, whom as the Laws and Constitutions of this Land have not known nor reposed upon, so we (for own parts)
neither will nor dare intrust them with our Religion or Laws: and whom, we

"Having intrusted our Religion, our Laws, and all, into the hands of that

Digitized by Google

" verily believe, could they prevail against that highest Court, (under God our "chiefest Bulwark and Defence) would soon deprive us both of Religion and " Law, and (notwithstanding all their specious pretences) reduce us to a condition

" no less miserable than slavish.

- " From the deep apprehensions of all which, we do freely and heartily pro-"mise and tender our persons and estates to assist and defend (to the uttermost) " the high Court of Parliament now assembled, the Members, Power, and Privi-
- " ledges thereof; and therein, his Majestie's Person and Authority, and the "Kingdom's Peace, (according to our late Protestation) against all contrary "Counsels, Power, or force of Arms, whatsoever, which shall be reared-up, or

" attempted, against them.

"And this our humble Acknowledgement and Resolution, (which, we doubt " not, will be accorded-unto by all good Subjects) we humbly desire your " Honour and Worships to tender, on our behalf, to that most honourable 1 " Assembly of Parliament: for whose happy progresse and successe we shall " daily pray.

Subscribed.

J. KITELEY, HENRY FARRE, JOHN BALLET, JOHN FLEMMING, WILLIAM MARSHAM, ROBERT BARRINGTON, Captains. Thomas Hauper, John Woodcock, Richard Lawrence, George Colwel, Thomas Clark, WILLIAM BURLS, Lieutenants.

The Parliament were very forward to expresse their approbation of this most affectionate Declaration of the Essex men, and returned them an Answer; part of which was in this manner.

This just and faithful resolution of theirs to the publike good, the Lords and Commons do not onely approve, but commend; assuring them that, as their endeavours have been for the Peace and Happinesse of the King and Kingdom, so they will persist in discharge of the great and publike Trust which lies upon them; to go thorow all difficulties which may oppose the publike Peace and Welfare of this Kingdom; and will, upon all occasions, be ready to expresse, particularly to those persons, that respect which is due to persons from whom they have received so great assurance of affection and fidelity.

In Kent there was cheerful obedience (without any open opposition) shewed to The majority of the the Ordinance of the *Militia*; as it appeared by their Petition and Proclamation, people of Kent also and more by their real and constant actions. True it is, that some Gentlemen of adhere to the Parliament. that County were not much affected to the Parliament's Cause, who did accordingly frame a displeasing Perition to the Houses, and brought it up to London, accompanied with many Gentlemen of that County: but the Parliament, having notice of it, sent Officers, and disarmed those Gentlemen who brought the Petition, before they passed over London-bridge: and the two which presented it to the House of Commons, Sir William Butler and Mr. Richard Lovelace, were both committed.



great Forces to seize upon the Magazines of that County. Against whom the Earl of Stamford was sent by the Parliament, as Lord-Lieutenant, with a considerable strength, who arrived there, did much curb the proceedings of Master HASTINGS,

and took possession of the Town of Leicester.

Warwickshire.

Great was the Contention about that time in Warwickshire, between the E rl of Northampton for the King, and the Lord Brook for the Parliament, not without sharp encounters, and slaughter on either side. The Earl having seized the Ordnance at Banbury, marched with great fury into Warwickshire, spoiling the Countrey as he went, though not without opposition of the people, and the Lord Brook's Forces; against whom he could not at all prevail.

Wiltshire. Berkshire.

The Earl of Pembrook had settled the Militia in Wiltshire with small ado, though it continued not long so. And the Earl of Holland in Berkshire, being but faintly resisted by the Earl of Berkshire, the Lord Lovelace, and others. For soon after the Earl of Berkshire, together with Sir John Curson, Sir Robert Dormer, and others for the Commission of Array, who came to Watlington in Oxfordshire, to seize the Magazine of that part of the County, which was laid-up in that Town, were there taken prisoners, and sent-up to the Parliament by Colonel Hamden and Colonel Goodwin, two Members of the House of Commons, and Knights of the Shire for Buckingham.

The Western coun-

But the further that this Discourse travels Westward, the greater and more remarkeably you shall finde such contestations; especially considering the number of Lords and Gentlemen of great rank, and many of them Members of Parliament, who sided with the King against the Parliament, and were therefore afterward voted out of the House. One great Head there was of all those Western Counties, WILLIAM, Marquesse of Hartford, whom the King, by his Commission of Array, had appointed Chief, and made him Lord-Lieutenant-General of Devon, Cornwall, Somerset, Dorset, Wilts, Southampton, Gloucester, Berks, them all by the King. Oxford, Hereford, and seven Counties within the Principality of Wales: who, notwithstanding his high Command, was never able to atchieve any great matter for the King's side; so much were the common people of the West at that time inclined to the Parliament, and so active were those Gentlemen who stood for it; such as were the sons of Sir Francis Popham, Master Alexander Popham, Hugh, and Edward, who were more animated by the example of their aged father; Master Strode, a Deputy-Lieutenant, and others, against all those frequent attempts which the Marquesse made.

Great was the number of considerable men in those Countries, which took part with the Marquesse against the Parliament, and very industrious in their several Stations, to put in execution the Commission of Array; as the Lord PAWLET. Sir Ralph Hopton, and Sir John Stowel, both Members of the House of Commons, and for that reason put out of the House. Sir RICHARD SLANY, in Cornwal, another Member, put out also for the same cause; as likewise were Sir Edward Rodney, and Master Coventry, both Parliament-men, who followed the Marquesse in some of his actions. Sir Bevile Greenvile, an active

·man.

The Marquis of

Hartford is made Lord-Lieutenant of

man, another Member of Parliament, was very industrious for the Array, both in Cornwal and Devon, joyning himself with the Earl of Bath, came for that purpose to his house at Tastock, in Devonshire, and assisted by many Gentlemen, as Master Culins, Sheriff of that County, M. Bamfield, M. Ashford, M. Gif-FORD, M. SAITHIL, Baronet SEYMOUR, and M. COURTNEY; to whose assistance

Squire Rogers came with Forces out of Dorsetshire.

Various were the Successes which Marquesse Hartford, assisted by so many of the Gentry, found in his several Enterprises; sometimes prevailing, but more often distressed. In one Skirmish, which, about the beginning of August, himself, the Lord Pawlet, Sir Ralph Hopton, Sir John Stowel, and M. Smith, another Member of the House of Commons, made against the Deputy-Lieutenants in Somersetshire, he prevailed against them, and possessed himself of the Town of Shepton-Mallet: Ten men were slain, and many wounded. Going afterwards to Wells, he had been besieged by many thousands of the People, who arose against him; but that having timely notice of their coming, he escaped a back-way out of the Town. About which time, the Earl of Bedford was sent down by the Parliament against him, with three hundred Horse: by whom the Lord Marquesse, the Lord Pawlet, Sir Ralph Hopton, Colonel Lunsford, and many other considerable men, were besieged in Sherburn. For great numbers out of the Sherburn is besieged Country came daily to the assistance of the Earl of Bedford. Many weeks did by the troops of the that Siege continue; many Sallies were made out, and sharp encounters on both Parliament. In sides performed with great courage: the Parliament side being in firm hope to have taken them at last; which was conceived a thing of great moment, and advantage to their affairs, if they could have possessed the persons of so many men, considerable both in their Fortunes and Valour; and who proved afterwards very strong and cruel enemies. Yet that hope was frustrate: for about the beginning of October they all escaped out of Sherburn: the Earl neverthelesse pursued after them, and in the Chase took M. PALLART, Sir HENRY, Sir JOHN, and Sir CHARLES BARCLAY, prisoners. Within a week after, the Earl of Bath was apprehended, and brought-up a prisoner to the Parliament.

It cannot be much wondered-at, that Division was found in Countrey-Towns and Villages so far remote from the Parliament, where the people were variously wrought-upon by perswasions or fears from either side: when London itself, the Seat of that great Council, and chiefest Bulwark of their defence, was not without some taste of these Distractions. Which, besides the actions of some private Citizens, too petty to be here rehearsed, may appear to the Reader in one thing, which cannot be omitted: The Lord Mayor of London was at this time a prisoner in the Tower, committed by the Parliament.

Sir RICHARD GURNEY, Lord-Mayor of London for that year, was charged by The Lord Mayor of the House of Commons on the seventh of July, for being a mover of Sedition in London is imprisonthe Kingdom, in causing the King's Proclamation concerning the Commission of ed by the Parliament Array (which was declared by both Houses to be illegal) to be proclaimed in the the King against City. them. July 7, 1642.

City. And the Charge being perfected, was sent-up to the Lords, desiring that he might forthwich be called to his Answer; which was accordingly granted.

Four days after, while the Lord Mayor was attending the Lords House upon this Charge, an additional Impeachment was read against him in the House of Commons, brought-in by the Common-Council of London, for divers breaches of his Oath in execution of his Office, for proclaiming divers illegal Proclamations. and contemning the Orders of Parliament.

This Impeachment was forthwith sent up, and read in the Lords House. Upon the reading of which, it was ordered that he should be sent to the Tower, from

thence to be brought to a legal Trial upon his Impeachment.

Many days, during the space of a whole month, was this Lord-Mayor brought from the Tower to Westminster, to attend the Lords of Parliament, and many times returned back without being heard, by reason of so great a multiplicity of Businesses as the Houses were then in.

He is tried by the found guilty, and condemned to a 12, 1642.

At last, after some hearings, he was brought, on the twelfth of August, to the House of Lords, and House of Lords, to receive his Censure: The effect whereof was, that he should be put from his Mayorality, never bear Office in the City or Commonwealth, be punishment. August uncapable of all Honour or Dignity to be conferred on him by the King, and stand

committed prisoner to the Tower, during the pleasure of both Houses.

During the time of these contentions between the Ordinance of the Militia and the Commission of Array, which is briefly touched by itself; it will not be amisse to return to the King's proceedings in his own Person, by what degrees he came to encrease in strength, and what contestations happened betwixt Himself and the Parliament: wherein, that which concerned the Pen, shall be first briefly touched. and then his other actions. But those Declarations, Petitions, and Proclamations. which, upon all occasions, were then published, are too many and too long to be recited in a Story: in the Records, and printed Books of Ordinances, they may be read. I shall onely mention some of the chief, and excerpt the most material contents of them.

The Parliament, about the end of July, had petitioned the King to forbear all preparations of War, and remove his Garrisons. To which he gave Answer, and upbraided them with their preparations of War, for appointing the Earl of Esser to be their General, and the Earl of Warwick Admiral. In that Answer, he descants at large upon particulars, commanding his said Answer and their Petition to be read in all Churches. To which the Parliament reply, as they had done before, that they cannot lay-down their Arms, nor adjourn the Parliament to any other place, as he would have them, unlesse he leave-off those Warlike preparations, and comply with that Council, to which onely he ought to adhere by the Constitution They likewise command the Petition, Answer, and Reply, of this Government.

But, things proceeding still higher, the King, being returned to the City of York. from thence sent-forth a Proclamation, to suppresse (as he there styleth it) the present

to be read in all Churches.

Messages and complaints of the King and Parliament against each other.

present Rebellion under command of ROBERT, Earl of Essex; offering withal free pardon to him, and all such as shall within six days after the date thereof, being the ninth of August, lay down their Arms. In which Proclamation also he commanded the Marquesse Hartford to raise speedily what Forces he could, within all those Counties whereof he had made him Lieutenant-General in the Commission of Array (of which before was spoken) and to march against, destroy, or apprehend, the said Earl of Essex.

The Parliament, upon this Proclamation, make a Declaration, wherein they briefly recount all the King's former proceedings against them and the Kingdom: All which they attribute (after their usual manner) to his wicked Council; and promise still to make him great and happie, if he will return to his great Council.

But the next day after his former Proclamation, the King, continuing still at York, sent-forth another, declaring that no Papist should serve him in his Army, and that his Souldiers should commit no rapine upon the people. And within two The King publishes days after that, he published a Discourse, called A Declaration to all his loving a long Declaration against the proceedings of this present Parliament. This Declaration ings of the Parliament. was of a great length, containing fifty pages in a large Quarto. In which was com- ment, on the 10th prised a kinde of History, touching all former passages betwixt himself and them, of August, 1642. from the beginning of these divisions: which is to be read in the printed Book of Parliament-Ordinances. Toward the end of that Declaration, he protesteth a wonderful love to Parliaments, and to the peace and happinesse of the Kingdom: but he requires that some persons (as disturbers of the publike peace) may be delivered into the hands of Justice, to be tried by their Peers, naming the Lord of Kymbolton, and those five Members of the House of Commons. whom before he came to surprise in that House, Master Hollis, Sir Arthur Hasleric, M. Pym, M. Hambden, and M. Strode; as likewise M. Henry Martin, and Sir Henry LUDLOW, two Members also of the House of Commons, for speaking some bold Speeches in that House. He also desires to have delivered-up to him Alderman PENINGTON, who succeeded in the Mayorality to the fore-named Sir RICHARD GURNEY, and Captain VENN, one of the City-Captains: those two last he accuses of bringing tumults from the City, to terrifie the Parliament at Westminster. Another desire of the King's is, that Inditements of High Treason upon the Statute of the 23d yeer of King Edward the Third, may be drawn against the Earls of Essex, Warwick, and Stamford, the Lord Brook, Sir John Hotham, and Serjeant Major-General Skippon, an expert and religious Souldier, a man of high action in the succeeding War, whom the City had employed in exercising of their Militia; as likewise against all those who shall hereafter exercise the Militia by vertue of the Ordinance of Parliament.

The Pen was very quick upon all occasions: and the King, the next day after the publication of this long fore-mentioned Declaration, sent a Message to the Parliament, upbraiding both Houses with an Order which they had then made, for the borrowing of an hundred thousand pounds out of that money which the Adventurers had raised for reducing of Ireland, and subduing the Rebels there; affirming,

affirming, that, out of his Princely care and piety toward distressed Ireland. he cannot but take notice of it; commanding them immediately to retract that mischievous and unjust Order (for so he calls it) as they would answer the contrary to Almighty God, himself, and those that have trusted them: Wherein he expecteth their speedie Answer and Obedience; and the rather, that he may thereby be secured, that such part of the four hundred thousand pounds as is, or shall be, collected from his good Subjects of England, by vertue of the late Act of Parliament, whereby the same is granted, may not likewise (under false pretences) be diverted from the proper use to which it was intended, and misemployed to the

disturbance of the Kingdom's peace, in a War against him.

The Lords and Commons in Parliament make Answer to this Message, expressing what caution there was in the very Order (which, upon that very occasion, was printed) for speedie repayment of that Sum, and disposing of it to the right But, first, they tell the King, that this very Message of his to them, is an high breach of the Priviledge of Parliament: and, upon that occasion, they call to remembrance, and declare many particulars of their care for the relief of *Ireland*, and the King's hindering of it. Those particulars there expressed, are as followeth. They declare, that this bloodie Rebellion was first raised by the same Counsels that had before brought two Armies within the bowels of this Kingdom, and two Protestant Nations ready to welter in each other's blood, which were both defrayed a long time at the charge of the poor Commons of England, and quietly, at last, disbanded; by God's blessing upon the Parliament's endeavours. That, this designe failing, the same wicked Counsels which had caused that impious War, raised this barbarous Rebellion in Ireland; and recommended the suppressing thereof (for the better colour) to the Parliament's care: who, out of a fellow-feeling of the unspeakable miseries of their Protestant Brethren there (not suspecting this horrid Plot, now too apparent) did cheerfully undertake that great work, and do really intend and endeavour to settle the Protestant Religion and a permanent Peace in that Realm, to the glory of God, the honour and profit of his Majestie, and security of his three Kingdoms. But how they have been discouraged, retarded, and diverted, in and from this pious and glorious Work, by those traiterous Counsels about his Majestie, will appear by many particulars.

The Parliament charges the King with actions tending to defeat the vigorous measures taken by the Parliament for the suppression of the rebellion of the Papists in Ireland.

They there mention the sending-over at first of twenty thousand pounds by the Parliament, and that good way found-out to reduce *Ireland* by the Adventure of private men, without charging the Subject in general, which would probably have brought in a Million of money, had the King continued in, or neer, *London*, and not, by leaving his Parliament, and making War upon it, so intimidated and discouraged the Adventurers, and others who would have adventured, that that good Bill is rendered in a manner ineffectual.

They mention, that when, at the sole charge of the Adventurers, five thousand Foot, and five hundred Horse were designed for the relief of *Munster*, under the command of the Lord Wharton, and nothing was wanting but a Commission to enable that Lord for the Service, such was the power of wicked Counsel, that no Commission

Commission could be obtained from the King; by reason whereof, Lymrick was

wholly lost, and the Province of Munster since in very great distresse.

That when well-affected persons, at their own charge, by way of Adventure, had prepared twelve Ships, and six Pinnaces, with a thousand Land-forces, for the service of *Ireland*, desiring nothing but a Commission from his Majestie; that Commission, after twice sending to *York* for it, and the Ships lying ready to set—Sail, three weeks together, at the charge of neer three hundred pounds a day, was N.B. likewise denied. And those Adventurers (rather than lose their Expedition) were constrained to go by vertue of an Ordinance of both Houses of Parliament.

That, though the Lords-Justices of *Ireland* earnestly desired to have two Pieces N. B. of Battering cannon sent-over, as necessary for that Service; yet such commands were given to the Officers of the Tower, that none of the King's Ordnance must

be sent, to save his Kingdom.

That CHARLES FLOYD, Engineer and Quarter-Master-General of the Army in N. B. Ireland, and in actual employment there against the Rebels, was called-away from

that important Service, by expresse command of the King.

That Captain Green, Controller of the Artillery, a man in Pay, and principally employed and trusted here by the Lord-Lieutenant of *Ireland* for providing and ordering the Train of Artillery, which was to be sent to *Dublin*, and who had received great sums of money for that purpose, was commanded from that employment and trust, to serve the King in this unnatural War against his Parliament. N. B. And, when the Parliament had provided six hundred suits of Clothes for present relief of the poor Souldiers in *Ireland*, and sent them towards *Chester*, William Whitaker, that undertook the carriage of them, was assaulted by the King's souldiers lying about *Coventry*; who took-away the six hundred suits of Clothes, N. B. and the poor man's Waggon and Horses, though they were told that the Clothes were for the souldiers in *Ireland*, and though the poor Carrier was five times with the Earl of *Northampton*, to beg a release of his Waggon.

That three hundred suits of Clothes sent likewise by the Parliament for Ireland, with a Chirurgion's Chest of Medicaments, towards Chester, were taken all away by the King's Troopers, under command of one Captain Middleton, together with the poor Carrier's Horses and Waggon, for the King's service. As likewise, that a great number of Draught-horses, prepared by the Parliament for the Artillery and Baggage of the Irish Army, and sent to Chester for that purpose, being there, attending a passage, are now required by the King for his present service in England; whose forces are so quartered about the Roads to Ireland, that no Provision

can passe thither by Land with any safety.

That Captain KETTLEBY and Sir HENRY STRADLING, the Admiral and Vice-Admiral of the Ships appointed to lie upon the coast of *Ireland*, to annoy the Rebels, and to prevent the bringing of Ammunition and relief from forraign parts, are both called-away from that employment by the King's command: and by reason of their departure from the coast of *Munster*, to which they were designed,

Digitized by Google

the Rebels there have received Powder, Ammunition, and other relief from for-

raign parts.

By which particulars (say they) it may seem that those Rebels are countenanced there, upon designe to assist the enemies of the Parliament here: especially considering that those confident Rebels have presumed, very lately, to send a Petition to the King, intituling themselves his Majesties Catholike Subjects of Ireland, and complaining of the Puritan Parliament of England; and desiring, that since his Majestie comes not thither, according to their expectation, they may come into

England to his Majestie.

The Parliament, therefore, finding what danger both Kingdoms are in, by the designes of cruel enemies, thought fit to provide for the safety of both, by preparing a competent Army for the defence of King and Kingdom. But in regard that the Plate, brought-in by so many well-affected men, could not be coined so suddenly as the service required; and well knowing that one hundred thousand pounds might, for a short time, be borrowed out of the Adventurers money for Ireland, without any prejudice to the affairs of that Kingdom, whose Subsistence depends upon the Welfare of this, and resolving to make a speedy repayment of that money, made this Order: which, that it may appear (say they) to all the world to be neither mischievous, illegal, nor unjust, (as the King calls it) the House of Commons thought fit to recite it in hæc verba; and, instead of retracting the Order, to repay that money with all possible speed.

The Order, July 30.

It is this day Ordered, by the Commons House of Parliament, That the Treasurers appointed to receive the Moneys come-in upon the Subscriptions for Ireland, do forthwith furnish, by way of Loan, unto the Committee of Lords and Commons for the defence of the Kingdom, the sum of one hundred thousand pounds, for the supply of the publike necessity, for defence of the King, Parliament, and Kingdom, upon the Publike Faith, to be repayed duely and carefully within so short a time, that it shall not be diverted from that purpose for which it was intended, or any way frustrate the Activalready made in the behalf of that adventure.

During the time of these Paper-conflicts, the King, in person, had often removed, and visited many places. To the Gentry of Leicestershire he made a Speech on the 20th of July, after his usual manner, with protestations of his great love to the people, and care of the Kingdom. And from thence removing Northward, on the fourth of August he made a Speech, after the same manner, to

the Gentry of Yorkshire; from whence he returned back to Nottinghom, and The King sets-up his there set-up his Standard Royal. Very few people resorted to it. Nor had the Standard at Nottling, King at this time a considerable strength to guard his Person, if any attempts had ham, August 5, King at this time a considerable strength to guard his Person, if any attempts had 1642. been made to have seized upon him. From Nottingham, on the 25th of August, the King sent a Message to the Parliament by the Earls of Southampton and Dorset, and Sir John Culpeper, one of the Members of the House of Commons, who had deserted the Parliament, and went to the King at York; having not long before been made by him Chancellour of the Exchequer.

The King's Message to both Houses of Parliament from Nottingham, August 25th, 1642.

We have, with unspeakable grief of heart, long beheld the Distractions of this Our Kingdom. Our very Soul is full of Anguish, until We may finde some Remedy to prevent the Miseries which are ready to. overwhelm this whole Nation by a Civil War. And, though all Our endeavours tending to the composing of those unhappie Differences betwixt Us and Our two Houses of Parliament (though pursued by Us with all Zeal and Sincerity) have been hitherto without that Successe we hoped-for; yet such is Our constant and earnest care to preserve the publike Peace, that We shall not be discouraged from using any Expedient, which, by the blessing of the God of mercy, may lay a firm foundation of Peace and Happinesse to all Our good Subjects. To this end. observing that many Mistakes have arisen by the Messages, Petitions, and Answers betwixt Us and Our two Houses of Parliament; which haply may be prevented by some other way of Treaty, wherein the matters in difference may be more clearly understood, and more freely transacted: We have thought fit to propound to you, That some fit persons may be by you enabled to treat with the like number to be authorized by. Us, in such a manner, and with such freedom of Debate, as may best tend to that happie Conclusion which all good men desire, The Peace of the Kingdom. Wherein, as we promise, in the word of a King, all safety and encouragement to such as shall be sent unto Us, if you shall chuse the place where We are for the Treaty, which we wholly leave to you, presuming the like care of the safety of those We shall employ, if you shall name another place: So We assure you and all Our good Subjects, that (to the best of Our understanding) nothing shall be therein wanting on Our part, which may advance the true Protestant Religion, oppose

pose Popery and Superstition, secure the Law of the Land (upon which is built, as well Our just Prerogative, as the Propriety and Liberty of the Subject) confirm all just Power and Priviledges of Parliament, and render Us, and Our people, truly happie, by a true understanding betwixtUs and Our two Houses of Parliament. Bring with you as firm resolutions to do your duty, and let all Our People joyn with Us in Our prayers to Almighty God for his blessing upon this Work.

If this Proposition shall be rejected by you, We have done Our duty so amply, that God will absolve Us from the guilt of any of that blood which must be spitt. And what opinion soever other men may have of Our Power, We assure you, nothing but Our Christian and pious care to prevent the effusion of blood, hath begot this motion; Our provision of Men, Arms, and Money, being such, as may secure Us from further violence, till it please God to open the eyes of Our People.

The Answer of the Lords and Commons to the King's Message of the 25th of August, 1642.

May it please Your Majestie.

"The Lords and Commons in Parliament assembled, having received Your Majestie's Message of the 25th of August, do with much grief resent the dange-" rous and distracted state of this Kingdom, which we have by all means en-" deavoured to prevent, both by our several Advices and Petitions to Your Majes-"tie, which have been not onely without successe, but there hath followed that, which no evil Counsel in former times hath produced, or any age hath seen, "Those several Proclamations and Declarations against both the Houses of Par-"liament, whereby their Actions are declared Treasonable, and their Persons Traitours; and thereupon Your Majestie hath set-up Your Standard against "them, whereby you have put the two Houses of Parliament, and in them this whole Kingdom, out of Your Protection: So that until Your Majestie shall " recal those Proclamations and Declarations whereby the Earl of Essex and both "Houses of Parliament, their adherents and assistants, and all such as have " obeyed and executed their Commands and Directions, according to their duties, " are declared Traitors, or otherwise Delinquents; and until the Standard, set-up in pursuance of the said Proclamations, be taken-down, Your Majestie hath " put us into such a condition, that, whilst we so remain, we cannot by the Fur-" damental priviledges of Parliament, the publike Trust reposed in us, or with " the general good and safety of this Kingdom, give Your Majestie any other 44. Answer to this Message. Within Within few days after, the King sent instructions under his Privy Signet to his Commissioners of Array for the several Counties of England and Wales; as to Marquesse Hartford, whom the King had made Lieutenant-General of all the Western Counties, as is before expressed; to the Earl of Cumberland, Lord-Lieutenant of Yorkshire; and the Lord Strange, Lieutenant for Lancasbire and Cheshire: in which Instructions he commands them to pursue the Earl of Essex, whom he again calls Rebel and Traitour.

Immediately after, the King sent a Reply to that Answer of the Parliament to his last Message of the 25th of August; which being short, that the Reader may the more truely inform himself of the nature of this strange division, I shall wholly insert in the very words.

We will not repeat what means We have used to prevent the dangerous and distracted estate of the Kingdom, nor how those means have been interpreted, because, being desirous to avoid effusion of blood, We are willing to decline all memory of former Bitternesse, that might make Our offer of a Treaty lesse readily accepted. We never did declare, nor ever intended to declare both Our Houses of Parliament Traitours, or set-up Our Standard against them; and much lesse to put them and this Kingdom out of Our protection: We utterly professe against it before God and the world. And further, to remove all possible Scruples which may hinder the Treaty so much desired by Us; We hereby promise, so that a day be appointed by you for the revoking of your Declarations against all persons as Traitours or otherwise for assisting Us, We shall, with all cheerfulnesse; upon the same day, recall our Proclamations and Declarations, and take down Our Standard. In which Treaty, We shall be ready to grant any thing that shall be really for the good of Our subjects; conjuring you to consider the bleeding condition of Ireland, and the dangerous condition of England, in as high a degree, as by these Our Offers We have declared Our Self to do: and assuring you, that Our chiefe desire in the world is to beget a good understanding and mutual confidence betwirt Us and Our two Houses of Parliament.

To the King's most Excellent Majestie:

The humble Answer and Petition of the Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament to the King's last Message.

May it please Your Majestie:

"If we, the Lords and Commons in Parliament assembled, should repeat all the ways we have taken, the endeavours we have used, and the expressions we have made

" made unto Your Majestie, to prevent those distractions and dangers Your " Majestie speaks of, we should too much enlarge this Reply. Therefore, as we "Humbly, so shall we Onely, let Your Majestie know that we cannot recede from " our former Answer, for the reasons therein expressed: for that Your Majestie hath not taken-down Your Standard, recalled Your Proclamations and Declarations whereby You have declared the Actions of both Houses of Parliament to " be Treasonable, and their Persons Traitors: And You have published the same " since Your Message the 25th of August, by Your late Instructions to Your " Commissioners of Array. Which Standard being taken-down, and the Decla-" rations, Proclamations, and Instructions, recalled; if Your Majestie shall then, " upon this our humble Petition, leaving your Forces, return unto Your Par-" liament, and receive their faithful advice, Your Majestie shall finde such expressions of our fidelities and duties, as shall assure You that Your Safety, Honour, 46 and Greatnesse, can onely be found in the affections of Your People, and the " sincere Counsels of Your Parliament, whose constant and undiscouraged endea-" vours and consultations have passed thorough difficulties unheard-of, onely to " secure Your Kingdoms from the violent mischiefs and dangers now ready to fall " upon them; who deserve better of Your Majestie, and can never allow them-" selves (representing likewise Your whole Kingdom) to be balanced with those persons whose desperate dispositions and counsels prevail still so to interrupt all our endeavours for the relieving of bleeding Ireland, as we may fear our labours " and vast expences will be fruitlesse to that distressed Kingdom. As Your Pre-" sence is thus humbly desired by us; so it is in our hopes that Your Majestle " will in Your Reason believe, There is no other way than this, to make Your " Majestie's Self happie, and Your Kingdoms safe."

The Parliament, immediately after, published a Declaration, that the Arms which they were enforced to take-up for the preservation of the Kingdom, Laws and Liberties, could not be laid-down, until the King should withdraw his Protection from such persons as had been voted Delinquents by both Houses, and leave them to the Justice of Parliament.

The King, within few days after, made another Reply to the last Answer of the Parliament. The substance of it was, that he could neither do nor offer any more than he had already: and that he should think himself clear and innocent from any blood that might be spilt in this Quarrel; praying God so to deal with him and his posterity, as he desired to preserve Religion, Law, and Liberty of the Subjects, and Priviledges of Parliament. The Parliament returned Answer, that, while the King thinks himself bound in Honour to protect such Delinquents, in whose preservation the Kingdom cannot be safe, nor the Rights of Parliament at all maintained, but must needs fall into utter contempt; they must needs think he hath not done what he can or ought to do. They tell him, it is impossible that any reasonable man should believe him to be so tender of bleeding Ireland, when at the same time divers of the Irish Traitours, the known favourers of them, and agents for them, are admitted into his Presence with grace and favour, and some of them employed in his service.

Digitized by Google

THE

HISTORY

OF THE

PARLIAMENT OF ENGLAND.

THE THIRD BOOK.

CHAP. I.

Prince Rupert and Prince Maurice arrive in England.

The Earle of Essex, taking leave of the Parliament,
goeth to his Command. The King increaseth in
strength at Shrewsbury. A skirmish at Worcester.
The great Battell of Keynton is fought.

ABOUT the beginning of this September, Prince RUPERT, second Sonne-to FREDERICK Prince Elector-Palatine of the Rhine, (who had long beene detained Prisoner of Warre by the Emperour, and was newly-released,) arrived in England, to offer his Service to the King, his Uncle, in those Warres, which were now visibly begun in this unhappy Kingdome: together with him came his younger Brother Prince MAURICE, and were an addition rather of Gallantry than of strength to the King's side, they being both young and unexperienced Souldiers. Neither, indeed, though they were neere in birth to the Crowne of England, were they neere enough to adde

The Count Palatine, sent-for. Germany, retires into Holland; in July, 1642.

adde any security to the King, by purchasing the People's hatred to themselves; though that were imagined, and talked-of by many, as the cause why they were Their elder Brother, CHARLES, Prince Elector, might have served Charles, Elector of more fitly to play that part: But he, having long remained in the Court of England, had lately left the King, not above two Moneths before the arrival of his Brothers: The reasons why he went-away were partly expressed by himselfe afterward in a Message, which he sent out of Holland to the Houses of Parliament, wherein he professed sorrow for these distractions, and protested that, whilest he was in the Court of England, he had by all means endeavoured to bring the King into a good opinion of his Parliament; acknowledging that his owne interest, and that of the Protestant Religion in Germany, did more depend upon the happinesse of the English Parliament, than upon any thing else under God. True it is, that this Prince left not the King, until he saw that the rent betweene him and his Parliament was too great to close; and, having before been exposed by the King to some probability of envy, (as when he attended his Majestiy to the House of Commons for the surprizal of the five Members; and was with him afterwards, when some other things unpleasing to the people had been done;) he might, in likelihood, (being of that opinion that he was of concerning this cause,) thinke it the wisest way to take a faire leave, in time, of the King.

These two young Princes, after their arrival in England, were soone put into employment and Command under the King, their Uncle; in which they shewed themselves very forward and active, as will appeare afterward: and, if they were more hot and furious than the tender beginnings of a Civil Warre would seem to. require, it may be imputed to the fervour of their youth, and the great desire which they had to ingratiate themselves with the King; upon whom, as being no more

than Souldiers of fortune, their hopes of advancement wholly depended.

Prince Rupert com-King's troops against the Parliament, in September, 1642.

Prince RUPERT, the elder brother, and the more furious of the two, within a fortmands a body of the night after his arrival, commanded a small party of those Forces which the King had at that time gathered-together, which were not of so great a body as to be termed an Army: with which he marched into divers Counties, to roll himselfe, like a snow-hall, into a larger bulke, by the Accession of Forces in every place. Through divers parts of Warwickshire, Nottinghamshire, Leicestershire, Worcestershire, and Cheshire, did this young Prince fly with those Troops which he had, not inviting the people so much by faire demeanour (for such was the report to the Houses of Parliament,) as compelling them by extreme rigour, to follow that side which he had taken. Many Townes and Villages he plundered, that is to say robb'd (for at that time, first, was the word plunder used in England, being born in Germany, when that stately Country was so miserably wasted and pillaged by forraigne Armies;) and committed other outrages upon those who stood affected to the Parliament, executing some, and hanging-up servants at their Masters doores, for not discovering of their Masters. Upon which newes, the Houses of Parliament fell into a serious debate, and agreed that a Charge of High Treason should be drawne-up against him, for endeavouring the destruction of this

State, which was voted a great breach of the Kingdom's Lawes, and breach of the priviledge of that great Council, representing the whole state of it.

Let it not seeme amisse in this place to insert a passage, happening at the same time, which cannot be omitted by reason of the eminence of that person whom it

concernes, in the succeeding Warres.

Colonel Goning, who was before spoken of as having undertaken to keepe the Towne of Portsmouth against the Parliament, being now no longer able to hold it out, was permitted by Captain Merrick, not without allowance from the Earl of Warwick, to leave the place, and to be conveyed to the Brill in Holland according to his owne desire. This the Parliament were contented with, because the Captaine was necessitated to agree to it, für preservation of that Towne, and many persons therein well-affected to the Parliament; for Goring had threatened to destroy the Towne with wilde-fire, if he might not preserve his owne life by a peaceable surrender.

Whilest Prince RUPERT was thus active with a flying Party, the King himselfe The King marches was moving with those Forces which he had, but in a gentler and calmer way; with an army toward shrewsbury, in Sepfor the reverence which the people bare to his Person, made him finde lesse re-tember, 1642. sistance; as windes lose their fury when they meet no opposition; but howsoever, the King desired to go in such a way, as to be taken for a Father of his Country, and a Prince injur'd by the Parliament; professions of love, perswasions, and Protestations of his affection to the people, were the chiefe instruments which he used to raise himselfe a strength, and complaints against the proceedings and actions of the Parliament; as when he was marching toward Shrewsbury, where he intended to make his chiefe Rendezvouze, being a place convenient to receive and entertaine such Forces as should come to him out of Wales: Which place (as will appeare afterward) failed not his expectation, though it were more than the Parliament could suspect. As he was marching thither with a small Army, he made a Speech betweene Stafford and Wellington, on the 19th of September, and caused his Protestation to be then also read in the head of his Army; where-in, among other things, he tells them (for their comfort and hope to prevaile) that they should meet no Enemies but Traytors, most of them Brownists, Anabaptists, and Atheists, who would destroy both Church and Common-wealth. And in this Protestation, with deepe vowes, and imprecations upon himselfe and his posterity, he declares his whole care and intentions to be for the maintenance of the Protestant Religion, the Lawes and property of the Subject, together with the Priviledge of Parliament, as he was accustomed to do in his former Speeches.

But the King, not many daies before, had taken a more harsh and co-ercive way; for marching thorow Derbyshire, Leicestershire, and Nottinghamshire, he commanded the Trayned-Bands of those Counties to attend and guard his Person; and, when they were met, disarmed the greatest part of them, taking as many Armes as served for 2000 men, besides good summes of Money, which, not without some

constraint, he borrowed from them.

But, to leave the King's proceedings for a while, it is time to returne to the Lord-General for the Parliament, and the Army raised under his conduct; which



The Earl of Essex leaves the City of London, to take the command of the Parliament army, Sept. 9, 1642.

at that time, when Prince RUPERT began to march, was growne to a considerable body, consisting of about 14 thousand Horse and Foot; their general Rendezvouze was at Northampton, where many of the chiefe Commanders, as the Lord Brooke, Lord Roberts, Colonel Hamben, and others, stayed with them, expecting the presence of his Excellence, who on the ninth of September, taking his leave of the Parliament and City of London, bent his journey toward Northampton, and was waited-on by the Trayned-Bands, and a great number of armed Gentlemen, from Essex-House to the end of the City with great solemnity. But the love and wishes of the people that did attend him, were farre greater than any outward signification could expresse: To whom he seemed at that time, though going to a Civil Warre, as much an Englishman, and as true a Patriot, as if he had gone against a forraigne Great was the love and honour which the people in general bore to his Person, in regard of his owne vertue, and honourable demeanour; and much increased by the Memory of his noble Father, the highest example that ever I yet read, of a Favourite both to Prince and people; of whom that was most true, which Vellelius Paterculus speaks with flattery and falsehood of Sejanus, In quo cum judicio Principis certabant studia populi, the people's love strived to match the Prince's judgement. That Cause, wherein the Earle of Essex had engaged himselfe, seemed to them religious enough to require their prayers for the successe of it: For the Parliament, though they raised an Army, expressed much humility and reverence to the King's Person; for not many daies after the departure of the Lord-General, by consent of both Houses, a Petition to the King was drawne-up, to be carried by Sir Philip Stapleton, a Member of the House of Commons, often spoken-of before, and at this time a Colonel in the Lord-Ge-This Petition he carried to Northampton to the General, to be by him presented (according to the Parliament's desire) to His Majesty, in a safe and honourable way: In which Petition nothing at all (according to their former Declarations) is charged upon the King himselfe, but only upon his wicked Council; and the former misgovernments briefly mentioned; and that this wicked Council have raised an horrid Rebellion and Massacre in Ireland; and ever since, by opposition against the Parliament, hindered the reliefe of that Kingdom, and at last drawne his Majesty to make a War upon his Parliament, leading an Army in Person to the destruction of his people, depriving his good Subjects of his Majestie's protection, and protecting those Traytors against the Justice and Authority of Parliament.

A Petition of the Parliament to be prosented to the Words of the Petition) for the just and necessary defence of the Proprevent a Civil War. testant Religion, of your Majestie's Person, Crowne, and Dignity, and of the

Lawes and Liberties of the Kingdome, and the Priviledges and power of Parliaments, taken-up Armes, and have appointed and authorized Robert Earle
of Essex, to be Captaint-General of all the Forces by us raised, to conduct

the same against those Rebels and Traytors, to subdue and bring them to condigne hunishment: And we do most humbly beseech your Majesty, to withdraw your Royal Presence and Countenance from these wicked persons; and, if they shall stand-out in defence of their rebellious and unlawful attempts, that your Majesty will leave them to be supprest by that Power which we have sent against them; And that your Majesty will not mix your owne dangers with theirs, but in peace and safety, without your Forces, forthwith returne to your Parliament, and by their faithful advice compose the present distempers and confusions abounding in both your Kingdomes, and provide for the security and honour of your selfe and your Royal Posterity, and the prosperous estate of all your Subjects. Wherein if your Majesty please to yeeld to our most humble and earnest desires; We do, in the presence of Almighty God, professe, That we will receive your Majesty with all Honour, yeeld you all due obedience and subjection, and faithfully endeavour to secure your Person and Estate from all dangers; and to the uttermost of our Power, to procure and establish to your selfe, and to your People, all the. blessings of a glorious and happy Reigne.

According to this Petition were those Directions from the Parliament to the Lord-General sent at the same time; wherein the Lord-General is required by the Houses, to use his utmost endeavour, by Battel or otherwise, to rescue the King's Person, the Persons of the Prince, and the Duke of Yorke, out of the hands of those desperate persons now about them. Another Direction was, That if his Majesty, upon this humble Petition, should be pleased to withdraw himselfe from the persons now about him, and returne to the Parliament, that then the Lord-General should disband, and should serve and defend his Majesty with a sufficient strength in his return. Another Direction was, That his Excellency should proclaime pardon to all those who were at that time seduced against their Parliament and Country, if within ten daies after that Proclamation they would return to their duty, doing no hostile act within the time limited: Provided that this should not extend to admit any man into either House of Parliament, who stands suspended. without giving satisfaction to that House whereof he was a Member; and excepting all persons impeached for Delinquency by either House, and those persons who have been eminent Actors in these Treasons, and therefore impeached in Parliament of High Treason; such as were at that time declared, and there named; the Earles of Bristol, Cumberland, Newcastle, and Rivers, Secretary Nicholas, Master Endymion Porter, Master Edward Hide, the Duke of Richmond, the Earle of Carnarvan, Viscounte Newarke, and Viscount Fawkland; These were the persons at that time voted-against, and declared Traytors, though afterwards others were added to the number of them, and many of these left-out, as occasions altered,

Such

Such Directions, and others for the advantage of the Λ rmy, and behoofe of the Countries, thorow which he was to march, were given by the Parliament to his Excellency; but above all things to restraine carefully all impieties, prophannesse, and disorders in his Army.

The Lord-General

The General arriving at Northampton, was there possessed of a great and gal-Evex with his Army lant Army, well furnished at all points, consisting of about twenty thousand, with those that within few daies were to come thither: An Army too great to finde resistance at that time from any Forces a-foot in England; for the King's side had then small strength: What they had, consisted of Horse, who in small Parties roved up and downe, to make Provision, and force Contribution in several places. Prince RUPERT especially, like a perpetual motion, with those Horse which he commanded, was in a short time heard-of at many places of great distance. The care therefore which his Excellency especially tooke, was so to divide his great Army, as to make the several parts of it useful, both to annoy the straggling Troops of the Enemy, and protect those Counties that stood affected to the Parliament, as also to possesse himselfe, either in his owne Person, or by his Lieutenants, of such Towns as he thought might be of best import, if this sad War should happen to continue.

> From Northampton he marched to Coventry, to make that considerable City a Garrison for the Parliament; and from thence to Warwick; and having fortified that Towne, marched-away towards Worcester, upon intelligence that the King himselfe intended to come thither with his Forces. For his desire was to finde-out the King; and the Parliament, to whom he imparted his designe by Letter, ap-

The City of Worcester, as well as the whole County, had beene in great dis-

proved well of his advance towards Worcester.

tractions, by reason not only of the dissenting affections of the Inhabitants, but the frequent invitations from both sides; if we may call that an invitation, which is made by armed force. Sir John Byron had first entred Worcester for the King's side, whom Master FIENNES, Sonne to the Lord SAY, had opposed for the Parliament; and afterward Prince RUPBRT with five hundred Horse, not farre from the City, was encountred by Master FIENNES, who commanded another Body about that number; the skirmish was but small, and not above twelve men slaine, as the report was made at London. But before the Lord-General could A Skirmlet at Wor- arrive at Worcester, (who was marching thither from Warwick, as was before expressed,) there happened a fight there, not to be omitted, in regard of the persons that were there slaine or wounded, though the number of men in general that fell were small. Prince RUPERT was then at Worcester with twelve Troops of Horse, when about that City divers of the Parliament's Forces were, though not joyned in one Body, but dispersed: The Prince marched out of the City into a greene Meadow, and there set his men in Battel-Array, to encounter whom he could first light-upon. Within halfe a mile of that Field were the Parliament Troops, Colonel SANDYS with his Regiment of Horse, Captaine HALES, and Captain WINGATE, who made toward the Prince; but their passage was very disadvantageous, as being

thorow a narrow Lane, where onely foure of a breast could march: Colonel SANDYS, whose fault was too much courage, charging with his owne Regiment. thorow that Lane, too soone, before the rest of the Parliament-Forces could comeup (for, besides the forenamed Captains, HALES and WINGATE, Captaine FIENNES, and Captaine Austin were not farre off, and were marching apace to their assistance) made, notwithstanding, some slaughter of the Prince's men, and maintained the Fight until the mentioned Forces approached the place; but then the Prince, (the two sides growing into some equality of number,) fearing, perchance, to be too long engaged in a Fight, until the Lord-General's Army might approach, some of the fore-runners of it not being farre off, retreated-back into the City of Worcester, thorow which he marched-away with as much speed as he could, the Parliament-Forces following him thorow the Towne, and so over a Bridge, about which some of the Parliament Dragoneers were placed, who cut-off twenty of the Prince's Troopers, and tooke thirty Prisoners. There were found dead at the place of their first encounter 13 men. There were slaine of the Parliament-side of note, Colonel Sandys's Cornet, who first of all fell, and Sergeant-Major Douglas; and Colonel Sandys himselfe was desperately wounded, of which wounds he died about a Moneth after. It was reported that Colonel Wilmor, (of whom we have spoken before, and who was afterward an eminent Champion on the King's side,) was, in this conflict, runne thorow the body by Colonel Sandys.

His Excellency, immediately after this fight, came to Worcester with his Army, The Lord-General where he resolved to quarter a while, as a place convenient to send-out Parties Essex with his Army upon all occasions, and watch the motion of the King's Forces. This discourse comes to Worcester.

shall here leave him, and relate the passages of the other Armies.

Prince RUPERT, having left Worcester, marched with his Troops to Ludlow, twenty miles distant thence; and the King with a small Body of Horse, passed into Wales, and having made a Speech full of Protestations, to the Inhabitants of Denbigh and Flintshire, and gained some Parties there, the next day he marched to Shrewstury, where he intended to quarter for a time, as a fit Rendezvouze for The King with his those Forces expected from Wales, and other neere adjacent parts. To Shrewsbury army coines to the King caused a Mint to be brought, and there coyned all the Plate which he 23, 1642. then had, or was then and soone after presented to him; for many Noblemen, Gentlemen, and others, about that time had furnished the King, not onely with Horses and Armes, but Money and Plate, as the Citizens of London, and other Gentlemen had done to the Parliament, upon their Publike Faith, as is before ex-It is a wonderful thing, almost beyond what himselfe could hope, or the Parliament suspect, how much and how suddenly the King grew in strength, in that little time that he quartered at Shrewsbury; The King, within few daies after his coming thither, had, in publike, to the Gentry, Freeholders, and other Inhabitants of that County, made an Oration full of perswasive Art, and such winning expressions, as fitted the purpose he had in hand, such as might render him to the thoughts of those people, an injur'd Prince, and move compassionate affections

affections toward him. Which Speech of his, as it was reported and printed in London, I shall here insert.

His Speech to his Army.

Gentlemen:

It is some benefit to me, from the insolencies and misfortunes which have driven me about, that they have brought me to so good a part of my Kingdome, and to so faithful a part of my People: I hope neither you nor I shall repent my coming hither; I will do my part that you may not; and of you I was confident before I came. The residence of an Army is not usually pleasant to any place; and mine may carry more feare with it, since it may be thought (being robb'd and spoiled of all mine owne, and such terrour used to fright and keep all men from supplying of me) I must onely live upon the aid and reliefe of my people. But be not afraid; I would to God my poore Subjects suffered no more by the insolence and violence of that Army raised against me (though they have made themselves wanton even with plenty) than you shall do by mine; and yet I feare I cannot prevent all disorders; I will do my best: And this I promise you, No man shall be a looser by me, if I can belp it.

I have sent hither for a Mint; I will melt-downe all my owne Plate, and expose all my Land to sale or morgage, that, if it be possible, I may bring the least pressure upon you: In the mean time, I have summoned you hither to do that for me and yourselves, for the maintenance of your Religion, and the Law of the Land (by which you enjoy all that you have) which other men do against us. Do not suffer so good a Cause to be lost, for want of supplying me with that, which will be taken from you by those who pursue me with this violence. And, whilest these ill men sacrifice their Money, Plate, and utmost industry to destroy the Common-wealth, be you no lesse liberal to preserve it. Assure yourselves, if it please God to blesse me with successe, I shall remember the assistance that every particular man here gives me, to his advantage. However, it will be reafter (how furiously soever the minds of men are now possessed) be honour and comfort to you, that, with some charge and trouble to yourselves, you did your part to support your King, and preserve the Kingdome.

The King's army is much increased at Shrewsbury.

But with such skill had the King managed his affaires there, and so much had fortune crowned his endeavours, that before the middle of October, which was about three weekes after his first coming to Shrewsbury, with an inconsiderable Body of an Army, he was growne to a great strength, consisting of about six thousand

thousand Foot, three thousand brave Horse, and almost two thousand Dragoneers; And, purposing about that time to remove from thence, he issued out Warrants to the Inhabitants of Shrewsbury, and other adjacent Townes and Villages, to send Horses and Carts for his removal.

The King marched along within the view of Coventry, but not intending to lose any time there in sitting-downe before it, unlesse the Towne had been freely surrendered to him: But that was denyed, though in a very humble Message, by the Governour of it. Marching-on, he came and lay at Southam, when the Lord-General Essex was not many miles distant from him. So much was the King now growne in strength, that he was able, at so great a distance, to strike some terrour into the City of London itselfe, and provoke their sedulous endeavour for a defence against his feared approach, though the Lord-General Essex with as great an Army, were then abroad to attend his Marches. The Parliament itselfe tooke the busi-Preparations are nesse into their strict care: For both Houses conceiving that the City was in im-Parliament for the minent danger of the King's Forces, ordered, That the Trayned-Bands thereof defence of London should be speedily raised for a Guard; That such Fortifications as could suddenly against the King's be made, should not be wanting; That a Committee should be appointed to 1642. consider of the present setting up Courts of Guard, and raising Works, for planting of Ordnance in special places about the City and Suburbs. According to which Order many hundreds of men fell presently to worke, in digging of Trenches, and other Bulwarks. It was Ordered likewise, That the Trayned-Bands of London, Middlesex, and Surrey, should be put into a readinesse; And that the close Committee, by help of the Lord-Mayor, should, with all diligence, search-out and secure the persons of all the ill-affected Citizens, or the chiefe of them, that were suspected to be most able, or active, to raise a Party against the Parliament.

Twelve Companies of London were, by Order of Parliament, sent to Windsor, to possesse and secure that Castle; and many Seamen were raised to guard the passages of the River Thames.

The Parliament about that time, considering how much these Civil distractions The Parliament auincreased over the whole Kingdome, passed a Vote, That it was and should be thorizes different lawful for all Counties in England, to enter into an Association, for mutual defence together for their of each other, of their Religion, Lawes, and Liberties. Whereupon, within a mutual defence. short time after, Buckingham, Hartford, and Nottinghamshire, began to associate after that manner, raised Forces for the Parliament, and advanced both Plate and Money upon their Propositions.

The danger that seemed to threaten London at that time, though distant in place, yet in reason was neer. For the King's Army was judged to be neerer to it than the Lord-General's was; and it was probable enough, that his desires would rather lead him to attempt the City than to engage against the Army; and it was thought and spoken by some, that London was a place where he had many friends, who, upon the approach of such an Army, would appeare for him, and, to facilitate his atchievements, would fill the City with intestine tumults and seditions: —That London was the onely place where the Parliament was to be totally suppres-



sed, and his Army curiched to the height of their desires. But others were of opinion, that such an attempt, as it was preposterous, would prove frustrate, and that the City could not be gained, unlesse the Army were first subdued. For, besides the consideration, that the supposed Party for the King in London, were not, in probability, of power enough to accomplish his ends, it might be thought that they were not so desperately inclined to him, as to throw themselves and estates into such hazard, as must be undergone in the confused rage of a licentious Army. But the maine reason against it was, That the Lord-General Essex, with an Army as strong as the King's, would follow his March neere at hand, and, by the help of those Forces which the City of London would poure-forth upon him, utterly roine his inclosed Army. But, howsoever the counsels were, it pleased God that it was brought to a Battel, to which probably the King might be the more invited by that advantage of the absence of a great part of the Parliament's Army.

The Battle of Edge hill, or Keynton, October 23, 1642.

This famous Battel, called by some the Battel of Edgehill, by others the Battel of Keynton (that Keynton is a little Towne in Warwickshire, almost in the midway betweene Stratford upon Avon and Banbury) was fought on a Sunday, being the 23d day of October. The King on Saturday the 22d of October, came with in six miles of Keynton, and that night at Cropredy and Edgecot lodged his great Army, consisting of about 14,000 Foot, and about 4000 Horse and Dragoneers; a farre greater number than the Lord-General Essex had together at that time (though his whole Army consisted of more,) for that opportunity the King tooke of the absence of many Regiments of the Parliament. The Lord-General Essex on that Saturday night quartered at Keynton with his Army, consisting then but of 12 Regiments of Poot, and about 40 Troops of Horse, little, in all, exceeding the number of 10,000 men. The reason why his Forces at that time were no more in number, was, (besides that, by reason of the suddennesse of his march, and diligence to follow the King's Army, he had left behinde two Regiments of his Foot, one under the Command of Colonel Hamden, the other of Colonel Grantham, together with 11 Troops of Horse, behinde but one daies March, and left to bring-on the Artillery, which was seven Peeces of Canon, with great store of Ammunition, and which came not to Keynton till the battel was quite ended;) the Lord-General also had before left for preservation of the Countries thereabout (and whom on such a sudden he could not call together to his Assistance) one Regiment of Foot, and two Troops of Horse, under the command of the Earle of Stamford at Hereford, that the power of Wales might not fall into Glocestershire; another Regiment was left at Worcester, another at Coventry, for the safety of that Towne, and one Regiment occasionally lodged then in Banbury.

In Keynton the Lord-General intended to rest Sunday, to expect the residue of his Forces and Artillery: but in the morning the Enemy was discovered not far off; which made him give present order for drawing that Army which he had there, into the field. The King's Forces had gotten the advantage of a very high and steepe ascent, called Edgehill, from whence they were discovered that morning; not farre from the foot of that hill, was a broad Champion, called, The vale of the red Horse, a name suitable to the colour which that day was to bestow

Digitized by Google

upon it; for there happened the greatest part of the encounter. Into that field the Lord-General was forced presently to march, making a stand about halfe a mile distant from the foot of *Edgehill*, where he drew his Army into *Battalia*, and saw the King's Forces descending the Hill, ready for their encounter; that Army at the first having two advantages, of the hill, and of the winde. It was full of skilfull Commanders, and well-ordered; their greatest Body of Horse was on

the right wing; on the left were some Horse and Dragooneers.

The Parliament-Army was drawne-up and put into Battalia upon a little rising ground in the forenamed Vale, the Foot being, many of them, a good space behind the Horse, when the Charge began. Three Regiments of Horse were on the right wing; the Lord-General's owne Regiment, commanded by Sir Philip Stapleton; Sir William Balfore's Regiment, who was Lieutenant-General of the Horse; and the Lord Fielding's Regiment, which stood behinde the other two, in the way of a Reserve; Sir John Meldrum's Brigado had the Van; Colonel Essex was in the middle; the Lord-General's Regiment, the Lord Brooke, and Colonel Hollis, were in the Reare; in the left wing were about 20 Troops of Horse, commanded by Sir James Ramsey, their Commissary-General. In this posture they stood, when the other Army advanced toward them, the strength of their Horse being (as aforesaid) on their right wing, opposite to the left wing of the Parliament-Army.

The Cannon on both sides with a loud thunder began the Fight; in which the successe was not equal, the Parliament's Cannon doing great execution upon their

Enemies, but theirs very little.

The Earle of Lindsey, General for the King, with a Pike in his hand, led-on the maine Body of that Army, in which was the King's owne Regiment, encoung tred by the Lord-General Essex, who exposed himselfe to all the danger that a Battell could make; first, leading-on his Troope, then his owne Regiment of Foot, and breathing courage into them, till, being disswaded by divers from engaging himselfe too farre, he returned to the rest of the Army, to draw them on. The chiefe Regiments having begun the Battell, Sir Philip Stapleton, with a brave Troop of Gentlemen (which were the General's Life-Guard, and commanded by him) charged the King's Regiment on their right flanke within their Pikes, and came-off without any great hurt, though those Pikemen stoutly defended themselves. and the Musqueteers, being good firemen, played fiercely upon them. The Battle was hot at that place, and so many of the King's side slaine, that the Parliament-Army began to be victorious there; they tooke the Standard-Royal, the bearer thereof, Sir EDMUND VARNEY, being slaine; and the General, the Earle of Lindsey, sorely wounded, was taken Prisoner. But the same fortune was not in every part; for the King's right wing, led by Prince RUBERT, charged fiercely upon the left wing of the other (consisting mostly of Horse) and prevailed altogether; for the Parliament-Troops ranne, almost all, away in that Wing; and many of their Foot-Companies, dismayed with their flight, fled all away, before

deserts to the King with a troop of Horse.

they had stood one Charge; Colonel Essex, being utterly forsaken by that whole Brigade which he commanded, went himself into the Van, where he performed excellent service, both by direction and execution, till at the last he was shot in SirFaithful Fortescue the thigh, of which he shortly after died. Some part of their disheartning was caused by the revolt of their owne side; for Sir FAITHFUL FORTESCUE, at the beginning of the Fight, instead of charging the Enemy, discharged his Pistoll to the ground, and with his Troope, wheeling-about, ranne to the King's Army, to whom he had before given notice thereof by his Cornet. The Parliament-Army would have undoubtedly been ruined that day, and an absolute Victory gained on the King's side, if Prince RUPERT and his pursuing Troops had been more temperate in plundering so untimely as they did, and had wheeled-about to assist their distressed friends in other parts of the Army; for Prince RUPERT followed the chase to Keynton Towne, where the Carriages of the Army were; which they presently pillaged, using great cruelty, (as was afterward related,) to the unarmed Waggoners and labouring-men. A great number of the flying Parliament-Souldiers were slaine in that Chase, which was continued for two miles beyond Keynton, and farther, till the Pursuers were forced to retire, having met-with Colonel Hamadan, who was marching to join the Lord-General with the other Brigado of the Army, that brought-on the Artillery and Ammunition before spoken-of. Colonel HAMBDEN discharged five pieces of Cannon against them; some were slaine, and the rest, cessing the pursuit, retired hastily to the field, where they found all their Infantry, excepting two Regiments, quite defeated. For in the meane time, Sir WILLAM BALFORE, Lieutenant-General of the Horse, with a Regiment of Horse, charged a Regiment of the King's Regiments of King's Foot, before any Foot, of his owne side, could come-up to him, and, breaking most bravely into it, had cut most of them off; and afterward, by the assistance of some Foot, who were come-up to him, he defeated another Regiment, and so gotup to the greatest part of the King's Ordnance, taking some of them, cutting of the Geeres of the Horses that drew them, and killing the Gunners, but was inforsed to leave them without any Guard, by reason that he laboured most to make good the day against several Regiments of the King's Foot, who still fought with much resolution, especially that which was of the King's Guard, where his Standard was; by which Sir WILLIAM BALFORE's Regiment rode, when they cameback from taking the Ordnance, and were by them mistaken for their owne side Their passing without any Hostility, was the cause, that, immediately afterward, Sir WILLIAM riding-up toward the Lord-General Essex's Regiment of Horse, they gave fire upon Sir WILL: AMBALFORE'S men, supposing them to be Enemies; but, soone discovering each other, they joyned Companies, and were led-up with halfe the Lord-General's Regiment, by his Excellency himselfe, against the King's maine strength, where a terrible and bloody encounter happened: At the same time Colonel Ballard, who led a brigado there of the Lord-General's Regiment and the Lord Brooks's, forced a stand of the King's Pikes, and broke through wo of his Regiments.

Sir William Balfore defeats two of the Foot.

In

In this great conflict the Standard-Royal (as aforesaid) was taken, and Sir EDMUND VARNEY slaine, and the Earle of Lindsey, with his Sonne, were taken Prisoners, together with Colonel VAVASOR, Lieutenant Colonel of that Regiment; Colonel MUNROE also was there slaine.

The Standard thus taken, and put into the Lord-General's hand, was by him delivered to his Secretary, Master CHAMBERS; but the Secretary, after he had carried it some time in his hand, suffered it to be taken from him by an unknowne person, and so it was privately conveyed-away. There also was great service performed by the Lord GRAY, Sonne to the Earle of Stamford, and Sir ARTHUR HASLERIG, and a considerable help given to the turning of the day, by defeating

a Regiment of the King's, called the Blew Regiment.

By this time all the King's Foot, excepting two Regiments, were dispersed, and the Parliamentarians had gotten the advantage of the winde, and that ground which their Enemies had fought-upon. Those two Regiments of the King's, retiring themselves, and finding their Ordnance behind them without any guard, took stand there, and made use of their Cannons, discharging many shot against their Enemies. But at that time the Parliament-Foot began to want powder; otherwise (as was observed by a Commander in that Army) they had charged them both with Horse and Foot; which in all probability would have utterly ruined the King's Infantry, consisting in a manner but of two Regiments.

Thus the Parliament-Army, partly for want of Ammunition, and partly being tired with so long a fight (for the whole brunt of the Battell had been susteyned by two Regiments of their Horse, and foure or five of their Foot) made no great haste.

to charge any more.

The King's Horse, who had been long pillaging about Keynton, by this time had leisure to come-about on both hands, and joyne themselves to their Foot; but, as they came-back on the left hand of their Enemies, Sir Philip STAPLETON, with his Horse, gave them a terrible Charge, which they were not long able to endure, but, finding a gap in an hedge, got from him upon the Spurre as fast as they could, to the rest of their broken Troops, and so at last joyned with their Foot that stood by the Ordnance. And now on both sides the Horse were gathered to their own Foot, and so stood together both Horse and Foot, one against another, till it was night.

The Parliament-Army, being wholly possessed of the ground which their The Parliament-Enemies had chosen to fight-upon, stood upon it all night, and in the morning Army remains master of the field of returned to a warmer place neere Keynton, where they had quartered the night battel. before; for they were much pinched with cold, and the whole Army in extreme

want of Victuals.

The King's Army had withdrawne to the top of the hill, for their more security,

where they made great fires all the night long.

About nine of the clock the next morning the Parliament-Army drew-out againe into Battalia, and so stood about three houres, until the other Army was quite



gone from the hill, and then they withdrew themselves into their Quarter towards Keynton, and to their other Brigado, Artillery, and Ammunition, which being commanded by Colonel Hambden and Colonel Grantham, (as aforesaid) was now come to Keynton, and lodged there. The King had drawne.out his Horse upon the further side of the hill, where he stayed till toward night, whilest his Foot were retiring behinde the Hill, and marching-away. A little before night, his Horse also withdrew themselves; and about an houre after, the Parliament-Horse marched quite away, and went with the rest of the Army to Warwick to refresh themselves.

That going to Warwick was thought by a noble Gentleman of the Parliament-

side to be ill designed. For (saith he) had the Army, instead of going to Warwick, marched toward Banbury, we should have found more Victuals, and had, in probability, dispersed all the Foot of the King's Army, taken his Cannons and Carriages, and sent his Horse farther off: whereas now, because we did not follow them, though they quitted the field whereon they fought, and left their Quarter before us, yet they began soone after to question who had the day. Howsoever it were, true it is, that the King, no lesse than the Parliament, pretended to be victorious in that Battell; and so farre ascribed the Victory to his owne side, that n Prayer of thanksgiving to God was made at Oxford for it. A thanksgiving was also on the Parliament-side for the Victory of that day. And it is certaine, that there were many markes of Victory on both Armies; Colours and Cannon were taken on both sides, without any great difference in the number of them. And, though in Speeches made afterwards by either Party, and Bookes printed, there is no consent at all concerning the number of men slain, but so great a discrepancy, as it is almost a shame to insert into an History; yet, surely, by the best account there were more slaine on the King's side than on the other. Those of quality that were lost on both Parties, were, of the King's, the Earle of Lindsey, Lord-Kings Army in this General of his Army, the Lord Aubiony, brother to the Duke of Lenox, Sir EDWARD VARNEY Standard-Bearer, Colonel Sir EDMUND MONROY, a Scottish Gentleman, and Colonel LUNSFORD his Brother, with other Gentlemen and Commanders, besides common Souldiers, whose number (as is before said) would not be agreed-upon; yet I have heard, that the country people thereabouts, by burying of the naked bodies, found the number to be about six thousand that fell on both sides, besides those which died afterwards of their wounds. There were taken Prisoners of the King's side, the Lord WILLOUGHBY, Sonne and Heire to the Earle of Lindsey, Colonel VAVASOR, Colonel LUNSBORD, Sir EDWARD STRABLING, with others of lesse note; a George, the Badge of a Knight of the Garter, was found in the field by a Common Souldier (besides that which the

> ·Lord-General Lindsey were and had about his neck when he was slaine) and bought of him by a Captaine, which was sent-up to the Parliament, there viewed

The Loss of persons of distinction in the bloody battel.

On the Parliament side there were slaine only the following persons of marke and The Loss of the like persons in the Parlia equality: the Lord St. John, Eldest Sonne to the Earle of Bullenbroke, Colonel ment's Army. - CHARLES

and restored againe to the Captaine.

CHARLES ESSEX, and Lieutenant-Colonel RAMSEY, and none of any great note takén prisoners.

The Battel was fought with great courage on both sides, both by the Generals and other commanders, besides some particular regiments of Souldiers, who were observed to performe their parts with great courage and bravery, such as Colonel Hollis's Regiment of Redcoats, and others, too many to be all named in a short Discourse.

It could not but fall into the observation of many men, that the yeare before, upon the same day of the Moneth, namely, the 23d of October, that this famous Battel of Keynton was fought, the bloody Rebellion of the Irish had broke-out, with that inhumane Massacre of the English Protestants in that Kingdom; by which observation the English, by their owne losse and bleeding in the present battel, were sadly put in minde, that they had too long deferred the revenge of their butchered brethren in Ireland.

It was likewise observed by many men of the Parliament-side (who seemed to make no question-but that the Victory was on their side,) as a further blessing of God to the Protestant Cause, that on the very same day that this Battel was wonne in England, the Sweeds obtained a very great and notable Victory against the Imperialists and those of the Roman Religion in Germany.

But the King, supposing himselfe victorious at Keynton-field, immediately pub The King publishes lished a Declaration, To all his loving Subjects (for so it is styled) after his Victory a Declaration against against the Rebels. Wherein, though the expostulation be very bitter, yet he endeavoureth that it should not seeme to be made against the Parliament itselfe, but against some of them, whom he termeth malignant, and malicious, with other suchlike Epithets, as having laboured to lay aspersions upon him of things, whereof he professeth himselfe altogether innocent. Those aspersions he makes of two sorts; the first is, concerning his favouring of Popery, and employing Papists in his Army; the second, of raising that Army against the Parliament. Both which he labours to wipe-off, with a recrimination against the Parliament. For the first, after a great Protestation of the truth of his Religion, and his past, present, and future care for the better establishing of it in his Dominions, with the extirpation of Popery; though he cannot but acknowledge, that some eminent men of that Religion are armed in his Service, which he thinks excusable in so great a necessity and danger as he was in; yet he tells the Parliament, That, in their Army, there are more Papists. Commanders and others, than in his.

For the second, That he levyed his Army against the Parliament. He seemeth to hope, that none of his good Subjects will believe it, unlesse they will believe that a dozen, or twenty, factious and seditious persons be the high Court of Parliament, which consists of King, Lords, and Commons. As to the Priviledges of Parliament, he-averres, That whosoever will not believe "the right to raise an Army to kill their King; To alter the Government and Lawes by extravagant Votes of either or both Houses; 'I o force the Members to submit to their Faction, and to takeaway freedome it consultation from them;" to be some of the Priviledges of Parliament; must confesse, That the Army, now raised by the King, is no lesse for the vindication and preservation of Parliaments, than for his own necessary defence.

Digitized by Google

The King chargeth them likewise with uncharity, That they have endeavoured to raise an implacable hatred between the Gentry and Commonalty of the Kingdome, by rendring all persons of Honour odious to the Common People, under the style of Cavaliers; and to perswade the people, that there was an intention by the Commission of Array, to take-away a part of their Estates from them. Which he denyes, and concludes with Protestations to the contrary.

The Parliament publishes a full and distinct answer to the said Declaration.

The Parliament returned answer to this Declaration, but not as being the King's (according to their oft-mentioned custome) but as coming from wicked and malicious contrivers of falshood and scandals, Who, (say they) to our unspeakable sorrowes, have gained so much power with his Majesty, as to vent the same under

For the first objection; They do not affirme that the King favours Popery himselfe, but justifie that things have been carried in the favour of it by some about him, according to the particular instances in many of their former Declarations. They seeme to be amazed at the strange boldnesse of the Contrivers of that Declaration, in averring that there are more Papists in their Army than in the King's; whereas they cannot, or at least, do not name any one; which they desire may be done, if there be any such, that the Parliament may know how to displace them. But the Parliament, in their Answer, name many of greatest ranke and quality of that Religion in the King's Army, who have raised him in some Counties the most considerable Forces which he hath; and many Commissions granted by himselfe to Papists, acknowledged to be so. That it were senselesse to thinke that any Papists favoured the Parliament's Cause at all; whereas it is certaine, that there are none of that Religion, but are, either openly or secretly, assistant to that cause which the King hath taken.

For the second objection; That the King's Forces are not levyed against the Parliament itselfe, but against a few seditious persons. They thinke it an impossible thing that twelve, or twenty, such seditious persons (as they are termed) should have power to compel the rest of that Body to submit to their Faction, and to have

their freedome of consultation taken from them.

The truth is (say they) not a few persons, but the Parliament itselfe, is the thorne that lyes in these men's sides; which heretofore, when it was wont to prick them, was with much ease, by a sudden dissolution, pulled-out: But now that it is more deeply fastened by an Act of continuance, they would force it out by the power of an Army.

That whosoever will read the Speeches and Declarations made upon the breakingup of all former Parliaments, ever since the beginning of this King's Reigne, will
finde the pretences of those unjust dissolutions, to be grounded upon exceptions
against particular Members, under the name of a few factious and seditious persons;
so that the aspersing and wounding of the Parliament throughout the sides of a few
Members, is no new invention.

But (say they) those former Declarations in the King's name, being groundlesse invectives, not against particular Members, but against the Votes and Proceedings of both Houses; and declaring the Earle of Essex, General of the Forces raised

Digitized by Google

N.B.

by them, to be a Traytor; and that all those who assist him, (thereby comprehending both Houses of Parliament, by whose Command and Authority he bears that place,) are Rebels, and guilty of High Treason, is argument sufficient (no groundlesse accusation) to prove the King's Army to be raised against the Parliament,

or to take-away the Priviledges thereof.

Those Priviledges of Parliament, consisting in three things: 1. As they are a Of the breaches of Conneil to advise. 2. A Court to judge. 3. A representative body of the Realme, the Priviledges of Parliament lately to make, repeal, or alter Lawes. These Priviledges have (say they) during the made by the King. sirting of this Parliament, been all apparently broken, to the view of all men, by the King's wicked Council. Their advice scarce at all hearkened-unto by the King, but other counsels of unknowne persons preferred before them. For the second, as a Court to judge: The Delinquents, so pronounced by the Parliament. have been protected by the King against them; of which they give many particular Touching the third for making Laws; They instance his refusal of many wholsome Bills for Church and State; besides the breaking of their Priviledges, they produce some attempts utterly to subvert them, as the forementioned endeavour of bringing-up the Northerne Army, to force Conditions upon the Parliament; the King's Letters and Commands to Members of both Houses to attend him at Yorke, leaving their true and legal station; which commands when they obeyed, it was scandalously alledged that they were driven-away [from the Parliament by tumults of the people].

For any violence intended to the King's Person, as they utterly deny it, so they referre it to indifferent men to judge, by all their long sufferings, and humble Petitions to him, to avoid those endangerings of his Person. But for that imputation layed upon them, of an endeavour to raise an implacable malice and hatred betweene the Gentry and Commonalty of the Kingdome; They conceive it a Charge of a strange nature, that they should endeavour to raise the hatred of the Commonalty against themselves. For so it must follow, unlesse the Contrivers of that Declaration will deny the Parliament to be Gentlemen. But, though we know (say they) well, there are too many of the Gentry of this Kingdome, who, to satisfie the lusts of their owne ambition, are content to sell their birth-right, to render themselves and their posterity to perpetual slavery, and to submit themselves to any arbitrary and unlimited power of Government, so that they may, for their owne time, partake of that power, to trample and insult over others; Yet we are certaine that there are many true-hearted Gentlemen, who are ready to lay-downe their lives and fortunes (and of late have given ample testimony thereof) for maintenance of their Lawes, Liberties, and Religion; with whom, and others of their resolution, we

shall be ready to live and dye.

Lastly, they prove, by particular instances, that in the King's Commission of Array, there is not onely an intention to take-away part of men's Estates, but that it hath been put into reall execution; with many other things in justification of all their proceedings and Declarations; which may be read more at large in the Records. This was the effect of that verbal Skirmish, which immediately followed the great and bloody Battell of Keynton.

N.B.



CHAP.

CHAP. II.

The Parliament send to the King, concerning an Accommodation. A fight at Branford. Another Treaty with the King begun, and broken-off. Reading besieged by the Lord General Essex, and surrendered to him. Conspiracy to betray Bristol. A treacherous Plot against the Parliament and City of London, discovered and prevented.

try who had hitherto ment-Army. remained neutral.

AT the famous Battell of Edgehill, the great cause of English Liberty, (with a Battle on the minds vast expense of blood and Treasure) was tryed, but not decided; which did of the English Gen- therefore prove unhappy, even to that side, which seemed victorious, the Parlia-

> For, though the King's Forces were much broken by it, yet his strength grew, accidentally, greater and more formidable than before; to whom it proved a kinde

of victory, not to be easily, or totally, overthrowne.

For the greatest Gentlemen of divers Counties began then to consider of the King, as of one that, in possibility, might prove a Conqueror against the Parliament; and many of them, who before, as Neuters, had stood at gaze, in hope that one quick blow might cleare the doubt, and save them the danger of declaring themselves, came now in, and readily adhered to that side on which there seemed to be least feares and greatest hopes, which was the King's Party. For, on the Parliamentside, the encouragements were only of a publike kind, and nothing promised but the free enjoyment of their native Liberty; no particular honours, preferments, or Estates of Enemies; and, on the other hand, no such total ruine could be threatened from a victorious Parliament, (being abody, as it were, of the people themselves,) as from an incensed Prince, and such hungry followers as usually go along with Princes in those waiss. And how much private interest will over-sway publike notions, Books of History, rather than Philosophy, will truly informe you; for concerning humane actions and dispositions, here is nothing under the Sunne which is absolutely new. Lucke

N.B.

Looke upon the Discourse of one Historian on that subject, Dion Cassius, (a Writer of as little biass, in the opinion of all Criticks, as any among the Antients,) when he relates the last Warre about Roman Liberty; after which (as himselfe speaks) that People never againe looked-back toward it: Which was the Warre of Brutus and Cassius against Cæsar and Antony. Et si ante hanc pugnam civilibus bellis, &c. Although (saith DION) before this War they had many Civil Wars, yet in others they fought who should oppresse the Roman Liberty; in this War, one side fought to vindicate Liberty, the other to bring-in Tyranny; yet the side of Tyranny prevailed, and drew most followers to it. Of what quality they were, the same Historian speaks also: The Armies of BRUTUS and CASSIUS, that stood for Liberty, consisted of the lower sort of people, and Ex subditis Romanorum; the other, that stood for Tyranny, consisted (saith he) Ex Romanis Nabilibus, & Fortibus. Brutus and Cassius, the two chiefe Commanders of the former army, making Orations to their Souldiers before the Battel, encouraged them to fight for their ancient freedome and the Roman Laws; but CÆSAR and ANTONY promised to their Souldiers the Estates of their Enemies, Et imperium in omnes Gentiles suos, and power to rule over their owne Countrymen; which proved, it seemes, better Oratory than the other, and more persuasive. Brutus and Cassius delayed the Battel, as loath to waste so much blood, if by any other stratagem they might have succeeded; because they were (saith Dion) good men, and pityed their Countrymen, loving the safety, and striving for the Liberty, even of those men who fought against them, to overthrow that Liberty. Yet that delay proved ill; and many Noblemen in that time forsook them, and turned to the other side, to which their private hopes, or feares, inclined them. Whether the parallel will, in some measure, fit this occasion, or not, I leave it to the Reader to determine; and I returne to the Narration.

The Earle of Essex, the next day after Keynton-Battel, marched with his Army toward Warwick, to which Towne he arrived safe, disposing of the Prisoners. Waggons, and Ordnance, which he had taken, into that Castle, with resolution, after some short refreshment of his men there, to march neerer to the King: But the King returned toward Oxford, seizing by the way upon Banbury, from whence he tooke 1500 Armes, and turned-out the Parliament-Souldiers that were quartered there.

His Army, consisting especially of Horse, was divided into several Bodyes; and Prince RUPERT, with part of it, visited the Towns neere adjacent, as Abingdon, Henley, and other places; from whence he returned with great booty.

Within few daies he made a neerer approach toward London, but with a flying Army, resting in no place, and stretching sometimes as farre as Stanes and Egham: which made the City of London careful to provide for their safety against sudden incursions, and send Forces to possesse and fortifie Windsor-Castle.

In the mean time, to secure London, and free those parts from greater feares, The Lord-General the Earle of Essex had marched with his Army neerer to that City, and on the don on the 7th of seventh day of November came himselfe to Westminster (his Army being billited November, 1649. about Acton, and other neere places) and was welcomed by both Houses of Parliament,

liament, who presented him with a gift of 5000 l. as an acknowledgement of their thanks, in behalfe of the Kingdome, for his care, paines, and valour, in the actions already passed.

A fight at Brainford, November 12, 1642.

But before the Earle of Essex departed from London, another bloody tragedy was acted, and the scene no farther than Brainford, [or Brentford,] about eight miles distance, the King himselfe being there, or not farre-off, in Person. The manner and occasion of it shall be in briefe related.

The Parliament expressing great griefe for this unnatural Warre and bloodshed, that this endangered Kingdome might be saved from ruine, and the better meanes made to recover Ireland, had agreed upon a Petition for Accommodation, to be presented to the King, then at Colebrook, by the Earles of Northumberland and Pembrooke, with foure Commons, the Lord Wainman, Master Perfoint, Sir John Evelin, and Sir John Ipsley; Sir Peter Killigrew was sent before to procure a safe Conduct. But the King refused to admit of Sir John Evelin, because he was one whom himselfe had named a Traytor the day before. This exception of the King's was extremely distasted by the Parliament; yet so great was their desire of Accommodation, that, although this excepting of Sir John Evelin were voted by them a breach of Priviledge, and a flat denyal from the King, the Petition was sent by the five forenamed Lords and Gentlemen, Sir John Evelin being very willing to be left-out.

The King being then at Colebrook, fifteene miles distant, seemed to receive the Petition with great wilingnesse, and returned them a faire Answer, calling God to witnesse in many Protestations, that he was tenderly compassionate of his bleeding people, and more desirous of nothing, than a speedy peace; to which purpose he was most willing, at any place where he should reside, not farre from London, to receive such Propositions of Peace as they should send, and to treat with them.

As soone as the Parliament-Lords returned with this Answer, the King's Artillery (according to all relations) advanced forwards with divers Troops of Horse, thorow that Towne of Colebrook, after them towards London; and, taking advantage of a great mist which happened that Friday night, they marched to Brainford, and fell upon the Parliament-Forces which were there quartered; which were a broken Regiment of Colonel Hollis, but stout men, who had before done great service. Of them the King's Forces killed many, and had quite destroyed all in probability, if the Lord Brook's and Colonel Hamden's Regiments, (which were billitted not farre-off,) had not made haste to their reliefe; who, coming-in, maintained a great and bloody fight against the King's Forces, where many were slaine on both sides, and many taken Prisoners; both Parties (as before it happened at Keynton-Battel,) esteeming themselves conquerors, and so reporting afterwards. The newes of this unexpected fight was soone brought to London, where also the noise of the great Artillery was easily heard.

The Lord-General Essew, then sitting at Westminster, in the House of Peeres, tooke Horse immediately, and, with what strength he could call-together on such a sudden, came in to the rescue of his engaged Regiments; but night had parted them,

Digitized by Google

and the King was retired to his best advantages; all that night the City of London, poured-out men toward Brainford, who every houre marched thither, and all the Lords and Gentlemen that belonged to the Army, were there ready on the Sunday. morning. being the 14th of November, a force great enough to have swallowed-up a farre greater Army than the King had. Besides, the King's Forces were encompassed on every side; insomuch that great hope was conceived by most men, that the period of this sad Warre was now come. But God was not yet appeared toward this Nation; a fatal doore was opened to let-out the inclosed King: Three thousand of the Parliament-Souldiers were then at Kingstone upon Thames, a Towne about ten miles distant from the City; which Souldiers were all (as it happened) commanded to leave that Towne, and march thorow Surrey, with what speed they could, and over London Bridge, so thorow the City toward Brainford, to prevent the enemie's passage to London. The reason of that Command was afterward given, for that the Lord-General was not assured of strength enough to stop the Fnemy from London, nor could before-hand be assured of so great an Army, as came thither before morning. But this was the event of it; and thorow Kingstone thus abandoned the King retreated; and, leaving some Troops to face his Enemies, brought all his Foot and Artillery over that Bridge, which, drawingup afterward, he had time enough securely to plunder many places of that Country, and retire safely to Oxford, where he intended to take-up his winter Quarters.

The Parliament, upon this Action of the King, began to be out of hope of doing any good by Treaties, and resolved that the Lord-General, with all speed that might be, should pursue the King's Forces, and fall upon them about Oxford and Reading; for newes was daily brought them how active his Parties were, under the conduct of Prince Rupert and others, in plundering all the places thereabouts. And the City of London, to encourage the Parliament with a free tender of their service, framed a Petition to them, to intreat them, That they would proceed no further in the businesse of Accommodation, because evil Counsel was so prevalent with the King that he would but delude them; That they had heard that his Forces were weake, and that, if his Excellency would follow and fall upon them, and that no delayes be made for feare of forraigne Forces coming over, the City, as here ofore, would, with all willingnesse, spend their lives and fortunes to assist the Parliament.

The City was thanked for their Petition and Protestation, and the Lord-General was moved by the Parliament to advance; who, though the season of the years were not very fit for so great a Body to march, was very desirous to obey their Commands. The best way was thought to be to divide his Army, and send several parties to different places, to restraine the Enemies from annoying the Countries; as, to Buchingham, Marlow, Reading, and other parts, until himselfe with his whole force could be well accommodated to march from Windsor (where he lay that winter) toward the King. But it so fell-out, either by reason of ill weather at some times, or, at others, for want of Money or fit accommodation, that the General himselfe, with his maine Army, marched not forth until the spring: when his first businesse was to lay siege to Reading, which was fortified by the King's Forces, and maintained by a Carrison

Essex besieges Rea-

The Lord-General Garrison of 3000 Souldiers, and 20 Peeces of Ordnance; before which Towne he ding, April 25, 1643, sate downe upon the five and twentieth day of April, 1643, with an Army of about 16,000 Foot, and 3000 Horse.

> Now (leaving the Lord-General before Reading with his Army) in the meane time we will shew one maine reason why he did no sooner advance. The expectation of another Treaty, which the Parliament had desired to have with the King, for settling of the Kingdome's Peace, (which proved fruitlesse,) in debate lasted a long time. Propositions were drawne-up by the Parliament, and sent to Orford on the 31st of January, 1642, by foure Lords and eight Commoners, the Earles of Northumberland, Pembrooke, Sarum, and Holland, Lord WAINMAN, Lord DUNGARVAN, Sir John Holland, Sir William Litton, Master Perpoint, Master Waller, Master Whitlock, Master Winhood; the Propositions were:

The Parliament sends Commissioners to the King at Ox-ford, with Propositions of Peace, January 31, 1642-3.

- 1. That the King would passe those Bills which the Houses had made ready.
- 2. To passe a Bill for settling Parliament-Priviledges and Liberties.
- 3. For bringing to tryal those Delinquents whom the Houses had impeached since January last.

4. For clearing the six Members before-mentioned.

- 5. For restoring all Judges and Officers of State lately removed.
- 6. To passe a Bill for re-paying the charge of the Kingdome.

7. A Bill for an Act of Oblivion.

8. An Act for a general pardon without exception.

'9. That there may be a Cessation of Armes for fourteene daies, to agree upon these Propositions.

The King makes other propositions to the Parliament. In February, 1642.

The King not liking, nor yet utterly refusing, these Propositions, sent the Commissioners home to their Parliament, within a weeke after they came, to carry six Propositions from him to the Houses; which were:

- 1. That his Revenue, Magazines, Townes, Forts, and Ships, may be delivered to him.
- 2. That all Orders and Ordinances of Parliament wanting his assent, may be recalled.
- 3. That all power exercised over his Subjects by Assessements, and imprisoning their persons, may be disclaimed.

4. That he will yeeld to the execution of the Laws against Papists, provided that the Booke of Common Prayer be confirmed.

5. That such persons as, upon the Treaty, shall be excepted out of the general Pardon, shall be tryed by their Peeres onely.

6. That there be a Cessation of Armes during the Treaty.

The Houses, upon receiving of these Propositions, though at first it were the opinion of many, not to send any Answer at all to them; yet at last, to shew respect to the King, entred into a further debate about treating with him concerning the Propositions on both sides, and concerning the Cessation of Arms, or disbanding; with such limitations and restrictions touching the order of treating, as would perchance seeme too tedious to be here related; and on the 20th of March

the Earle of Northumberland, Sir John Holland, Sir William Armine, The Parliament Master Perpoint, and Master Whitlock (the Lord Say should have been one, again sends Commissioners to the but the King excepted against him, as formerly against Sir John Evelin, upon King at Oxford, to the same ground, which though the Parliament tooke ill at the first, yet they pro-treat of Peace, ceeded in the businesse) were sent to Oxford as Treaters upon those Propositions. March 20, 1642-3. In vaine was this Treaty; so high the demands were judged to be on both sides, that there seemed no possibility of ever meeting. Where the fault lay, I judge not; but the Parliament, after many Messages betweene London and Oxford, at last sent for their Commissioners home againe; who returned to London upon the 17th of April; upon which the Lord-General immediately advanced with his Army (as The Earl of Essex aforesaid) to besiege Reuding.

Reading was not able to hold out long; but the Lord-General was loath to storme it for feare of destroying so many innocent people as remained in the Towne; which compassion of his was well-approved of by the Parliament; therefore upon composition it was rendred within sixteene daies to his Excellency; by the Deputy-Governour, Colonel FIELDING; for the Governour, Sir ARTHUR ASTON, was before wounded by an accident, and could not performe the Office. The Termes were Reading is surreneasie; for they all marched-out with bagge and baggage. This siege had not at all dered to the Earl of advantaged the Parliament, if another businesse had not fallen-out during that short ning of May, 1643siege; which may also be thought a reason, why the Towne was so soone rendred. A good Body of the King's Forces, both Horse and Foot (the King himselfe in Person not farre from them) came to relieve *Reading*, assaulting one Quarter of the Parliament-Army at Causum Bridge, within a mile of the Towne, and were beaten-back with great slaughter, which fell especially upon Gentlemen of quality, of whom the King at that encounter lost a considerable number; but how many they were, or their particular names, I finde not mentioned.

The gaining of Reading might seeme an addition of strength to the Parliamentside; it proved otherwise: Nothing was gotten but a bare Towne, which had been happier, had it been onely so: But the Towne was infected, and caused afterwards a A contagious sickgreat mortality in the Parliament-Army. And, besides, the Souldiers were discontented, Reading, of which because, though their pay was much in arrear, they were not suffered to plunder, or many of the Parliament's Soldiers make any benefit of their victory. For the Parliament, before konding was de-liament's Soldiers livered-up, had approved of the Conditions, and promised to the Lord-General's Souldiers, to induce them to forbeare plundering, twelve shillings a man, besides their pay. But neither of these promises were then performed; money beginning already to be wanting, and the great Magazine of Treasure in Guild-Hall being quite consumed. While they stayed there, expecting money, the sicknesse and mortality daily increased, and the Lord-General, by advice of his Council of War, intended to march thence for better ayre. But such a general mutiny was raised for want of Money, that his Excellency, though with much courage and just severity he began to suppresse it, was advised by his Council of Warre to desist, for leare of a general defection, till money might come from the City Notwithstanding, upon this discontent in the Army, whilest his Excellency removed to Causum House to avoid the infection, many

besieges Reading, April 19, 1643.

many of the Souldiers disbanded, and went-away. Then began a tide of misfortune to flow-in upon the Parliament side; and their strength almost in every place to decrease at one time; for during the time of these six moneths, since the Battel of Keynton, until this present distresse of the Lord-General's Army about Causum, which was about the beginning of May, the Warre had gone-on with great fury and heat, almost thorow every part of England; the particulars of which shall hereafter be related by themselves, to avoid confusion in the Story: The Lord-General had at that time intelligence that Sir Ralph Hopton had given a great defeat to the Parliament-Forces of Devonshire; and that Prince Maurice, and the Marquesse of Hartford were designed that way, to possesse themselves wholly of the West.

The King's troops, under Sir Ralph Hopton, are successful in Devonshire.

A Plot at Bristol to

betray that city to

the King's troops,

May 12, 1642.

Leaving therefore the Lord-General awhile, I shall proceed to speak of some things which happened at other places in that Moneth of May. 'The King's Armies were then in faire possibility of gaining the whole West; and seemed of strength enough to atchieve it by open Warre, without the assistance of secret treacheries and conspiracies; which, notwithstanding, were then in agitation, though they proved not successful against the Parliament, but destructive to the contrivers. As at Bristol, a place of great import, and much desired by the King's Forces, when the plot of betraying that City to Prince Rupert was set on foot; which I here relate, as falling-out about the beginning of May, 1643.

The City of Bristol was then in the Parliament's protection, and governed by Colonel NATHANIEL FIENNES, second Sonne to the Viscount SAY and SEALE, though many of the Inhabitants there, (as appeared by this designe,) were disaffected to the Parliament's side.

affected to the Parliament's side.

This designe was very bloody, and many of that City had perished in it, had not the Conspirators been discovered and apprehended a little before they were to put it in execution.

ROBERT YEOMANS, late Sheriffe of Bristol, WILLIAM YEOMANS his brother, GEORGE BOURCHIER, and EDWARD DACRES, were the chiefe managers of this Designe; who, with many others of that opinion, had secretly provided themselves with Armes, intending to kill the Centinels by night, and possesse the maine Guard. (with other particulars, to be found in the Records of their examinations, and the proofes against them) whereby to master the greatest part of the other side within. the Towne, to kill the Mayor, and many others that were knowne to stand affected. to the Parliament; and by that meanes to betray the City to the King's Forces. In expectation of which act, Prince Rupert, with other Commanders, and about 4000 Horse, and 2000 Foot, stayed upon Durdam Downes, about two miles from the City. But the Plot was discovered, and the Conspirators apprehended, and brought to trial by a Council of warre, where the foure persons for enamed were condemned, and two of them hanged at Bristol, namely, ROBERT YEOMANS, and GEORGE BOUR-CHIER; although great meanes had been made to save them, and Colonel FIENNES to that purpose had been threatened from Oxford, by General RIVEN (created by the King Earle of Forth) in a Letter unto him; which being of great consequence,

It is discovered and prevented, and two of the conspirators are put to death.

for the cleare understanding of this War, and the nature of it, I have thought fit to insert it here, together with the Answer thereunto.

PATRICK Earle of Forth, Lord ETTERICK, and Lord-Lieutenant of all His Majestie's Forces.

I, Having been informed, that lately at a Council of Warre you have condemned to death Robert Yeomans, late Sheriffe of Bristol, who hath His Majestie's Commission for raising a Regiment for his Service, William Yeomans his brother, George Bourchier, and Edward Dacres, all for expressing their Loyalty to His Majesty, and endeavouring his Service according to their Allegiance; and that you intend to proceed speedily against divers others in the like manner: Do therefore signific to you, that I intend speedily to put Master George, Master Stevens, Captaine Huntley, and others, taken in Rebellion against His Majesty at Cicester, into the same condition. I do further advise you, that, if you offer, by that unjust Judgement, to execute any of them you have so condemned; that those here in custody, Master George, Master Stevens, and Captaine Huntley, must expect no favour or mercy.

Given under my hand at Oxford, this 16th of May, 1643.

To the Commander in Chiefe of the Council of Warre in Bristol.

FORTH.

The Answer to this Letter was as followeth:

NATHANIEL FIENNES, Governour, and the Council of War in the City of Bristol.

Having received a Writing from your Lordship, wherein it is declared, that, upon information of our late proceedings against Robert Yeomans, William Yeomans, and others, you intend speedily to put Master George, Master Stevens, Captaine Huntley, and others, into the same condition: We are well assured, that neither your Lordship, nor any other mortal man, can put them into the same condition; for, whether they live or dye, they will alwaies be accounted true and honest men, faithful to their King and Country, and such as in a faire and open way have alwaies prosecuted that Cause, which in their judgement, guided by the judgement of the highest Court, they held the justest; whereas the Conspirators of this City, must, both in life and death, carry perpetually with them the brand of Freachery and

and Conspiracy: And, if Robert Yeomans had made use of his Commission in an open way, he should be put into no worse condition, than others in the like kinde had been; but the Law of nature among all men, and the law of Armes among Souldiers, make a difference betweene open Enemies, and secret Spyes and Conspirators. And, if you shall not make the like distinction, we do signifie unto you, that we will not onely proceed to the execution of the persons already condemned, but also of divers others of the Conspirators, unto whom we had some thoughts of extending mercy. And we do further advertise you, that, if, by any inhumane and un-Souldier-like sentence, you shall proceed to the execution of the persons by you named, or any other of our friends in your custody, that have beene taken in a faire and open way of War; then Sir Walter Pye, Sir William Crofts, and Colonel Connesbey, with divers others taken in open Rebellion, and actual War against the King and Kingdom, whom we have here in custody, must expect no favour or And, by God's blessing upon our most just Cause, we have powers enough, for our friends security, without taking-in any that have gotten out of our reach and power, although divers of yours, of no mean quality and condition, have been released by us. Given under our hands the 18th of May, 1643.

To Patrick Earle of Forth, Lord Lieut. General.

Nathaniel Fiennes, President, Clement Walker, &c.

The King also at that time writ a very sharpe command to the Mayor and Citizens of Bristol, to raise what power they could to hinder the execution of those men, which he termes the murder of his loyal Subjects: But nothing availed to save their lives; for the forenamed Robert Yeomans, and George Bourchier, according to the sentence, were both executed. The losse of Bristol from the Parliament, a place of great import, was thus by the detection and prevention of this Conspiracy, respited for a while onely. For, not long after, it was surrendered to Prince RUPERT; and happier it was for the Prince himselfe, to gaine that City in a more honourable way, and with lesse effusion of English blood.

At the same time that these Conspirators against Bristol were, by sentence of a Council of Warre, put to death; another Plot of a higher nature, and more full of horrour, was detected at London; a Plot, which, if it had not been discovered, would Parliament, in May, have quite ruined the Parliament itselfe, and strooke at the very head and chiefe residence of it, the Cities of London and Westminster; which cannot be omitted in this Relation, though with as much brevity as can be possible, it shall be touched.

The scope of it was to have put in execution the Commission of Array within London and Westminster, and so to have raised a sufficient force for the King's side to ruine the Parliament. Many Cirizens of London were in the Plot, together

Another Plot in London against the with some Gentlemen besides, who had taken an Oath of secrecy among themselves; and were the more animated in it upon promises, which Master Waller,
the chiefe man in eminence among them (a Member of the House of Commons)
had made to some of the rest, that many Members of both Houses of Parliament
were engaged in the Plot. and would, in due time, be assistants to it: Though it
proved in conclusion, that Master Waller was not able to make good so much
as he had promised. The Plot was horrid, and could not possibly have been put
in execution without a great effusion of blood, as must needs appeare by the particular branches of it, which were confessed upon the Examinations of Master
Waller, Master Tomkins, Master Challenor, Master Hasell, Master
Blinkhorne, Master White, and others, the chiefe Actors in it.

That which appeared by the Narrative Declaration, published by Authority of Parliament, was to this effect: That

1. They should seize into their custody the King's Children.

2. To seize upon several Members of both Houses of Parliament, and upon the Lord Mayor of *London*, and the Committee of the Militia there, under pretence of bringing them to legal tryal.

3. To seize upon all the Citie's out-Works and Forts; and upon the Tower of London; and upon all the Magazines, Gates, and other places of importance in the

City.

4. To let-in the King's Forces, in order, with their assistance, to surprize the City; to destroy all those, who should, by Authority of Parliament, be their opposers; and, by force of Armes, to resist all payments imposed by the Authority of both

the Houses for the support of the Armies employed in their defence.

Many other particulars there were, too tedious to relate at large; as, what signals should have been given to the King's Forces of Horse, to invade the City; what Colours for difference, those of the Plot should weare, to be knowne to their fellowes, and such like. Much heartened they were in this businesse by a Commission of Array sent from Oxford at that time, from the King to them, and brought secretly to London by a Lady, the Lady Aubigny, Daughter to the Earle of Suffolke, a Widow ever since the Battel of Keynton; where the Lord Aubigny, her husband, was slaine.

That Commission of Array was directed from the King to Sir Nicholas Crispe, Sir George Stroud, Knights, to Sir Thomas Gardiner, Knight, Recorder of London, Sir George Binion, Knight, Richard Edes, and Marmaduke Royden, Esquires, Thomas Browne, Peter Paggon, Charles Gennings, Edward Carleton, Robert Abbot, Andrew King, William White, Steven Bolton, Robert Aldem, Edmund Foster, Thomas Blinkhorne, of London, Gentlemen; and to all such other persons, as, according to the true intent and purport of that Commission, should be nominated and appointed to be Generals, Colonels, Lieutenant-Colonels, Serjeant-Majors, or other Officers of that Council of Warre. The Commission itselfe is to be read at large in the Parliament-Records.

But .

It is detected on the

But this Conspiracy was prevented, and proved fatal to some of the Contrivers; 31stday of May, and being detected upon the last day of May (which happened at that time to be the two of the conspirations are put to death. day of the Monethly Fast) and Master WALLER, Master Tomkins, with other of the forenamed Conspirators, being apprehended, were that night examined by divers grave Members of the Parliament, of whom Master Pym was one; and afterwards reserved in custody for a Tryal. They were arraigned in Guild-Hall, and Master Waller, Master Tomkins, Master Challoner, Master Hasell. Master White, and Master Blinkhorne, were all condemned; none were executed but Master Tomkins, and Master Challonge, who were both hanged. Master Tomkins in Hollorne, and Master Challoner in Cornhill, both within sight of their own dwelling-houses; Master Hasell dyed in Prison; Blinkhorne. and the other, were, by the mercy of the Parliament, and the Lord-General Essex, reprieved, and saved afterwards; Master WALLER, the chiefe of them, was long detained Prisoner in the Tower, and, about a yeare after, upon payment of a Fine of ten thousand pounds, was pardoned, and released to go travel abroad. It was much wondered-at, and accordingly discoursed-of by many at that time, what the reason should be, why Master WALLER, being the principal Agent in that Conspiracy, (where Master Tomkins and Master Challoner, who had been drawnein by him, as their own Confessions, even at their deaths, expressed, were both executed) did escape with life. The onely reason which I could ever heare given for it, was, that Master WALLER had been so free in his Confessions at the first, (without which the Plot could not have been clearly detected;) that Master Pym. and others of the Examiners, had engaged their promise, to do whatever they could to preserve his life. He seemed also much smitten in conscience, and desired the comfort of godly Ministers, being extremely penitent for that foule offence; and afterwards, in his Speech to the House, (when he came to be put-out of it) much bewailed his offence, thanking God that so mischievous and bloody a Conspiracy had been discovered, before it could take effect.

· CHAP.



CHAP. III.

Matters of State transacted in Parliament, touching the Assembly of Divines. The making of a new Great Scale: Impeaching the Queenc of High Treason, and other things. The Lord-General Essex, after some Marches, returneth to quarter his wasted and sick Army about Kingston. The King's Forces are Masters of the West. The Earl of Newcastle's greatnesse in the North. Some mention of the Earle of Cumberland, and the Lord Fairfax.

AT the same time that these Conspiracies were closely working to undermine the Parliament, and Warre was raging in highest fury throughout the Kingdome; many State-businesses of an unusual nature had been transacted in the Parliament-sitting. For things were growne beyond any precedent of former ages, and the very foundations of Government were shaken: according to the sense of that Vote, which the Lords and Commons had passed a yeare before, That, whensoever the King maketh Warre against the Parliament, it tendeth to the dissolution of this Government.

Three things of that unusual nature fell into debate in one moneth, which was May, 1643, and were then, or soone after, fully passed; one was at the beginning of that moneth, concerning the Assembly of Divines at Westminster. Among other Bills which had passed both Houses, and wanted onely the Royal Assent, that was one; "That a Synod of Divines should be chosen and established, for the The Parliament regood and right settlement of Religion, with a fit Government for the Church of solves to call an As-England." This Bill was often tendered to the King to passe, but utterly refused by for the settlement of him: The matter therefore was fully argued, "what in such cases might be done Religion.

by Authority of Parliament, when the Kingdome's good is so much concerned, when a King refuseth, and wholly absenteth himselfe from the Parliament." And at last it was brought to this conclusion; "That an Ordinance of Parliament, where the King is so absent, and refusing, is by the Lawes of the Land of as good Authority to binde the people, for the time present, as an Act of Parliament itselfe can be."

It was therefore Voted by the Lords and Commons, That the Act for an Assembly of Divines, to settle Religion, and a forme of Government for the Church of England, (which the King had often refused to passe) should forthwith be turned into an Ordinance of Parliament; and that the Assembly thereby called, should debate such things, for the settlement of Religion, as should be propounded to them by both Houses; which, not long after, was accordingly put in execution.

The case seemed to be of the same nature with that of Scotland in the year 1639, when the Scottish Covenanters (as is before mentioned in this History) upon the King's delay in calling their National Synod, published a writing to that purpose; "That the power of calling a Synod, in case the Prince be an Enemy to the truth,

or negligent in promoting the Churche's good, is in the Church itselfe."

They resolve to make a new Great Seal.

In the same moneth, and within few daies after, another businesse of great consequence, was, by the Lords and Commons, taken into consideration, which was the making of a new Great Seale, to supply the place of that which had been carried-away from the Parliament, as before is mentioned. This businesse had been fully debated in the House of Commons, and the Moneth following, at a Conference between both Houses, the Commons declared to the Lords what great prejudice the Parliament and whole Kingdome suffered by the absence of the Great Seale; and thereupon desired their speedy compliance in Votes for the making of a new one.

The matter was debated in the House of Peeres, put to Votes, and carried for 'the negative. The onely reason which they alledged against the making of a new Seale, was this, That they have hitherto dispatched all businesse, since the absence of the Seale, by vertue of Ordinances of Parliament, and they conceived that the same course might still be kept in what matters soever were necessary to be expedited for the good of the Kingdome, without a Seale. Yet the Lords gave a respective answer, That, if the House of Commons would informe them in any particular cases, wherein the Kingdome's prejudice, by absence of the Great Seale, could not be remedied by vertue of an Ordinance; they would take it into further consideration, to induce compliance accordingly.

Neither was it long before the Lords, upon reasons shewed, concurred with the House of Gommons; who about the beginning of July, presented to the Lords at a Conference the Votes, which had before passed in their House, together with the reasons for making of a new Great Seale. The Votes were these:

Resolved upon the Question, June 14 & 26.
- 1. That the Great Seale of England ought to attend the Parliament.

-9. That



- 2. That the absence of it hath been a cause of great mischiefe to the Commonwealth.
 - 3. That a remedy ought to be provided for these mischiefs.
 - 4. That the proper remedy is by making a new Great-Seale.

The reasons which they gave, were divided into two branches; The first declaring those mischiefes which were occasioned by conveying-away the Great-Seale from the Parliament: The second expressing those inconveniences and mischiefes which proceeded from the want of the Great-Seale with them. The reasons of the first kinde were thus:

- 1. It was secretly and unlawfully carried-away by the Lord-Keeper, contrary to the duty of his place, who ought, himselfe, to have attended the Parliament, and not to have departed without leave; nor should have been suffered to convey-away the Great-Seale, if his intentions had been discovered.
- 2. It hath been since taken-away from him, and put into the hands of other dangerous and ill-affected persons; so as the Lord-Keeper, being sent-unto by the Parliament, for the sealing of some Writs, returned answer, That he could not Seale the same, because he had not the Seale in his keeping.
- 3. Those who have had the managing thereof, have employed it to the hurt and destruction of the Kingdome many waies; as by making new Sheriffes in an unusual and unlawful manner, to be as so many Generals, or Commanders, of Forces raised against the Parliament; by issuing-out illegal Commissions of Array, with other unlawful Commissions for the same purpose; By sending-forth Proclamations against both Houses of Parliament, and several Members thereof, proclaiming them Traytors, against the Priviledges of Parliament, and Laws of the Land; By sealing Commissions of Oyer and Terminer to proceed against them, and other of His Majestie's good Subjects, adhering to the Parliament, as Traytors; By sending Commissions into Ireland, to treat a peace with the Rebels there, contrary to an Act of Parliament made this Session. Besides divers other dangerous Acts passed under it, since it was secretly conveyed-away from the Parliament; whereby great calamities and mischiefes have ensued, to the prejudice of the Kingdome.

Mischiefes arising through want of the Great-Seal.

- 1. The Termes have been adjourned; the course of Justice obstructed.
- 2. No original Writs can be sued-forth without going to Oxford; which none who holds with the Parliament can do, without peril of his life or Liberty.
- 3. Proclamations in Parliament cannot issue-out, for bringing-in Delinquents impeached of High Treason, or other crimes; under paine of forfeiting their Estates, according to the ancient course.

 4. No

- 4. No Writs of Errour can be brought in Parliament, to reverse erroneous judgements; nor Writs of Election sued-out for chusing new Members upon death, or removal of any; whereby the number of the Members is much lessened, and the Houses in time like to be dissolved, if speedy supply be not had, contrary to the very Act for continuance of this Parliament.
- 5. Every other Court of Justice hath a peculiar Seale; and the Parliament, the Supreme Court of England, hath no other but the Great-Seale of England; which being kept-away from it, hath now no Seale at all; and therefore a new Seale ought to be made.
- 6. This Seale is Clavis Regni, and therefore ought to be resident with the Parliament (which is the representative Body of the whole Kingdome (whilest it continues sitting; the King, as well as the Kingdom, being alwaies legally present in it, during the Session thereof.

The Lords upon these reasons concurred with the House of Commons, and order was given, that a new Great-Seale should forthwith be made; which was

accordingly done.

It should seeme the King was not well-pleased with this action of the Parliament, as appeared by what was done at Oxford above a year after, when the King assembled together the Lords which were with him, and all those Gentlemen that had been Members of the House of Commons, and had deserted the Parliament at Westminster, whom the King called his Parliament at Oxford, and propounded many things for them to debate-upon; amongst which it was taken into debate, and resolved upon the Question by that assembly at Oxford, That this very action (which they style counterfeiting the Great-Seale) was Treason, and the whole Parliament at Westminster, eo facto, guilty of High-Treason. But this was passed at Oxford long-after; of which occasion may be to speak further hereafter.

But, at the time when the Parliament made their new Great-Seale, the people stood at gaze, and many wondered what might the consequence of so unusual a thing. Some, that wholly adhered to the Parliament, and liked well, that an action so convenient and useful to the present state, was done by them, looked notwithstanding upon it, as a sad marke of the Kingdome's distraction, and a signe how irreconcileable the difference might grow between the Parliament and the King's Person. For the legality, or justnesse, of making of the Seale, there was little dispute, or argument, among those who were not disaffected to the Parliament; and though there were no direct, or plaine, precedent for it (for the case of a King's being personally in Warre against the Parliament sitting, had never happened before) yet by comparison with other times, when the necessities of State have required such a thing, it was not onely allowed, but thought requisite. I do not know of any thing written against it by any Lawyers, or other of the King's Party; but Master PRYNNE, a learned Lawyer, and great Antiquary, of the Parliament-side, hath written a copious discourse in justification of it, both by arguments of reason, and many near-resembling precedents of former times) called, The opening of the Great-

Great-Seal of England, which is extant to be read by any that would be satisfied, what power from time to time Parliaments have challenged and been allowed, over that Seale, both in making of it in the infancy or absence of Princes, and disposing of it in the dotage or wilfulnesse of others.

But before this businesse was fully concluded, another thing, which seemed as The House of Com great a signe how wide the rent was growne, fell into debate in the House of Com-mons impeaches the mons: Some time was spent in consultation about it, and much arguing on both Treason. sides. The matter was about charging the Queene of High-Treason. To that purpose many Articles of an high nature were drawne-up against her; some of them were, That she had pawned the Crowne-Jewels in Holland; That she had raised the Rebellion in Ireland; That she had endeavoured to raise a Party in Scotland against the Parliament; That she had gone in the head of a Popish Army in England: For, not long before this time, the Queene, with Armes and Ammunition from the Low-Countries, and Commanders of Warre from thence, had landed in the North of England, been entertained there by the Earle of Newcastle, and by him and others, with strong Forces, conveyed to the King at Oxford; whereof more particulars will be related hereafter. Divers other Articles were framed against the Queene, upon which, within few Moneths after, she was impeached of High-Treason by the House of Commons, and the Impeachment carried-up by Master PYMME to the House of Peeres, where it stock for many moneths, but was afterward passed there also; and may be further discoursed-of in the due time.

It had been likewise before Ordered by both Houses, and was now accordingly The Parliament put in execution, that the King and Queene's Revenue coming into the Exchequer, takes possession of the King's Revenue should be detained, and employed to the Publike-Service of the Common-wealth; to support the Puba Committee was chosen of Lords and Commons to dispose of it to the best uses. lick expences. Divers necessary charges of the State were defrayed by it, and among others (which seemed a kinde of just retalliation) many Members of both Houses of Parliament, whose whole Estates had been seized-upon by the King's Armies, were in some measure relieved at London, out of his Revenue, and thereby enabled to subsist in that Publike Service, to which they had been called.

But so exceeding great, by this time, were the charges growne for supportation They also impose of so spreading a Warre, that no Contributions nor Taxes whatsoever were thought an Excise upon Commodities. sufficient, unlesse an Excise were imposed upon Commodities (according to the way of the Netherlanders) such as Beere, Wine, Tobacco, and Meat; which was taken into consideration by both Houses, and this Summer agreed-upon. But the Excise was layed with much gentlenesse, especially upon all Victuals of most common and necessary use, insomuch that it was but little felt either by the rich, or by poore people, and yet amounted monethly to a very considerable summe, though the King's Quarters were then the greatest part of England; for the City of London was within the Parliament-Quarters.

To returne againe to the Lord-General Essex; His Excellency in May, 1643, Of the Earl of Essex having, as aforesaid, received intelligence of the defeat given to the Parliament- and his army.

...Army

Army in the West, and in what condition things there stood; not being able with his owne Forces to give them reliefe, sent order to Sir WILLIAM WALLER (whose actions shall be anon mentioned in a Series by themselves) to march thither in assistance of the *Devonshire* Forces; and writ his Command to the Governour of *Bristol*, to aid him with such Horse and Foot, as he could conveniently spare out of his Garrison. But things could not at that time be put in execution according to his desires; and before Sir WILLIAM WALLER could get farre into the West, Prince MAURICE, Marquesse HARTFORD, and Sir RALPH HOPTON, were joyned all-together.

The Earl of Essex marches with his army to Thame.

The Lord-General, since it was much desired by the City of London, from whom the supplies of money were to come, that he should move with his whole Army towards Oxford, was content, though somewhat against his judgement, to proceed in that designe: and marched with the maine Body to Thame, to meet there with the Forces sent from the associated Counties to his assistance; from whence (as a person, whose care and Command extended over the whole Kingdome, which was now overspread with a general Warre, and wasted by many Armies at once) he granted a Commission, by direction of the Parliament, to the Lord Fielding, (now Earle of Denbigh, by the late death of his Father, who was slaine in a Skirmish, fighting against the Parliament) to be General of foure Counties, Shropshire, Worcester, Stafford, and Warwickshire; to levy Forces there, and conduct them into any part of the Kingdome, against the King's Power, according to directions from the Parliament, or Lord-General. He granted also, at the same time, another Commission in the like manner to Sir Thomas Middle Dleton, to raise Forces as General of all North Wales.

His army suffers greatly by sicknesse and bad weather.

At Thame the hand of God, in an extreme increase of sicknesse (hundreds in a day desperately ill) did visite the Lord-General's Army; and by strange unseasonablenesse of weather, and great raine continuing fourteene daies, the place being upon a flat, moist, and clayie ground, made it impossible for him to advance from that Quarter. In which time the Army was, by sicknesse, and departure of most of the Auxiliary Forces, brought to a number utterly unable to attempt the former designe, without certaine ruine, the situation of Oxford upon the River of Thames being considered; for the Lord-General conceived it impossible (as himselfe expressed it) to block-up the Towne, without a double number to what he then had

But, when the raine ceased, and the waters were so much abated as to make the waies passable, intelligence was brought that Prince RUPERT had drawne-out his Horse and Foot toward Buckingham, with his Cannon also; and had called in the Country, making open profession before them, that he would give Battel to the General: The General marched with some speed toward Buckingham, to fight with him. When he came within two miles of that Towne, he found the case farre otherwise, and had intelligence that the Prince had quitted Buckingham in a kinde of disorderly manner; that, the night before, he had horsed his Foot, and marched-away, leaving some of his Provisions behinde him.

The Lord-General understood well, that it was not possible for him with his

Traine of Artillery and Foot Companies, to follow the Enemy to any advantage. For, if he had been at that time strong enough in Horse, his desire was to have hindered Prince RUPERT from joyning with the Queene, who then was marching with a good Convoy of Horse from the Northerne parts of England, (where she had arrived from the Netherlands) towards Oxford. But, not being able to follow that designe, he desisted from his march to Buckingham, sending into the Town a Party of his Horse, to quarter there that night, and to bring-away that Provision which the Enemy had left there. He himselfe, with the rest of his Army, marched to great Brickhill, a place most convenient to lye betweene the Enemy and London, to defend the Associated Counties, to assist or joyne with the Forces of the Lord GRAY, of Grooby, Sir John Meldrum, and Colonel Cromwell, to whom he had before written, that, if they could possibly, they should fight with the Queen's Forces, and stop her passage to the King. But it seemed that the businesse could not be done; so that the Queene and Prince RUPERT were suffered to joyne together with all their Forces. Sir WILLIAM WALLER had beene long victorious in the West: yet now the Parliament's fortune, almost in every place, began to faile; and intelligence was brought to the Lord-General, that Sir William, after having almost gained the whole West, and besieging Sir RALPH HOPTON in the Devizes, (a Towne of Devonshire,) was on a sudden, by unexpected Forces from Oxford, under the conduct of the Lord WILMOT, totally routed and forced into Bristol. The Lord-General, at the first report of this newes, intended to have marched, himselfe, for relieving of the West; but, upon more particular information, that Sir WILLIAM WALLER'S Forces were so farre broken that no assistance at all could be given by them, was inforced to desist from that enterprize. Considering also that his owne Army was shrunke (through the continual increase of violent sicknesse, and from want of pay, clothing, and other necessaries,) to a most unconsiderable number, he resolved to proceed no further, nor to engage that weake Army to the ruine of itselfe, and danger of the Kingdome; especially, since the Forces of the Assiociated Counties could not with safety be commanded so farre from home. He therefore returned toward London, quartering that poore remainder of an Army, at Kingston-upon-Thames, and other places near adjacent. In this distressed conaition I must a-while leave that great General, until some few weekes time shall recruit his power, and enable him to make that samous and honourable expedition to the reliefe of Gloucester.

So great, at this time, were the successes which, in all parts, crowned the King's Party are Armies, that they seemed to possesse an absolute Victory, and the Parliament to be in now in a very pros-danger of being quite ruined. On one side, the Lord-General's Army mouldered-away by long sicknesse, and other wants; the long-successeful Sir WILLIAM WALLER, quite broken in the West; and, about the same time, the Lord FAIRFAX, and his Sonne Sir Thomas Fairfax, (though reserved by divine Providence for a transcendant height of honour in the future) with almost all the Gentlemen which served the Parliament in those Northerne parts, being defeated by the Earle of Newcastle ;

is taken by Prince Rupert;

ter by Prince Maurice.

The Earl of Newcastle commands a powerful Army for the King in the North of England.

sires the brotherly assistance of the Scots.

Great services per-Sir Thomas Fairfax.

Newcastle; and the Lord FAIRFAX, with his Sonne, driven into the Towne of Hull: On the other side, the King's Armies were full and strong; Sir RALPH HOPTON, (whom, for his valour and industry, the King had honoured with the Title of a Baron,) was possessed of a gallant Army in the West, and seemed to want nothing so much as a considerable enemy; the King's other Forces were free to The City of Bristol chuse what stage they pleased, to act their parts upon. Prince RUPBRT was sent to besiege Bristol, where Colonel NATHANIEL FIENNES, second Sonne to the Viscount SAY, was Governour; which City, in this low ebbe of the Parliament, could not long hold-out, but was soone delivered to the Prince,—a place of as And the City of Exe- much concernment as any in the Kingdome. Prince MAURICE, with another Army, came to besiege the City of Exeter, into which the Earle of Stamford was retreated after his defeat at Stretton, in Cornwall;—a Nobleman who had long struggled with various successe, and in sharpe encounters, against Sir Ralph HOPTON, and other Commanders of the King's side in those Westerne Counties, and was ruined at last by the treacherous revolt of some who had taken the same cause with him at the first. This City was, likewise, after a long siege, for want of supplies, delivered, upon Articles, to the Prince that besieged it.

But the great cloud, which not onely overshadowed the Parliament in the North, but threatened to poure out stormes upon parts farre remote, was the Earle of Newcastle, with his mighty Army, who was growne formidable to the Associated Counties, and many other places of the Kingdome. His Army was, at that time, the greatest of any in England, which he maintained in brave equipage, by large Contributions levied upon the Country, and seemed of strength enough, not onely to master any opposition of English Forces, but to serve as a Bulwarke against the greatest Army which the Kingdome of Scotland could be able to send in The Parliament de- aid of the English Parliament. For the Parliament had then sent into Scotland, for the brotherly assistance of that Kingdom, and agreed upon entering into a Covenant with them for defence of Religion, and the common Liberty of both Nations.

It pleased the Divine Providence (whose workings are many times beyond the formed for the rar-liament by the Lord reach of humane conjectures) that this strong Army, before the entrance of the Fairfax, and his son Scots, found an Enemy in England worthy of their feare; and were by the personal valour and successeful conduct of Sir Thomas FAIRFAX, (who seemed lately in a low condition,) so farre broken (together with other defeats given to parts of it sent abroad) that the passage for the Scots into England was much facilitated; as shall hereafter appeare in a more particular manner.

> But it is worthy of consideration (and therefore cannot but deserve a mention) with what unwearied constancy, and wonderous magnanimity, the two FAIRFAXES, Father and Sonne, did labour to preserve those Northerne parts for the Parliament: especially observing what great Enemies they dealt withall; how many unexpected disadvantages happened to them, and accessions of power to their foes at several times; which, though it cannot be here related with full circumstances, or particulars, yet may be touched in a general way.

> > The

The Lord FAIRFAX, ever since that there was any appearance of this unhappy Warre; and that the King's Commission of Array began to justle with the Parliament's Ordinance of Militia, had been very industrious in raising strength; and joyned himselfe most unanimously in that cause with Sir John Hotham, and his Sonne Master John Hotham, a Member also of the House of Commons, and a Gentleman, not onely active but prosperous, whilest he continued faithful to that side which he had chosen. And, after the Warre broke-out into action, the Lord FAIRFAX, either singly by himselfe, or sometimes joyned with Master HOTHAM, had taken and fortified many Townes and Forts for the Parliament, and made many sharpe and fierce encounters against potent Enemies. The Earle of Cumberland, (who was, first, made Lord-Lieutenant of Yorkshire by the King,) was not able to suppresse them, nor scarce maintaine the Warre against that power which they had raised: Maugre whose Forces, they took and fortified Cawood-Castle, and the Towne of Selby, in the Moneth of October, 1642, and, presently after, surprised the Towne of Leedes, where part of the Earle's Forces were quartered, of whom they tooke divers Prisoners, Knights and Gentlemen of good quality, one of which was Sir George Detherick, together with his whole Troope.

The Earle of Cumberland himselfe, within few daies after, was driven into the City of Yorke, and there besieged, and summoned by the Lord FAIRFAX and Master Hotham; which happened about the same time that the famous Battel be-

tween the King and the Lord-General Essex, was fought at Keynton.

But the Earle of Newcastle with a greater force, entered into Yorke, whilest the Lord FAIRFAX and Captaine HOTHAM, lay not farre-off; who, notwithstanding his great strength when he marched out of Yorke, was encountered by them at Tadcaster, upon the 7th of December, the Fight, or several Skirmishes, continu- A fight at Tadcaster, ing about five houres; in which the Parliament-Forces did so well take their ad-December 7, 1642. vantages, that they slew (as was reported to the Parliament) 200 of the Earle's men, with the losse of eight Souldiers of their owne, of whom Captaine LISTER was one, whose death was much lamented in the Country, being esteemed a brave and religious man. After several Skirmishes, the Parliament-Army had the fortune to make a faire retreat to Cawood-Castle and Selby, and leave all to the Earle, whose Forces were reported to be about eight thousand Horse and Foot, the Lord FAIRFAX and Captaine HOTHAM having not above 2,100 Foot, and seven Troops of Horse; their number would have been greater, if Sir Hugh Сногмегу and ColonelBainton, with their Regiments of Foot, and two Troops of Horse (who were expected) had accordingly come-in to them.

The Earle of Newcastle was now growne, not only master of the field there, but formidable to all the adjacent Counties; who did therefore implore aid from the Parliament. The Parliament, upon that occasion, hastened the Association of those Counties which lay neerer to them, that they might be the more able to

supply their remoter friends.

The King's side received then an addition of strength in the North, by the landing



Colonel Goring arrives at Newcastle King.

The Earl of Newcastle takes the town of Leeds.

landing of Colonel Gorine at Newcastle, with 200 Commanders from Holland, with succours for the and other Provisions for the Warre.

The Earle of Newcastle marching from Tadcaster, surprised Leedes, in which Towne he tooke many Gentlemen Prisoners, and forced them to ransome themselves at high rates: whereby he was further enabled to pay his great Army. Then also he gave Commissions to Papists in that Country to arme themselves in the King's Service, which he justified by writings published upon that occasion; and

at the same time proclaimed the Lord FAIRFAX a Traytor.

The Lord FAIRFAX, notwithstanding, marched with such Forces as he had gotten together, and proved successeful in divers attempts, against several parts of the Earle of *Newcastle's* Forces, one of them happening at *Sherburne*, between *Tad*caster and Doncaster, and another at Bradford, against a party of the Earle of Newcastle's Army, under the conduct of Colonel Goring, Colonel Evers, Sir WILLIAM SAVILE, and Sir John Gotherick, who came with a good strength of Horse and Dragoneers to surprize on a sudden that Towne of Bradford; but were by Forces, timely sent to the reliefe of it, forced to retire with some losse; which, though it were not a Victory against Colonel Gorno and the rest, may, notwithstanding, be termed a successeful Action, in being able to repel an Enemy too potent for them in all probability.

But is successfully resisted by Lord Fairfax's forces in an attempt upon Bradford.



CHAP. IV.

Some Actions of Sir Thomas Farrax in the North. The Queene lands in England. The revolt of Sir Hugh Cholmely, and the two Hothams. The state of this Warre in the Westerne parts. The condition of the Associated Counties. A short relation of Sir William Waller's Actions; of Colonel Cromwell, Sir William Brereton, and Sir John Gell.

GREAT were the atchievements of Sir THOMAS FAIRFAX in that moneth of Great and active ser-January, and the following February; for no season of the yeare, nor stormes of Fairfax to the Parwinter, could quench the rage of this Civil Fire. Sir THOMAS FAIRFAX on the liament, in January 23d of January, 1642, marched from Bradford (six miles distant from Leedes) and February, 1642with six Troops of Horse, and three Companies of Dragoones, under the command of Sir Henry Foulis, Baronet, his Lieutenant-General of his Horse, and neere 1000 Musqueteers, with 2000 Clubmen, under the Command of Sir WILLIAM FAIRIAX, Colonel, and Lieutenant-General of the Foot. When Sir Thomas ap- He takes the town proached the Town of Leeds, he dispatched a Trumpeter to Sir WILLIAM SAVILE, of Leeds in York-Commander in chiefe there, under the Earle of Newcastle, requiring the Towne to be delivered to him for the King and Parliament. But receiving a resolute, and seeming-scorneful, answer from Sir WILLIAM SAVILE, he drew neerer, and prepared to make an Assault, though there were great strength in the Towne, namely, 1 500 Foot, and 500 Horse and Dragoones, with two Brasse Sakers. Sir Thomas FAIRFAX drew-out five Companies of his most expert Souldiers, whom he disposed-of at a fit side of the Town, under the command of Major Forbes, Captaines Briggs, Lee, Franke, and Palmer. Sir William Fairfax, at the head of his Regiment, and in the face of the Enemy, stormed the Town with greatskill and courage, whilest Major Forbes did the like in his place, and Sir Thomas himselfe, every where encouraging, and teaching valour by his owne example, broughton his men; so that after two houres of hot fight, though the besieged behaved themselves well, the Towne was entered by Sir Thomas FAIRFAX, Sir WILLIAM FAIRFAX, and Sir HENRY Eowles, on one side, and Major Forbes, with his fellow-Captaines, on the other. They tooke within the Towne their two Brasse Sakers, with good store of Armes and Ammunition, foure Colours, and 500 Prisoners, among whom were six Commanders: The Common Souldiers, upon taking of an Oath, never to fight in this cause against the King and Parliament, were set at liberty, and suffered to depart, but without their Arms. There were slaine about forty men, of which number the besieged lost the greater halfe. Serjeant-Major Bramont, endeavouring in the flight to save his life, by crossing the River, so lost it, being drowned therein; and Sir WILLIAM SAVILE himselfe. crossing in flight the same River, hardly escaped the same fate. Publike thanksgiving to Almighty God was given at London for this Victory.

And Wakefield.

And Tadcaster.

General King comes from Holland with great store of arms for the King's service And likewise the 1642-3.

The Earl of Montrosse comes-over to the King.

And Sir Hugh Cholmely.

Sir THOMAS FAIRFAX with his victorious Forces, immediately marched to another Quarter of the Earle of Newcastle's Army at Wakefield, from whence the chiefe Commander, Sir George Wentworth, fled, and left it to him. Not long after, he marched to Tadcaster; at whose approach the Earle's Forces, though a

considerable number, fled-away, and forsooke their Workes.

From that time scarce any one fortnight of all the following Spring, passed without some remarkable addition of strength to the King's side, in those Northerne parts. In February General King, a Scottish Commander, of great experience in Military affaires, came out of Holland, landed at Newcastle, joyned himselfe with the Earle of Newcastle, and passed to Yorke with 6000 Armes. In the same Moneth also the Queene, landing from Holland, neere to Sunderland, with great Provision of Armes and Ammunition, and many Commanders of note in her Re-Queen, in February, tinew, was convoyed by the Earle of Newcastle to the City of Yorke.

> The Earle of *Montrosse* about the same time, a young Lord of great esteeme in Scotland, who, before, in the Scottish Warre (as is there mentioned) had shewed himselfe one of the most active and zealous Covenanters of that Nation, forsook his Party there, and, with the Lord Oolesby, fled out of Scotland with 120 Horse, to the Queene at Yorke. Upon which both those Lords were proclaimed at Edenburgh Traytors to their King and Country, for that, contrary to their Covenant, they stole out of Scotland, to assist the Popish Army, (for so they called that of the Earle of Newcastle) against the Parliament of England.

> Another great wound to the Parliament, not long after, was the revolt of Sir Hugh Cholmely, a Member of the House of Commons, and one that had carried a good esteeme among them, who had before (as is already mentioned) been employed by the Parliament, as a Commissioner in the North, together with the Lord FAIRFAX, and Sir PHILIP STAPLETON; and was at this time highly entrusted by them; for he was Governour of Scarborough, a place of great importance. He falsely betrayed his Trust, and forsooke the Cause he had undertaken, going to the Queene with 300 men. Upon which he was impeached of High Treason by the Parliament; but it was not his fortune to suffer for that offence, as others

others did, who about the same time failed in their Trusts. The Towne of Sear- Captain Brown borough was left in possession of a Parliament-Captaine, who was usually called Bushell revolts from Browne Bushell, a man that some thought would have kept it to the Parliament's surrenders Scirbouse; but he likewise revolted, and delivered it to their Enemies.

Upon the landing of General King, and the Queene presently after, a suspicion party. began to arise, by some circumstances, that the two unfortunate Hothams, the father and the sonne, were false to the Parliament. Which by the strict observation of some vigilant men on that side, was further discovered, and began at last to be discoursed-of, with as little beliefe for a long time, as Cassandrae's Prophecies; and, when it came more plainly to appeare, with as much, not onely and his son design wonder, but sorrow of honest men, that so much unconstancy should be found, to revolt from the Parliament, but are discovered and timely prevented, would have suffered by it, there will be time hereafter to discourse seized upon at Hull, of more at large. But they were both accused to the Parliament, seized-upon at and sent-up prison-Hull, and sent-up to London, where they long remained Prisoners in the Tower, before the time of their Tryal and Execution.

Not all these disadvantages, by the growth of Enemies, and revolt of friends, could dishearten the Lord FAIRFAX and his Sonne, who still persisted with great courage, and raising the Clubmen of the Country, to piece-up those small Forces which remained with them, were able for a while to make considerable resistance, and performe divers services against some parts of the Earle of Newcastle's vast Army. But one Victory was gained by Sir Thomas FAIRFAX at Wakefield, which may be termed rather miraculous than strange; though I shall relate nothing save knowne truth:—such a Victory, against so much odds, and so many disadvantages, as may serve to teach how much successe may possibly crowne bold attempts, and justifie that old saying, Audaces fortuna juvat.

The Lord FAIRFAX, General of the Parliament's Forces in the North, on the 20th of May, gave Order for a Party to be drawne-out from the Garrisons of Leedes, Bradford, Halifax, and Howley: They marched, 1000 Foot, three Companies of Dragoneers, and eight Troops of Horse; Sir Thomas FAIRFAX commanded Sir Thomas Vairfax in Chiefe; the Foot were commanded by Sir WILLIAM FAIRFAX, and Serjeant gains a glorious vic-Major-General GIFFORD; the Horse divided into two Bodies, foure Troops May 20, 1643. whereof were commanded by Sir Thomas FAIRFAX himselfe, the other foure by Sir Henry Fowlys. From Howley, which was their rendezvouze, they marchedaway, and by foure a clock in the morning came before Wakefield; Those of the Towne were ready for them, and sent-out some of their Horse to encounter with theirs, and Musqueteers to line some hedges, even to the very Towne. There were in Wakefield 3000 Foot, and seven Troops of Horse, besides Colonel LAMP-TON's Regiment, which came into the Towne after that the Parliament's Forces entered into it. But at the first encounter the Parliament's Forces beat-back their Enemie's Hosre; and their Foot also drove those Musqueteers from the hedges, even into the Towne, which they assaulted in two places, called Wrengate, and Northgate, and after an houre and an halfe's fighting, recovered one of their Enemie's Peeces,

rough to the King's



Peeces, and turned it upon them; and withal entred the Town in both places at the same time. When the Baracadoes were opened, Sir Thomas Fairfax with the Horse also fell into the Towne and cleared the street, and there was a cruel and fierce encounter; in which place Colonel Goring was taken prisoner by Lieutenant MATTHEW ALURED, (brother to Captaine John Alured, a Member of the House of Commons; (yet in the Market-place there still remained three Troops of Horse and Colonel Lampton's Regiment; to whom Major-General GIFFORD sent a Trumpet. with proffer of Quarter, if they would lay-down their Arms. To which when they returned a scornful Answer, he fired a Peece of their owne Ordnance upon them, and the Horse also falling-in with great fury, soone beat them out of the Towne, and tooke all their Officers Prisoners. They tooke, withal, 27 Colours of Foot, three Cornets of Horse, and about 1500 Common Souldiers. The King's troops were likewise forced, when they fled, to leave behind them foure Peeces of Ordnance, with Ammunition, which the Parliament-Forces carried away with them. For, when they had thus taken the Towne, they found their number and strength too weak to keepe it and their Prisoners too. And therefore they quitted the place and marched-away with this brave booty.

This great Victory at Wakefield, seemed (according to the common saying) like a lightening before death; for not long after, these Forces were quite broken by the Earle of Newcastle, whose greatnesse overspread those Countries, and was never encountered by any Enemy, but in parts of his Army. He had managed the whole businesse, and attained his height of power, by great skill and policy; and now, having no neere Enemy in the field, was gone to besiege the Lord FAIRFAX in Hull, which was by some talked of as an errour in him, no lesse

than besieging Gloucester, soone after, by the King, was censured.

State of the West of

Such a continual and sad Warre had the Northerne parts been forced to endure all the winter. Nor was it their case alone; scarce any County of England was free from it. The whole West, consisting of so many rich and flourishing Shires, had been as sad a stage of civil Tragedies. Many Armies and small Parties of either side (too many for one History to describe at large, or do particular justice to the actions of every Gentleman) had been engaged, without any intermission, in

On the King's side Sir Ralph Hopton.

England.

Of all Commanders there, that sided with the King against the Parliament, Sir RALPH HOPTON, by his unwearied industry, and great reputation among the people, had raised himselfe to the most considerable height, and continued the longest a Leader of Armies, as the sequel of the Story will hereafter declare: But his successes, through the whole course of his Actions, were very various, and many ebbs and flowes were in his fortune.

And the Marquis of Hartford.

The Marquesse HARTFORD, though farre higher in Dignity, and greater by power of his large Commission from the King (of which before is spoken) was not able to act so largely in the field as Sir RALPH did, though he were seldom idle, but busie about Townes, and in small Parties. They were both opposed in their beginnings, not so much by any Nobleman, or great Commander, employed by the Parliament's

Parliament's Commissions, as by private Gentlemen of those Counties; the chiefe For the Parliament, of which were Sir Francis Popham and his Sons, Master Strode, (a Deputy- Sir Francis Popham Lieutenant there,) with others before-named, besides plaine Freeholders of the Strode, and the Earl Country, who seemed to understand their owne Liberties and the Interest which of Stamford. they had in the Common-wealth. Until, at the last, the Earle of Stamford, a stout Gentleman, (who had beene before employed about Leicester, against Master Hastings, with a Commission from the Parliament, as General of some Counties) was sent into the West.

The Earle of Stamford was, by the Parliament, made Lord-General of all South-Wales, and the foure next adjacent Counties, to wit, Glocester, Worcester, Hereford, and Cheshire; with power to raise Forces in all those Counties, to appoint Officers and Commanders over them, to traine and exercise the men, and to fight with all that should oppose him. The Lord Gray, Sonne and Heire to the Earle of Stamford, was appointed to succeed his Father, in his former Charge, and made Lord-Lieutenant of five Counties, Leicester, Nottingham, Derby, Rutland, and Lincolne, to continue the Warre against Master Hastings, the Earle of Chester-

field, and others, who opposed the Parliament in those parts.

The Earle of Stamford, at his first coming into the West, was successful against Sir Ralph Hopton, whom he raised from the siege of Plymouth; but Sir Ralph Hopton, not long after, by a stratagem of feigning flight, entrapped many of the Earle's men, conducted by a Lieutenant of his, and gave an overthrow to the Parliament-Forces; betwixt whom, and the Earle of Stamford, upon the fifteenth of March, 1642, a Truce was made for twenty daies. The Earle, after the expiration of that Truce, againe taking the field, with a competent Army, was a while prosperous against Sir Ralph Hopton; but, not long after, was overthrown in consequence of the revolt of young Chudley, Sonne to Sir John Chudley, by whose assistance, on some former occasions, those Parliament-Forces had been victorious. The Earle of Stamford was then enforced to betake himselfe to the City of Exeter, whither Hopton and Chudley followed him, to lay siege to the place. But Prince Maurice was soon after sent thither to command in chiefe; to whom at last (as is before expressed) it was, upon faire articles, surrendered by the Earle of Stamford.

Notwithstanding so many misfortunes, as had then fallen upon the Parliament-side; about the end of May, 1643, they did not despaire of regaining the whole West, by the active valour of Sir William Waller, who, about that time, was very prosperous in those Counties, and in some Parts of the Principality of Wales, and whose name was growne to be a great terrour to his Enemies. Of his actions, and by what degrees he grew into esteeme and strength, it will not be amisse to relate some particulars in a continued series, considering how great a General he became afterwards in these Warres, and in what a low Command he began. He was a Gentleman of faire experience in Military affaires by former travels, and services abroad; of good judgement, and great industry; of which he gave many testimonies to the Kingdome.

Sir WILLIAM WALLER, about the time of the Battel of Keynton, received a com- Of Sir William mission to be Colonel of Horse; and, moving that winter following as occasions of Waller.

2 D

the present Warre required, performed many exploits; he tooke in Farnham Castle, and passed Southward, after that Portsmouth, by his assistance, had been taken from Colonel Goring, and some other quick services at Winchester, and in the Country thereabouts, which he had performed, joyning himselfe with Colonel Brown, a Citizen of London (who tooke-up Armes at the beginning of this Civil Warre, and continued till the very end, in high Commands, and reputation as high; of whose actions, more must be delivered in the sequel of this History). Colonel HURREY, and some others passing into the Westerne part of Sussex, he layed siege to the City of Chichester; in which City many Gentlemen of ranke and quality had fortified themselves, and gathered together a considerable quantity of Armes and Ammunition for service of the King against the Parliament.

He takes Chichester,

About the middle of December, appearing before Chichester, he was there met December, 23, 1642 by some Forces, Troops of Horse and Dragoniers, that came to his assistance from Kent and Sussex, under the conduct of Colonel Morley, a Member of the House of Commons, (a Gentleman of good ranke in Sussex and great activity in the Parliament-Service,) and Sir MICHABL LEIVESEY, a Kentish Knight. The Battery was placed by Sir William, at fit places, and all things ordered with great skill; but, before the battery began, to save effusion of blood, Sir WILLIAM, by the consent of all his Officers, summoned the Town by a Trumpet, with such Conditions offered as were judged too high by the besieged, and therefore at first not accepted of; yet after eight daies it was rendered to him upon no other Conditions than onely Quarter and faire usage. The prisoners of note, which were taken there were immediately sent toward London to the Parliament, who were, Sir EDWARD FORD, High Sheriff of Sussex, Sir John Morley, Colonel Shelley, Master LEAUKNER, Colonel LINDSEY, Lieutenant-Colonel PORTER, Major Dawson, and Major Gordon, with Doctor King, then Bishop of Chichester, and many other Officers and Commanders in Armes, to the number of 60, about 400 Dragoniers, and almost as many Foot-Souldiers. In the March following, his employment was in the Westerne parts of England, where he raised Forces. next in command under him, who continued with him in almost all his actions, was Sir Arthur Hasleric, another Member of the House of Commons, serving as Knight for Leicestershire, a man that, in all Battells and Skirmishes, gave great proofs of his prowesse and personal valour. Sir WILLIAM WALLER having now raised a competent force, and marching out of Bristol on the nineteenth of March. within two daies after, approached Malmesbury. Colonel HERBERT LUNSFORD, a stout Gentleman, and a good Souldier, (Brother to Sir Thomas Lunsford, that was taken at Keynton-Battel,) was then Governour of Malmesbury; who, upon the first approach, sent-out seven Troops of Horse, to begin an encounter with him; but they were no waies able to endure the force of those Horse which Sir WILLIAM had drawne-out against them, but fled immediately, some of them back into the Towne; many of them, conceiving that there was small safety in the Towne for them, fled quite away.

And Malmsbury, March 23, 1642-3.

> Sir WILLIAM assaulted the Towne the same day; but, not prevailing then, he lodged

lodged there all night, preparing the next morning for another, and more fierce, assault. But the besieged, conceiving the place untenable, desired a Parley, and yeelded upon Quarter. He tooke at Malmesbury one Peece of Ordnance, about three hundred Prisoners, whereof Colonel Lunsford and Colonel Cooke were the chiefe, with almost twenty Officers, great and small: good store of rich prize and Ammunition; the Conquest was bloodlesse, and very few slaine on either side.

Within few daies after he obtained a very considerable Victory neere to Gloucester And defeats the against the Lord HERBERT of Ragland, Sonne to the Earle of Worcester, who King's troops under Lord Herbert near with a great Army of Welchmen lay against that Towne; which, for the manner Gloucester. of it, in briefe, was thus: Sir WILLIAM with his Forces, coming neere to Cirences. ter, made shew (the better to conceale his purpose) as if he intended to fall upon that Towne; but his designe was for Gloucester, and he had taken such provident care, that the men in Gloucester had notice of this purpose; and that with the help of his flat-bottomed Barges, which thence were brought to him in the nature of Waggons (useful both by land and water) he would transport his Forces over the River Severne, beyond Gloucester, and fall upon the Reare of the Lord HERBERT'S Welch Forces, when he was least feared or expected; withal, he gave notice to the Gloucester Forces to fall upon the Front of that Army, as he would upon their Reare. The Plot, as it was wisely contrived, was successeful in the event, and tooke so good effect for him, that, when the Lord HERBERT was in skirmish with the Forces of Gloucester, and confident to cut them all off, being very few in comparison of his owne; Sir WILLIAM with his Army, neere Highnam, their Quarter, fell suddenly upon the Reare of the Lord HERBERT's men, with such fury, that they were all routed, and would gladly have fled, if they had knowne any way to escape, There were slaine of that Welch Army about 500 upon the place, neere a thousand taken Prisoners, with all their Arms and Ammunition, and the rest wholly dispersed and scattered: the Lord HERBERT himselfe escaped by flight, and got to Oxford.

Sir WILLIAM WALLER, after this great Victory, marched from thence to Hethen takes Tewhesbury; at whose approach, those of the King's Souldiers, that were Gar-Tewkesbury; risoned there, fled-away, and left it to him; from whence marching further into the Country, he surprized divers straggling Troopers of the other side, with some Armes, Pistols, and Carbines, together with sixteene thousand pounds in Money,

and carried-away his booty to Gloucester.

Within as short a distance of time, he tooke Chepstow in Monmouthshire, and And Chepstow; seized upon divers of those that were Conspirators for the betraying of Bristol (of which Treason I have spoken before) and who, upon the discovery of it, had fled from thence. At that place he tooke a Ship called the Dragon of Bristol, and great store of wealth in her, belonging to those who were his Enemies; which he seized, as a just booty, and much to his advantage.

From Chepstow he marched with a swift pace to Monmouth; the Towne, upon and raises fresh composition, was soone rendered to him; from whence, after he had put a Garrison forces for the Parliament.

into it, he marched to Ushe, and summoned the Country; where divers Forces came-in to him; among others Sir William Morgan's Sonne, of Tredegan, brought him five hundred armed men, and some Money; where also Master Herbert of Colebrooke raised a thousand men, and seized on Aberguine for the Parliament.

And returns to Gloucester.

Sir WILLIAM WALLER in this high career of his fortune, was commandedback from the West by the Lord-General Essex, to come to the chiefe Army: Which being soone understood among those of the King's Army, he was way-layed by Prince MAURICE. The intention of Sir WILLIAM WALLER was to get to Gloucester with his Forces; having therefore sent-away his Ordnance and Baggage. with his Foot to guard it over Wye to Aust; himselfe with his Horse and Dragoones, resolved to fall upon Prince MAURICE'S Army, and force a passage thorow: which he did with great successe, and small losse; and, as he marched afterward, cut-down all the Bridges behinde him; whereby he hindered Prince MAURICE from marching after him. This course, if the Prince had taken before him, Sir WILLIAM WALLER might have been kept in Wales to his great disadvantage. But, by that meanes of cutting-down the Bridges, Prince MAURICE's pursuit being hindered, Sir William Waller, by assistance of the Governour Massey, regained many Townes possessed by the King's Forces, especially Tewkesbury, Sir MATTHEW CAREW being fled from thence. But there he took many Prisoners. much Armes and Riches; he placed a Garrison there; and from thence, according to his first designe, arrived safe at the City of Gloucester.

He then takes Hereford, and makes many persons of quality there his prisoners.

Sir William Waller continued not long at Gloucester, but (being now dispensed-with for returning to the Lord-General) according to his usual celerity, he flew to Hereford, before any feare, or expectation, of his coming. He tooke that Towne upon Quarter, and in it many Prisoners of great ranke and quality, among whom was the Lord Scudmore, with five revolted Members of the House of Commons, viz. The Lord Scudmore's Sonne, Colonel Herbert Price, Sir Richard Cave, Lieutenant-Colonel Conisby, Master Conisby, and besides them, Sir Walter Pye, Sir William Crofts, Lieutenant-Colonel Thomas Price, Serjeant-Major Mintridge, Sir Samuel Amby, Serjeant-Major Dalton, Captaine Somerset, Captaine Sclater, Doctor Rogers, Doctor Goodwin, Doctor Evans, and diversothers; who were all carried-away to Gloucester.

And soon after takes Leinster.

Within three daies after that service, he surprised the Towne of Leinster in that County, twelve miles distant from Hereford, where he tooke good prize, disarmed many of the King's Party there, and placed a Garrison in the Towne.

It was feared at that time by those of the King's side, that Sir William Wal-Ler, going-on in so prosperous a way, might, perchance, surprize Worcester and Ludlow. To prevent therefore his further proceedings, Prince Maurice, with a good strength of Horse, was sent from Oxford, with whom also the Marquesse of Hartford was joyned, to fall upon him. But Sir William, scowing the Countries thereabouts with his active Forces, and having disarmed many of the other side in Wilts and Somersetshire, came to Bath with an Army much encreased of late both

in number and reputation; at which place Sir Edward Hungerford, Sir John Hethen marches to HORNER, and Master STRODE, joyned with him to oppose Prince MAURICE and Bath with his army, the Marquesse Hartford. About that part of the Country were frequent and fierce vantages over the encounters, which lasted for a long time, and many retreats with great skill and King's troops. courage were made on both sides, when night parted the fury of their fights. Sir WILLIAM WALLER proved for the most part victorious (whose particular actions there deserve a more peculiar relation) and at last became Master of the field, chasing his Enemies so farre as a Towne called the Devizes, to which place he followed and besieged them. The losses in all those several encounters were very uncertaine, and variously reported, by reason that both Parties had many times liberty to bury their dead; but on the Parliament-side were lost one Major, one Lieutenant, and two Cornets. Sir ARTHUR HASLERIC was there wounded; but the danger was not very great. On the other side, besides the uncertaine number of Common Souldiers, some of quality were slaine, among whom was Sir BEVILE GREENVILE, Lieutenant-Colonel WARD, Major Lowre, with five or six Captains. Sir RALPH HOPION, the Earle of Carnarvan, and the Lord Mohun, were reported to be wounded.

Sir RALPH HOPTON was besieged in the Devizes by Sir WILLIAM WALLER, and began to treat about the surrender of it; for Prince MAURICE and the Marquesse of Hartford were retired toward Oxford, where suddenly the fortune of warre changed, and Sir WILLIAM WALLER'S Army, by an unexpected party of fresh Forces, which came from Oxford (for the Lord-General Essex's Army was But at last is deteatso much wasted by sicknesse, and other distresses, that he could not at all straiten ed by a fresh army Oxford, nor hinder any Forces from issuing thence) under the conduct of the Lord sent against him from Oxford under WILMOT, was utterly defeated, scattered, and ruined, as was before mentioned the command of the He himselfe, for security at the present, retired into the City of Bristol; from which, Lord Wilmot. within a few daies, he rode, accompanied with some Gentlemen, toward London, and was there received with great affection, and many promises of their best endeavour to set him forth with another Army.

The King's Forces seemed now to have done the greatest part of their worke, being in a manner sole Masters of the West, and most Northerne Counties of England, and having ruined the Lord FAIRFAX and Sir WILLIAM WALLER'S Armies. Yet in all Counties the fortune was not alike; in many places those Gentlemen which adhered to the Parliament were able, not onely to guard themselves, but to get ground upon their enemies, though those actions were for the most part performed in skirmishes betweene small parties, in preserving their owne strengths, or taking Towns from the other side, such as had been in Cheshire, Lancashire, Staffordshire, Derby, Leicester, Nottingham, and other places, which I shall briefly touch anon, after I have related in how contrary a condition to the North and West, (which had beene the seat of a fierce warre, and a prey to the greatest and most potent Armies of either side;) and how much happier than those other Counties, (which had been alwayes molested with Alarms and Skirmishes, Of the quiet and and suffered by pillaging on both Parties;) the Easterne Counties of England had happy state of the remained England at this time.

Digitized by GOOGIC

remained all the foregoing Winter, and continued so during the whole progresse of this bloody Warre; which were the Counties of Suffolke, Norfolke, Cambridge, Essex, Hartford, Huntingdon, &c. who never were made the seat of any part of this civil Warre. These parts of the Kingdome had joyned themselves in an Association by Authority of Parliament, with power to defend each other, and levy Forces against all enemies to that cause; this great happinesse of peace and quiet that they enjoyed, may be supposed to flow from the unanimity of their affections, which carried them all the same way; and true it is, that there was as much unanimity of opinion and affection in those Counties among the people in general, as was to be found in any part of England; but it was especially among the common people: for a great and considerable number of the Gentry, and those of highest ranke among them, were disaffected to the Parliament, and were not sparing in their utmost endeavours to promote the King's Cause, and assist his Force against it; which might have throwne those Countries (if not wholly carried them to the other side) into as much distraction, and sad calamity, as any other part of the Land had felt; nor could that Association have been possibly made, if those Gentlemen had not been curbed and suppressed by that timely care which the Parliament tooke, and more particularly by the successeful services of one Gentleman.

Of Oliver Cromwell. Master OLIVER CROMWELL, of Huntington, a Member of the House of Commons; whose wisdome, valour, and vigilancy, was no lesse available in this important businesse, than remarkable afterwards in the highest services, and greatest battels, of the whole Warre. Of this man's Actions (because it pleased God to raise him afterward into the greatest commands, and prosper in so high a measure all his undertakings, that he became within few yeares one of the chiefe props, on which the Parliament leaned, and greatest scourges of the other side) let it not seeme amisse if I discourse in a continued Series, during those Moneths that intervened between the Battel of Keynton and that low ebbe of the Parliament which preceeded the siege of Głoucester.

His great services to the Parliament, in the year 1642.

The first Action that Cromwell undertooke, was to secure the Towne of Cambridge for the Parliament, about the middle of January. Universities were. of all places, most apt to adhere to the King's Party, esteeming Parliaments, and especially this Parliament, to be the greatest depressors of that Ecclesiastical Dignity. in hope of which they are there nurtured.

Upon which reason they were packing-up a large quantity of the Plate that belonged to all the Colledges, to send it away to the King; which would have made a considerable summe. This was foreseene by CROMWELL; who, by a Commission from the Parliament and Lord-General Essex, had raised a Troope of Horse, and came-downe into that Country, with authority to raise more Forces, as occasion served; he came to Cambridge soone enough to seize upan that plate, which was going to Oxford; but, before his arrival there, he performed, by the way, another service: Sir Thomas Conesby, lately made High-Sheriffe of Hartfordshire, had received a Proclamation from the King, to proclaime the Earl of Essex, and all his adherents, Traytors; and was then at St. Albans, upon a Market-day, proclaiming

claiming of the same; when Cromwell, with his Troope, seized-upon him, and sent him up to the Parliament.

Not long after this service, he collected in convenient time the Forces of that County, and invited the neighbour Counties of Essex, Suffolke, and Norfolke, to their assistance, against an invasion of the Lord Capel, who should have been seconded by Prince Rupert also, to invade that place, and hinder the Association; which would have been done, if that timely prevention had not been used. This made them forbeare their intended invasion, and retire to other parts.

About the beginning of March CROMWELL, having raised a Regiment of Horse, consisting of 1000 men, marched into Suffolke with much celerity, upon intelligence of a great and considerable confederacy held among those Gentlemen which adhered to the King's Party, at a Towne in that County called Lowerstost, a place of great consequence: He surprized them unawares, gained the Towne with small difficulty, and no shot at all. In which he tooke Prisoners, Sir THOMAS BARKER, and his Brother Sir John Pettus, Master Thomas Knevet, two of the Catlines, Captaine Hammond, Master Corey, Master Turrill, Master Preston, and about 20 others of quality and substance. In that Towne he gained good store of Ammunition, Saddles, Pistols, Powder, Shot, and several Engines for Warre, enough to have served a considerable Force. And certaine it was, that, if Crom-WELL had not surprized them in that nick of time, it had proved a matter of great danger to the County; for, within one day after, as many more Knights and Gentlemen, that were listed before, would have met at the same place. This was a timely service to the Parliament, and a great discouragement to all that Party in Suffolke and Norfolke, which adhered to the King's side.

But, when the Spring grew further on, and it was seasonable to make longer Marches, about the beginning of April, CROMWELL, having well-settled the businesses of those Associated Counties, for the Parliament's use, and not confining his care and services within those parts onely, raised a greater Force, of such as came freely and heartily in to join them; with whom he marched along towards Lincolneshire, with purpose to assist those of his side, that warred against Newarke. Newarke was one of the strongest Garrisons, which was then held on the King's side, replenished with many Gentlemon of Lincolneshire, and other Shires, and some expert Souldiers, who enforced large Contributions from the adjacent Country, and made rodes often times even to the Walls of Lincolne. Colonel CROMWELL, in his March thither, as he passed thorow the County of Huntingdon, disarmed many that were ill-affected to the Parliament, and increased by that meanes his strength so farre, that he was growne above two thousand strong: and before he came to Newarke, receiving an addition of Horse from Captaine HOTHAM, he also Toyned with some Forces of Lincolneshire. At his first approach neere to Newarke, it was his fortune to performe a good service for his side; for, when Captaine WRAY, with his Lincolneshire Horse, had too rashly quartered within a little of that Town, he was set-upon in the night-time by a strong Party from the Towne; where, after some little bickering, not being able to resist so great a number, he

Of Sir William

shire.

Brereton, in Che-

was surprized with his whole Troope; but the Alarum coming to CROMWELL, he advanced, and at ten o'clock at night fell upon the Newarkers, rescued Captaine WRAY'S Troope, and tooke three Troops of theirs, with the slaughter of many of them.

After this, when he sate-down before the Town, he was so vigilant upon all Sallyes that were made-out, and so successeful, that he tooke many men and Colours at several times; and, with his Horse, watching all occasions, he once defeated a strong Party of the Newarkers, near to Grantham, where the odds of number was so great on their side, that it seemed almost a miraculous Victory. At another time he fell upon a Party of the Earle of Newcastle's Army sent toward Newarke, and quartering betweene that Towne and Grantham; of whom he slew many, tooke an hundred Horse, and forty Prisoners.

Such things as these were the beginnings of CROMWELL, at his first entrance into the Souldiery; those that must be called his deeds, were in the following yeares of this unhappy Warre, and will require a larger and more full expression.

In those other Counties which were named before this Discourse of the Association, the fortune of Warre, during the aforesaid Moneths, had been very various, and daily contestations happened, being for the most part betwixt small Parties, and in besieging, taking, and re-taking of Townes and Forts. In Cheshire Sir WILLIAM BRERETON, (a wise and vigilant man, who, from the beginning of these troubles, had taken charge of that County, serving in Parliament as Knight thereof,) had so well acted his part against the Earle of Darby (made by the King Lord-Lieutenant of that County, as well as of Lancashire) that he was the chiefe instrument of delivering Cheshire out of his hands, and preserving it for the Parliament, though the greater part of the Gentry there adhered to the King: But it pleased God to give many Victories to Sir William Brere'ron against them.

He obtained, about the beginning of March, a great Victory against those of the King's Party at Middlewich, in Cheshire; which Towne, after a sharp encounter in the fields before it, he finally tooke, with 500 Prisoners, whereof many were Commanders and Gentlemen of great worth; which Victory did much advance

the Parliament's Cause in those parts.

He resisted with great successe the Lord CHOLMELY, and Sir THOMAS ASTON,

two powerful men, and zealous for the King's Party.

Having settled in some measure, by extraordinary care and wisdome, his owne County for the Parliament, and raised many stout and well-armed men there, he was forward to give assistance to other parts; and advancing into Shropshire against the Lord Capell, he surprised a Towne called Dreyton, in which Sir Vincent Corbet, a Commander of the King's side, was quartered: But Sir William Brereton, with small opposition, entered the Town, and tooke two compleat Troops of Horse, and six Companies of Dragoneers. Sir Vincent Corbet escaped by flight.

He marched thence along through those Counties, and took some places of

great import, as the affaires of both Parties stood at that time.

Sir

Sir WILLIAM went-on prosperously, and, within a short time after, tooke Whitchurch, upon the edge of Shropshire, with great store of Armes and Ammunition, and many Prisoners of the Lord CAPEL'S Forces.

But Sir William Brereton, when he joyned Forces with other men, or came-in opportunely to the reliefe, or rescue, of engaged friends, performed divers great and advantageous services to the side he tooke, especially when he joyned in Action with Sir John Gell, of *Derbyshire*, a constant and successful Actor for the Parliament; of whom, by himselfe, and together with Sir William Brereton, I shall make a further mention.

The County of Derby, full of Nobility and Gentry, was much swayed, even Derbyshire. from the beginning of these distractions, against the Parliament; for scarce did any Gentleman in all that County, but Sir John Gell does He, with his brother and some of his kindred, by the help of those Freeholders good service to the and Yeomen that inclined that way, made a Party to resist those great ones, at County. such a time as must needs renowne his courage and constancy. And it pleased God to make him prosperous in that great and hazardous undertaking, and to carry it so during the whole Warre.

After the Battel at Keynton, he tooke a Commission from the Earle of Essen, and, with great care and cost, he provided Arms, and timely seized upon the Town of Derby; which Town he so well fortified that it proved a sufficient defence against the assaults of potent Enemies, and a refuge, upon all occasions, to the Parliament's friends; it was likewise, no doubt, a great encouragement to many of the neigh-

bouring Counties, to stand upon their guard in the like kinde.

But the Walls of *Derby* could not immure Sir John Gell, nor hinder him from acting his part abroad. In many Services he joyned himselfe (not without good successe) with Sir William Brereton, and with Colonel Cromwell, and marched sometimes with the Lord Grey, of *Grooby*, (before-mentioned, Lord-Lieutenant of those Counties) against Master Hastings, and against the Towne of *Newarke*.

In the Moneth of February he marched with those Forces which he had, under Lord Brooke acts for the conduct of the Lord Brooke, into Staffordshire, to take-in Lichfield, which the Parliament in Staffordshire, in Few was then possessed by a Garrison of the King's side. Having entered the Towne, bruary, 1042-3, they found hot and sharpe resistance from a place of great strength, called the Close, or Cathedral-yard, a place famous in the succeeding Warre, as being often gained and re-gained, with the loss of much blood on either side.

CHAP. V.

The Death of the Lord BROOKE, and of the Earle of Northampton. A short mention of some Actions in divers Counties. The low condition of the Parliament at that time. The siege of Gloucester.

bruary, 1642-5. The Death of Lord Brooke.

Sir John Gell succeeds to the command, and takes the

And in March, 1642-3, obtains a victory at Salt-Heath.

of Northempton.

The Siege of Lich- WHILE the Parliament-Army continued at the siege of Lichfield-Close, their field-Close, in Fe- General, the Lord Brooks as he looked are fine. General, the Lord Brooke, as he looked-out of a window, was unfortunately shot into the head, and dyed immediately; a man as much lamented by the Parliament as any that ever fell on that side, and as much honoured for his Piety, Valour, and Fidelity.

After his death, Sir John Gell succeeded in that Command, and, about the beginning of March, took the Close, with very little losse of blood, though they had their Mines ready prepared to blow-up the Walls of the Close, and had throwne Grenadoes into it; which made the besieged cry-out for Quarter, which they obtained; for the Souldiers thought it not honourable (being in cold blood) to revenge their General's death, by putting them to the Sword. But they tooke a good and rich booty of Money, Bagge, and Baggage, about a thousand Armes, and very considerable Prisoners, the Earle of Chesterfield, with his Sonne, and divers other Gentlemen of Ranke.

About the middle of that March, Sir John Gell, with an Army of fifteene hundred Horse and Foot, advanced from Lichfield toward the Towne of Stafford; where it was his fortune to meet with the Earle of Northampton and his Forces, consisting of about twelve hundred Horse, at a place called Cranock-Green, or Salt-Heath, almost four miles from Stafford: The Earle gave a brave and furious Charge upon them, and, being stronger in Horse, made Sir John Gell's Horse to retreat in disorder at this first Charge; in which he took divers of them Prisoners, and surprised two Drakes. After that, he wheeled twice about their Foot, seeking his best advantage where to breake them: But Sir John Gell, and his Commanders, did so well order their Battalia, that the Foot kept unbroken, and made good the field againe together with their Horse, and re-saluted their hot Assailants, fighting Pell-mell for a long time.

At this fierce encounter the Earle of Northampton, himselfe, was slaine in the The Death of the Earl place, and one Master Lucy and Captaine BAGOT, with many more, about whose number

Digitized by GOOGLE

number relations did not agree; a Cornet of the King's also was here slaine, and his Colours taken, having on it a Crowne, and this Inscription, Carolus Rex. Two other Cornets were there taken, of which one was the Prince's; for the King's and the Prince's Troops were both there. They tooke Prisoners one of the Earle of Chesterfield's younger Sons; and Sir John Gell, by the timely coming-in of Sir WILLIAM BRERETON to his assistance, before the fight was ended, obtained a great Victory, and drove his Enemies quite out of the field. Among the rest, Master Hastings (as was then reported) having been once taken Prisoner, and rescued, fled-away wounded.

Thus it fell-out, that these two Peeres, the Earle of Northampton, and the Lord Brooke, who, first of all the Nobility, at the breaking-out of this Civil Distraction, had personally contested in one County, about the Parliament's Ordinance of the Militia and the King's Commission of Array, within a small distance both of place and time, ended their daies by this unhappy Warre. They were both much lamented by their owne Parties, both men of worth and courage, though

much different in the manner of their lives and conversations.

As Cheshire, (though a County where many Papists inhabited,) was, by the successeful care of Sir WILLIAM BRERETON and other Gentlemen, kept from deserting the Parliament, and able to resist the Earle of Derby, the King's Lieutenant there: So, her sister, Lancashire, (that was more full of Papists and more fiercely Success of the Parassaulted by that Earle, under the same authority, being the place of his chiefe liament party in residence and power,) was able, not only to resist him, but finally beat him out of the Country by the courage and industry of divers Protestant Gentlemen of that Shire; of whom I have named many in the precedent Book. But it is fit to give a little touch of the chiefe actions.

The Parliament, in the midst of winter, when that County was in the greatest distraction, had sent-down Sir John Seaton, a Scottish Knight, (an experienced and stout Commander,) as Major-General of the Forces in that Shire, that he might direct the unskilful valour of that people; though many of those Gentlemen had done great services before, as appeared at Manchester, and some other

places.

One of his exploits was at Preston: Sir John Seaton, having settled himselfe Sir John Scaton, a at Manchester, marched from thence, about the beginning of February, toward takes Preston. Preston, with Major-General Sparrow, Colonel Holland, Captain Booth, Serjeant-Major BIRCH, Master NowELL of Mearkley, and some others, with about ten Companies and almost two thousand Clubmen, to take in Preston, a Town well-fortified, and very stoutly defended. But it was so furiously assaulted (Captaine Booth, in person, first scaling the Walls) by the Parliament-Forces, that, after two houres of extreme hot fighting, the Parliament-Forces were Masters of it: The Town was taken with small losse on the assailant side, which was wonderful; not one Officer, and not above seven or eight Common Souldiers. On the other side many fell; the Mayor of the Town, ADAM MORTE, with his Sonne; and Sir Gilbert Houghton's Brother, a Captaine of Horse; with divers others of quality; Sir Gilbert, himselfe, fled to Wigham. They tooke two



hundred Prisoners, whereof many were Gentlemen of good ranke in the Country: They tooke three Pieces of Ordnance, many Muskets, and other Armes, with two or three Colours. The taking of this Town was of great consequence, both toward the maintenance of the Parliament-Forces, and also to stop the passage from Newcastle to Chester and Shrewsbury.

They also take Lan-

Shortly after, Serjeant-Major BIRCH was sent from Preston to Lancaster-Towne; caster, and the castle who, without any great opposition, (for he came suddenly and unexpected) soone entered the Towne with his whole Company; and, being entered, the Townesmen assisted him very freely to winne the Castle there; which he tooke into his possession for the Parliament.

And Wiggon.

Wiggon also, in Lancashire, was taken-in, with great store of Armes and Prisoners, by Sir John Seaton, with those Gentlemen that followed him, together with the Townesmen of Manchester, and other Clubmen of the Country, whom they had gotten together.

The Earle of Derby desisted not from his endeavours to reduce that Country; but marched with a considerable strength to take-in Whaley; which he had almost accomplished, but was, notwithstanding, repelled from thence by the Forces of the

Country.

The same Earle had likewise possessed himselfe of Warrington, a considerable Towne in Lancashire; and left a Garrison in it; but, at the beginning of June, that Towne was regained by the Forces of Manchester, with eight Pieces of Ordnance, and five or six hundred Prisoners: by which all Lancashire seemed to be reduced to the obedience of the Parliament, scarce any place of considerable strength being left in the power of the Earle of Derby.

Leicestershire.

The Lord GRAY, of Grooty, had been long possessed of Leicester, as the chiefe-quarter where he resided; and, besides his actions at other parts about that place, with various fortunes had opposed the Forces of Master Hastings, who kept a Garrison at Ashby de la zouch, and acted with great fervour and constancy for the King's Cause.

Hampshire.

Hampshire had been much distressed by both Parties; but the King's Garrison of Winchester, and that of Basing-House, (the dwelling-place of Marquesse Winchester,) were there predominant, and, at their pleasure, forced Contributions from the adjacent Country. Wales was almost wholly at the King's disposal, except very few places, which, with much difficulty, preserved themselves for the Parliament; and some Gentlemen, who, with much hazard, continued their fidelity to that side, such as Colonel GLYNN, Colonel MITTEN, and LAUGHERNE, with other private Gentlemen. But, indeed, the Parliament was then in a low ebbe; and Party is in a low con- before the end of that July, 1643, they had no Forces at all to keep the Field; their maine Armies (as is before touched) being quite ruined, and no hope in appearance left, but to preserve a-while those Forts and Townes which they then possessed; nor could they long hope to preserve them, unlesse the fortune of the field should change.

Wales.

The Parliamentdition, in July, 1643.

> Thus seemed the Parliament to be quite sunke beyond any hope of recovery, and was so believed by many men. The King was possessed of all the Westerne Counties,

Counties, from the farthest part of Cornwall, and from thence Northward, as farre as the Borders of Scotland. His Armies were full and flourishing, free to march whither they pleased, and enough to be divided for several exploits; one part was sent to take in Exeter, where the Earle of Stamford was shut-up, not able long to hold the place. The King in Person, with a gallant Army, designed his March towards Gloucester, the onely considerable Towne in those parts, which the Parliament held. What the King's Party conceived then of the other side, was expressed in many Writings; one of which, in the nature of a jeering Epigram, was made at Oxford, and is, I think, worthy to be here inserted, on account of the strong expressions it contains of the low Condition of the Parliament at that time. The thing is written in an odde manner, and the names of the Parliament-Commanders, FAIRFAX and WALLER, are expressed by a rebus way of Latine, as likewise those of the King's side, the Marquesse of Hartford, and the Earle of Newcastle. I leave it to the Reader without either Translation or Comment.

Extincta Castro Fax pulchra novo est; Nec Nautæ posteà nec militi Sit nota Pharos; Auster disparem Haud tulit casum: Murus, cui addita est Canina littera, mersa est, suis Cum turmis, nuper, Leporis vado. Euri Bapuqovei Bristonia Leporinos horrescens vortices. Anglica Claudii timet pares ·Urbs casus; Herois Teutonici Myrmidones astant magno cum $oldsymbol{D}$ uce. -Pacata Thule est; nec Noto timor · Popello aut Regi. Nihil relictum est Britannicum domare Cæsarem Ni veomairomers preces Gregis. Hæc Sphinges raptim Oedipo suo*. Julii 20, 1643.

In the first line of this Epigram the two words Fax pulchra denote the Lord Fairfax, and his son Sir Thomas Fairfax, and the troops under their command; and the words Castro noso denote the Earl of Newcastle and his army. In the fourth and fifth lines the Words Murus; cui addita est Canina Littera, denote Sir William Waller, or Wall-er, and his army; and in the sixth line the words Leporis vado denote the Marquis of Hertford, or Hartford, or Harford, or Hareford, or Hareford, and his army, which had lately defeated Sir William Waller's army. In the ninth and tenth lines the words Claudii urbs denote the city of Gloucester, which is sometimes in Lath called Claudii castra. In the tenth line the words Hersis Teutonici seem to denote Prince Rupert, the German Hero, who had lately taken the city of Bristol, and who was coming with the great army of the King, with the King himself at the head of it, cum magno Duce, to lay siege to Gloucester. In the eleventh line the words Pacata Thule est, mean that Scotland is in a state of Peace, and occasions no fright, or alarm, to the neighbouring Southern Kingdom of England, or to it's people, or it's King, nec Noto timor, popello aut regi. And the twelfth line seems to mean that the only enemy that threatens the King's cause with ruin is the prayers of the Puritan faction at London, who have lately run mad with religious zeal and enthusiasm.

The Editor of this Second Edition.

London

Intrenchments are made round London August, 1643.

London was then altogether unfortified, no Works were raised; nor could they, if. their Enemies, (who were then Masters of the field,) had come upon them, have opposed any Walls, but such as old Sparta used for their Guard, the hearts of courageous Citizens. But at that time London began her large intrenchment; which encomand its Suburbs, in passed not onely the City, but the whole Suburbs on every side, containing about twelve miles in circuit. That great work was by many hands compleated in a short time, it being then a custome every day to go-out by thousands to digge, all Professions, Trades, and Occupations, taking their turnes; and not onely inferiour Tradesmen, but Gentlemen of the best quality, Knights, and Ladies themselves, for the encouragement of others, resorted daily to the Workes, not as spectators but assisters in it; carrying, themselves, Spades, Mattoks, and other instruments of digging, so that it became a pleasing sight at London, to see them going-out in such order and numbers, with Drui is beating before them; and put life into the drooping people (being taken for an happy Omen) that, in so low a condition, they seemed not to despaire. But bootlesse, in probability, had that labour proved, and not timely enough to save London, if the King had marched thither instead of laying siege to Gloucester.

Many Members of both Houses of Parliament desert the over to the King's

But that storme of Fortune was strong enough to shake-off divers of the loose leaves, that seemed to grow on the Parliament side, and unsettle the resolutions of such as were not enough rooted in that Cause which they had chosen: For divers men of great quality, and Members of both Houses, some Lords, and many of Parliament, and go the Commons, did at that time desert the Parliament, and fly to Oxford: Whose names (though the Lords were named, who first deserted it) are here spared, because this latter result must needs carry the face of a crime; as being no matter of opinion or conscience, by which the first justified themselves; but proceeding, in all probability, from weaknesse, and feare for their private fortunes. They therefore lost much of their esteeme on both sides; becoming like a foile to set-off the constancy of those few Members who durst yet continue there, and remaine firm to their first Principles and the Publike Interest; wading thorow more difficulties and dangers than any former Parliament had been enforced to do.

courageous.

But in the Parliament itselfe there appeared no show of despaire, as they obser-The City of London ved who were then witnesses of their proceedings; and the City of London expresremains faithful and sed much forwardnesse and alacrity in recruiting the Lord-General Essex both with their persons and purses; besides their great endeavour to raise another Army for Sir WILLIAM WALLER, to be as a Reserve to the other, upon the great occasion then in hand.

The Earl of Manchester takes a Military Commission under the Parliament.

The Earle of Manchester, to his lasting Honour, chose that very time to begin his Martial employment; and, raising Forces thorow the Easterne Associated Counties (of which he was then made General by the Parliament, those Counties having been before prepared for that Association, by the wisdom and activity of the forementioned Colonel CROMWELL) performed, that yeare and the next, great services for the l'arliament.

While the Parliament and City of London were thus busied in recruiting their decayed Armies, Gloucester began to be made the chiefe Scene, on which this Civil 'Civil Tragedy was acted, and place of great concernment in the Kingdome, where the first turne of Fortune grew. The City of Gloucester was then governed by Colonel EDWARD MASSEY, a man of excellent skill to defend it; of such a courage, Of Colonel Massey, as no threats of a powerful Enemy could shake; and such a fidelity, as no pro-the Governmises of a King could overcome. This Massey was brought to Gloucester by the Earle of Stamford, under whom he had served as Lieutenant-Colonel, and, by deputation from that Earle, had, for many Moneths, governed that City.

Now there was no more expectation of the Earl's returne thither; and therefore Massey, as the fittest man, by consent both of Citizens and Souldiers, was appointed Governour, and made a Colonel by Commission from the General.

The surrender of Bristol to the King's Forces (which was more sudden than could be feared, and for which afterward the Governour Master FIENNES was questioned, and condemned by a Council of Warre) must needs strike a great terrour and sad amazement into Gloucester, which now seemed to stand forlorne, and without hope of any rescue, in the midst of a large Country, possessed by their victorious Enemies.

It cannot be denyed, that the resolution which this City had taken-up, of re-The Citizens of sisting the King at such a time was very admirable, if a man consider the small Gloucester resolve strength they had within; the many discouragements round about them; the great for the Parliament, distance of any aid that could be sent to them. Their strength within was very small; notwithstanding the whole number of Souldiers, Horse, Foot, and Dragoones, together with the many disadvantages. Trayned-Bands, and those Horse and Dragoones, which on a sudden they got from Barclay Castle, consisting of few more than fifteene hundred; forty Barrels of Powder was all their store, with a very meane and slender Artillery for such a Service: The Works were of a vast compasse, and little more than halfe perfected, when this rough storme did first threaten them.

The whole Country round about them, instead of encouraging this resolution of theirs, did rather endeavour to shake and weaken it, by intimations of the danger, and perswasions to make Peace with such an Enemy: For they had revolted from the Parliament, or resolved so to do; and wished, for their owne private Interests, that the King were quietly possessed of that City; for they conceived (not without reason) that the standing-out of Gloucester would be unhappy for that Country; because by the falling-downe of a great Army, they could not but expect a destruction of their Corne, Cattle, and all other Provisions; and at the last, if it should so fall-out, that the King should faile of taking-in that Towne, they must be enforced to stoope perpetually under two burdens, and be cast into a sad condition of poverty and misery. Whereas, if that Army did prevaile, they were sure to rest in the heart of the King's Country, farre from spoile and plunder, and, for an easie Contribution, enjoy free and ample Trade.

The succour which the City could expect, was as farre off as London; and in what condition the Parliament-Armies then were, is before related. Notwithstanding all this, the Citizens of Gloucester, together with examining what strength they had, examined also the grounds of their perseverance. A Common Council

was held, where the Officers of the Souldiery were present; their late Protestation was called to remembrance, and read there; by which they were all obliged, never to act or comply with the adverse Faction. Upon which consideration they height ened their courages, and unanimously resolved to refuse the tender of peace. Private cares were then forgotten, and not onely men, but women and children, acted their parts, in making-up those defects that were in the Fortifications.

In this condition stood Gloucester, when the King in Person, attended with a great and gallant Army, full of the flower of English Nobility and Gentry, was

come to besiege it, being the tenth of August, 1643.

Part of the King's Forces, some daies before, had been discerned hovering on the top of the hills; and a Summons had been sent from Prince RUPERT to the City: To which the Mayor gave answer, That he kept the Towne for His Majestie's behoofe, and could not render it. Which Answer, though laughed-at by those of the Army, the Mayor conceived very justifiable, and that he did truly hold it for the use of His Majesty, but according to the sense of both Houses of Parliament.

The King was full of indignation, that such a forlorne City should stand-out against him; yet he desired to gaine it without blood, and losse of time, which seemed then pretious in his full career of Victory. To that purpose he came in Person before it, that the reverence, or terrour, of his presence might prevaile with them; and, being come before the City, he gave this honourable Summons by two Heraulds of Armes.

The King, at the head of his Army, summons the City render, August 10, 1643.

CHARLES REX.

Out of our tender compassion to our City of Gloucester, and that it may of Gloucester to sur- not receive prejudice by our Army, which we cannot prevent, if we be compelled to assault it: We are Personally come before it, to require the same, and are gratiously pleased to let all the Inhabitants of, and all other persons within, that City, as well Souldiers as others, know, That, if they shall immediately submit themselves, and deliver this City to us, we are contented freely and absolutely to pardon every one of them without exception; and do assure them in the word of a King, That they, nor any of them, shall receive the least dammage or prejudice by our Arney, in their Persons or Estates: But that we will appoint such a Governour, and a moderale Garrison, to reside there, as shall be both for the ease and security of that City, and the whole Country. But, if they shall neglect this offer of Grace and Favour, and compel us by the power of our Army to reduce that place (which, by the help of God, we shall easily and shortly be able to do) they must thank themselves for all the calamities and miseries which shall befall them. To this Message we expect a cleare and positive Answer, within two houres after the publishing hereof; and by these Presents do give leave to any persons safely to repaire to, and returne from, us, whom that City shall desire to employ unto us in that businesse. And we do require all the Officers and Souldiers of our Army, quietly to suffer them to passe accordingly.

After some debate upon this Message, an Answer was drawne-up and consentedunto, both by the Citizens and the Souldiers; which was presented to the King by Serjeant-Major Pudsey and a Citizen; as followeth:

We, the Inhabitants, Magistrates, Officers, and Souldiers within this The Answer to the Garrison of Gloucester, unto his Majestie's Gracious Message returne this humble Answer, That we do keepe this City, according to our Oath and Allegiance, to and for the use of his Majesty and his Royall Posterity; and do accordingly conceive ourselves wholly bound to obey the Commands of His Majesty signified by both Houses of Parliament; and are resolved, by God's helpe, to keepe this City accordingly.

The King received this Answer to his Summons, without any expression of

choller or indignation, seeming onely to wonder at their great confidence, and from what hope of reliefe it should proceed, using these words before the Messengers, WALLER is extinct, and Essex cannot come. But by this time the King's The King besieges Army was drawne into the fields about Gloucester, Prince Rupert and General ter, August 10, 1648. RIVEN facing it on one side with about six thousand Horse and Foot, and two thousand Horse on the other; and immediately after this Answer, advanced forward into the Suburbs, on the East side of the City; but were there entertained with an hot Skirmish, and fired-out. For, upon the returne of the Messengers, the

Suburbs were set-on fire, and, flaming round-about, became an object of great tertour; by which the Citizens seemed more engaged to pursue their resolution; and the King's Army to settle themselves for gaining by force what they perceived would not be yeelded on other termes.

That very night the King's Army began their Intrenchments within Musket-shot of the Walls, on two sides of the City, taking advantage, for their security, of the shadow and shelter of some few Houses which the flames had not catched. being perceived, the Musketeers plyed them from the Walls, but could do little hurt so against the Pyoneers; which caused the besieged to make several Sallyes by small Parties into those Trenches, and at some places beat them out, gaining

both Armes and Prisoners, and retreating safe.

Sir WILLIAM VAVASOR had advanced with his Welch Forces on the West side, and made neere approach that way, intending to joyne with other Forces that came from Worcester, and had drawne themselves together on the North-West side. On the South side General RIVEN placed his Leaguer, taking advantage of a rising ground in the midst, to shelter himselfe from the shot of the besieged. Sir JACOB ASTLEY,

CHAP. VI.

The Expedition of the Lord-General Essex for reliefe of Gloucester. The great Battel of Newbury described.

the City of Gloucester.

WHILEST Gloucester was thus besieged, and the Siege so straight, that no don for the reliefe of intelligence could possibly arrive at it; the Parliament, (who, after serious considerations and debates, had, for the present, resolved upon the reliefe of that City, 25 the onely meanes to preserve the Kingdome;) were as much straightened how to proceed in the businesse with that expedition which was required. To recruit an Army so much wasted as the Lord-General's was, seemed too slow for this Service; and therefore the Trayned-Bands of London, and their Auxiliaries, must of necessity be made use of. Those that were well-affected to the Parliament encouraged each other to the Worke: The disaffected, on the other side, laboured in all discourses to breed despaire of the Atchievement; and, to discourage the Lord-General from marching, false reports were every day raised in London, that Gloucester The Lord-General Essex was foure-score miles off, with no present, or visible, Army at that time; his March lying thorow those Countries which were already harrowed by the Enemy: Insomuch that all considered, it was a question, which was the more wonderful, "that he undertooke it," or "that he did it." The Parliament was at that time so farre sunke, both in strength and reputation, and so much forsaken by those who followed fortune, that nothing but an extraordinary providence could make it againe emergent. The Cause, and very Being, of the Parliament, was now at stake; by the successe onely of this Expedition, to be redeemed, or quite lost. But it pleased God, that, according to that extremity, the resolutions of men were fitted. The City-Regiments and Auxiliaries came cheerfully in, to performe the Service; and that poore remainder of the Lord-General's old Army was with all speed recruited. An Army was likewise intended to be speedily raised for Sir William Waller to march after, as a Reserve. But that was not so suddenly done as the occasion required; if it had, and Sir WILLIAM could (as was intended) have come in with a supply at Newbury, it was the opinion of most men, that the King's side would have received an irrecoverable Defeat.

00

On the 24th of August the Lord-General Essex on Hounslow Heath, ten miles The Earl of Essex from London, mustered his men; where almost all the Members of both Houses marches with an of Parliament rade with him to survey the Army and toward experience had a large to the relief of of Parliament rode with him to survey the Army; and toward evening tooke leave the City of Glouces-

of their General, who marched-on, and that night lodged at Colebrook.

Upon intelligence of this Armie's advance, Prince RUPERT, with the greatest part of the King's Horse, drew-off from Gloucester, to oppose their March, and take what advantages he could against it: But the King with his maine Army continued the Siege, resolving so to do till the last houre; hoping that every moment might worke somewhat for his end; either by failing of the Towne's store of Ammunition, or some other want that might happen. Neither was that hope without reason. And so much more wonderful was the fortune of that Towne, to be relieved at such a nick of time, when their Ammunition was so farre consumed, that but three single Barrels of Powder were left in their Magazine.

On Saturday the 26th of August 1643, the Lord-General Essex began his March from Colebrooke to Beckensfield, and so forward to Beerton, where he cloathed his Army, and marched-on. The City-Regiments and Auxiliaries joyned not with the Lord-General's Army till the first of September, when the general Rendezvouze was on Brackley Heath. But before the joyning of all their Forces, a small Party of the King's Army, consisting of 400 Horse, had faced a part of the Parliament-Army, and skirmished with them about Bicister, but soone retreated upon the approach of greater numbers. The General taking-up his Head Quarters at Aynow, sent a Regiment to quarter that night at Deddington under the Conduct of Colonel MIDDLETON; who, hearing there of two Regiments of the King's Horse, sent two Companies of Dragoones and a Party of Horse, to approach the Towne. But the King's Horse retreated to a passage toward Oxford, where the Lord WILMOT was with 50 Troops more. The next morning two Parliament Regiments, conducted by MIDDLETON and Sir JAMES RAMSEY, advanced to that passe; where their Enemies stood in two great Bodies, and, after some Skirmish, gained the passe, placing Dragooneers to maintaine it. But the King's Forces drew-up againe toward it, and were received with a very hot Skirmish, which lasted many houres, till at last the King's Forces made a retreat; but, perceiving that Colonel MIDDLETON marched-back toward the maine Army (which he did by the Lord-General's Command) they sent a Party of Horse to fall-on his Reare, who followed them thorow Deddington; but were beaten-back thorow the Towne in some confusion. losse of men in these Skirmishes was not much on either side; neither could it certainly be knowne, but was imagined by the Parliament-side to be more on their Enemies Party than on theirs.

The Lord-General with his owne Regiment of Horse, and the Lord GRAY, quartering at Adderbury, upon intelligence that some of the King's Horse from Banbury were abroad, sent-out a Party from both Regiments, who beat them in againe, and pursued them into Banbury Towne, whence they tooke divers Horses and Prisoners, those in the Castle not daring to stirre-out. The General marched

from thence to *Chipping Norton*; where some of the King's Forces appeared again, but soone retreated, as they did almost every day, during the March of that Army.

On the fourth of September, when the Lord-General marched toward Stow on the Old, he sent Colonel HARVEY, with his Regiment of Horse, and two Regiments of Foot, to advance a little before toward the right-hand, and the City-Regiments upon the left, under the Conduct of Lieutenant-Colonel Bally, General-Adjutant of the Foot. Prince RUPERT appeared with about 4000 Horse, drawne-up on the Hills, facing the Parliament-Forces, and sent a strong Party of Horse into a bottome neer Stow on the Old, to encompasse Colonel HARVEY'S Regiments. Which being perceived, three Regiments from the Vanne of the Parliament-Army advanced to his rescue, and made that Party of the King's Forces retreat to their maine Body: Many Skirmishes there happened; but with little losse on either side.

From thence the General marched in the Front of his Infantry, Sir JAMES RAMSEY in the Reare, and Sir Philip Stapleton had the Van-Guard. the King's Horse againe appeared, and were by Sir Philip Stapleton, and others of that Army, encountered with divers Skirmishes; but they retreated in a great Body, and still appeared before the Parliament-Army, as they marched-on, for the

space of seven miles.

On the fifth of September the Lord-General advanced, and came to Presbury Hills; where he drew-up his whole Army in view of the City of Gloucester, and discharged foure Peeces of great Ordnance, to give them notice of his approach. Soone after he might discover the King's Quarters on fire: For upon the Lord-General's advance, they deserted the Siege, and marched-away all night. Reere-Guard of the Lord-General's Army, some Ordnance and Ammunition, stayed on the top of the Hill, by reason of the steepnesse thereof, the darknesse of the night, and the tempestuousness of the weather, whereby (besides a famine of Victuals) the whole Army had, for three daies March before, extremely suffered, through a Country that their Enemies had already destroyed. But the Lord-General marched from thence to Cheltenham, though, during his March, the King's Forces skirmished with some Parts of his Army, and divers times beat-up his Quarters whilest he stayed at Cheltenham, which was two daies, till the eighth of September. when he marched with his whole Army to Gloucester; and was there, with great expressions of joy, and much honour, received by that long-besieged, and now-Gloucester, Sept. 8, rescued City; The General much extolling the skilful valour and indefatigable industry of Colonel Massey, and praising the patient constancy of the City; They, on the other side, highly honouring his Excellency for bringing them this reliefe, thorow so many difficulties, discouragements, and disadvantages; both joyning in thanks to Almighty God, for his divine providence over them, and great mercy in sending so timely a deliverance.

The Lord-General Essex with his army enters the City of 1643.

The King abandons the Siege of Glou-

cester, Sept. 6, 1643.

The Lord-General lodged two nights in Gloucester, furnishing the City with Ammunition, Money, and other necessaries; and from thence marched to Tewksbury,

bury, and intended to quarter at Cheltenham. But he was advertised, that a Body of the King's Army were then in Cirencester (which were reported to be Prince MAURICE'S Forces) and had there layed-in great store of Provision for their Army. Upon that advertisement the General, (his want of Victuals and necessaries still continuing, and miserably increasing upon his whole Army,) made a long March with the Van-guard of his Army to fall upon them; which he did about one of the He takes Cirencester clock in the night, sending in a Party of Horse to seize upon the Centinels and and a great quantity of provision, and Guards, whilest himselfe, with the rest of the Horse, begirt the Towne; and a makesmany prison-Forlorne hope of Foot, with his owne Foot-Regiment, entered the Towne, and ers. surprized two Regiments of Horse (belonging to Sir Nicholas Crispe, and Co. lonel Spencer) which were (by the confession of some Prisoners taken,) intended for raising a Commotion in Kent. The Lord-General at that Towne of Cirencester tooke forty Loads of Victual, which, under God's providence, was the preservation of his Army, until the day that the great Battel of Newbury was fought. He tooke there likewise six Standards, all the Officers, except the two Colonels, which were absent, with divers other gentlemen of quality; above 300 Common Souldiers, and 400 Horse.

The General from Cirencester, in short Marches, not above five miles a day, went to Cricklade, and to Swinden, from thence intending to passe to Hungerford. But when the Van and Body of his Army had marched almost all over Auburne-Chase, a gallant Body of the King's Horse, consisting of about 6000, approached hard to the Reere-guard of his Army; which, not being a sufficient number to resist them, endeavoured to make an orderly retreat to the Body of their Army. But the King's Horse pursued so hotly both on Reere and Flanke, that those Horse Regiments of the General's Reere-guard could not retreat but with confusion, and some losse. But, being come to the Body of the Foot, they were drawne-up againe into order, and faced their Enemies, until all the Foot were marched. Neverthelesse the King's Horse, againe advancing, put their Enemies the second time into the like disorder; till some of the General's Regiments facing about towards them, charged the Forlorne Hope of the King's Forces, consisting of 500 Horse, and put them wholly into disorder; and then charging the two Regiments which seconded that Forlorne Hope, they routed them likewise; but the King's Horse came-on bravely with fresh Bodies, and stopt their Enemies further pursuit. Immediately followed a brave Charge, made by two of the Parliament's Regiments, which was encountered with as much Gallantry on the other side, so that they both retreated Another Charge was made by some Regiments of the Parliamentat one time. Army, and so answered by the other, that they were forced to retreat to their maine Body; at which time Sir Philip Stapleton (who had the Van-guard of the Parliament Army that day) came purposely back, and drew-up his Regiment to succour his friends, which caused the King's Forces to retire altogether; and the night stopt any further proceedings.

On the King's Party in these hot encounters, were slaine the Marquesse De Vieuville, with other Officers of good quality, whose worth and valour appeared highly,

highly, though I finde not their names recorded. Many Common Souldiers were there slaine, and one Lieutenant-Colonel; two Lieutenants and a Cornet taken Prisoners. On the Parliament's side were slaine of Officers, Captaine MIDDLE-TON, and Captaine HACKET; divers Officers were wounded, some Common Souldiers slaine, and Colonel Sheffield lost a Standard. The Lord-General Essex marched that night with his Army to Hungerford; Sir PHILIP STAPLETON,

who before had the Van, bringing up the Reere.

The next day the famous Battel of Newbury was fought; which Battel may deserve (because the condition of the whole Kingdom so much depended on the successe of it) to be related in a large and particular manner. But, because I have found nothing written of it by those of the King's Party; and that there was a punctual Narrative published by some Colonels of the Parliament-Army, Gentlemen of great and unstained Reputation, concerning this Battel; which Narrative I have heard some of their Enemies confesse to be full, not onely of modesty, but truth in the General, or for the most part; let the Reader be pleased to take it from their Relation. If any thing may hereafter appeare of greater truth, it will not trouble any honest man to see it published. Neither is it a thing unheard-of, for men to describe their owne actions with impartial truth; since Julius Casar is acknowledged to have written his owne Commentaries, not onely of the Gallike, but also of the Civil, Warre, with so much cleare integrity, that his Enemies had nothing to blame in it. Take it therefore in their Language.

The Battel of New-

On Tuesday the nineteenth of September, 1643, we marched from Hungerford bury, Sept. 19, 1645. towards Newbury; and, when we approached within two miles of the Town, we might discover the Enemies Forces upon an hill; their whole Army, having prevented us, were gotten to Newbury, and possest the Towne. But the next moning, being Wednesday, by break of day order was given for our March to an Hill called Biggs Hill, neere to Newbury, and the onely convenient place for us to gaine, that we might with better security force our passage. But, when his Excellency perceived that the Enemies Forces had possest themselves of that hill, marching himselfe upon the head of his owne Regiment, Colonel BARCLAY'S, and Colonel Holbourne's Brigades, he charged so fiercely, that he beat them from the hill, and kept it (rather gaining than losing ground) the whole day. His Excellencie's Regiment, and those other Brigades, all the while they continued there, were hotly charged by the Enemie's Horse and Foote, whilest much provesse was shewed on both sides. The General in Person bestirred himselfe, giving directions where-ever there was occasion, and present in all places of danger, discharged the part of an excellent General, as the Enemies themselves witnessed. But he considered not the danger of his Person, whilest he laboured to maintain that place, which of all others was most advantageous for his prospect. By this time came-up the two Trayned-Bands of London, who, though they were often charged by the Horse and Foot, stood to it with undaunted resolution.

> The Battel thus begun by the Foot, Sir PHILIP STAPLETON, with his Excellency's Guard and Regiment of Horse, advanced upon the plaine of the Hill;

> > Digitized by GOOGLE

when he had no sooner drawne-up out of the Lane's-end, seconded by Colonel DALBEIRE's Regiment of Horse, (no other Horse being advanced to the place) but the Enemy perceiving this advantage, being all drawne already in several great Bodies of Horse, part of them advanced immediately, and charged our Horse; whom we so well received (giving no fire till we joyned close with them) that the Enemy was wholly routed, and pursued with much execution near to the place where their whole Body of Horse stood. From thence, by order, we drewback to our first ground; by occasion whereof, opportunity was gained to bringup the remainder of our Horse, which had the Van-guard that day: whereupon the Enemy drew-out some fresh Regiments of his Horse, and with all possible. speed advanced againe upon Sir Philip, but received no better entertainment than before, being againe routed by him. By that time that he had drawne-up his Regiment againe into some order, the other Regiments (those of RAMSEY, HARVEY, and Goodwin,) were come-up to him, when the Enemy, with their whole Body, charged upon them bravely, and were as well received. Sir Philip Stapleton was here charged both in Front and Flanke, (his whole Regiment having spent both their Pistols,) and was so encompassed, that the Enemy and ours, with both our whole Bodies, were all mixed together; and in this confusion many were slaine on both sides, and our men, at last, were forced towards the Lane's end, where they first came-in; which being near our Foot, the Enemies endeavoured to dis-engage themselves, and drew-back to their owne Forces. Those that entered the Lane with ours were most of them slaine.

We tooke three Colours of Horse compleat, and a piece of another Colours. In the first Charge Colonel Dalbeire and Commissary Copley, charging stoutly, were both wounded. In the third Charge, Captaine Hamond, Captaine Fleetwood, Captaine Pym, and Cornet Dolly, were all wounded. Captaine Draper, who had a Forlorn Hope of Sir Philip Stapleton's men, did good Service; as Captaine Abercromby, and Captaine Shibborne, did with their Dragoones. The left-wing of our Horse, commanded by Colonel Middleton, and the right-wing of the Enemie's Horse, could not be engaged, but in small

Parties, by reason of the hedges.

The actions of our Horse thus described wholly, (because we were loath to interrupt the Series, for the Reader's clearer understanding) returne we to the Foot. Major-General Skippon in the morning, when his Excellency (as aforesaid) was engaged upon the hill, hastened to the top of the hill, where our Van-guard was in fight; having before ordered the March of our Traine of Artillery, and those that attended it (which were the Lord Roberts's Brigade, and his owne, Sir William Springer's, Colonel Manwarino's, and the red and blew Auxiliary Regiments) to be near to his Excellency. Looking from the Hill toward Newbury, he perceived a great strength of the Enemy, both Horse and Foot, in divers great Bodies advancing directly toward the way through which all our Traine was of necessity to march. To prevent, therefore, what he suspected, (which was, that the Enemy would fall upon our Traine, or upon the Reare of those that fought on

the hill, or gaine that hill behinde us, our last night's Quarter, or all;) he speedily disposed (which his Excellency did also send him a Command to do) his Forces in places most convenient: Meanewhile, the General sending for more Foot, that Brigade wherein his Regiment and Springer's were, with the red Auxiliaries, were sent-up; placing the Lord Roberts's Brigade, with foure small Pieces, just where the Enemy advanced, who gave them so warme an entertainment, that they made them run; and the Lord Roberts possest the ground, which the Enemy came first up unto: His Lieutenant Colonel was shot in the face.

That Forlorne Hope which he had commanded the night before, being now strengthened with 300 Musketeers, and led by Major Fortescue, Major-General Skippon placed on the left of the Lord Roberts's Brigade, upon the high-way that came from Newbury just upon us; upon which four Drakes were likewise placed, and well defended, though the Enemies came-up so close that they tookeaway a Limmer of one of our Pieces; but it was with losse of many of their

lives.

Colonel Manwaring's Regiment was placed on the right-hand, between the hill and the Lord Roberts's Brigade. This Regiment his Excellency a-while after commanded-away, to the reliefe of his owne Regiment, Colonel Barclay's and Colonel Holborne's Brigades, which had been foure hourse upon very hot Service. It fortuned that this Regiment was no sooner brought-on, but they were overcharged with two great Bodies of Horse and Foot, so that they were forced to retreat, and lose that ground which the forenamed Forces had gotten; which Colonel Holborne perceiving, with his Brigade gave the Enemy a Round Salvo, and instantly his owne, and Colonel Barclay's Brigades, and the General's Regiment againe advancing, beat-back the Enemy, regained the ground, and made

good the place during all the remainder of the day.

The blew Auxiliary Regiment was commanded to relieve and assist the Forlome Hope, which had been three or foure times in their turnes at the point. The Fight all along the Valley (more than half a mile in length) was continued as long as in any other part of the Army, which was till ten a-clock at night; about which time the Enemy gave a good Round Salvo upon Colonel BARCLAY, and Colonel HOLBORNE'S Posts. These things ordered, the Major-General rode-up to the top of the hill, where he espyed an advantage to bestow eight or nine Demi-Culvering shot upon the Enemy; who, out of an house, pelted the forenamed Gentlemen at a near distance. Then he rallyed the two Train-Band Regiments into one Body, drew them up, and placed them before, where the Traine of Artillery did afterwards draw-up to the top of the hill, and desired Major Boteler to draw the Musketeers of his Regiment on the right-hand before the two Demi-Culverings that were placed at the end of the Lane, on the top of the Hill; and the red Auxilians he placed on the left-hand of those Pieces, which before were slenderly guarded The Artillery was well-ordered that day, by the skill and care of Sir John MERRICK.

While this was acting, two Pieces, which belonged to the Major-General's Regiment,

giment, and one Drake of Sir William Brooke's, were, by the General's Regiment, under the Command of Major BOTELER, with the assistance of 200 Musketeers, recovered; and the Enemy drew-away from their Pikes (which with their Colours kept standing, with many great Bodies of Horse to guard them) five or six hundred Musketeers, besides Dragoones, to encompasse our men on the righthand among the hedges; just at which time his Excellency sent to have 300 Musketeers of the Forlorne Hope, to go to the reliefe of Colonel BARCLAY, and Colonel Holborne's Souldiers. But then the Enemy falling-on upon our right-hand, diverted them, who, with other of our Musketeers thereabouts, beat the Enemy off, who else had done us great mischief. This was about foure o'clock in the afternoone, when all our whole Army of Foot was engaged in the Fight. But then he also caused some of the red Auxiliary Regiment to draw nearer to Colonel BARCLAY'S Post, as he himselfe required. At length night drew-on, when the Enemy, both Horse and Foot, stood in good order on the further side of the Greene, where we expected their stay till next morning, and that they were working (as was reported) to place their Cannon, to make use of them against us when day should breake: Against which supposed encounter we encouraged our Souldiers before-hand, and resolved, by God's help, the next day, to force our way through them, or dye. But it pleased God to make our passage without blows; for the Enemy was gone by night; so that the next morning we marched quietly over the same ground were the Battel was fought, and where the Enemy stood; for, on Thursday early, his Excellency gave Command for the Armies to March towards Reading; to which purpose it was all drawne-up upon the Heath, where the Battel was fought; and, after that his Excellency had given order for the burying the dead, about ten o'clock we began to march. Colonel MIDDLETON, with his owne, and three Regiments more (Lord GREY, SHEFFIELD, MELDRUM) and 400 commanded Musketeers under Colonel BARCLAY, had the Reere-guard: During which March, the Enemy, at a great distance, shot from several hedges, but When we came to a long Heath, we drew-up the whole Army several times; and no Fnemy appeared. But at the entrance of a narrow Lane toward the evening, the Enemy fell upon us with 800 commanded Musketeers, and most of their Horse, who caused our Horse, then in the Reare, to make a very disorderly and confused retreat. But when Colonel MIDDLETON, with the rest of the Commanders in the Reare, hasted to charge the Enemy with our Foot, he made them retreat with as much confusion over the Heath, as they had made us retreat before; the losse not being great on either side. Lieutenant Browne was taken Prisoner.

After this, the same evening, the Lord-General drew-up the Army to Theale, The Lord-General and, taking some refreshment there, marched the next morning, being Friday, and his army march with the whole Army to Reading; where he stayed till the Sabbath was past, and 22, 1643. gave publike thanks for the great Victory.

This was a Victory not denyed to the Parliament, nor at all disputed; although the Lord-General Essex, for want of Victuals, marched-away to the necessary. reliefe of his Army, and could not stay to pursue the Victory which he had gotten.

The



The number of slaine in that Battel, were judged to be, by those who speak most moderately, foure times as many of the King's Party as of the Parliament's; but others have spoken of a farre greater difference. Divers Captains, as Captaine MASSY, and Captaine HUNT, with others, were slaine on the Parliament-side; but scarce any of higher ranke. Three of the Nobility fell on the King's side, the Earl of Carnarvon, the Lord Spencer (newly-made by the King Earle of Sunderland) and the Lord Viscount Fawkland.

The Lord-General Essex returns to London, about Sept. 27, 1643.

After this Victory, the Lord-General was received at London with great joy and Honour. The Trayned Bands and Auxiliaries of London marched home in full Companies, and were welcomed by their friends; and met by the Lord Mayor and Aldermen at Temple-Barre: And now the face of things seemed much to change, and the reputation of the Parliament to rise higher.

The King agrees to with the Irish Re-

At the time of this Expedition for the reliefe of Gloucester, a Cessation of Arms a cessation of Arms was made by the King with the Irish Rebels; of which, together with the great bels, in Sept. 1643. Victories which small numbers of the English Forces obtained over great multitudes of those Irish Rebels, before the time of that Cessation (which was here omitted, as not to interrupt the Relation of proceedings in the English Warres) there may be 2 larger Discourse in the continuation of this History; as also of the Covenant which the Parliament, and that part of the Nation which adhered to them, about this time entered into with their Brethren of Scotland, for maintenance of the Religion, Lawes, and Liberties of both Kingdomes.

> HERE ends this full and faithful History of the first three years of this celebrated Parliament, (which has since been generally called The Long Parliament of King Charles the 1st,) by Mr. Thomas May. For, though he here speaks of a Continuation of it as a work that he then designed speedily to enter-upon, he never carried that design into execution. However, he afterwards published a more summary history of the whole Civil War of England, down to the trial and execution of King Charles in January, 1648-9, about three years after the publication of the present history, to wit, in the year 1650, during the Government of England and Ireland under the form of a Common-wealth, or Republick, without a King and House of Lords, and before Oliver Cromwell had usurped the Supreme authority by military force under the title of Lord Protector. This summary history was published with the approbation of the Parliament then sitting, under the authority of an Imprimatur signed Na. Brent, and dated June 10, 1650, which was about a year before the Author's death. It is written in a clear and easy style, and is full of judicious observations, and seems to be very faithful and impartial. The title of it is as follows:

A BREVIARY OF THE HISTORY OF THE PARLIAMENT OF ENGLAND; EXPRESSED IN THREE PARTS:

1. The causes and beginning of the Civil War of England.

2. A short mention of the Progress of that Civil War.

3. A compendious Relation of the Original and Progress of the Second Civil War. Written by THOMAS MAY, Esquire.

The oldest Edition I have seen of this Breviary of the History of this Parliament was published in the year 1655. But I suppose there had been a former Edition of it in the year 1650. which is the date of the Imprimatur.

F. M.

APPENDIX.

FOR the further satisfaction of the Readers of the foregoing valuable History of the first part of the celebrated Long Parliament of England (from it's beginning on the 3d day of November, 1640, to the 27th of September, 1643,) by Mr. Thomas May, I shall here insert an APPENDIX to it, containing all the papers issued by the King and the Parliament, from the time of the King's return from Scotland to London in November, 1641, to the middle of the following month of March, in the year 1641-2, when the King had retired from his usual residence at his Palace at White-hall in consequence of some tumults in the City of London, and was gone to Huntingdon in his way to the City of York, where he afterwards resided for some time, and began to raise soldiers as a Guard to his Person, which he declared he apprehended to be in danger: which measure was, in a few months after, followed by an open war between him and the Parliament. here re-published form the first part of the large Collection (mentioned above in the Note in page 129,) which was published by Mr. Husbands in the year 1642-5; and they relate to the principal subjects of dispute in these unfortunate dissensions between the King and the Parliament; . and therefore will, as I conceive, be sufficient to gratify the curiosity of the greater part of the Readers of this History. But they are followed in that Collection by a great body of other papers, which, on account of their

their great number, and the great length of many of them, I have not thought it necessary to reprint on this occasion, though they contain much important matter that may be interesting to very diligent inquirers into the foundations of our Laws and Government; Mr. Husbands's whole Collection extending to no fewer than 954 pages.

F. M.

APPENDIX.

APPENDIX,

CONTAINING ALL THE PAPERS IN HUSBANDS'S COLLECTION, FROM THE BEGINNING OF DECEMBER, 1641, TO THE 16th OF MARCH, 1641-2.

His Majestie's Speech, to both Houses of Parliament, December 2, 1641.

My Lords and Gentlemen,

I THINK it fit, 'after so long absence, at this first occasion, to speak a few words unto you; but it is no ways in Answer to Master Speaker's learned Speech. Albeit I have staid longer than I expected to have done when I went-away, yet in this I have kept my promise with you, that I have made all the haste back again, that the settling of my Scotch Affaires could any ways permit: in which I have had so good successe, that I will confidently affirme to you, that I have left that Nation a most 'peaceable and contented People; so that, although I have a little misreckoned in time, yet I was not deceived in my end.

But, if I have deceived your expectations a little in the time of my return, yet I am assured that my expectation is as much, and more, deceived in the condition wherein I hoped to have found businesse at my return. For, since that, before my going, I settled the Liberties of my Subjects, and gave the Laws a free and orderly -course, I expected to have found my People reaping the fruits of these benefits, by living in quietnesse, and satisfaction of minde: But, instead of this, I finde them -disturbed with Jealousies, Frights, and Alarms of dangerous Designes and Plots; in consequence of which, Guards have been set to defend both Houses: I say not this as in doubt that my Subjects affections are any way lessened to me in this time of my absence; (for I cannot but remember, to my great comfort, the joyful reception I had now at my entry into London;) but rather as I hope that my presence will easily disperse these fears. For I bring as perfect and true affections to my people as ever Prince did, or as good Subjects can possibly desire. And I am so far from repenting me of any Act I have done this Session for the good of my people, that I protest, if it were to do again, I would do it and will yet grant what else can be justly desired for satisfaction in point of Liberties, or in maintenance of The true Religion that is here established.

Now

Now I have but one particular to recommend unto you at this time. It is Ireland: for which though I doubt not your care, yet me-thinks the preparations for it go but slowly on. The occasion is the fitter for me now to mention it, because of the Arrival of two Lords from Scotland, who come instructed from my Council there (who now, by Act of Parliament, have full power for that purpose,) to answer that Demand which it pleased both Houses to make me by way of Petition, that met me at Barwich, and which the Duke of Richmond sent-back by my command to my Scotch-Council: Therefore my desire is, That both Houses would appoint a select Committee, to end this businesse with these Noblemen. I must conclude in telling you, that I seek my people's happinesse; for their flourishing is my greatest glory, and their affections my greatest strength.

By the KING.

A PROCLAMATION for obedience to the LAWES ordained for establishing of the true Religion in this Kingdom of England.

HIS Majestie, considering that it is a dutie most beseeming, and that most obligeth Soveraign Authoritie in a Christian King, to be careful (above all other things) of preserving and advancing the Honour and Service of Almighty God, and the Peace and Tranquillitie of the Church, (to which end His Majestie, with his Parliament, hath it under consideration, how all just scruples might be removed:) And being, in the mean time, sensible that the present division, separation, and disorder about the Worship and Service of God, as it is established by the Laws and Statutes of this Kingdom, in the Church of England, tendeth to great distraction and confusion, and may endanger the subversion of the very essence and substance of true Religion: Hath resolved, for the preservation of Unitie and Peace (which is most necessary at this time for the Church of England) to require Obedience to the Lawes and Statutes ordained for establishing of the true Religion in this Kingdom, whereby the Honour of God may be advanced, to the great comfort and happinesse both of his Majestie and His good Subjects.

His Majestie doth therefore charge and command, That Divine Service be performed in this His Kingdom of England, and Dominion of Wales, as is appointed by the Laws and Statutes established in this Realm, and that obedience be given by all His Subjects, Ecclesiastical and Temporal, to the said Laws and Statutes concerning the same; And that all Judges, Officers, and Ministers, Ecclesiastical and Temporal, according to Justice and their respective duties, do put the said Acts of Parliament in due execution against all wilfull Contemners and Disturbers of Divine Service, contrary to the said Laws and Statutes.

His Majestie doth further command, That no Parsons, Vicars, or Curates, in their

their several Parishes shall presume to introduce any Rites, or Ceremonies, other than those which are established by the Laws and Statutes of the Land.

Given at His Majestie's Palace of White-hall, the tenth day of December, in the seventeenth yeer of his Majestie's Reign.

God save the King.

By the KING.

A PROCLAMATION for the Attendance of the MEMBERS in both.
HOUSES in PARLIAMENT.

HIS Most Excellent Majestie, having summoned this present Parliament in His princely care of the good and welfare of His loving Subjects; In the continuance of the same care, doth, with advice of his Privie-Council, by this His Royal Proclamation, declare His Royal Will and Pleasure to be; That all the Members of both Houses of Parliament doe repair to the Parliament at Westminster at, or before, the twelfth of January next, and give their due and diligent attendance in Parliament: To the end that this Kingdom may fully enjoy the benefit and happinesse which His Majestie intendeth unto them by Summoning and continuing of this Parliament. And of this His Majestie's Will and Command they are to take notice by this His Proclamation, and to give a just observance thereunto, upon such pains and penalties as by Law and Justice may be inflicted upon them.

Given at his Majestie's Palace of Whitehall, the twelfth day of December, in the seventeenth yeer of His Majestie's Reign.

God save the King.

HIS MAJESTIE'S SPEECH delivered to both Houses in Parliament, the fourteenth of December, 1641.

My Lords and Gentlemen,

THE last time that I was in this place, and the last thing that I recommended unto you was the businesse of *Ireland*; whereby I was in good hope that I should not have had need again to put you in minde of that businesse. But, still seeing the slow proceedings therein, and the daily Dispatches that I have out of *Ireland* of the lamentable estate of my Protestant Subjects there, I cannot but again earnestly recommend the dispatch of that Expedition unto you: for it is the chiefe Businesse that at this time I take to heart; and there cannot, (almost) be any businesse that I can have more care of. I might now take-up some of your time in expressing my detestation of Rebellions in general, and of this in particular: Eut, knowing that Deeds, and not Declarations, must suppresse this great Insolency, I do here, in a word,

a word, offer you whatsoever my power, pains, or industry, can contribute to this good and necessary work of reducing the Irish Nation to their true and wonted obedience.

Concerning a Bill in for pressing Soldiers.

And, that nothing may be omitted on my part, I must here take notice of the the House of Lords Bill for pressing of Souldiers, now depending among you, my Lords; concerning which I here declare, That, in case it come so to Me as it may not infringe, or diminish, my Prerogative, I will passe it: And, further, seeing there is a dispute raised (I being little beholding to him whosoever at this time began it) concerning the bounds of this ancient and undoubted prerogative, to avoid further debate at this time, I offer, that the Bill may passe with a Salvo jure, both for King and People, leaving such debates to a time that may better bear it. If this be not accepted, the fault is not mine that this Bill passe not; but of those that refuse so . fair an offer.

> To conclude, I conjure you by all that is, or can be, deare to you or me, that, laying away all Disputes, you goe-on cheerfully and speedily for the reducing of Ireland.

To the King's Most Excellent Majestie.

The humble Petition of the Lords and Commons in Parliament, concerning his MAJESTIE'S SPEECH of the 14th of December, 1641.

Most Gracious Sovereign,

YOUR Majestie's most humble and loyal Subjects, the Lords and Commons in Parliament, doe, with all faithfulnesse and zeale to your Majestie's Service, acknowledge your Royal favour and protection to be a great blessing and security to them for the enjoying and preserving of all those publick and private Liberties and Priviledges which belong unto them; and, whensoever any of those Liberties or Priviledges shall be invaded or broken, they hold themselves bound, with humility and confidence, to resort to your Princely Justice for redresse and satisfaction. because the rights and Priviledges of Parliament are the Birth-right and Inheritance, not only of themselves, but of the whole Kingdom, wherein every one of your Subjects is interested; the maintenance and preservation whereof doth very highly conduce to the publick peace and prosperity of your Majesty and all your people; they conceive themselves more especially obliged, with all humblenesse and care, yea, with all earnestnesse and constancy of resolution and endeavour, to maintain and defend the same. Amongst other the Priviledges of Parliament; Priviledges of Parlia- They do, with all dutiful reverence to your Most Excellent Majesty, declare that it is their ancient and undoubted Right; "That your Majesty ought not to take " notice of any matter in agitation and debate in either of the Houses of Parliament, "but by their information and agreement; and that your Majesty ought not to pro-

" pound any Condition, Provision, or Limitation, to any Bill, or Act, in debate, or " preparation, in either House of Parliament; or to manifest, or declare, your consent, "or dissent; approbation, or dislike, of the same, before it be presented to your." Majesty in due course of Parliament: and that every particular Member of either, "House hath free libertie of speech to propound, or debate, in any matter according, to the order and course of Parliament: and that your Majesty ought not to conceive displeasure against any man for such opinions and propositions as shall be delivered in such debate, it belonging to the several Houses of Parliament respectively to judge and determine such errours and offences in words or actions as shall be committed by any of their Members in the handling, or debating, any matters depending."

They doe further declare, that all the Priviledges above-mentioned have been lately broken, to the great sorrow and grievance of your most humble and faithful Subjects, in that Speech which Your Majestie made in Parliament, to both Houses, upon Tuesday last the fourteenth of this present moneth of December, in that your Majesty did therein take notice of a Bill for impressing of Souldiers being in agitation in the said Houses, and not agreed-upon: and that your Majesty did therein offer a Salvo jure, or provisional Clause, to be added to that Bill before it was presented to your Majestie by the consent of both Houses, and did at the same time declare your displeasure against such persons as had moved some doubt, or question, concerning the same Bill. All which they doe affirm and declare to be against the ancient, lawful, and undoubted Priviledges and Liberties of Parliament.

And therefore they most humbly beseech your Majesty, by your Royal Power and Authority, to maintain and protect them in these and all other the Priviledges of your High Court of Parliament, and that you will not, for the time to come, break, or interrupt, the same. And that none of your loyal Subjects may suffer, or sustain, any prejudice in your Majestie's favour, or good opinion, for any thing done, or spoken, in Parliament. And, for the reparation of yourloyal Subjects in this their just grievance and complaint, for the breaches of their Priviledges above-mentioned. and prevention of the like for the time to come; That your Majesty will be pleased to declare and make known the name or names of the person, or persons, by whose misinformation and evil counsel your Majesty was induced to the same; that so he, or they, may receive such condigne punishment as shall appertain to justice in that behalfe. And this they most humbly desire, and, as your greatest and most faithful Council, shall advise your Majesty to perform, as being that which will be not only a comfort to themselves, but likewise a great advantage to your Majesty, by procuring and confirming such a confidence and unity betwixt your Majesty and the People, as may be a foundation of Honour, safety, and happinesse to your Person and Throne, which they stand bound always to pray-for and endeavour.

The Petition of the House of Commons, which accompanied the Declaration of the State of the Kingdom, when it was presented to his Majesty at Hampton-Court.

Most Gracious Sovereign,

YOUR Majestie's Most humble and faithful Subjects, the Commons in this present Parliament assembled, do, with much thankrulnesse and joy, acknowledge the 2 H 2 great

great mercy and favour of God, in giving your Majesty a safe and peaceable return out of Scotland into your Kingdom of England, where the pressing dangers and distempers of the State have caused us with much earnestnesse to desire the comfort of your gracious presence, and likewise the Unitie and Justice of your Royal Authority to give more life and power to the dutifull and loyal Counsels and endeavours of your Parliament, for the prevention of that eminent ruine and destruction wherein your Kingdoms of England and Scotland are threatened. The duty which we owe to your Majesty and our Country, cannot but make us very sensible and apprehensive, that the multiplicity, sharpnesse, and malignity, of those evils under which we have now many yeeres suffered, are fomented and cherished by a corrupt and ill-affected party, who, amongst other their mischievous devices for the alteration of Religion and Government, have sought, by many false scandals and imputations, cunningly insinuated and dispersed amongst the people, to blemish and disgrace our proceedings in this Parliament, and to get themselves a party and faction amongst your Subjects, for the better strengthening of themselves in their wicked courses, and hindering those provisions and Remedies which might, by the wisdome of your Majesty and Counsel of your Parliament, be opposed against

The Necessity of a Declaration of the State of the King-

For preventing whereof, and for the better information of your Majesty, your making to the King Peers, and all other your loyal Subjects, wee have been necessitated to make a Declaration of the state of the Kingdom, both before and since the Assembly of this Parliament, unto this time; which we do humbly present to your Majesty without the least intention to lay any blemish upon your Royal Person, but only to represent how your Royal Authority and trust have been abused, to the great pre-

judice and danger of your Majesty, and of all your good Subjects.

And, because we have reason to believe that those malignant parties whose proceedings evidently appear to be, mainly for the advantage and encrease of Popery. are composed, set up, and acted by the subtile practice of the Jesuits, and other Engineers and Factors for Rome; and, to the great danger of this Kingdom, and most grievous affliction of your loyal Subjects, have so far prevailed as to corrupt divers of your Bishops, and others in prime places of the Church, and also to bring divers of these Instruments to be of your Privy Council, and \(\tau \) be advanced to] other employments of trust and neernesse about your Majestie, the Prince, and the rest of your Royal children: And, by this means, they have had such an operation in your Council, and the most important affaires and proceedings of your Government, that a most dangerous division and chargeable preparation for war betwixt your Kingdoms of England and Scotland, the increase of Jealousies betwixt your Majesty and your most obedient Subjects, the violent distraction and interruption of this Parliament, the insurrection of the Papists in your Kingdom of Ireland, and bloody Massacre of your people, have been not only endeavoured and attempted, but, in a great measure, compassed and effected:

For

For preventing the final accomplishments whereof, your poor Subjects are enforced to engage their persons and estates to the maintaining of a very expenceful and dangerous War, notwithstanding they have already, since the beginning of this Parliament, undergone the charge of 150,000 pounds sterling, or thereabouts, for the necessary support and supply of your Majesty in these present and perilous designes. And, because all our most faithful endeavours and engagements will be ineffectual for the peace, safety, and preservation of your Majesty and your people, if some present, real and effectual course be not taken for suppressing this wicked and malignant party;

We, your most humble and obedient Subjects, doe, with all faithfulnesse and

humility, beseech your Majesty;

1. That you will be graciously pleased to concur with the humble desires of your people in a Parliamentary way, for the preserving the peace and safety of the

Kingdom from the malicious Designes of the Popish party.

For depriving the Bishops of their Votes in Parliament, and abridging their immoderate power usurped over the Clergy and other your good Subjects, which they have most perniciously abused, to the hazard of Religion, and great prejudice and oppression of the Laws of the Kingdom, and the just liberty of your people.

For the taking-away such oppressions in Religion, Church-government, and

Discipline, as have been brought in and fomented by them.

For uniting all such of your loyal Subjects together as join in the same fundamental truths, against the Papists, by removing some oppressions and unnecessary Ceremonies, by which divers weak consciences have been scrupled, and seeme to be divided from the rest; for the due execution of those good Laws which have been made for securing the liberty of your Subjects.

- 2. That your Majesty will likewise be pleased to remove from your Council all such as persist to favour and promote any of those pressures and corruptions wherewith your people have been grieved; and that, for the future, your Majestie will vouchsafe to employ such persons in your great and publick Affairs, and to take such to be neere you in places of trust, as your Parliament may have cause to confide-in; and that, in your Princely goodnesse to your people, you will reject and refuse all mediation and solicitation to the contrary, how powerful and neere soever.
- 3. That you will be pleased to forbear to alienate any of the forfeited and escheated Lands in *Ireland* which shall accrue to your Crown by reason of this Rebellion; that, out of them, the Crown may be the better supported, and some satisfaction may be made to your Subjects of this Kingdom for the great expences they are like to undergo by this War.

Which humble desires of ours being graciously fulfilled by your Majesty, we will, by the blessing and favour of God, most cheerfully undergo the hazard and expences

expences of this War, and apply ourselves to such other courses and counsels as may support your Royal estate with honour and plenty at home, with power and reputation abroad, and, by our loyal affections, obedience, and service, lay a sure and lasting foundation of the greatnesse and prosperity of your Majesty, and your Royal posterity in future times.

A REMONSTRANCE of the STATE of the KINGDOM, Die Mercurii, 15 December, 1641.

THE Commons in this present Parliament assembled, having with much earnestnesse, and faithfulnesse of affection, and zeal to the publike good of this Kingdom, and His Majestie's honour and service, for the space of twelve moneths, wrestled with the great dangers and fears, the pressing miseries and calamities, the various distempers and disorders, which had not only assaulted, but even overwhelmed and extinguished, the liberty, peace, and prosperity of this Kingdom, and the comfort and hopes of all His Majestie's good Subjects, and exceedingly weakened and undermined the foundation and strength of his own Royal Throne; Do yet finde an abounding malignity and opposition in those parties, and factions, who have been the cause of those evils, and do still labour to cast aspersions upon that which hath been done, and to raise many difficulties for the hinderance of that which reproposed by the Par-liament for the Pub- mains yet undone, and, to foment Jealousies betwixt the King and the Parliament; That so they may deprive him, and his people, of the fruit of his own gracious Intentions, and their humble desires of procuring the publike peace, safety, and happinesse of this Realme. For the preventing of those miserable effects, which such malicious endeavours may produce. We have thought good to declare.

That there is a malignant Party in the Kingdom that endeavours to disappoint the measures lick Good.

- T. The Root, and the growth of these mischievous designes.
- 2. The Maturity and Ripenesse, to which they had attained before the beginning of the Parliament.
- 3. The effectual means which hath been used for the extirpation of those dangerous evils, and the Progresse which hath therein been made by His Majestie's goodnesse, and the Wisdom of the Parliument.
- 4. The ways of obstruction and opposition, by which that Progresse hath been interrupted.
- 5. The courses to be taken for the removing those Obstacles, and for the accomplishing of our most dutiful and faithful intentions and endeavours, of restoring and establishing the Ancient Honour, Greatnesse, and Security of this Crowne and Nation.

The

The Root of all this mischiefe, We finde to be a malignant and pernicious designe, of subverting the Fundamental Laws, and Principles of Government, upon which the Religion and Justice of this Kingdom are firmly established. The Actors and Promoters hereof have been;

- 1. The Jesuited Papists, who hate the Laws, as being the Obstacles of The persons who compose the said that change and Subversion of Religion which they so much long-for.
- 2. The Bishops, and the corrupt part of the Clergy, who cherish formality and superstition, as the natural effects, and more probable supports, of their own Ecclesiastical Tyranny and Usurpation.
- 3. Such Counsellors and Courtiers as, for private ends, have engaged themselves to further the interests of some foreign Princes, or States, to the prejudice of His Majesty and the State at home.

The common Principles, by which they moulded and governed all their particu- The Principles, and lar Counsels and Actions, were these.

Counsels, by which the said persons are governed.

First, To maintain continuall differences and discontents betwint the King and the People, upon Questions of Prerogative and Liberty; that so they might have the advantage of finding, with him, and under the notion of men addicted to his service, gain to themselves and their parties, and the places of greatest trust and power in the Kingdom.

A second, To suppresse the purity and power of Religion, and such as were best-affected to it; as being contrary to their own ends, and the greatest impediment to that change which they thought to introduce.

A third, To conjoin those parties of the Kingdome which were most propitious to their own ends, and to divide those who were most opposite to them; which consisted in many particular Observations; namely, to cherish the Arminian party inthose points wherein they agree with the Papists; to multiply and enlarge the differences between the common Protestants and those whom they call Puritans; to introduce and countenance such opinions and Ceremonies as are fittest for accommodation with Popery; to encrease and maintain ignorance, loosenesse, and prophanenesse, in the people: That of those three parties, Papists, Arminians, and Libertines, they might compose a body fit to act such Counsels and resolutions as were most conducible to their owne ends.

A fourth, to disaffect the King to Parliaments by slanders and false imputations putations, and by putting bim upon other ways of suppry, which, in shew and appearance, were fuller of advantage than the ordinary course of Subsidies, though, in truth, they brought more losse than gain, both to the King and the People, and have caused the distractions under which we both suffer.

The Counsels of Je-Popish Religion.

As in all compounded bodies, the Operations are qualified according to the presuits in favour of the dominant Element; So in this mixt party, the Jesuited Counsels, being most active and prevailing, may easily be discovered to have had the greatest sway in all their determinations, and, if they be not prevented, are likely to devour the rest, or to turn them into their own nature.

> In the beginning of His Majestie's Reign, the party began to revive and flourish again, having been somewhat dampt by the breach with Spain in the last year of King James, and by his Majestie's Marriage with France; the interests and Counsels of that State being not so contrary to the good of Religion, and the prospenty of this Kingdome, as those of Spain; and the Papists of England, having been ever more addicted to Spain than to France: yet they still retained a purpose and resolution to weaken the Protestant parties in all parts, and even in France, whereby to make way for the change of Religion, which they intended at home.

The effects of those Counsels.

The first effect and evidence of their recovery and strength was the dissolution of the Parliament at Oxford, after there had been given two Subsidies to His Majesty, and before they had received relief in any one Grievance: many other more miserable effects followed.

The destruction of the Rochell Fleet.

N. B.

The losse of the Rochel Fleet, by the help of our shipping, set-forth and delivered-over to the French, in opposition to the advice of Parliament: which left that Town without defence by Sea, and made way not only to the losse of that important place, but likewise to the losse of all the strength and security of the Protestant Religion in France.

The diverting of His Majestie's course of wars from attacks on the West-Indies, (which was the most facile and hopeful way for this Kingdom to prevail against the Spaniard,) to an expenceful and successeless attempt upon Cales; which was so ordered as if it had rather been intended to make us weary of the Warre than to prosper in it.

The precipitate breach with France, by taking their Ships to a great value; with out making recompence to the English, whose goods were thereupon imbar'd and confiscated in that Kingdom.

The Peace with Spain without consent of Parliament, contrary to the promise of King James to both Houses; whereby the Palatine Cause was deserted, and left to chargeable and hopelesse Treaties; which, for the most part, were managed by those who might justly be suspected to be no Friends to that Cause.

The charging of the Kingdom with Billited Souldiers in all parts of it, and that Concomitant designe of Germane Horse; that the Land might either submit with

Digitized by GOOGLE

fear, or be enforced, with rigour, to such Arbitrary Contributions as should be required of them.

The dissolving of the Parliament in the second year of His Majestie's Reign, after The untimely Disso-

a Declaration of their intent to grant five Subsidies.

lution of a second Parliament.

The exacting of the like proportion of five Subsidies, after the Parliament was dissolved, by Commission of Loan; and divers Gentlemen, and others, imprisoned for not yielding to pay that Loan; whereby many of them contracted such sicknesses as cost them their lives. Great summes of Money required, and raised by Privy-Seals. An unjust and pernicious attempt to extort great payments from the Subject, by way of Excise; and a Commission issued under Seale to that purpose. The Petition of Right, (which was granted in full Parliament,) blasted with an illegal Declaration, to make it destructive to itself, to the power of Parliament, and to the Liberty of the Subject, and to that purpose printed with it; and the Petition made of no use, but to shew the bold and presumptuous injustice of such Ministers as durst break the Laws, and suppresse the Liberties of the Kingdom, after they had been so solemnly and evidently declared.

Another Parliament dissolved, 4 Car. and the priviledge of Parliament broken A third Parliament by imprisoning divers Members of the House, detaining them close prisoners for dissolved with harshmany moneths together, without the liberty of using Books, Pen, Inke, or Paper, illegal and cruel imdenying them all the comforts of life, all means of preservation of health, not per-prisonments of mitting their wives to come unto them even in time of their sicknesse. And, for several of the most the compleating of that cruelty, after yeers spent in such miserable durance, de-it. priving them of the necessary means of Spiritual consolation; not suffering them to go-abroad to enjoy God's Ordinances in God's House, or God's Ministers to come to them, to administer comfort unto them in their private Chambers: and, to keep them still in this oppressed condition, not admitting them to be bailed according to Law, yet vexing them with Informations in inferiour Courts, sentencing and fining some of them for matters done in Parliament, and extorting the payments of those Fines from them; and enforcing others to put-in security of good behaviour, before they could be released.

The imprisonment of the rest, who refused to be bound, still continued; which might have been perpetual, if necessity had not, the last yeer, brought another Parliament to relieve them; of whom, one died, by the cruelty and harshnesse of his imprisonment, which would admit of no relaxation, notwithstanding the imminent danger of his life did sufficiently appeare by the declaration of his Physician; And his release, or, at least, his refreshment, was sought by many humble Petitions. And his blood still cryes either for vengeance, or repentance of those Ministers of State, who are, at once, obstructors of the course, both of his Majes-

tie's Justice and his Mercy.

Upon the dissolution of both these Parliaments, untrue and scandalous Declarations were published, to asperse their proceedings, and some of their Members, unjustly to make them odious, and colour the violence which was used against them,

Sir John Elliot. See above, page 9.

Proclamation

N.B.

Proclamation set-out to the same purpose; and, to the great dejecting of the hearts of the people, forbidding them even to speak of Parliaments.

The King governs the Nation during several years without a Parliament, and raises money by various illegal and oppressive methods.

After the breach of the Parliament, in the fourth yeer of His Majesty, Injustice. Oppression, and Violence, broke-in upon us, without any restraint, or moderation. And yet the first project, (which was the great summes exacted throughout the whole Kingdom for default of Knighthood,) seemed to have some colour and shadow of a Law: But, if it be rightly examined by that obsolete Law which was pretended for it, it would be found to be against all the rules of Justice, both, in respect of the persons charged, the proportion of the Fines demanded, and the absurd and unreasonable manner of their proceedings. Tonnage and Poundage hath beene received without colour, or pretence, of Law: many other heavy impositions continued against Law; and some so unreasonable, that the summe of the charge exceeds the value of the Goods. The Booke of Rates lately enhansed to a high proportion; and such Merchants as would not submit to their illegal and unreasonable payments, were vexed and oppressed above measure; and the ordinary course of Justice, the common Birth-right of the Subject of England, wholly obstructed unto them. And, although all this was taken upon pretence of guarding the Sea, yet a new and unheard-of Tax of Ship-money was devised, upon the same pretence. By both which, there was charged upon the Subject near 700,000 pounds some yeers; and yet the Merchants have been left so naked to the violence of the Turkish Pirates, that many great Ships of value, and thousands of His Majestie's Subjects, have been taken by them, and do still remain in miserable slavery.

Ship-money.

The enlargement of Forests, contrary to Charta de Foresta, and the composition The exactions of Coat and Conduct-money, and divers other Military thereupon. The taking-away the Armes of the Trained-Bands of divers Counties. The desperate designe of engrossing all the Gun-powder into one hand; keeping it in the Tower of London, and setting so high a Rate upon it that the poorer sort were not able to buy it; nor could any have it without License; thereby to leave the several parts of the Kingdome destitute of their necessary defence; and, by selling so dear that which was sold, to make an unlawful advantage of it, to the great charge and detriment of the Subject, the general destruction of the King's Timber, especially that in the Forrest of Dean, sold to Papists, which was the best Store-house of this Kingdome, for the maintenance of our Shipping. The takingaway of men's right, under colour of the King's title, to Land between high and low-water-Marks. The Monopolies of Soape, Salt, Wine, Leather, Sea-cole, and, in a manner, of all things of most common and necessary use. The restraint of the Liberties of the Subjects in their habitation, Trades, and other Interest. Their vexation and oppression by Purveyors, Clerks of the Market, and Salt-Petermen. The sale of pretended Nuzances, as Buildings in and about London, conversion of Arable into Pasture, continuance of Pasture, under the name of depopulation, have drawn many Millions out of the Subjects Purses, without any consi-

Monopolies.

derable profit to his Majesty. Large quantities of Common, and several Grounds,. have been taken from the Subject, by colour of the Statute of Improvement, and by abuse of the Commission of Sewers, without their consent, and against it. And not only private Interest, but also the publike Faith hath been broken, in seizing of the Money and Bullion in the Mint; and the whole Kingdom like to be robbed at once, in that abominable project of Brasse-Money. Great numbers of His Majestie's Subjects, for refusing those unlawful charges, have been vexed with long and expensive suits; some fined and censured, others committed to long and hard imprisonments and confinements, to the losse of health of many, of life in some; and others have had their houses broken-up, their goods seized; some have been restrained from their lawful Callings: Ships have been interrupted in their Voyages, surprized at Sea in an Hostile manner by Projectors, as by a common Enemy: Merchants prohibited to unlade their goods in such Ports as were for their own advantage, and forced to bring them to those places which were most for the advantages of the Monopolizers and Projectors. The Court of Star-cham-Oppression of the ber hath abounded in extravagant censures, not only for the maintenance and people by cruel improvement of Monopolies, and other unlawful taxes; but for divers other Court of Star-Cham-Causes, where there hath been no offence, or very small; whereby His Majestie's ber. Subjects have been oppressed by grievous Fines, Imprisonments, Stigmatizings, Mutilations, Whippings, Pillories, Gags, Confinements, Banishments; after so rigid a manner as hath not only deprived men of the society of their friends, exercise of their professions, comfort of Books, use of Paper or Ink, but even violated that near Union which God hath established betwixt Men and their Wives, by forced and constrained separation; whereby they have been bereaved of the comfort and conversation one of another, for many yeers together without hope of relief; if God had not by his over-ruling Providence, given some interruption to the prevailing power and Counsell of those who were the Authors and Promoters of such peremptory and heady courses.

Judges have been put out of their places, for refusing to do against their Oaths The Courts of and consciences: Others have been so awed, that they durst not do their duties, employed as instruand, the better to hold a rod over them, the Clause Quam diu se bene gesserit, was ments of oppression. left out of their Patents, and a new Clause, Durante bene placito, inserted. Lawyers have been checked, for being faithful to their clients; Solicitors and Atturneyes have been threatened, and some punished for following lawful Suits: And by this means all the approaches to Justice were interrupted and forecluded. New Oaths have been forced upon the Subject against Law; new Judicatories erected without Law: The Council-Table have, by their Orders, offered to bind the Subjects in their Freeholds, Estates, Suits, and Actions. The pretended Court of the Earl-Marshal was Arbitrary, and illegal in its being, and proceedings. The Chancery, Exchequer-chamber, Court of Wards, and other English Courts have been grievous in exceeding their Jurisdictions. The estates of many Families have been weakened; and some ruined by excessive Fines, exacted from them for Compositions of Wardships. All Leases of above a hundred years have been made to draw-on Wardship 212

Wardship contrary to Law. Undue proceedings used in the finding of Offices, to make the Jury finde for the King. The Common-law Courts, seeing all Men more inclined to seek Justice there, where it may be fitted to their own desire, are known frequently to forsake the Rules of the Common-law, and straining beyond their bounds, under pretence of equity, to do Injustice. Titles of Honour, Judicial places, Serjeantships at Law, and other Offices, have been sold for great summes of money; whereby the common Justice of the Kingdom hath been much endangered, not only by opening a way of employment, in places of great trust and advantage, to Men of weak parts; but also by giving occasion to Bribery, Extortion, and Partiality; It seldom happening that places ill-gotten are well-used. Commissions bave heen granted for examining the excesse of Fees: and, when great exactions have been discovered, Compositions have been made with Delinquents, not only for the time past, but likewise for immunity and security in offending for the time to come; which, under colour of remedy, hath but confirmed and encreased the Grievance to the Subject. The usual course of pricking Sheriffs hath been not observed, but many times Sheriffs have been made in an extraordinary way; some-times as a punishment and charge unto them; sometimes such were prickedout as would be Instruments to execute whatsoever they would have to be done.

The Bishops and the rest of the Clergy did triumph in the Suspensions, Excommunications, Deprivations, and Degradations, of divers painful, learned, and pious Ministers, in the vexation and grievous oppression of great numbers of His Ma-The High-Commission grew to such excesse of sharpnesse jestie's good Subjects. and severity as was not much lesse than the Romish Inquisition; and yet in many cases, by the Archbishop's power, was made much more heavy, being assisted and

strengthened by authority of the Council-Table.

The Bishops, and their Courts, were as eager in the Country; and, although their Jurisdiction could not reach so high in rigour and extremity of punishment, vet were they no lesse grievous, in respect of the generality and multiplicity of vexations, which, lighting upon the meaner sort of Tradesmen and Artificers, did impoverish many thousands, and so afflict and trouble others, that great numbers, to avoid their miseries, departed out of the Kingdome, some into New-England and other parts of America, and others into Holland, where they have transported their Manufactures of Cloth; which is not only a losse by diminishing the present stock of the Kingdom, but a great mischiefe by impairing and endangering the losse of that peculiar Trade of Cloathing, which hath been a plentiful Fountain of Wealth and Honour to this Nation. Those were [thought] fittest for Ecclesiastical preferments, and soonest obtained them, who were most officious in promoting Superstition, and most virulent in rayling against Godlinesse and Honesty.

The most publike and solemne Sermons before His Majesty were, either to advance Prerogative above Law, and Decry the property of the Subject, or were full of such kind of invectives whereby they might make those odious who sought to maintain the Religion, Laws, and Liberties of the Kingdome; and such men were sure to be weeded out of the Commission of the Peace, and out of all other

employments

Fees.

The High Commission Court.

The Bishops Courts.

employments of power in the government of the Country. Many noble Personages were Councillors in name; but the power and authority remained in a few of such as were most addicted to this party; whose resolutions and determinations were brought to the Table for countenance and execution and not for debate and deliberation; and no man could offer to oppose them, without disgrace and haza rd to himself: Nay all those that did not wholly concurre and actively contribute to the furtherance of their designes, (though otherwise persons of never so great Honour and Abilities) were so far from being employed in any place of Trust and power, that they were neglected, discountenanced, and, upon all occasions, injured and oppressed. This Faction was growne to that height and entireness of power, that now they began to think of finishing their Work, which consisted of these three parts.

- 1. The Government must be set-free from all restraint of Laws, concerning our Persons and Estates.
- 2. There must be a Conjunction betwixt Papist's and Protestants in Doctrine, Discipline, and Ceremonies; only it must not yet be called Poperie.
- 3. The Puritans, (under which name they include all those that desire to preserve the Laws and Liberties of the Kingdome, and to maintain Religion in the power of it;) must be either rooted-out of the Kingdome with force, or driven-out with feare. For the effecting of this it was thought The King attempts necessary to reduce Scotland to such Popish Superstitions and Innovations to introduce a new as might make them aft to joyne with England in that great change which land, in the year was intended. Whereupon new Canons, and a new Liturgie, were pressed 1637. And raises an upon them; and, when they refused to admit of them, an Army was raised force it. to force them to it, towards which the Clergie and the Papists were very forward in their contributions. The Scots likewise raised an Army for The Scots raise an their defence; And, when both Armies were come together, and ready for Army for their dea bloody encounter, His Majestie's own gracious disposition and the Counsel of the English Nobilitie, and dutiful submission of the Scots, did so far prevailagainst the evil Counsel of others, that a Pacification was made, and His Majestie returned with Peace and much bonour to London.

The unexpected reconciliation was most acceptable to all the Kingdom, except A Pacification. to the malignant party, whereof the Archbishop and the Earle of Strafford being heads, they and their faction begun to inveigh against the Peace, and to aggravate the proceedings of the States, which so incensed his 'Majesty that 'he forthwith' prepared again for War. And such was their confidence, that, having corrupted and distempered the whole frame and Government of the Kingdom, they did now hope to corrupt that which was the only means to restore all to a right frame and

temper again: to which end they perswaded His Majesty to call a Parliament, not to seeke counsel and advice of them, but to draw countenance and supply from them, and engage the whole Kingdom in their Quarrel': and, in the mean time, continued all their unjust Levies of Money, resolving either to make the Parliament pliant to their Will, and to establish mischiefe by a Law, or else to break it; and with more colour to go-on by violence, to take what they could not obtain by consent. The ground alledged for the justification of this War was this.

The King breakes Scots.

Papists, to be employed against the Scots.

The King called a don on the 18th of Scots.

That the undutiful demands of the Parliament of Scotland, was a sufficient

the Pacification, and reason for His Majesty to take Arms against them, without hearing the Reason of makes war upon the those Demands; And thereupon a new Army was prepared against them, their Ships were seized in all Ports, both of England and Ireland, and at Sea; Their The Earle of Straf- Petitions were rejected, and their Commissioners refused Audience. This whole ford raises an Army Kingdom was most miserably distempered with Levies of Men and Money, and Imin Ireland, consisting prisonments of those who denied to submit to those Levies. The Earle of Strafford past into Ireland, caused the Parliament there to declare against the Scots, to give four Subsidies towards that War; and to engage themselves, their lives and fortunes, for the prosecution of it, and gave directions for an Army of eight thousand foot. and one thousand horse, to be levied there, which were, for the most part, Papists. The Parliament met upon the thirteenth of April, one thousand, six hundred, and Parliament at Lon- forty. The Earle of Strafford, and the Archbishop of Canterbury, with their Party, April, 1640, hoping so prevailed with His Majesty, that the House of Commons was pressed to yield to receive Subsidies to a Supply for maintenance of the War with Scotland, before they had provided from them to be em- any reliefe for the great and pressing Grievances of the people, which, being against the fundamental Priviledge and proceeding of Parliament, was yet, in humble respect to his Majesty, so far admitted as that they agreed to take the matter of Supply into consideration, and two several days it was debated. Twelve Subsidies were demanded for the release of Ship-money alone; A third day was appointed for Conclusion, when the Heads of that Party began to feare the people might close with the King in satisfying his desire of Money: But that, withal, they were likely to blast their malicious designes against Scotland, finding them very much indisposed to give any countenance to that War.

Thereupon they wickedly advised the King to break-off the Parliament, and to return to the ways of Confusion, in which their owne evil intentions were most like to prosper and succeed.

But dissolved it on May.

After the Parliament ended the fifth of May, one thousand, six hundred, and the following 5th of forty, this Party grew so bold, as to counsel the King to Supply Himself out of His Subjects' estates by his own Power, at his own Will, without their consent. The very next day, some Members of both Houses had their Studies and Cabinets, yea their Pockets, searched: Another of them, not long after, was committed close prisoner, for not delivering some Petitions which he received by authority of that House, and, if harsher courses were intended, (as was reported) it is very probable that the sicknesse of the Earle of Strafford, and the Tumultuous rising in Southwarke, and about Lambeth, were the causes that such violent intentions

were

were not brought to execution. A false and scandalous Declaration against the House of Commons, was published in His Majestie's Name, which yet wrought little effect with the people, but only to manifest the impudence of those who were Authors of it.

A forced Loan of money was attempted in the City of London.

The Lord Mayor and Aldermen, in their several Wards, were enjoined to bring- The King and the in a List of the Names of such persons as they judged fit to lend, and of the Bishops again resolve cums they should lend. And such Aldermen as refused so to doe were committed make war upon sums they should lend. And such Aldermen as refused so to doe, were commit-the Scots.

ted to prison.

The Archbishop and the other Bishops and Clergie continued the Convocation, The Convocation of and, by a new Commission, turned it to a *Provincial-Synod*, in which, by an unheard-the Clergy continued to sit after the disso-of presumption, they made *Canons* that contains in them many matters contrary lution of the Parliato the King's Prerogative, to the fundamental Laws and Statutes of the Realme, ment, and made new to the right of Parliaments, to the Property and Liberty of the Subject, and Church. matters tending to sedition, and of dangerous consequence, thereby establishing their own Usurpations, justifying their Altar-worship, and those other superstitious Innovations, which they formerly introduced without warrant of Law.

They imposed a new Oath upon divers of His Majestie's Subjects both Ecclesiastical and Lay, for maintenance of their own Tyranny; and laid a great Tax upon the Clergie for Supply of his Majesty; and generally they shewed themselves very affectionate to the War with Scotland, which was, by some of them, styled Bellum Episcopale; and a Prayer was composed, and enjoined to be read in all Churches, calling the Scots Rebels, to put the two Nations into blood, and make them irreconcileable. All those pretended Canons and Constitutions were armed with the several Censures of Suspension, Excommunication, and Deprivation, by which they would have thrust-out all the good Ministers, and most of the well-affected people of the Kingdome, and left an easy passage to their owne Designe of Reconciliation with Rome. The Popish party enjoined such Exemptions from the Penal Laws, as amounted to a Toleration, besides many other encouragements, and Courtfavours: They had a Secretary of State, Sir Francis Windibank, a powerful Agent for the speeding of all their desires; and a Pope's Nuntio; residing here, to act and governe them according to such influences as he received from Rome, and to intercede for them with the most powerful concurrence of the forreigne Princes of that By his authority the Papists of all sorts, Nobility, Gentry and Clergy, Dangerous meetings were convocated after the manner of a Parliament; new Jurisdictions were erected of the Papists by the. of Romish Archbishops, Taxes levied, another State moulded within this State, in-authority of the dependant in Government, contrary in interest and affection, secretly corrupting Pope's Nuncio. the ignorant, or negligent, professors of our Religion, and closely uniting and combining themselves against such as were sound; in this posture waiting for an opportunitie by force to destroy those whom they could not hope to seduce. the effecting whereof, they were stren; hend with Armes and Munition, encouraged by superstitious Prayers, enjoined by the Nuncio to be weekly made for the

The Scots enter England with an Army, and take possession of Newcastle.

The King then agreed upon a cessation of arms with the present Parlia-Westminster on the Parliament. 3d of November, 1640.

prosperity of some great designe. And such power had they at Court, that secretly. a Commission was issued-out, intended to be issued to some great Men of that profession for the levying of Souldiers, and to command and employ them according to private Instructions, which, we doubt, were framed for the advantage of those who were the contrivers of them: His Majestie's Treasure was consumed, his Revenue anticipated, His Servants and Officers compelled to lend great sums of money; Multitudes were called to the Council-Table, who were tired with long attendance there, for refusing illegal payments. The Prisons were filled with their Commitments; many of the Sheriffs summoned into the Star-Chamber, and some imprisoned for not being quick enough in levying the Ship-money; the people languished under grief and feare, no visible hope being left, but in desperation. The Nobility began to be weary of their silence and patience, and sensible of the duty and trust which belongs to them: and thereupon some of the most eminent of them did petition His Majesty at such a time, when evil Counsels were so strong that they had reason to expect more hazard to themselves than redresse of those publick evils for which they interceded. Whilest the Kingdom was in this agitation and distemper, the Scots, (who were restrained in their trades, impoverished by the loss of many of their Ships, and bereaved of all possibility of satisfying His Majesty by any naked Supplication,) entered with a powerful Army into the Kingdom, and,(without any hostile Act, or spoile, in the Country, as they passed, more than forcing a passage over the Tyne at Newborne neer Newcastle,) possessed themselves of Newcastle, and had a faire opportunitie to presse-on further upon the King's Army: But duty and reverence to His Majesty, and brotherly love to the English Nation, made them stay there: whereby the King had leisure to entertain better Counsels; wherein God so blessed and directed him, that he summoned the great Council of Peers to meet at Yorke, upon the twenty-fourth of September, and there declared a Parliament to begin the third of November then following. The Scots, the first day of the great Council, presented an humble Petition to His Majesty; whereupon the the Scots, and called Treaty was appointed at Rippon, a present Cessation of Armes agreed-upon, ment, which met at and the full Conclusion of all differences referred to the wisdome and care of the At our first meeting all Oppositions seemed to vanish; the mischiefs were so evident, which those evil Counsellors had produced, that no Mandurst stand--up to defend them. Yet the worke itself afforded difficulty enough. The multiplied evils and corruption of sixteene yeeres, strengthened by custome and authority, and the concurrent interest of many powerful Delinquents, were now to be brought to judgement and reformation. The King's Houshold was to be provided-for: they having brought him to that want that he could not supply his ordinary and necessary expences, without the assistance of his people. Two Armies were to be payed, which amounted very neer to eighty thousand pounds a moneth; the people were to be tenderly charged, having been formerly exhausted with many burthensome Projects.

The difficulties seemed to be insuperable, which by the Divine Providence wee have overcome. The Contrarieties incompatible, which yet in a great measure we

have reconciled. Six Subsidies have been granted, and a Bill of Poll money, which, if it be duely levied, may equal six Subsidies more; in all six hundred thousand pounds. Besides we have contracted a Debt to the Scots of 220 thousand pounds; and yet God has so blessed the endeavours of this Parliament, that the Kingdom is a great gainer by all these charges. The Ship-money is abolished, which cost the Kingdom above two hundred thousand pounds a year, The Coat and Conduct-money, and other military charges, are taken-away. which, in many Countries, amounted to little lesse than the Ship-money. The Monopolies are all suppressed, whereof some few did prejudice the Subject, above a Million yearly. The Soap an hundred thousand pounds; the Wine three hundred thousand pounds; the Leather must needs exceed both: and Salt could be no lesse than that; besides the inferiour Monopolies, which, if they could be exactly computed, would make up a great summe. That which is more beneficial than all this is, that the root of these evils is taken-away; which was "the arbitrary power, pretended to be in his Majesty, of taxing the Subjects, or charging their estates, without consent in Parliament," which is now declared to be against Law, by the Judgement of both Houses, and likewise by an Act of Parliament. Another step of great advantage is this: the living Grievances, the evil Counsellors and Actors of these mischiefs, have been so quelled, by the justice done upon the Earle of Strafford, the flight of the Lord Finch and Secretary Windibank, the accusation and imprisonment of the Archbishop of Canterbury and of Judge Bartlet, and the impeachment of divers other Bishops and Judges, that it is like not onely to be an ease to the present times, but a preservation to the future.

The discontinuance of *Parliaments* is prevented by the Bill for a *Triennial Parliament*; and the abrupt dissolution of this *Parliament* is prevented by another Bill; by which it is provided, that it shall not be dissolved, or adjourned, without the

consent of both Houses.

Which two Laws, well-considered, may be thought more advantageous than all the former; because they secure a full operation of the present remedy, and

afford a perpetual Spring of remedies for the future.

The Star-chamber, the High-Commission, and the Court of the President and Council in the North, were so many forges of misery, oppression, and violence; and are all taken-away: whereby men are more secured in their persons, liberties, and estates, than they could be by any Law, or Example, for the regulation of those Courts, or Terrour of the Judges.

The immoderate power of the Council-Table, and the excessive abuse of that power, is so ordered and restrained, that we may well hope that no such things as were frequently done by them, to the prejudice of the publick liberty, will be known in future times any otherwise than by history, to give us and our posterity more occasion to praise God for His Majestie's goodness, and the faithful endeavours of this Parliament. The Canons, and the Canon-making, are blasted by the Vote of both Houses.

The exorbitant power of Bishops, and their Courts, are much abated, by some Provisions in the Bill against the High Commission-Court. The Authors of the many Innovations in Doctrine and Ceremonies, and the Ministers that have been scandalous in their lives; have been so terrified by just complaints and accusations,

N. B.

that we may well hope they will be more modest for the time to come; either inwardly convicted by the sight of their own folly, or outwardly restrained by the

fear of punishment.

The Forests are, by a good Law, reduced to their right bounds; The encroachments and oppressions of the Stannarie Courts; The Extortions of the Clerke of the Market; and the compulsion of the Subject to receive the Order of Knighthood against his will, by paying of Fines for not receiving it, and the vexatious proceedings thereupon for levying of those Fines, are by other beneficial Laws reformed and prevented

Many excellent Lawes and provisions are in preparation for removing the inordinate power, vexation, and usurpation of *Bishops*; for reforming the pride and idleness of many of the *Clergie*; for easing the people of unnecessary Ceremonies in Religion; for censuring and removing unworthy and unprofitable Ministers; and

for maintaining godly and diligent Preachers through the Kingdom.

Other things of main importance for the good of this Kingdom, are in proposition, though little could hitherto be done in regard of the many other more pressing businesses; which yet, before the end of this Session, we hope, may receive some progress and perfection.

The establishing and ordering the King's Revenue, that so the abuse of Officers, and superfluity of expences, may be cut-off, and the necessary disbursements for his Majestie's Honour, and the defence and government of the Kingdom, may be more

certainly provided for.

The regulating of Courts of Justice, and abridging both the delays and charges of Law-suits; The settling of some good courses for preventing the exportation of Gold and Silver, and the inequality of exchanges betwixt us and other Nations; for the advancing of native Commodities, the increase of our Manafactures, and the well-ballancing of Trade, whereby the Stock of the Kingdom may be increased, or, at least, kept from impairing, as, through neglect hereof, it hath done for many years last past: For improving the Herring-fishing upon our own Coasts; which will be of mighty use in the employment of the poore, and a plentiful

The obstructions which the Parliament has met-with in their work of reformation.

Nursery of Mariners for enabling the Kingdome in any great Action. The oppositions, obstructions, and other Difficulties, wherewith we have been encountered, and which still lie in our way, with some strength and much obstinacy, are these: The malignant Party (whom we have formerly described to be the Actors and Promoters of all our misery) have taken heart again; They have been able to prefer some of their own Factors and Agents to degrees of honour, to places of trust and employment; even during the Parliament. They have endeavoured to work in his Majesty ill impressions and opinions of Our Proceedings, as if we had altogether done our own work and not His, and had obtained from him many things very prejudicial to the Crown, both in respect of Prerogative and Profit. To wipe out this slander. Wee think good only to say thus much: That all that Wee have done, is for His Majesty, His Greatnesse, Honour, and Support: when Wee yield to give twenty-five thousand pounds a moneth for the reliefe of the Northern Countries, this was given to the King: for he was bound to protect his The persons who made it necessary for us to incur these enormous expences were his Majestie's evil Gounsellours, and their ill instruments, that were

Digitized by Google

Actors

Actors in those grievances which brought-in the Scots: and, if His Majesty should please to force those who were the Authors of this War to make satisfaction, (as he might justly and easily do,) it seems very reasonable that the people might well be excused from taking upon them this burthen, being altogether innocent and free from being any causes of it.

When we undertook the charge of the Army, which cost above 50,000l; a moneth, was not this given to the King? was it not His Majestie's Army? were not all the Commanders under contract with His Majesty at higher rates and greater wages than ordinary? and have not we taken upon us to discharge all the brotherly assistance of three hundred thousand pounds, which we gave the Scots? was it not toward, the repaire of those damages and losses which they received from the King's ships, and from his Ministers? These three particulars amount to above eleven hundred thousand pounds. Besides, his Majesty hath received, by impositions upon Merchandise, at least, four hundred thousand pounds; so that His Majesty hath had out of the Subjects purse, since the Parliament began, one Million and an half: and yet these men can be so impudent, as to tell his Majesty that we have done nothing for him. As to the second branch of this slander, we acknowledge, with much thankfulness, that His Majesty hath passed more good Bills to the advantage of his Subjects in this Parliament than have been passed in many ages; but, withal, we cannot forget, that these venomous counsels did manifest themselves, in some endeavours to hinder these good Acts from being passed: and, for both Houses of Parliament, we may with truth and modesty say thus much: "That we have ever been careful not to desire any thing that should weaken the Crown, either in just profit, or useful power." The triennial Parliament, for the matter of it, doth not extend to so much as by Law we ought to have required, there being two Statutes still in force for a Parliament to be once a-year; and for the manner of it, it is in the King's power, that it shall never take effect, if he, by a timely summons, shall prevent any other way of assembling. In the Bill for continuance of this present Parliament, there seems to be some restraint of the Royal Power in dissolving of Parliaments: but it is not to take it out of the Crown, but to suspend the execution of it for this time and occasion onely; which was so necessary for the King's own security, and the publike Peace, that without it we could not have undertaken any of these great charges, but must have left both the Armies to disorder and confusion, and the whole Kingdome to blood and rapine. The Star-chamber was much more fruitful in oppression than in profit, the great fines being for the most part given-away, and the rest stalled at long times. The fines of the High-Commission were in themselves unjust, and seldome, or never, came into the King's Purse. These foure Bills are particularly and more specially instanced: in the rest there will not be found so much as a shadow of prejudice to the Crown.

They have sought to diminish our reputation with the people, and to bring them out of love with Parliaments: the aspersions which they have attempted this way, have been such as these; "That we have spent much time, and done little, especially in those grievances which concerne Religion. That the Parliament is a burthen to the Kingdom by the abundance of Protections, which hinder Justice and Trade; and, by the many Subsidies granted, which are much more heavy than any taxes they formerly endured;" to which there is a ready answer: If the time spent in this Parlia-

2 K 2

N. B.

N. Bi

N. B.

ment

ment be considered in relation backward to the long growth and deep root of those grievances which we have removed,—to the powerful supports of those Delinquents whom we have pursued,—to the great necessities and other charges of the Commonwealth, for which we have provided: or, if it be considered in relation forward to the many advantages, which not only the present, but future ages, are like to reap by the good Laws, and other proceedings, in this Parliament; we doubt not but it will be thought by all indifferent Judgements, that our time hath been much better employed than a far greater proportion of time in many former Parliaments put-together; and the charges which have been laid upon the Subject, and the other inconveniences which they have borne, will seem very light in respect of the benefit they have and may receive. And with respect to the matter of protections, the Parliament is so sensible of it, that therein they intend to give them whatsoever ease may stand with Honour and Justice: and are in a way of passing a Bill to give them satisfaction.

The same malignant party have sought, by many subtle practices, to cause jealousies and divisions betwixt us and our brethren of Scotland, by slandering their proceedings and intentions towards us, and by secret endeavours to instigate and incense them and us one against another. They have had such a party of Bishops and Popish Lords in the House of Peeres as hath caused much opposition and delay in the prosecution of Delinquents, and hindered the proceedings of divers good Bills passed in the Commons-House, concerning there formation of sundry great abuses and corruptions both in Church and State.

They have laboured to seduce and corrupt some of the Commons-House, to draw them into conspiracies and combinations against the liberty of the Parliament: And, by their instruments and agents, they have attempted to disaffect and discontent His Majestie's Army, and to engage it for the maintenance of their wicked and traiterous designes, the keeping-up of Bishops in votes and functions, and, by force, to compel the Parliament to order, limit, and dispose their proceedings in such a manner as might best concur with the intentions of this dangerous and potent faction: And, when one mischievous designe, and attempt, of theirs, to bring-on the Army against the Parliament and the City of London, had been discovered and prevented, they presently undertook another of the same damnable nature, with this addition to it, to endeavour to make the Scottish Army neutral, whilst the English Army, (which they had laboured to corrupt and envenome against us by their false and slanderous suggestions,) should execute their malice, to the subversion of our Religion, and the dissolution of our government.

Thus they have been continually practicing to disturb the peace, and plotting the destruction, even of all the King's Dominions, and have employed their Emissaries and Agents in them-all, for the promoting of their devilish Designes; which the vigilancy of those who were well-affected hath still discovered and defeated before they were ripe for execution in England and Scotland: onely in Ireland, (which was farther-off,) they have had time and opportunity to mould and prepare their work, and had brought it to that perfection, that they would have possessed themselves of that whole Kingdome, totally subverted the government of it, rooted-out Religion,

Religion, and destroyed all the Protestants, whom the conscience of their duty to God, their King, and Country, would not have permitted to join with them, if, by God's wonderful providence, their main enterprise upon the City and Castle of Dublin had not been detected and prevented upon the very Eve before it should have been executed. Notwithstanding this detection, they have, in other parts of that Kingdom, broken-out into open Rebellion, surprising Townes and Castles, and committed murders, and rapes, and other villanies; and shaken-off all bonds of obedience to His Majesty, and the laws of the Realm; and, in general, have kindled such a fire as nothing but God's infinite blessing upon the wisdom and endeavours of this State will be able to quench. And certainly, had not God, in his great mercy unto this Land, discovered and confounded their former designes, we should have been the Prologue to this Tragedy in Ireland, and have, by this time, been made a lamentable spectacle of misery and confusion to the World.

And, now, what hope have we but in God, whenas the only means of our subsistence, and power of reformation, is, under him, in the Parliament? But what can we, the Commons, do without the conjunction of the House of Lords? and what conjunction can we expect there, when the Bishops and Recusant Lords are so numerous and prevalent, that they are able to cross and interrupt our best endeavours for Reformation, and, by that means. give advantage to this malignant Party to traduce our proceedings? They infuse into the people, that we mean to abolish all Church-government, and leave every man to his own fancy for the service and worship of God, absolving him of that obedience which he owes, under God, unto His Majesty, whom we know to be entrusted with the Ecclesiastical Law as well as with the temporal, to regulate all the members of the Church of England by such rules of Order and Discipline as are established by Parliament, which is his great Council, in all affairs both in Church and State. We confess our intention is, and our endeavours have been, to reduce within bounds that exorbitant power which the Prelates have assumed unto themselves, so contrary both to the word of God and to the Laws of the Land; to which end we past the Bill for removing them from their temporal power and employments.; that so they might the better apply themselves, with meekness, to the discharge of their Functions; which Bill themselves opposed, and were the principal instruments of crossing it.

And we do here declare, that it is far from our purpose, or desire, to let loose the golden reins of Discipline and Government in the Church, to leave private persons, or particular Congregations, to take-up what forme of divine Service they please: For we hold it requisite that there should be, throughout the whole Realme, a conformity to that Order which the Laws enjoine, according to the Word of God. And we desire to unburthen the consciences of men with respect to the observance of needless and superstitious Ceremonies, and to suppress Innovations, and take-away the monuments of Idolatry. And the better to effect the intended Reformation, we desire that there may be a general Synod of the most grave, pious learned, and judicious Divines of this Island, assisted by some from foreign parts professing the same Religion with us; who may consider of all things necessary for the peace and good government of the Church, and represent the results of their consultations

unto the Parliament, to be there allowed of and confirmed, and receive the stamp of authority, thereby to find passage and obedience through-out the Kingdome.

They have maliciously charged us, "that we intend to destroy and discourage Learning;" whereas it is our chiefest care and desire to advance it, and to provide a competent maintenance for conscionable and preaching Ministers throughout the Kingdome; which will be a great encouragement to Scholars, and a certain means whereby the want, meannesse, and ignorance, to which a great part of the Clergy is now subject, will be prevented. And we intend likewise to reforme and purge the Fountains of Learning, the two Universities; that the streams flowing from thence may be cleere and pure, and an honour and comfort to the whole Land.

They have strained to blast our proceedings in Parliament by wresting the interpretations of our Orders, from their genuine intention. They tell the people that our meddling with the power of Episcopacy, hath caused Sectaries and Conventicles; when Idolatry and Popish Ceremonies, introduced into the Church by the command of the Bishops, have not onely debarred the people from thence, but expelled them from the Kingdome. Thus, with Eliah, we are called, by this Malignant party, the troublers of the State; and still, while we endeavour to reforme their abuses, they make us the Authors of those mischiefs we study to prevent.

Measures necessary dangers from the Papists.

For the perfecting of the work begun, and removing all future impediments, to be taken to avoid we conceive these courses will be very effectual; seeing the Religion of the Papists hath such principles as do certainly tend to the destruction and extirpation of all

Protestants, when they shall have opportunity to effect it.

It is necessary, in the first place, to keep them in such condition, as that they may not be able to do us any hurt, and for avoiding of such connivance and favour as hath heretofore been shewed unto them, "That His Majesty be pleased to grant a standing Commission to some choice men named in Parliament, who may take notice of their increase, their counsels, and proceedings, and use all due means, by execution of the Laws, to prevent any mischievous designes against the peace and safety of this Kingdom; and that some good course be taken to discover the counterfeit and false conformity of papists to the Church, by colour whereof persons very much disaffected to the true Religion have been admitted into places of greatest authority and trust in the Kingdom."

Measures necessary of the Laws and Liberties of the King-

For the better preservation of the Lawes and Liberties of the Kingdom, that all for the preservation illegal grievances and exactions be presented and punished at the Sessions, and Assizes: and that Judges and Justices be careful to give this in charge to the Grand-Jury, and both the Sheriffe and Justices to be sworne to the due execution of the Petition of Right, and other Laws: That his Majesty be humbly petitioned by both Houses to employ such Counsellours, Ambassadours, and other Ministers, in managing his business at home and abroad, as the Parliament may have cause to confide-in, without which we cannot give His Majesty such supplies for support of his own estate, nor such assistance to the Protestant party beyond the Sea. as is desired.

> It may often fall-out, that the Commons may have just cause to take exceptions at some men for being Counsellors, and yet not charge those men with crimes. For there be grounds of diffidence which lye not in proof; there are others which.

which, though they may be proved, yet are not legally criminal. To be a known favourer of Papists; or to have been very forward in defending, or countenancing, some great offenders questioned in Parliament; or to speake contemptuously of either of the Houses of Parliament, or of Parliamentary proceedings; or such as are Factors, or Agents, for any foreign Prince of another Religion; or such as are justly suspected to get Counsellours places, or any other places of trust, concerning publike Employment, for money. For all these, and divers others, we may have great reason to be earnest with His Majesty not to put his great affairs into such hands, though we may be unwilling to proceed against them in any legal way of charge, or impeachment.

That all Counsellours of State may be sworne to observe those Laws which concern the Subject in his liberty; that they may likewise take an Oath not to receive any gift, reward, or Pension, from any foreign Prince, but such, as they, within some reasonable time, discover to the Lords of His Majestie's Council: and, although they should wickedly forsweare themselves, yet it may herein doe good to make them known to be false and perjured to those who employ them, and thereby bring them into as little credit with them as with us.

That His Majesty may have cause to be in love with good counsel and good men, by shewing him, in an humble and dutiful manner, how full of advantage it would be to himself, to see his own estate settled in a plentiful condition to support his honour, to see his people united in ways of duty to him, and endeavours of the publike good; to see happiness, wealth, peace, and safety derived to his own Kingdom, and procured to his Allies, by the influence of his own power and government.

That all good courses may be taken to unite the two Kingdomes of England and Scotland, to be mutually aiding and assisting to one another for the com-

mon good of the Island, and honour of both.

To take-away all differences amongst ourselves for matters indifferent in their own nature concerning Religion, and to unite ourselves against the common enemies; who are the better enabled by our divisions to destroy us all, as they hope, and have often endeavoured, to do.

To labour by all offices of friendship to unite the foreign Churches with us in the same cause, and to seek their liberty, safety, and prosperity; as bound thereunto both by charity to them, and by wisdom for our own good. For by this means our own strength shall be increased; and, by a mutual concurrence to the same common end, we shall be enabled to procure the good of the whole body of the Protestant Profession.

If these things may be observed, we doubt not but God will crown this Parliament with such successe as shall be the beginning and foundation of more honour and happinesse to his Majesty than ever yet was enjoyed by any of his Royal Predecessors.

End of the Grand Remonstrance, or Declaration of the State of the Kingdom, from the beginning of the Reign of King Charles the First to December, 1641, by the House of Commons. Presented to the King at Hampton Court.

Digitized by Google

His

HIS MAJESTIE'S ANSWER to the PETITION which accompanied the DECLARATION presented to Him at Hampton-Court, Dec. 1, 1641.

WE, having received from you, soone after Our returne out of Scotland, a long Petition, consisting of many desires, of great moment, together with a Declaration, of a very unusual nature, annexed thereunto, We should have taken some time to consider of it, as befitted Us in a matter of that consequence, being confident, that your own reason and regard to Us, as well as Our expresse intimation by Our Comptroller to that purpose, would have restrained you from the publishing of it, till such time, as you should have received Our Answer to it. But, much against Our expectation, finding the contrary, that the said Declaration is already abroad in Print, by directions from your House, as appears by the printed Copy: We must let you know that We are very sensible of this disrespect. Notwithstanding, it is Our Intention, that no failing on your part shall make Us faile, on Ours, of giving all due satisfaction to the desires of Our People, in a Parliamentary way; And therefore we send you this Answer to your Petition; reserving Our-selfe, in point of the Declaration, which We think unparliamentary, and shall take a course to do that which We shall thinke fit in prudence and honour.

To the Petition, We say; that, although there are divers things in the Preamble of it, which We are so far from admitting, that We professe We cannot at all understand them, as, Of a wicked and malignant party prevalent in the Government; Of some of that party admitted to Our Privie-Council, and to other Employments of trust and neerest to Us and Our Children; Of Endeavours to same among the People false scandals and imputations to blemish and disgrace the Proceedings of the Parliament: All, or any, of which did we know of, We should be as ready to remedie and punish, as you to complaine-of. That the Prayers of your Petition are grounded upon such Premisses as we must in no wise admit; yet,

notwithstanding, We are pleased to give this answer to you.

To the first, concerning Religion, consisting of several branches, We say, that for the preserving the Peace and Safety of the Kingdome from the designes of the Popish Party, We have, and will still concur with all the just desires of Our People, in a Parliamentary way; That for the depriving of the Bishops of their Votes in Parliament, We would have you consider, that their right is grounded upon the Fundamental Law of the Kingdome, and constitution of Parliament. This We would have you consider: But, since you desire Our concurrence herein in a Parliamentary way, We will give no further answer at this time.

As for the abridging of the inordinate power of the Clergy, We conceive that the taking-away of the High-Commission-Court, hath well moderated that: But, if there continue any Usurpations, or Excesses, in their Jurisdictions, We therein neither have, nor will, protect them.

Unto

Unto that Clause which concerneth Corruptions (as you style them) in Religion, in Church-government, and in Discipline, and the removing of such unnecessary Ce-Concerning Reli-remonies as weake Consciences might check-at; [We answer] That, for any illegal giou and Church-Innovations which may have crept-in, We shall willingly concur in the removal of government. them. And, if Our Parliament shall advise Us to call a National Synod, which may duly examine such Ceremonies as give just cause of offence to any, We shall take it into consideration, and apply Our Selfe to give due satisfaction therein. But We are very sorry to hear, in such general terms, Corruption in Religion objected; since We are perswaded in our conscience, that no Church can be found upon the earth, that professeth the true Religion with more purity of Doctrine than the Church of England doth, nor where the Government and Discipline are jointly more beautified, and free from superstition, than as they are here established by Law, which (by the grace of God) We will, with Constancy, maintain (while We live) in their Purity and Glory, not only against all invasions of Popery, but also from the irreverence of those many Schismaticks and Separatists, wherewith, of late, this Kingdom and this City abounds, to the great dishonour and hazard both of Church and State; for the suppression of whom We require your timely and active assistance.

To the second prayer of the Petition, concerning the removal and choice of Coun-Concerning the resellors, [We answer] that We know not any members of Our Council to whom the moval of Coun-Character set-forth in the Petition can belong: That, by those of them whom We had exposed to trial, We have already given you sufficient testimony, that there is no man so near unto Us in place, or affection, whom We will not leave to the Justice of the Law, if you bring a particular charge, and sufficient proofs, against him; and of this We do again assure you. But, in the mean time, We wish you to forbear such general aspersions as may reflect upon all Our Council, since you name none in particular.

That, for the choice of Our Counsellours, and Ministers of State, to deprive us of that would be to debar Us that natural liberty all Free-men have: And, as it is the undoubted right of the Crowne of England, to call such persons to Our Secret Councils, to publick employment, and Our particular service, as We shall think fit, So We are, and ever shall be, very careful to make election of such persons in those places of trust, as shall have given good testimonies of their abilities and integrity, and against whom there can be no just cause of exception, whereon reasonably to ground a diffidence: and to choices of this nature, We assure you that the mediation of the persons nearest unto Us hath always concurred.

To the third prayer of your Petition, concerning Ireland, [We answer], That We Concerning the forunderstand your desire of not alienating the forfeited Lands thereof, to proceed from feited estates in Ireyour much care and love; And, likewise, we agree that it may be a Resolution very fit for Us to take. But, whether it be seasonable to declare a Resolution of that nature before the events of a War be seen, that We much doubt-of. Howsoever, We cannot but thank you for this care, and your cheerful engagement for the suppression of that Rebellion; upon the speedy effecting whereof, the glory of God in the Pro-

Digitized by GOOGLE

testant Profession, the safety of the British there, Our honour, and that of the Nation, so much depend. All the Interests of this Kingdom being so involved in that businesse, We cannot but quicken your affections therein, and shall desire you so to frame your Counsels, and to give such expedition to the work, as the nature thereof, and the pressure, in point of time, requires, and whereof you are put in mind by the daily insolence and increase of those Rebels.

For Conclusion, your promise to apply yourselves to such courses as may support Our Royal Estate with Honour and Plenty at home, and with Power and Reputation abroad, is that which We have ever promised ourself, both from your loyalties and Affections, and also for what We have already done, and shall daily go adding unto, for the comfort and happiness of our people.

go adding unto, for the comfort and happiness of our peoples

HIS MAJESTIE'S DECLARATION, to all His loving Subjects, in Answer to the REMONSTRANCE or DECLARATION of the STATE of the Kingdom, made by the House of Commons.

Published with the advice of His Privy-Council.

ALTHOUGH We do not believe that Our House of Commons intended, by their Remonstrance of the State of the Kingdom, to put Us to any Apology, either for Our past or present Actions; Notwithstanding, since they have thought it so very necessary (upon their Observation of the present Distemper) to publish the same for the satisfaction of all Our loving Subjects, We have thought it very suitable to the duty of Our place, (with which God hath trusted Us) to do Our part to so good a Work; in which We shall not think it below Our Kingly dignity to descend to any particular which may compose and settle the affections of Our meanest Subjects, since We are so conscious to Our Selfe of such upright Intentions and endeavours, and onely of such (for which We give God thanks) for the Peace and happinesse of Our Kingdom (in which the prosperity of Our Subjects must be included,) that We wish from Our heart, that even Our most secret thoughts were published to their view and examination; Though We must confesse We cannot but be very sorry in this conjuncture of time (when the unhappinesse of this Kingdom is so generally understood abroad) that there should be such a necessitie of publishing so many Particulars; from which, We pray, that no inconveniences may 'ensue, that were not intended.

We shall, in few words, passe-over that part of the Narrative, wherein the Misfortunes of this Kingdom from Our first entering to the Crown, to the beginning of this Parliament, are remembred in so sensible expressions; And that other, which acknowledgeth the many good Lawes passed by our Grace and Favour this Parliament, for the Security of Our people; of which We shall only say thus much, That, as We have not refused to passe any Bill presented to Us by our Parliament, for redresse of those Grievances mentioned in the Remonstrance, so We have not had a greater Motive for the passing those Lawes than our own Resolution, (grounded

(grounded upon Our Observation and understanding of the State of Our Kingdom) to have freed Our Subjects, for the future, from those Pressures which were grievous to them, if those Laws had not been propounded: which therefore We shall as inviolably maintain as We look to have Our own Rights preserved; not doubting but that all Our loving Subjects will look-on those Remedies with that full gratitude and affection, that even the memory of what they have formerly undergone. by the Accidents and necessities of those times, will not be unpleasant to them. And possibly, in a pious sense of God's blessing upon this Nation (how little share soever We shall have of the acknowledgement,) they will confesse they have enjoyed a great measure of happinesse (even in these last sixteen yeeres) both in peace and plenty, not onely comparatively in respect of their Neighbours, but even of those times which were justly accounted Fortunate.

The Feares and Jealousies which may make some impression in the mindes of Our People, We will suppose may be of two sorts; either for Religion, or for Liberty and their civil Interests. The Feares for Religion may haply be not only as Ours, here established, may be invaded by the Romish partie, but as it is accompanied with some Ceremonies, at which some tender Consciences really are, or pretend to be, scandalized: for of any other ceremonies which have been used without any legal Warrant, or injunction, and already are, or speedily may be, abolished.

We shall not speake.

Concerning Religion, as there may be some suspicion of favour, or inclination, to The King declares the Papists, We are willing to Declare to all the world, That, as We have been, binneelf to be sincerely and zealously control to the Religion now cerely and zealously cerely from Our childhood, brought-up in, and practised, the Religion now esta-attached to the Problished in this Kingdom; so it is well known, that We have (not contented simply testant Religion after with the Principles of Our Education) given a good proportion of Our time and a careful examination of the paines to the examination of the grounds of this Religion, as it is different from grounds of it. that of Rome, and are, from Our soule, so fully satisfied and assured, that it is the most pure, and agreeable to the Sacred Word of God, of any Religion now practised in the Christian world: That, as We believe that we can maintain the same by unanswerable reasons, so We hope We should readily seale to it by the effusion of Our Blood, if it pleased God to call us to that sacrifice. And therefore nothing can be so acceptable unto Us, as any proposition which may contribute to the advancement of it here, or the propagation of it abroad, being the only means to drawdowne a blessing from God upon ourselves and this Nation. And We have been extremely unfortunate, if this profession of Ours be wanting to Our people: Our constant practice in our owne Person having alwayes been (without ostentation) as much to the evidence of Our care and duty herein, as We could possibly tell how to express.

For differences amongst ourselves as to matters indifferent in their own nature. concerning Religion, We shall, in tendernesse to any number of Our loving Subjects, very willingly comply with the advice of Our Parliament, that some Law may be made for the exemption of tender consciences from punishment, or prosecution

for such Ceremonies, and in such cases, which, by the judgement of most men are held to be matters indifferent, and, of some, to be absolutely unlawful. Provided, that this case be attempted and pursued with that modesty, temper, and submission, that, in the mean time, the peace and quiet of the Kingdom be not disturbed, the decency and comelinesse of God's service discountenanced, nor the pious sober, and devout actions of those Reverend Persons who were the first labourers in the blessed Reformation, or of that time, be scandaled and defamed. For We cannot, without griefe of heart, and without some tax upon Our selfe, and Our Ministers, for the non-execution of Our Laws, look upon the bold Licence of some men, in Printing of Pamphlets, and in Preaching and Printing of Sermons, so full of bitterness and malice against the present Government, against the Laws established, so full of sedition against Ourself, and the peace of the Kingdom, that We are many times amazed to consider by what Eyes these things are seen, and by what Ears they are heard: And, therefore, We have good cause to command, as We have done, and hereby do, all Our Judges and Ministers of Justice, Our Attorney and Solicion 'General, and the rest of Our learned Counsel, to proceed with all speed against such, and their Abettors, who, either by writing, or words, have so boldly and maliciously violated the Laws, disturbed the peace of the Common-wealth, and, as much as in them lies, shaken the very foundation upon which that peace and happiness is founded and constituted. And we doubt not but all Our loving Subjects will be very sensible that this busie, virulent, demeanour, is a fit Prologue to nothing but confusion; and, if not very seasonably punished and prevented, will not only be a blemish to that wholesome accommodation We intend, but an unspeakable scandal and imputation, even upon the profession and Religion of this Our Kingdom of England.

Concerning the Civil Liberties and Interest of Our Subjects, We shall need to say the less, having erected so many lasting Monuments of Our Princely and fatherly care of Our People, in those many excellent Lawes passed by Us in this Parliament; which, in truth, (with very much content to Ourself) We conceive to be so large and ample, that very many sober men have very little left to wish-for.

We understood well the Right, and pretences of Right, We departed from in the consenting to the Bills of the Triennial Parliament and for the continuance of this present Parliament, and in the preamble to the Bill of Tonnage and Poundage; the matter of which (having begot so many disturbances in late Parliaments,) We were willing to remove, that no interest of Ours might hereafter break that correspondence; abundantly contenting Ourself with an Assurance (which We still have) that We should be repaired and supplied by a just proportion of confidence, bounty, and obedience, of Our people. In the Bills for the taking-away the High-Commission and Star-Chamber Courts, We believed We had given that real satisfaction, that all jealousies and apprehensions of Arbitrary pressures under the Civil or Ecclesiastical state, would easily have been abandoned, especially when they saw all possible doubts secured by the visitation of a Triennial Parliament.

These, and others of no mean consideration, We had rather should be valued

in the hearts and affections of Our people, than in any mention of Our own, not doubting, but that, as We have taken all these occasions to render their condition most comfortable and happy, so they will always, in a grateful and dutiful relation; be ready, with equal tenderness and alacrity, to advance Our Rights, and preserve Our Honour, upon which their own security and subsistence so much depends. And We will be so careful, that no particular shall be presented unto Us for the compleating and establishing that security, to which We will not, with the same readiness, contribute Our best assistance.

If these resolutions be the effects of Our present Counsels, (and We take God to witness that they are such, and that all Our loving Subjects may confidently expect the benefit of them from Us,) certainly no ill design upon the Publick can accompany such Resolutions, neither will there be greater cause of suspicion of any Persons preferred by Us to degrees of Honour, and places of trust and employment, since this Parliament; and, We must confess, that, amongst Our misfortunes, we reckon it not the least, That, having not retained in Our Service, nor protected, any one Person, against whom Our Parliament hath excepted, during the whole sitting of it, and having, in all that time, scarce vouchsafed to any man an instance of Our Grace and Favour, but to such who were under some eminent Character of Estimation amongst Our people, there should so soon be any misunderstanding, or jealousie of their fidelity and uprightness, especially in a time when We take all occasions to declare, That We conceive Ourself only capable of being served by honest Men, and in honest ways. However, if, in truth, We have been mistaken in such Our election of our publick servants, the particulars shall be no sooner discovered to Us, either by Our own observation, or other certain information, than We will leave them to Publick Justice, under the marks of Our displeasure.

If, notwithstanding this, any malignant Party shall take heart, and he willing to sacrifice the Peace and Happiness of their Country to their own sinister ends and ambitions, under what pretence of Religion and Conscience soever;—If they shall endeavour to lessen Our Reputation and Interest, and to weaken Our lawful Power and Authority with our good Subjects;—if they shall go about, by discountenancing the present Laws, to loosen the Bonds of Government, that all disorder and confusion may break-in upon Us;—We doubt not, but God, in his good time, will discover them unto Us; and the wisdome and courage of Our High-Court of Parliament will join with Us in their suppression and punishment.

Having now said all that We can, to expresse the clearness and uprightness of Our Intentions to Our people, and done all We can to manifest those Intentions, We cannot but confidently believe that all Our good Subjects will acknowledge Our part to be fully performed, both in deeds past, and in present Resolutions to do whatsoever, with Justice, may be required of Us, and that their quiet and prosperity depends now wholly upon themselves, and is in their own power, by yielding all obedience and due reverence to the Law, which is the inheritance of every subject, and the only security he can have for his Life, Liberty, or Estate; and the which

Digitized by Google

being neglected, or dis-esteemed, (under what specious shews soever) a great measure of infelicity, if not an irreparable confusion, must, without doubt, fall upon them. And, We doubt not, it will be the most acceptable Declaration a King can make to His Subjects. that, for Our part, We are resolved not only duly to observe the Laws of Ourself, but to maintain them against what opposition soever, though with the hazard of Our being.

Of the necessity of relieving the distressed Protestants of Ireland,

And Our hope is, that not only the Loyalty and good Affections of all Our loving Subjects will concur with Us in the constant preserving a good understanding between Us and Our people; but, at this time, their own, and Our, interest, and compassion of the lamen able condition of Our poor Protestant Subjects in Ireland, will invite them to a faire intelligence and unity amongst themselves, that so We may, with one heart, intend the relieving and recovering that unhappy Kingdom, where those barbarous Rebels practice such inhumane and unheard-of Outrages upon Our miserable people, that no Christian ear can hear without horrour, not any story parallel. And, as we look upon this as the greatest affliction it hath pleased God to lay upon Us, so Our unhappiness is encreased, in that, by the distempers at home, so early remedies have not been applied to those growing evils as the expectation and necessity there requires; though, for Our part, as We did, upon the first notice, acquaint Our Parliament of Scotland (where We then were) with that Rebellion, requiring their aid and assistance; and gave like speedy intimation and recommendation to Our Parliament here; so, since Our return hither, We have been forward to all things which have been proposed to Us towards that work, and have lately Ourself offered (by a Message to Our House of Peers, and communicated to Our House of Commons) to take upon Us the care to raise speedily ten thousand English Volunteers for that service, if the House of Commons shall declare, that they will pay them; which particulars We are (in a manner) necessitated to publish, since, We are informed, that the malice of some persons hath whispered it abroad, That the no speedier advancing of this business hath proceeded from some want of alacrity in Us to this great work; whereas We acknowledge it would be a high crime against Almighty God, and inexcusable to Our good Subjects of Our three Kingdoms, if We did not, to the utmost, employ all Our powers and faculties, to the speediest and most effectual assistance and protection of that distressed people.

And We shall now conjure all Our good Subjects (of what degree soever) by all the Bonds of Love, Duty, or Obedience, that are precious to good men, to join with Us for the Recovery of the Peace of that Kingdom, and the preservation of the Peace of this, to remove all their Doubts and Fears, which may interrupt their affection to Us, and all their Jealousies and apprehensions, which may lessen their Charity to each other: and then (if the sins of this Nation have not prepared an inevitable Judgement for us all) God will yet make Us a Great and glorious King over a Free and Happy People.

*This Declaration of the King to his subjects, in answer to the foregoing grand Remonstrance, or Declaration, of the House of Commons, is generally supposed to have been drawn-up by Mr. Edward Myde, who was afterwards Lord Chancellor of England and Earl of Clarendon.

A COMMON

A COMMON COUNCIL held at GUILDHALL, in the City of LONDON, the 31st of December, 1641.

Commune Concilium tentum in Camerà Guild-hall, Civitatis Londoniæ, tricesimo primo die Decembris 1641, post meridiem, Anno Regni Domini Nostri Caroli, nunc Regis Angliæ, &c. decimo septimo, coràm Ricardo Gurney, Milite et Baronetto, Majore Civitatis Londoniæ, Thomâ Gardiner, Milite, ejusdem Civitatis Recordatore, Ed. Bromfield, Milite, et Ed. Wright, Milite, et Aldermanno dictæ Civitatis, Johanne Cordell, Milite, Johanne Gayer, Milite, Jacobo Garrad, Milite, ac Aldermanno, Thomâ Atkin, Aldermanno, Johanne Wallaston, Milite et Aldermanno, Thomâ Adams, Johanne Warner, Johanne Towse, Abrahamo Reynardson, et Thomâ Austin, prædictæ Civitatis Aldermannis, ac Georgio Garret et Georgio Clark, Militibus et Aldermannis ac Vicecomitibus Civitatis prædictæ, nec non majore parte Conciliariorum de Communi Concilio ejusdem Civitatis, tunc et ibidem assemblatorum.

-AT this Common-Council Master Recorder declared, That, by the direction of the Right Honourable the Lord Mayor, he was to signifie to them the cause of their now Assembling, how that his Lordship had yesterday received a Letter from Sir Edward Nicholas, Knight, one of His Majestie's principal Secretaries, intimating that it was His Majestie's pleasure, that his Lordship should call a Common-Council against this time, and then his Lordship should be advertised of His Majestie's further pleasure: And that there was now at this present in the Council-Chamber an honourable person, being the Lord Newburgh, Chancellour of His Majestie's Court of the Dutchy, and one of His Majestie's most honourable Privy-Council, come hither to deliver His Majestie's Messsage, or Request, to this Court: And thereupon the Right Honourable the Lord Newburgh was desired to come into this Court, who, being here, declared and said in this manner; "Gentlemen, His Majesty, out of His good affection towards the City, and acknowledging of your great loves lately shewed unto His Highnesse, hath sent me on a Message unto you," assuring it to be the same contained in a Paper, which he presented and desired to be read to this Common-Council, which was accordingly done, the tenour whereof followeth in these words, viz."

There having been of late many tumultuary and riotous Assemblies of people about Our Palaces of White-hall and Westminster, to the great disturbance of Us and Our Parliament: and We having received information, that some ill-affected persons do still endeavour to incite the like tumults again, We have thought fit to recommend to your especial care the preventing them, as far as in you lies, especially during the ensuing Holidays, at which time the idlenesse of many may make them after to such disorders. We have thought fit likewise to let you know, that We are so well-assured of the

Digitized by Google

good affections of our City of London, by the great expressions which it hath made unto Us of late, that We can in no wise understand it to have any share in the fault of these tumults and distempers, but that they proceed meerly from the mean, unruly, people of the Suburbs. And, as We are most confident of the hearts and good affections of Our Citie of London towards Us and Our Government, and well not entertain any other opinion; so We do desire them not to be disturbed by any jealousies that ill-affected persons may endeavour to sowe, but to rest most confident and assured, that the safetie, the protection, and the prosperity of the City, shall ever be with Us a principal care.

After the reading of which most gracious Message, whereby is fully manifested and expressed His Majestie's gracious goodnesse and great care for the safety and prosperity of this City (the Lord Newburgh having withdrawn himself,) this Common-Council tooke the same into their serious consideration, and how for the present to return, by this Honourable person, unto His Majesty an answer with all humility and thankfulness; And, after much debate, it was fully agreed and resolved of by this Common Council, That, in the first place, should be returned and rendered unto I'is Majestie from this Common-Council, as the Representative Body of the whole City, their humble duty in all thankful manner, for His goodnesse and gracious love and care manifested to this City.

Secondly, that it should be signified unto His Majesty, that neither This Court, nor any particular member thereof, hath had any hand in these Tumultuous and kiotous proceedings, and that they, and every of them, do disavow and disclaime `the ∻ame.

Thirdly, That it may be likewise signified, That this Court (as the Representative Body of the whole City) doth promise from hence-forth their hest endeavours to prevent and suppresse in time to come (as far as in them lyeth), all such, or the like, Tumul uous Assemblies, and all Mutinous and Rebellious persons.

And lastly, That the humble desire of this Court may be presented unto His Majesty, to be graciously pleased, that all the Delinquents and causers of these Tumults, whatsoever they be, being apprehended, may be brought into examination, and receive condigne punishment according to the Law.

And these foure things thus agreed upon, were, by direction of this Common Council, here openly declared and delivered, by the mouth of Master Recorder, unto that Honourable Per on, the Lord Newburgh, here present, with desire that the same should be, by his Lordship, accordingly presented unto His Majesty; the which he promised to perform with trust.

And afterwards this Court entred into further consultation and debate, touching the tumulauous and riotous Assemblies lately spread, night and day, in several parts of this City, to the great trouble and affrightment of His Majestie's good Subjects, and also touching the great neglect of that due respect which ought to be given by the Inhabitants of this City, to the several Precepts lately issued-out by my Lord Mayor for a continual Watch and Ward day and night, for prevention and suppression of such Tumults and Distempers.

And likewise touching the great neglect in appearance of the Trained Bands of this City to their Colours at the beat of the Drum, especially in these times of danger, in contempt of Authority, being a matter of exceeding great consequence, and not fit to be suffered. And thereupon this Common Council, taking much to heart, that such disobedience should grow and be found in the Inhabitants of this City, to the great disrespect of Magistracy and contempt of Government; And that such Disorders and Tumultuary, Assemblies should be permitted in such a City as this, (formerly famous for the good and quiet Government thereof,) hath thought it very expedient and Behoveful, for redresse and remedy to be had in these abuses, (being not fit to be any longer endured,) That every Member of this Common-Council, now assembled, shall, in their several Precincts, spread it abroad, and make it known, That, if any person, or persons, shall from henceforth neglect his duty and service to be performed, as aforesaid, and shall not doe his best endeavour to suppresse, or prevent, any Tumults or Riotous Assemblies, that shall hereafter be attempted within this City, or Liberties thereof, that then he, or they, offending shall receive condigne punishment, according to his or their demerits.

And it is further thought fit, and so agreed by this Common-Council, that my Lord Mayor may send-out his Precepts in such manner, and to such purpose, as his Lordship, and his Brethren the Aldermen, shall think fit, for Watch and Ward, raising of Arms, or otherwise, for the safety and preservation of this City; to which this Court, and all the Members thereof, promise all due and cheerful obedience.

HIS MAJESTIE'S MESSAGE, sent by the Lord CHAMBERLAIN to the House of PEERS, the 28th of December, 1641.

HIS Majestie, being very sensible of the great Miseries and Distresses of His Subjects in the kingdom of *Ireland*, which go daily increasing so fast, and the Blood which hath been already spilt by the crueltie and barbarousness of those Rebels, crying-out so loud; and, perceiving how slowly the Succours designed thither goon, His Majesty hath thought fit to let your Lordships know, and desires you to acquaint the House of Commons therewith. That His Majestie will take care, that by Commission which He shall grant, ten thousand English Voluntiers shall be speedily raised for that Service, if so the House of Commons shall declare that they will pay them.

By the KING.

A Proclamation against the Irish Rebels, January 1, 1641-42.

WHEREAS divers lewd and wicked persons have, of late, risen in Rebellion in Our Kingdom of Ireland, surprised divers of Our Forts and Castles, and possessed themselves thereof; surprised some of our Garrisons; possessed themselves of some of Our Magazines of Arms and Munition; dispossessed many of Our good and loyal Subjects of the British Nation, and Protestants, of their Houses and Lands; robbed and spoiled many thousands of Our good Subjects of the British Nation, and Protestants, of their goods, to great values; massacred multitudes of them, imprisoned many others, and some who have the honour to serve Us as privie Councillours of that Our Kingdom: We therefore, having taken the same into Our Royal consideration, and abhorring the wicked disloyaltie and horrible acts committed by those persons, do hereby, not only declare Our just indignation thereof, but also do declare them and their Adherents, and Abettors, and all those who shall hereafter join with them, or commit the like acts on any of Our good Subjects in that Kingdom, to be Rebels and Traitors against Our Royal Person, and enemies to Our Royal Crown of England and Ireland.

And we do hereby strictly charge and command all those persons, who have so presumed to rise in Arms against Us and our Royal authority (which We cannot otherwise interpret than as Acts of high Rebellion and detestable disloyaltie, when therein they spoil and destroy our good and Loyal Subjects of the British Nation. and Protestants) That they immediately lay-down their Arms, and forbear all further Acts of Hostility; wherein if they faile, We do let them know, That We have authorised Our Justices of Ireland, and other Our chief Governour or Governours. and General, or Lieutenant-General, of Our Army there; And do hereby accordingly require and authorise them, and every of them, to prosecute the said Rebels and Traitours, with fire and sword, as persons who, by their disloyalty against Us, their lawful and undoubted King and Sovereign, have made themselves unworthy of any mercy or favour: wherein Our said Justices, or other chief Governour, or Governours, and General or Lieutenant-General of Our said Army, shall be countenanced and supported by Us and by Our powerfull succours of Our good Subjects of Eng. land and Scotland, that so they may reduce to obedience those wicked disturbers of that Peace, which, by the blessing of God, that Kingdom hath so long and so happily enjoyed, under the government of Our Royal father and Us. And this Our Royal pleasure, We do hereby require Our Justices, or other chief Governour, or Governours, of that Our Kingdom of Ireland, to cause to be published and proclaimed, in and throughout Our said Kingdom of Ireland.

Given under Our Signet, at Our Palace at Westminster, the first day of January, in the seventeenth yeer of Our Reign, 1641.

God save the King.

Articles

This date is more than two menths after the 23d of October, 1641, when the Irish rebellion and massacre began. And it is remarkable, that with this Proclamation, a warrant signed by Secretary Nicholand

Articles of High Treason, and other Misdemeanours, against the Lord Kymbolton, Mr. Pym, John Hampden, Denzill Hollis, Sir Arthur Haslerig, and William Strode, being all Members of the House of Commons.

1. THAT they have traiterously endeavoured to subvert the Fundamental Lawes and Government of this Kingdome, and deprive the King of his Legall power, and to place on Subjects an arbitrary and tyrannical power.

2. That they have endeavoured, by many foule aspersions upon his Majesty and his Government, to alienate the affections of his people, and to make his Majesty

odious to them.

3. That they have endeavoured to draw his Majestie's late Army to disobedience to his Majestie's command, and to side with them in their Trayterous design.

4. That they have Trayterously invited and encouraged a foreign power to in-

vade his Majestie's Kingdome of England.

5. That they have Traiterously endeavoured to Subvert the very Rights and

Beings of Parliaments.

- 6. That, for the compleating of their Traiterous designs, they have endeavoured as far as in them lay, by force and terror, to compel the Parliament to join with them in their Traiterous designs, and to that end, have actually raised and countenanced Tumults against the King and Parliament.
- 7. That they have Traiterously conspired to Levy, and actually have Levied, war against the King.

Die Luna, 3 Januar. 1641,

IT is this day ordered upon the question, by the Commons House of Parliament, That, if any persons whatsoever, shall come to the Lodgings of any Member of this House, and there do offer to Seal the Trunks, Doors, or Papers of any Members of this House, or to seize upon their persons; That then such Members should require the aid of the Constable, to keep such Persons in safe custody, till this House do give further Order. And this House doth further declare, That, if any person whatsoever, shall offer to arrest, or detain, the person of any Member of this House, without first acquainting this House therewith, and receiving further Order from this House; That it is lawful for such Member, or any person willing to assist him, to stand upon his, and their, guard of defence, and to make resistance, according to the Protestation taken to defend the Priviledges of Parliament.

H. Elsynge, Cler. Parl. D. Com.

las, was sent to the Printer, importing, "That it was His Majestie's Pleasure he should forthwith print, on good Paper, forty copies of the same for the King's use, and that no more be printed, till his Pleasure be further notified. See Rushworth's Historical Collections abridged, Vol. IV. page 234.

2 M 2

His

Digitized by Google

HIS MAJESTIE'S SPEECH in the House of COMMONS, Jan. 4, 1641.

Gentlemen,

I AM sorry for this occasion of coming unto you: yesterday I sent a Sergeant at Arms upon a very important occasion, to apprehend some that, by my command, were accused of High Treason, whereunto I did expect Obedience, and not a Message. And I must declare unto you here, that, albeit no King that ever was in England, shall be more careful of your Priviledes, to maintain them to the uttermost of his power, than I shall be; yet you must know, that in cases of Treason, no person hath a priviledge; and therefore I am come to know, if any of those persons, that were accused, are here. For I must tell you, Gentlemen, that, so long as those persons that I have accused (for no slight crime, but for Treason) are here, I cannot expect that this House can be in the right way that I do heartly wish it: Therefore I am come to tell you, that I must have them, wheresoever I find them. Well;—since I see all the Birds are flown, I do expect from you that you shall send them unto me as soon as they return hither: But I assure you, in the word of a King, I never did intend any force, but shall proceed against them in a legal and fair way: for I never meant any other.

And now, since I see I cannot do what I came for, I think this no unfit occasion to repeat what I have said formerly; That, whatsoever I have done in favour, and

to the good, of my Subjects, I do mean to maintain it.

I will trouble you no more, but tell you, I do expect, as soon as they come to the House, you will send them to me: otherwise I must take my own course to find them.

Die Mercurii, 5 January, 1641.

'COMMONS House of PARLIAMENT.

WHEREAS his Majesty, in his Royal Person, yesterday, being the fourth of January, 1641, did come to the House of Commons, attended with a great multitude of men, armed in a warlike manner, with Halberts, Swords, and Pistols, who came-up to the very door of the House, and placed themselves there, and in other places and passages near to the House, to the great terrour and disturbance of the Members thereof, then sitting, and according to their duty, in a peaceable and orderly manner, treating of the great affairs of both Kingdoms of England and Ireland; And his Majesty, having placed himself in the Speaker's Chair, did demand the Persons of divers Members of the House to be delivered unto Him.

It is this day declared, by the House of Commons, that the same is a high breach of the Rights and Priviledges of Parliament, and inconsistent with the Liberty

Liberty and Freedom thereof: and therefore this House doth conceive they cannot, with the safety of their own Persons, or the indemnity of the Rights and Priviledges of Parliament, sit here any longer, without a full vindication of so high a breach, and a sufficient Guard wherein they may confide; for which both Houses jointly, and this House by itself, have been humble Suitors to his Majestie,

and cannot as yet obtain.

Notwithstanding which, this House, being very sensible of the greatest trust reposed in them; and especially at this time of the manifold distractions of this Kingdom, and the lamentable and distressed condition of the Kingdom of Ireland; doth Order, that this House shall be Adjourned until Tuesday next at one of the The House of Comclock in the afternoon, and that a Committee be named by this House, and all mons resolve to re-that will come shall have voices, and shall six at the Guildhall in the City of Tandau that will come shall have voices, and shall sit at the Guildhall in the City of London, their meeting, to the to-morrow morning at nine of the clock; and shall have power to consider and Guild hall in the City of London. resolve of all things that may concern the good and safety of the City and Kingdom, and particularly how our Priviledges may be vindicated, and our Persons secured. And to consider of the affairs and reliefe of Ireland; and shall have power to consult and advise with any person or persons, touching the premises, and shall have power to send for parties, witnesses, papers, and records.

And it is further ordered, that the Committee for the Irish Affairs, shall meet at the Guildhall aforesaid, at what time they shall think fit; and consult and do touching the affairs of Ireland, according to the power formerly given them by this House; and both the said Committees shall report the results of their con-

sideration and Resolution to this House.

Master Chancellour of the Exchequer. M. Glyn. M. Whitlack. Lord Faulk-Land. Sir Phil. Stapleton. M. Nath. Fiennes. Sir Ralph Hopton. Hotham. Sir Walter Earl. Sir Robert Cook. Sir Tho. Walsingham. Sir Samuel Roll. M. Perpoint. M. Walt. Long. Sir Rich. Cave. Sir Ed. Hungerford. M. Grimston. Sir Christ. Wray. Sir Ben. Rudyard. Sir John Heppisley. M. Herbert Price. Sir John Wray. Sir Thomas Barrington. M. Wheeler. Sir Wil. Litton.

This is the Committee appointed by the former Order, and are to pursue the directions of the former Order.; And all that will come are to have voices at this

Committee.

A DECLARATION of the House of Commons, touching a late Breach of their PRIVILEDGES; and for the Vindication thereof, and of divers Members of the said House.

WHEREAS the Chambers, Studies, and Truncks of Master Denzil Hollis, Sir Arthur Haslerigg, Master John Pym, Master John Hampden, and Master Wil-Limm Strode, Esquires, Members of the House of Commons, upon Monday the



third of this instant January, by colour of his Majestie's Warrant, have been sealed-up by Sir William Killigrew, and Sir William Flemen, and others, which is not only against the Priviledge of Parliament, but the Common Liberty of every subject: Which said Members afterwards, the same day, were under the like colour, by Serjeant Francis, one of His Majestie's Serjeants at Arms, contrary to all former Presidents demanded of the Speaker sitting in the House of Commons, to be delivered unto him, that he might Arrest them of High Treason. And whereas, afterwards the next day, His Majesty, in His Royal Person, came to the said House, attended with a great multitude of men, armed in warlike manner, with Halberts, Swords, and Pistols, who came-up to the very door of the House, and placed themselves there, and in other places, and passages near to the said House, to the great terrour and disturbance of the Members then sitting; and according to their duty, in a peaceable, and orderly manner, treating of the great Affairs of England and Ireland. And his Majesty, having placed himself in the Speaker's Chair, demanded of them the Persons of the said Members to be delivered unto him; which is a high Breach of the Rights and Priviledges of Parliament, and Inconsistent with the Liberties and Freedom thereof. And, whereas, afterwards his Majesty did issue-forth several Warrants to divers Officers, under his own hand, for the apprehension of the Persons of the said Members, which by Law he cannot do: there being not all this time, any Legal charge or accusation, or due Process of Law issued against them, nor any pretence of charge made known to that House; all which are against the Fundamental Liberties of the Subject, and the Rights of Parliament: Whereupon we are necessitated, according to our duty, to declare, And we do hereby declare, that, if any Person shall arrest Master Hollis, Sir Arthur Haslerigg, Master Pym, Master Hampden, and Master Strode, or any of them, or any other Member of Parliament, by pretence or colour of any Warrant issuing-out from the King only, he will be guilty of a Breach of the Liberties of the Subject, and of the Priviledge of Parliament, and will be a publick enemy to the Common-wealth. And that the Arresting of the said Members. or any of them, or of any other Member of Parliament, by any Warrant whatsoever, without a legal Proceeding sgainst them, and without consent of that House, whereof such Person is a Member, is against the Liberty of the Subject, and a Breach of Priviledge of Parliament; and the Person which shall Arrest any of these Persons, or any other Member of the Parliament, is declared a publick enemy of the Common-wealth. Notwithstanding all which, we think fit further to declare, that we are so far from any endeavours to protect any of our Members, that shall be in due manner prosecuted according to the Laws of the Kingdom, and the Rights and Priviledges of Parliament, for Treason, or any other misdemeanors. That none shall be more ready and willing than we ourselves to bring them to a speedy and due trial, being sensible that it equally imports us, as well to see Justice done against them that are criminous, as to defend the just Rights and Liberties of the Subjects and Parliament of England.

And whereas, upon several Examinations, taken the seventh day of this instant January,

January, before the Committee appointed by the House of Commons, to sit in London, it did fully appear, that many Souldiers, Papists, and others, to the Adescription of the number of about five hundred, came with His Majesty on Tuesday last, to the violent and insolent said House of Commons, armed with Swords, Pistols, and other Weapons; and of the attendants of divers of them pressed to the door of the said House, thrust-away the Door-keepers, the King, when he and placed themselves between the said doore and the ordinary Attendants of his House of Commons, Majesty, holding up their Swords, and some holding-up their Pistols, ready-cock'd, on the 4th day of neer the said doore; and saying, "I am a good Marksman; I can hit right, I warrant January, 1641-49. you;"and they not suffering the said door, according to the custome of Parliament, to be shut, but saying they would have the doore open, and, if any opposition were made against them, they made no question, but they should make their party good, and that they would maintain their party; and, when several Members of the House of Commons were coming into the House, their Attendants desiring that Room might be made for them, some of the said Souldiers answered, A Pox of them, "God confound them," and others said, "A Pox take the House of Commons, let them come and be hanged; what an a-do is here with the House of Commons?" and some of the said Souldiers did likewise violently assault and, by force, disarme, some of the Attendants and Servants of the Members of the House of Commons, waiting in the Roome next the said House; and, upon the King's return out of the said House, many of them, by wicked Oaths, and otherwise, expressed much discontent, that some members of the said House, for whom they came, were not there; and others of them said, "When comes the word?" and, no word being given at his Majestie's coming-out, they cryed "A lane, a lane." Afterwards some of them, being demanded, what they thought the said company intended to have done, answered, "That, questionlesse, in the posture they were set, if the word had been given, they should have fallen upon the House of Commons, and have cut all their throats." Upon all which we are of opinion, that it is sufficiently proved, that the coming of the said Souldiers, Papists, and others with his Majesty to the House of Commons, on Tuesday last, being the fourth of this instant January, in the manner aforesaid, was to take-away some of the Members of the said House; and, if they should have found opposition or denial, then to have fallen upon the said House in a hostile manner: And we do hereby declare, that the same was a traiterous designe against the King and Parliament. And, whereas the said Master Hollis, Sir Arthur Haslerigge, Master Pym, Master Hampdon, and Master Strode, upon report of the coming of the said Souldiers, Papists, and others, in the warlike and hostile manner aforesaid, did, with the approbation of the House, absent themselves from the service of the House, for avoiding the great and many inconveniences, which otherwise apparently might have happened: Since which time, a Printed Paper, in the form of a Proclamation, bearing date the sixth day of this instant January, hath issued-out for the apprehending and imprisoning of them; Therein suggesting, that, through the conscience of their owne guilt, they were absent and fled, not willing to submit themselves to Justice; We do further declare, that the said Printed Paper is false, scandalous, and illegal, and that, notwithstanding the said Printed Paper, or

N. B.

any Warrant issued-out, or any other matter yet appearing against them, or any of them, they may and ought to attend the service of the said House of Commons, and the several Committees now on foot, And that it is lawful for all persons whatsoever to lodge, harbour, or converse with them, or any of them: And whosoever shall be questioned for the same, shall be under the protection and priviledge of Parliament.

And we do further declare, That the publishing of several Articles, purporting a form of a charge of high Treason, against the Lord Kymbolton, one of the Members of the Lord's House, and against the said Master Hollis, Sir Arthur Haslerigge, Master Pym, Master Hampden, and Master Strode, by Sir William Killigrew, Sir William Flemen, and others in the Innes of Court, and elsewhere, in the King's Name, was a high Breach of the Priviledge of Parliament, a great seandal to his Majesty and his Government: A seditious Act, manifestly tending to the subversion of the Peace of the Kingdome, and an injury and dishonour to the said Members, there being no legal charge, or accusation, against them.

That the privileges of Parliament, and the Liberties of the Subject, so violated and broken, cannot be fully and sufficiently vindicated, unlesse his Majesty will be graciously pleased to discover the names of those persons, who advised his Majesty to issue-out Warrants for the sealing of the Chambers and Studies of the said Members, to send a Serjeant at Arms to the House of Commons, to demand their said Members, to issue-out several Warrants under his Majestie's own hand, to apprehend the said Members; His Majestie's coming thither in his own Royal Person; The publishing of the said Articles, and Printed Paper, in the forme of a Proclamation, against the said Members, in such manner as is before declared; To the end that such persons may receive condigne punishment.

And this House doth further declare, That all such persons as have given any Counsell, or endeavoured to set, or maintain, division or dislike, between the King and Parliament, or have listed their names, or otherwise entred into any combination or agreement, to be aiding, or assisting, to any such counsell or endeavour, or have perswaded any other so to do, or that shall do any the things above-mentioned; And shall not forthwith discover the same to either House of Parliament, or the Speaker of either of the said Houses respectively, and disclaime it, are declared publike enemies of the State and Peace of this Kingdome, and shall be enquired-of, and proceeded-against, accordingly.

Die Lunæ, 17 Januarrii, 1641. It is this day ordered, by the Commons assembled in Parliament, that this Declaration shall be forth-with published in Print.

Hen. Elsing. Cler. Parl. de Com.

To the King's Most Excellent Majesty, and the Lords and Peers now assembled in Parliament.

The humble Petition and Protestation of all the Bishops and Prelates, now called by his Majestie's Writs to attend the Parliament, and present about London and Westminster, for that service.

THAT, whereas the Petitioners are called-up by several and respective Writs, and under great penalties, to attend in Parliament, and have a cleere and indubitate Right to Vote in Bills, and all other matters whatsoever, debateable in Parliament, by the ancient Customes, Laws, and Statutes of this Realm, and ought to be protected by your Majesty, quietly to attend and prosecute that great Service.

They humbly remonstrate and protest before God, your Majesty, and the Noble Lords and Peers now assembled in Parliament, That, as they have an indubitate Right to sit and Vote in the House of the Lords, so are they (if they may be protected from force and violence) most ready and willing to performe their Duties accordingly. And that they do abominate all Actions, or Opinions, tending to Popery, and the mayntenance thereof; as also, all propension and inclination to any malignant party, or any other side, or party, whatsoever, to the which their own Reasons and Consciences shall not move them to adhere.

But, whereas they have been at several times violently Menaced, Affronted, and Assaulted, by multitudes of people, in their coming to performe their Services in that Honourable House; and lately chased-away, and put in danger of their lives, and can find no redresse, or protection, upon sundry complaints made to both Houses

in these particulars.

They likewise humbly protest before your Majesty, and the Noble House of Peers, That, saving unto themselves, all their Rights and Interests of Sitting and Voting in that House at other times, they dare not Sit, or Vote, in the House of Peers, until your Majesty shall further secure them from all Affronts, Indignities,

and dangers in the premisses.

Lastly, Whereas their fears are not built upon Phantasies and Conceits, but upon such Grounds and Objects, as may well terrifie men of good Resolutions, and much Constancy: They do, in all duty and humility, protest before your Majesty, and the Peers of that most Honourable House of Parliament, against all Laws, Orders, Votes, Resolutions, and Determinations, as in themselves Null, and of none effect; which in their absence, since the 27th of this instant Moneth of December, 1641, have already passed; as, likewise, against all such as shall hereafter passe in that most Honourable House, during the time of this their forced and violent absence from the said most Honourable House; not denying, but, if their absenting of themselves were wilful and voluntary, that most Honourable

their absence, or this their Protestation any Warrant issuedof them, thev -Excellent Majesty to command the Clerk of the Petition and Protestation amongst his Reand the wL will ever pray to God so blesse and preserve, &c. Thomas Duresum, Movert Co. Lich, Jos. Norwich, Jo. Asaphen,
Thomas Hereford, Rob. Oxon, Ma. Ely, Godfr. Glouc., Jo. Peterthe Handaf. Vera Copia In Ppure, Mor. Llandal.

THE House of Lords was pleased on the thirtieth of December, to send a Mes-THE House of Commons, by Sir John Banks, and Judge Reeves, to desire to the Conference, by a Committee of both Houses touching metals and safe sent Conference. sage to the Conference, by a Committee of both Houses touching matters of dangera present consequence. a proof high consequence.

and at the Conference, the Lord-Keeper, in the name of the House of Peers, And as followeth:

delivered as followeth: That this Petition and Protestation of the twelve Bishops, containing matters of high and dangerous Consequence, and such as my Lords are very sensible of, and pigh as require a speedy and sudden Resolution; it extending to the deep entrenching upon the Fundamental Priviledges and Being of Parliament: Therefore the Lords have thought fit that this matter, concerning the whole Parliament, may be communicated to the House of Commons; it being a thing of so great and so general Concernment.

This being thus communicated to the House of Commons, they came to this Resolution, To accuse these twelve Bishops of high Treason, for endeavouring to

subvert the fundamental Laws and Being of Parliaments.

And Master Glyn was ordered to goe to the Lords, and at their Bar, in the name of the House of Commons, and all the Commons of England, To accuse these 12 Prelates of high Treason for endeavouring to subvert the Fundamental Laws of the Realm, and the very Being of Parliaments, manifested by Preferring that Petition and Protestation; And to desire the Lords that they may be forthwith sequestred from Parliament, and put into safe Custody; and that their Lordships would appoint a speedy day for the Commons to charge them, and for them to answer: for that the Commons were ready to make good their Charge.

He was further ordered to give the Lords thanks for communicating this Petition,

with so much affection and speed, and for expressing their sense thereof.

After Master Glyn had delivered this at the Bar, the Lords sent the Black Rod instantly, to find-out these Bishops, and apprehend them; and by eight of the clock at night, they were all taken, and brought upon their knees to the Bar, and

Digitized by GOOGLE

ten of them committed to the Tower; and two (in regard of their Age, and indeed of the worthy parts of one of them, the learned Bishop of Durham) were committed to the Black Rod.

A Proposition or Message, sent the 31st of December, 1641, to His MAJESTIE,

By the House of Commons, for a GUARD.

Most gracious Sovereign,

WE are sent by the Knights, Citizens, and Burgesses of the House of Commons, your faithful and loyal Subjects (who are ready to lay-downe their lives and fortunes, and spend the last drop of their blood, to maintaine your Crowne and Royal Person, in greatnesse and glory, and do, by us, cast themselves downe at your Royal feet,) to present unto your Majestie their humble desires, upon their great apprehensions, and just fears, of mischievous designes and practises, to ruin and destroy them. There have been several attempts heretofore to bring destruction upon their whole Body at once, and threats and menaces against particular persons. There is a malignant party bitterly envenomed against them, daily gathering strength and confidence, and now come to such height as they have given boldnesse to some to imbrue their hands in the blood of your Subjects, in the face, and at the doors of the Parliament, and at your Majestie's own gates, and have given-out insolent and menacing speeches against the Parliament itselfe. This causeth great distractions among the people in general, and much feare and apprehension in the House of Commons; That they conceive they cannot, with the safetie of their persons, (upon which the safetie and peace of the whole Kingdome doth now depend,) sit any longer unarmed and unguarded, as they are. They have therefore their recourse unto your Majestie, most humbly beseeching you, that it may stand with your good liking, if they provide for their own safetie, which the very law of Nature and Reason doth allow unto them; It is their humble desire, that they may have a Guard out of the City of London, commanded by the Earle of Essex, Lord Chamberlaine of your Majestie's Houshold, of whose fidelity to your Majestie, and the Commonwealth, they have had long experience. By this, your Majestie's Grace and Favour, you will remove their fears, fill them with comfort and assurance, and enable them to serve your Majesty in such a way as shall render your Majesty and your Government happy and glorious. And to this they do most humbly desire your Majestie's gracious and speedy Answer, because their safetie, and the safetie of the whole Kingdome, depends upon it, and will not admit of any delay.

His

His Majestie's Answer to the Message, or Proposition, sent the last of December past, by the House of Commons, for a Guard.

WE have taken the last Message from you, touching your desire of a Guard, into serious consideration, and truly with great grief of heart (that, after a whole yeer's sitting of this Parliament, wherein you have obtained those things, for the happinesse and security of yourselves, and the rest of Our Subjects, as no age can equal) instead of reaping in Peace and tranquility the fruits of your Labours, and of Our Grace and affection to Our People, We should finde fealousies, Distrusts, and Fears, still so prevalent amongst you, as to induce you to declare them unto Us in so high a measure as you have done at this time.

We are wholly ignorant of the Grounds of your Apprehensions: but this We do Protest before Almighty God, (to whom We must be accountable for those whom he hath intrusted to Our care and Protection,) that had we any knowledge, or belief, of the least design in any, of Violence, either formerly, or at this time, against you, We would pursue them to condigne punishment, with the same severity and detestation, that We would do the

greatest attempt upon Our Crown.

We know the duty of that place where God hath set Us, the Protection We owe to all Our Loyal Subjects, and most particularly to you, called to Our Service by Our Writs; And We do engage unto you solemnly the word of a King, That the security of all and every one of you from violence, is, and shall ever be, as much Our care, as the Preservation of Us and Our Children.

And, if this general Assurance shall not suffice to remove your Apprehensions, We will command such a Guard to wait upon you, as We will be responsible for to Him, who hath encharged Us with the Safetie and Protection of Our Subjects.

WHITEHALL, 3d Jan. 1641.

.To the KING'S Most Excellent MAJESTY.

The humble Petition of the MAYOR, ALDERMEN, and COMMON COUNCIL, of the City of London.

MAY it please Your Most Excellent Majesty; The often expressions of Your most gracious acceptance of the manifestation of the Petitioners duty and loyalty, and the frequent Declarations of Your Majestie's great care of the good and welfare

Digitized by Google

of this City, and of the true Protestant Religion, and of protecting and preserving the Persons and Priviledges of your great Councill, assembled in the High Court of Parliament: Each encouraged the Petitioners to represent the great Dangers, Fears, and Distractions wherein the City now is, by reason of the prevailing progress of the bloody Rebels in Ireland, fomented, and Acted by the Papists and their Adherents, and want of Aid to suppress them, and the several intimations they have had both Foreign and at Home, of the driving-on of their Designs, tending to the utter ruin of the Protestant Religion, and of the Lives and Liberties of Your Majestie's loyal Subjects, the putting-out of Persons of Honour and Trust from being Constable and Lieutenant of the Tower, especially in these times, and the preparations there lately made, the fortifying of Whitehall with men and munition in an unusual manner: Some of which men, with provoking language and violence, abused divers Citizens passing-by, and the drawing divers swords, and therewith wounding sundry other Citizens in Westminster-Hall, that were unarmed: the late endeavours used to the Innes of Court, the calling in divers Cannoniers, and other assistance, into the Tower, the late discovery of divers fire-works in the hands of a Papist, and the misunderstanding betwirk Your Majesty and Parliament, by reason of misinformation, as they humbly conceive.

Besides all which, the Petitioners fears are exceedingly increased by your Majestie's late going to the House of Commons, attended with a great multitude of armed men, besides Your ordinary Guard, for the apprehending of divers Members of that House, to the endangering of Your Sacred Person, and of the

Persons and Priviledges of that Honourable Assembly.

The effects of all which Fears tend, not only to the overthrow of the whole Trade of this City and Kingdom, which the Petitioners already feel in a deep measure; but also threaten the utter ruin of the Protestant Religion, and the

Lives and Liberties of all Your Loyal Subjects.

The Petitioners therefore most humbly pray Your Sacred Majesty, That, by the advice of Yourgreat Council in Parliament, the Protestants in *Ireland* may be speedily relieved, The Tower put into the hands of Persons of trust: That, by removal of doubtful and unknown Persons from about Whitehall and Westminster, a known and approved Guard may be appointed for the safety of Your Majesty and Parliament, and that the Lord Mandevill, and the five Members of the House of Commons lately accused, may not be restrained of liberty, or proceeded-against, otherwise than according to the Priviledges of Parliament.

And the Petitioners (as in all duty bound) shall pray for Your Majestie's most long and happy Reign, &c.

His

HIS MAJESTIE'S Answer to the Petition of the MAYOR, ALDERMEN, and COMMON COUNCIL of the City of LONDON.

HIS Majesty having fully considered the matter of this Petition, is graciously pleased to declare, That being unalterably resolved to make good all His Expressions and Declarations of His care of this City, Of the true Protestant Religion, and of the Priviledges of Parliament; His Majesty takes in good part, the intimation given by the Petitioners, of the fears and distractions wherein the City now seems to be. And though He conceives He did on Wednesday, at the Guildhall, satisfy most of those particulars, is pleased to add this further Answer.

- 1. That for the sad business of *Ireland*, His Majesty cannot possibly express a greater sense than He hath done, there being nothing left on His Majestie's part unoffered or undone. And He hoped, by the speedy advice and assistance of His Parliament, that great and necessary Work would be put in a just forwardness, to which His Majesty will contribute all His power: And how zealous He is, and hath been therein, will appear in a Declaration speedily to be set-forth by His Majesty.
- 2. For the Tower: His Majesty wonders, that having removed a Servant of good Trust and Reputation, from that Charge, only to satisfy the fears of the City, and put in another of unquestionable Reputation, and known ability, the Petitioners should still entertain those fears; and whatever preparation of Strength is there made, is with as great an eye of safety and advantage to the City, as to His Majestie's own Person, and shall be equally employed to both.
- 3. For the fortifying of Whitehall with Men and Munition in an unusual way: His Majesty doubts not, but the Petitioners have observed the strange provocation He hath received to entertain that Guard: That by the disorderly, and tumultuous conflux of people at Westminster and Whitehall, his Majestie's great Council was not only disquieted, but his own Royal Person in danger, most seditious language being uttered even under His own windows, whilst the examination and punishing such Tumults by the course of Law were interrupted and stopped. And if any citizens were wounded or ill-intreated, His Majesty is confidently assured, that it happened by their own evil and corrupt demeanours.
- 4. His Majesty knows no other endeavours to the Innes of Court, then a gracious Intimation, That He received the tender of their loyal and dutiful Affections with very good Approbation and acceptance, and an encouragement given them to continue the same upon all occasions. Neither doth His Majesty know, what discovery hath been lately made of Fire-works in the hands of any Papist.
- 5. For his going to the House of Commons (when his attendants were no otherwise armed than, as Gentlemen, with swords,) his Majesty is verily persuaded, That, if the Petitioners knew the clear grounds upon which those Persons stand accused of high Treason, and what will be proved against them, (which in due time

time they shall be acquainted with,) and considered the gentle way his Majesty took for their apprehension (which he preferred before any course of violence, though that way had been very justifiable; for his Majesty is very well assured, that it is notoriously known, That no priviledge of Parliament can extend to Treason, Felony, or breach of the Peace,) the Petitioners would believe his Majestie's going thicher, was an act of grace and favour to that House, and the most peaceable way of having that necessary service, for the apprehension of those persons, performed; especially, if such Orders have been made (which his Majesty is not willing to believe) for the resistance of all lawful Authority, as are discoursed-of.

6. And for the Proceedings against those Persons mentioned in the Petition; his Majesty ever intended the same should be, with all justice and favour according to the Laws and Statutes of the Realm; to the which all innocent men would cheerfully submit.

And this extraordinary way, of satisfying a Petition of so unusual a nature, his Majesty is confidently persuaded, will be thought the greatest instance can be given of his Majestie's clear intention to his Subjects, and of the singular estimation he hath of the good affections of this City, which he believes in gratitude will never be wanting to his just Commands and Service.

By the KING.

A Proclamation for a General Fast throughout this Realm of England.

HIS Majesty, taking into His Princely and Pious consideration, the lamentable and distressed estate of His good Subjects, in His Majestie's kingdom of Ireland, and conceiving it to be a just and great occasion calling upon Him, and His people of this His kingdom of England, for a general humiliation of all estates of this kingdom before Almighty God, in Prayer and Fasting, for drawing-down His Mercy and Blessing upon that kingdom: His Majesty doth therefore by this His Proclamation, straightly charge and command, that a General, Publick, and Solemn, Fast be kept and holden, as well by abstinence from food as by publick Prayers, Preaching, and hearing of the Word of God, and other Sacred duties, in all Cathedrall, Collegiate, and Parish-Churches and Chapels within this His Majestie's kingdom of England, and dominion of Wales, (His Majestie's Cities of London and Westminster only excepted, where it hath already been observed,) on the twentieth day of this present Month of January.

And His Majesty doth further, by this His Proclamation, straightly charge and command, that a General, Publick, and Solemn Fast be kept and holden, as well

by abstinence from food, as by publick Prayers, Preaching, and hearing of the Word of God, and other sacred Duties, in all Cathedral, Collegiate, and Parish Churches, and Chapels, within this kingdom of England, and dominion of Wales, (without any exception) on the last Wednesday of the month of February next following the date hereof, and from thenceforth to continue, on the last Wednesday of every Month, during the Troubles in the said kingdom of Ireland. All which, His Majesty doth expressly charge and command, shall be reverently and devoutly performed by all His loving Subjects, as they tender the favour of Almighty God, and would avoid His just indignation against this Land, and upon pain of such punishments as His Majesty can justly inflict, upon all such as shall contemn or neglect so religious a Work.

Given at the Court at Whitehall the eighth day of January, in the seventeenth

year of His Majestie's Reign of Great Britain, France, and Ireland.

God save the King.

The King's Message to both Houses, January 12, 1641.

HIS Majesty, taking notice that some conceive it disputable whether His proceedings against my Lord Kymbolton, Master Hollis, Sir Arthur Haslerigg, Master Pym, Master Hampden, and Master Strode, be legal and agreeable to the Priviledges of Parliament, and being very desirous to give satisfaction to all men, in all matters that may seem to have relation to Priviledge; is pleased to wave his former Proceedings: and, all doubts by this means being settled, when the minds of men are composed, his Majesty will proceed thereupon in an unquestionable way: And assures his Parliament, that upon all occasions he will be as careful of their Priviledges, as of his Life or his Crown.

To the KING'S Most Excellent MAJESTY.

The humble Petition of the Inhabitants of the County of Buckinghamshire.

Sheweth,

THAT your Petitioners, having, by virtue of your Highness's Writ, chosen John Hampden Knight for our Shire, in whose loyalty We, his Countrymen and Neighbours, have ever had good cause to confide: However, of late, to our no less amazement than grief, we find him with other Members of Parliament, accused of Treason: And having taken to our serious consideration, the manner of their

their Impeachment, we cannot but (under your Majestie's favour) conceive that it doth so oppugne the Rights of Parliament, to the maintainance whereof our Protestation binds us, that we believe it is the malice, which their zeal to your Majestie's Service and the State, hath contracted in the enemies to your Majesty, the Church, and Common-wealth, hath occasioned this foul Accusation, rather than any deserts of theirs, who do likewise, through their sides, wound the Judgment and Care of us your Petitioners, and others, by whose choice they were presented to the House.

Your Petitioners therefore most humbly pray, that Master Hampden, and the rest that lie under the burden of that Accusation, may enjoy the just Priviledges of Parliament.

And your Petitioners shall ever pray, &c.

Windsor, 13 Jan. 1641.

HIS Majesty being graciously pleased to let all his Subjects understand his care, not knowingly to violate, in the least degree, any of the Priviledges of Parliament, hath therefore (lately) by a Message sent by the Lord-Keeper, signified, That he is pleased, because of the doubt that hath been raised of the manner, to Wave his former proceedings against Master Hampden and the rest, mentioned in this Petition; concerning whom, his Majesty intends to proceed in an unquestionable way. And then, his Majesty saith, It will appear, that he had so sufficient grounds to question them, as he might not in Justice to the kingdom, and honour to himself, have forborn: And yet his Majesty had much rather, that the said Persons should prove innocent than be found guilty: However, he cannot conceive that their Crimes can in any sort reflect upon those his good Subjects who elected them to serve in Parliament.

Die Jovis, 13. Januarii, 1641.

WHEREAS Information hath been given to the Parliament, that the Lord Digby (son to the Earl of Bristol) and Colonel Lunsford, with others, have gathered Troops of Horse, and have appeared in a warlike manner, at Kingston upon Thames, in the County of Surry, (where the Magazine of Arms for that part of the County lies) to the terrour and affright of His Majestie's good Subjects, and disturbance of the publick weal of the Kingdom:

It is this day ordered, by the Lords and Commons in Parliament, That the Sheriffs of the several Counties of England and Wales, calling to their assistance the Justices of the Peace, and the Trained-Bands of those several Counties, (or so many of them as shall be necessary for the service) shall suppress all unlawful Assemblies gathered-together, to the disturbance of the publick peace of the 20 Kingdom,

Digitized by Google

Kingdom, in their several Counties respectively: And that they take care to secure the said Counties, and all the Magazines in them.

Die Veneris, viz. 14. die Jan. 1641.

Ordered by the Lords in Parliament, that this Order be printed and published in all the Market-towns in this Kingdom.

John Brown, Cler. Parliament.

HIS MAJESTIE'S Profession and Addition to His last MESSAGE to the PARLIAMENT, January 14, 1641.

HIS Majesty (being no less tender of the Priviledges of Parliament, and thinking himself no less concerned, that they be not broken, and that they be asserted and vindicated whensoever they are broken, than the Parliament itself,) hath thought fit to add to his last Message this Profession, "That in all his proceedings against "the Lord Kymbolton, Master Hollis, Sir Arthur Haslerig, Master Pym, Master "Hampden, and Master Strode, He had never the least intention of violating the " least Priviledge of Parliament; And, in case any doubt of Breach of Priviledges " remain, will be willing to clear that, and assert those, by any reasonable way that "His Parliament shall advise Him to." Upon confidence of which, He no way doubts His Parliament will forthwith lay-by all Jealousies, and apply themselves to the publick and pressing Affairs, and especially to those of Ireland, wheren the good of this Kingdom, and the true Religion, (which shall ever be His Majestie's first care) are so highly and so nearly concerned: And His Majesty assures himself, that His care of their Priviledges will increase their tenderness of His lawful Prerogative, which are so necessary to the mutual defence of each other; and both which will be the foundation of a perpetual perfect-Intelligence between His Majesty and his Parliaments, and of the happiness and prosperity of his people.

The Questions propounded to Master ATTOURNEY GENERAL, by the House of Commons, and his Answer thereunto.

Question 1.

WHETHER did you contrive, frame, or advise, the said Articles, or any of them?

Answer.

I will deal ingenuously and freely, and shall say the same which before I did to your Lordships; I need no longer time to answer this: I did none of these three neither contrive, frame, or advise these Articles, or any of them, and will be content to die if I did it.

Question

Question 2.

Whether do you know the truth of the said Articles, or any of them, in your own knowledge, or by information?

Answer.

I doe know nothing of my own knowledge of the truth of this, nor of any particular, nor have heard by information; This I speake upon the truth of an honest man, and nothing was ever said unto me of this, but by my Master, the King.

Question 3.

Whether will you undertake to make good the said Articles, or any of them, when you shall be thereunto called by due course of Law?

By my former expression you may discern what answer I can make to this; I cannot undertake to make one tittle good in them, otherwise than my Master shall command me and enable me: for of myself I cannot, nor will not, no more than one that never heard of them.

Question 4.

From whom received you these Articles, and by whose direction and advice did you exhibit them.

Answer.

It was by my Master the King, his expresse command, I did exhibit them; from his hand I did receive them.

Question 5.

Whether had you any testimony, or proof, of these Articles, before the exhibiting of them.

Answer.

For the exhibiting of these Articles I received His Majestie's command.

To which Answer Master Serjeant Wilde replyed, "The House of Commons desires you to answer, whether you had any proofe, or testimony, or any information of any proof of these Articles; they in no kind desire to know what you had." To this Master Attorney answered, "There is nothing in this world that I shall not be most ready to; but this I desire time to consider of, in regard of a trust between a Master and Servant."

Die. Sab. 15 Jan. 1641.

It is resolved by the House of Commons, since the said Answer of Master Attorney-General, That he hath broken the priviledge of Parliament, in preferring the said Articles, and that the same is illegal, and he criminous for so doing; and that a charge be sent-up to the Lords in the name of the House of Commons, against Master Attorney, to have satisfaction for this great scandal and injury to the Members thereof, unlesse, by Thursday next, he bring-in his proofe, and make good (if he can) the said Articles against the said persons, or any of them. His

HIS MAJESTIE'S LETTER to the Lord-Keeper of the Great Seal of England, concerning Sir Edward Herbert, Knight, &c.

CHARLES REX.

RIGHT trusty and well-beloved Counsellor, We greet you well, and have thought good hereby to certifie that We did the third of January last, deliver to Our Attourney certain Articles of Accusation ingrossed in paper, a Copy whereof We have sent here inclosed, and did then command him in Our Name, to acquaint Our House of Peers, that divers great and Treasonable designes and practices against us and the State had come to Our knowledge; for which We commanded him, in Our Name, to accuse the six persons in the said paper mentioned of High Treason, and other high misdemeanors, by delivering the paper to Our said House, and to desire to have it read, and further to desire in Our name, that a Select Committee of Lords, might be appointed to take the examination of such Witnesses as We would produce, and as formerly had been done in cases of like Nature, according to the Justice of the House, and the Committee to be under a command of secresie as formerly, and further in Our Name to ask liberty to add and alter, if there should be cause: We do further declare, that Our said Attorney, did not advise, or contrive the said Articles, nor had any thing to do with them, or in advising any breach of Priviledge that followed after. And for what he did in obedience to our commands, We conceive he was bound by oath and the duty of his place, and by the trust by Us reposed in him so to do: And, if he had refused to obey Us therein, We would have questioned him for breach of Oath, Duty, and Trust.

But now, having declared, that we find cause wholly to desist from proceeding against the persons accused, We have commanded him to proceed no further therein, nor to produce nor discover any proof concerning the same.

Given at Royston, the fourth of March, 1641.

HIS MAJESTIE'S MESSAGE, sent to both Houses of PARLIAMENT, 20 January, 1641.

HIS Majestie, perceiving the manifold distractions which are now in this Kingdom, which cannot but bring great inconvenience and mischiefs to this whole Government; In which as His Majestie is most chiefly interested, so He holds himselfe, by many Reasons, most obliged to do what in Him lies, for the preventing thereof; Though he might justly expect (as most proper for the duty of Subjects) that Propositions for the remedies of these Evils ought rather to come to Him than from him; yet (His fatherly care of all His people being such, that He will rather lay-by any particular respect of His owne Dignity than that any time should be lost for prevention of these threatening Evils, which cannot admit the delayes

delayes of the ordinary proceedings in Parliament) doth think fit to make this ensuing Proposition to both Houses of Parliament: "That they will, with all speed, The King's Proposi-"fall into a serious consideration of all those particulars, which they should hold ne-tion to both Houses cessary, as well for the upholding and maintaining of His Majestie's just and Regal of Parliament. Authority, and for the settling of His Revenue, As for the present and future " establishment of their Priviledges; The free and quiet enjoying of their Estates and "Fortunes; The Liberties of their Persons; The security of the true Religion now * professed in the Church of England; And the settling of Ceremonies in such a man-" ner as may take-away all just offence." Which when they shall have digested, and composed into one entire body, that so His Majestie and themselves may be able to make the more cleare Judgement of them; it shall then appeare, by what his Majestie shall do, how far He hath been from intending, or designing, any of those things, which the too great Feares and Jealousies of some Persons seem to apprehend; And how ready He will be to equal and exceed the greatest Examples of the most indulgent Princes in their Acts of Grace and Favour to their people. So that, if all the present Distractions (which so apparently threaten the ruine of this Kingdom) do not (by the blessing of Almighty God) end in an happy and blessed accommodation; His Majesty will then be ready to call Heaven and Earth, God and Man, to witnesse, that it hath not failed on His part.

Die Iovis, 20 Januarii, 1641.

Lords House,

"WHEREAS the Lords in the Upper House of Parliament, do find that there are many Petitions concerning private persons depending now before their Lordships, and conceive that many more may be brought into that House, if timely advertisement be not given to the contrary; which may occasion the Repair and Attendance, of divers of His Majestie's loving Subjects upon their Lordships, who cannot give a dispatch to private businesses, by reason of the many publick and great Affaires that now lie before them, concerning the Safety and Weale of His Majestie's King-

It is therefore thought fit, and so Ordered by the Lords in Parliament, That all The consideration of private businesses shall be hereby deferred and put-off, until the 21st of March Petitions concerning next; Whereof this House doth hereby give notice to all His Majestie's loving private Persons is put-off to the 21st people, to prevent the charge and trouble which otherwise the Petitioners might be day of next March, put unto, in repairing unto this House, at this time.

HIS MAJESTIE'S LETTER, January 24, In Answer to the Petition of both Houses of Parliament, as it was presented by the Earl of NEWPORT, and the Lord SEYMER, January 21, 1641.

HIS Majesty having seen and considered the Petition presented unto Him, the one and twentieth of this instant, by the Earl of Newport, and the Lord Seymer,

Digitized by Google

in the Names of both Houses of Parliament, Is pleased to return this Answer. That He doth well approve of the desire of Houses, for the speedy proceeding against the persons mentioned in the Petition; whereof His Majestie, finding the great inconveniences by the first mistake in the way, hath endured some delayes, that He might be informed in what Order to put the same. But, before that that be agreed-upon, His Majesty thinks it unusual, or unfit, to discover what proofe is against them, and therefore holds it necessary, (lest a new mistake should breed more delayes; which His Majesty, to His power, will avoid,) "That it be resolved "whether His Majesty be bound, in respect of Priviledges, to proceed against them by Impeachment in Parliament; Or whether He be at liberty to prefer an Indite"ment at the Common Law, in the usual way, or have His choice of either:" Whereupon His Majesty will give such speedy directions for Prosecution, as shall shew His Majestie's desire to satisfie both Houses, and to put a determination to the business.

Scots Commissioners Proposition, 24 January 1641, Touching the sending of the 2500 Men into Ireland.

CONCERNING the Proposition made to Us, the 22nd of January, from the Committees of both Houses for the Transporting presently to Ireland of the 2500 Men now on foot in Scotland; We, having no Instruction for that end, cannot, by Ourselves, condescend otherwise than upon the closure of the Treatie: but shall most heartily represent it to the Council of Scotland, and second the same with our earnest desires, that every thing may be done, which may contribute to the preservation of that Kingdom, and may testifie our Brotherly affection to this. And, that we may be the more able to move the Council to condescend to the same, We desire the Propositions following to be granted.

- 1. That provision of Victuals be presently sent to Carrichfergus, to be sold to our souldiers at reasonable rates, answerable to their Pay.
- 2. That an Order be set-downe how they shall be paid there, and from whom they may require the same.
- 3. That they have the Command and keeping of the Towne and Castle of Carrickfergus, with power to them to remain still within the same, or to enlarge their Quarters, and to go abroad in the Countrey upon such occasions, as their Officers in their discretion shall think expedient for the good of that Kingdome. And, if it shall be thought fit that any Regiments, or Troops, in that Province, shall joine with them, that they shall receive Orders from the Commanders of our Forces.
- 4. That provision of Match, Powder, and Ball, be presently sent to Carrickfergus; and that, whatever Armes, Ammunition, or Artillery, snall be sent-over with them from Scotland, the like quantitie shall be sent from hence to Scotland, whensoever the same shall be demanded.

5. That

- 5. That a part of the 30,000 pounds of the Brotherly-Assistance be presently advanced to Us, which although, in a just proportion to these men, it will amount but to 7500 pounds, yet, for the better furthering of the Service, we desire 10,000 pounds, if it may stand with your convenience.
- 6. That their Pay, which was condescended unto from the eighth of *December*, be presently advanced to the eighth of *February* next, against which time we are confident they shall be ready to march.
- 7. That a man of warre, or some Merchants Ships, be sent from Bristol, West-chester, or Dublin, to Lochryan, for a safe Convoy and Guard of the Passage, because they being in open Boats, may be subject to inconveniences from the Enemy, whose Frigates we hear are towards that coast.
- 8. That the sending-over of these men be without prejudice to the proceeding of the Treaty, which we desire may go-on without any delay.

Westm. 24 Jan. 1641.

Ia. Prymrose.

Resolved, that the House of Commons doth agree unto these particular Propositions now presented from the Scots Commissioners.

Ordered, that the House of Peeres, agreeth with the House of Commons, unto these Propositions from the Scots Commissioners, in every particular.

HIS MAJESTIE'S ANSWER to the Proposition above-mentioned, given the 26th of Jan. 1641, at Windsor.

HIS Majestie, having perused and considered these eight Propositions presented by the Scots Commissioners, doth willingly consent to them all, except only the third, which His Majesty doth not approve, and wisheth the Houses to take that Article again into consideration, as a business of very great importance, which His Majesty doubts may be prejudicial to the Crown of Eng'and, and the service intended: And, if the Houses desire it, His Majesty shall not be unwilling to speak with the Scots Commissioners, to see what satisfaction He can give them therein.

HIS MAJESTIE'S further ANSWER to the third Article of the said Proposition of the Scots-Commissioners, resolved on the 26th, and given on the 27th of January, 1641, at Windsor.

AFTER that His Majesty had (yesterday) sent His opinion concerning the Articles which the Scots Commissioners gave in, touching the present supplies to be sent for *Ireland*, they themselves waited on him, their chief Errand being the self-same business; Whereupon His Majesty thought it fit to persuade them (as much

much as he could) to alter the third Article, because he conceived it might be a prejudice to the Crown of England, the particulars whereof were too long to relate: Their only Argument that weighed with him, being, That (since it was agreed upon by both Houses of Parliament, and that the strength of His Majestie's Argument was, that Article implied too great a Trust for Auxiliary Forces) they were in good hope that His Majesty, being their native King, would not shew less trust in them, than their Neighbour Nation. So that the Question being (merely) of Trust, and that both Houses of Parliament have thought fit to grant it (though His Majesty could wish that that third Article were drawn more for the advantage of the Crown of England than he conceives it is) His Majesty cannot but wholly admit of the Advice of his Parliament in this particular, especially since His Majesty. perceives, that insisting upon the same would breed a great delay in the necessary supply of his Kingdom of Ireland.

To the King's Most Excellent Majesty.

The humble Petition of the Knights, Citizens, and Burgesses, of the Commons House, now in Parliament assembled January 26, 1641-42.

Humbly sheweth,

THAT, whereas the Houses of Parliament have received a grievous Message from your Majesty, dated the twentieth day of this instant January, your Petitioners return to your Majesty most humble thanks, resolving to take it into speedy That the Tower of and serious consideration. And, to enable them, with security, to discharge their Duties therein, they desired the House of Peers to join with them, in humbly beseeching your sacred Majesty to raise-up unto them a sure ground of safety and confidence, by putting the Tower, and other principal Forts of the Kingdom, and thereof, be put into the whole Militia thereof, into the hands of such Persons as your Parliament recommended by the might confide-in, and as should be recommended unto your Majesty by both two Houses of Par- Houses of Parliament, that (all Fears and Jealousies being laid-aside,) they might, with all cheerfulness, proceed to such resolutions as, they hoped, would lay a sure foundation of Honour, Greatness, and Glory to your Majesty, and your Royal Posterity; and of Happiness and Prosperity unto your Subjects throughout all your Dominions. Wherein the House of Peers have refused to join with your Petitioners. They, notwithstanding, no way discouraged, but confiding in your Majestie's Goodness to your people, do therefore make their humble address to your Majesty, to beseech you, That the Tower of London, and other principal Forts, and the whole Militia of the Kingdom, may be put into the hands of such persons as shall be recommended unto your Majesty by your Petitioners; not doubting but they shall receive a gracious and speedy Answer to this their humble desire; without which, in all humane Reason, the great distractions of this Kingdom must needs overwhelm it with misery and ruin.

And your Petitioners shall ever pray, &c.

His

Digitized by Google

London, and the other Fortresses of the Kingdom, and the whole Militia the hands of Persons

His Majestie's Answer to the Petition of the Commons House, January 28, 1641.

HIS Majesty having seriously considered of the Petition presented to Him from the House of Commons, on Wednesday, the twenty-sixth of this Month, Returns this Answer:

THAT he was in good hope His gracious Message, of the twentieth of this Month, to both Houses, would have produced some such overture, which, by offering what is fit on their parts to do, and asking what is proper for His Majesty to grant, might beget a mutual confidence in each other.

Concerning the Tower of London, His Majesty did not expect, that, having preferred a person * of a known Fortune, and unquestionable Reputation, to that Trust, He should be pressed to remove him, without any particular charge ob-

jected against him; and, therefore, returns this Answer:

That, if, upon due examination, any particular shall be presented to His Majesty, whereby it may appear, that His Majesty was mistaken in His opinion of this Gentleman, and that he is unfit for the Trust committed to him, His Majesty will make no scruple of discharging him: But, otherwise, His Majesty is obliged, in justice to himself, to preserve his own work, lest his favour, and good Opinion, may prove a disadvantage and misfortune to his Servants, without any other Accusation: Of which, His Majesty doubts not, His House of Commons would be so tender (as of a business wherein His Majestie's honour is so much concerned), that, if they find no material exception against this Person, they will rather endeavour to satisfy and reform the fears of other men, than, by complying with them, press His Vajesty to any Resolution which may seem so much to reflect upon his Honour and Justice.

For the Forts and Castles of the Kingdom, His Majesty is resolved that they shall always be in such hands (and only such) as the Parliament may safely confide-in; but the nomination of any Persons to those Places (being so principal and inseparable a Flower of his Crown, vested in Him, and derived unto Him from His Ancestors, by the fundamental Laws of the Kingdom) He will reserve to Himself; in bestowing whereof, as His Majesty will take care that no corrupt, or sinister, courses shall prevail with Him: so He is willing to declare, That He shall not be induced to express that favour so soon to any persons, as to those whose good demeanour shall be eminent in, or to His Parliament. And if He now hath, or shall, at any time, by mis-information, conter such a Trust upon an undeserving Person, He is, and will always be, ready to leave him to the Wisdom and Justice of His Parliament.

For the Militia of the Kingdom, (which, by the Law, is subject to no command, but of His Majesty, and of Authority lawfully derived from Him) when Militia, any particular course, for the ordering the same (which His Majesty holds very

• Sir John Byron.

2 P

necessary

necessary for the peace and security of His Kingdom) shall be considered and digested by His Parliament, and proposed to His Majesty; His Majesty will return such an Answer, as shall be agreeable to His Honour, and the safety of His People, His Majesty being resolved only to deny those things, the granting whereof would alter the fundamental Laws, and endanger the very foundation, upon which the publick happiness, and welfare of his People, is founded and constituted, and would nourish a greater, and more destructive, Jealousy between the Crown and the Subject, than any of those which would seem to be taken-away by such a satisfaction.

And His Majesty doth not doubt, that his having granted more than ever King hath granted, will ever persuade his House of Commons to ask more than ever Subjects have asked. And if they shall acquaint His Majesty with the particular Grounds of their Doubts and Fears, He will very willingly apply Remedies proportionable to those Fears; For His Majesty calls God to witness, that the preservation of the publick peace, The Law, and the Liberty of the Subject, is, and shall always be, as much His Majestie's care and industry, as of his life, or the Lives of his dearest children.

And, therefore, His Majesty doth conjure his House of Commons, by all the Acts of Duty and favour they have received from him this Parliament; By their hopes of future happiness in His Majesty, and in one another; By their love of Religion, and the peace of this Kingdom, (in which that of *Ireland* cannot be forgotten) That they will not be transported by Jealousies and Apprehensions of possible dangers, to put themselves, or His Majesty, into real and present inconveniences, but that they will speedily pursue the way proposed by His Majestie's former Message, which, in human Reason, is the only way to compose the Distractions of the Kingdom, and, with God's blessing, will restore a great Measure of felicity to King and People.

Die Subbathi, 29 Januarii, 1641.

An Order made by both Houses of Parliament, to prevent the going-over of Popish Commanders into Ireland, and also to hinder the transportation of Arms, Ammunition, Money, Corn, Victuals, and all other provision to the Rebels, and for the sending-back of the Irish Papists lately come-over.

WHEREAS great numbers of Papists, both English and Irish, (some whereof have been, and are, Commanders in the Wars; and others, such as have Estates in England,) have gone-out of this Kingdom into Ireland, immediately before, and during, the barbarous and bloody Rebellion there, and traiterously joined themselves with the Rebels of that Nation against His Majesty, and the Crown of England; and, likewise, divers other Popish Commanders, and such as have Estates in England, are daily preparing to go thither, to the same wicked ends:

Digitized by Google

And great store of Armes, Ammunition, Money, Corn, and other Victuals, and Provisions, have been sent, and are daily preparing to be sent to that Kingdom, for the assistance, and encouragement of those Rebels: for prevention whereof, the Lords and Commons, in this present Parliament assembled, Do hereby Order, and straightly charge, and command, all Sheriffs, Justices of the Peace, Mayors, Bailiffs, Constables, and other His Majestie's Officers, within the Realm of England, and Dominions of Wales; That they apprehend, and examine all such persons, as they shall suspect to be Papists, and going-out of this Kingdom, or the Dominion of Wales, into Ireland. And that they also make stay of all Arms, Munition, Money, Corn, and other Victuals, and Provisions, which they shall suspect to be preparing for transportation into Ireland, for the aid, and relief of the Rebels there; and to give speedy notice thereof, unto the Parliament.

And whereas, Also, divers poor People, Men, Women, and Children, of the Irish Nation, and Papists, have lately come, in great numbers, out of Ireland, into Cornwall, Devon, and other parts of this Kingdom, where they have been, and are very disorderly, and much terrify the Inhabitants, where they come, and due care is not taken in all places, for the suppressing, and punishing of them: The Lords and Commons in this Parliament Assembled, Do hereby further Order, and require, all Officers before-mentioned, That they put the Laws in due execution, against such wandering Irish Papists, before expressed, and that they cause

them to be forthwith conveyed-back into that Kingdom.

This Order was read, and by Vote upon the Question, assented-unto, and ordered to be fair-written, and sent-up to the Lords, by Master Carew.

Master Carew brings answer, That the Lords do fully agree with the House in this Order.

Hen. Elsing, Cler. Parl. Dom. Com.

To the KING'S Most Excellent MAJESTY,

The humble Petition of the LORDS and COMMONS assembled in PAR-

Most gracious Sovereign,

THE present Evils and Calamities, wherewith your Kingdomes are most miserably entangled, the imminent dangers which threaten your Royal Person, and all your People, have caused us, your most faithful and obedient Subjects, the Lords and Commons in this present Parliament, with thankfulnesse to entertaine, and with all earnestnesse of affection and endeavour, to pursue the gracious Proposition and Direction, which, not long since, we have received from your Majesty: And we have thereupon taken into our most serious consideration, the ways and means of securing the safety of your Royal Person, Preserving the Honour and Authority 2 P 2

bf your Crowne, Removing all Jealousies betwixt your Majesty and your People, Suppressing the Rebellion in Ireland, Preventing the Fears and Dangers in this Kingdome, and the mischievous Designs of those who are Enemies to the Peace of it. And that we may with more Comfort and Security, accomplish our duties herein, we most humbly beseech your Majesty, That you will be pleased forthwith, to put the Tower of London, and all other Forts, and the whole Militia of the Kingdome, into the hands of such Persons as shall be recommended unto your Majesty by both Houses of Parliament, which they assure themselves will be a hopeful entrance into those Courses, which, (through God's blessing,) shall be effectual for the removing all diffidence and mis-apprehension, betwixt your Majesty and your People, and for Establishing and Enlarging the Honour, Greatnesse, and Power of your Majesty and Royal Posterity, and for the restoring and confirming the Peace and Happinesse of your loyal Subjects, in all your Dominions.

And to this our most necessary Petition, we in all humility expect your Majestie's speedy and gracious Answer, the great Distractions and Distempers of the King-

dome not admitting any delay.

To the KING's Most Excellent MAJESTY.

The humble Petition of the Lords and Commons now assembled in Parliament.

Sheweth,

THAT whereas your Majestie, by a Message sent to both Houses of Parliament, signified an Apprehension of some Treasonable matter, to have been committed by the Lord Kymbolton, Master Holdis, Sir Arthur Haslerigg, Master Pym, Master Hampden, and Master Strode; and thereby declared your Majestie's intention to proceed against them in an unquestionable way: We the Lords and "Commons in this present Parliament assembled, did make our humble Petition to your Majesty, to beseech your Majesty to give directions, that your Parliament might be informed, before Tuesday then next ensuing, what proofe there was against them, that accordingly there might be a Legal and Parliamentary proceeding against them, whereby they might be brought to condigne punishment, if guilty; or discharged from so heavy an Accusation, if innocent: And whereas your Majesty was graciously pleased, in Answer to that Petition, to expresse Your good approbation of the desire of both Houses, for the speedy proceeding against the Persons in that Petition mentioned; yet your Majesty gave no other satisfaction to their desire than this, That Your Majestie held it necessary, lest a new mistake should breed more delays, "that it should be resolved, whether your Majesty were bound, in respect of Priviledges, to proceed against them by impeachment in that Parliament, or to be left at liberty to prefer an Indictment at the Common Law, in the usual way, or to have your choice of either;" and we finding

still, that there is 'no Legal Parliamentary proceeding against them, and that they still lie under the burden of that high Charge, We think it our duty, once again to beseech your Majesty to give directions, that your Parliament may be informed before Friday next, what proof there is against them, that accordingly they may be called to a Legal Trial, it being the undoubted Right, and Priviledge of Parliament, that no Member of Parliament can be proceeded against, without the consent of Parliament: And this we most humbly conceive ourselves obliged to ask, it being no less agreeable with justice, to have the innocency of Parties unjustly charged, manifested, then to bring the Nocent to their just punishment.

His MAJESTIE'S Answer to two Petitions of the LORDS and COMMONS, delivered 2d February, 1041.

HIS Majesty, having well considered of the two several Petitions, presented unto bim on Wednesday, the second of this moneth, from both Houses of Parizament, and being desirous to expresse how willing He is to apply a remedy, not only to your Dangers, but even to your Doubts and Fears; He, therefore, to that Petition, which concerns the Forts and Militia of this Kingdorn, returns this Answer; That, when he shall know the extent of Power which is intended to be established in those persons, whom you desire to be the Commanders of the Militia, in the several Counties; And likewise to what time it shall be limited, that no power shall be executed by His Majestie alone, without the advice of Parliament;

Then He will declare, That (for the securing you from all Dangers, or fealousies of any,) His Majesty will be content to put in all the places, both of Forts, and Militia, in the several counties, such persons as both the Houses of Parliament shall either approve, or recommend unto Him, so that you declare before unto His Majesty, the names of the persons whom you approve, or recommend: unless such persons shall be named, against

whom he shall have just, and unquestionable exceptions.

To the other Petition, concerning the members of either House, His Ma- The King gives up firsty returns this Answer, That as He once conceived, that He bad ground secuting the accused enough to accuse them, so now His Majesty finds as good cause, wholly to members of Parliament, for High

desert any prosecution of them.

And, for a further testimony of His Majestie's real Intention towards all His loving Subjects, (some of whom, happily, may be involved in some unknowing and unwilling Errors,) For the better composing, and settling of all Feares and Jealousies, of what kind soever, His Majesty is ready

to grant as free and general a Pardon, for the full contentment of all His loving Subjects, as shall, by the approbation of both Houses of Parliament, be thought convenient for that purpose.

His Majestie's Consent, for the Princesse Marie's going to Holland, and Her Majesty to accompany Her thither.

HIS Majesty, being very much pressed by the States Ambassadour, to send the Princesse His Daughter, immediately into Holland: And, being likewise earnestly desired by His Royal Consort the Queen, to give her Majesty leave to accompany Her Daughter thither; Hath thought fit to consent to both desires, and to make this his Majestie's Consent, and her Majestie's Resolution, knowne to His Parliament.

Her MAJESTIE'S Answer, to a Message of both Houses.

THE Queen, having received a Message from both Houses of Parliament, by the Earle of Newport, and the Lord Seymor, intimating unto her, that she had been told that the House of Commons had an intention to accuse Her of high Treason, and that Articles to that purpose had been shewed unto her, Returns this Answer.

That there was a general report, of an Accusation, intended against her, but she never saw any Articles in writing, and having no certain Author, either for the one, or for the other, she gave little credit thereunto, and much lesse now, being assured from the House of Commons, that never any such thing came into their thoughts.

Nor will she believe they would lay an Aspersion upon her, who hath ever been very unapt so farre to misconstrue the Actions of any one person, and much more the proceedings of Parliament, and shall, at all times, wish a happy understanding between the King and his people.

His Majestie's Message, sent to the House of Commons, concerning Licences, granted by His Majesty, to several persons, to passe into Ireland, February 7, 1641-42.

HIS Majesty, taking notice of a Speech, pretending in the Title, to have been delivered by Master Pym in a Conference: and Printed by Order of the House of Commons, in which it is affirmed, That, since the stop upon the Ports, against all Irish Papists, by both House's, many of the chief Commanders, now in the head of the Rebels, have been suffered to passe by his Majestie's immediate Warrant;

Digitized by Google

And, being very certain of having used extreme Caution in the granting of Passeports into *Ireland*; So that, He conceives, either this Paper, not to have been so delivered and Printed as it pretends, or this House to have received some misinformation:

His Majesty would be resolved, whether this Speech were so delivered, and Printed; and, if it were, would have this House to review, upon what Informations that particular was grounded; that either that may be found, upon re-examination, to have been false, and both this House, and His Majesty, injured by it; Or that His Majesty may know, by what means, and by whose fault, His Authority hath been so highly abused as to be made to conduce to the assistance of that Rebellion, which He so much detests and abhors, and that He may see Himself fully vindicated from all reflections of the least suspicion of that kind.

The Answer of the House of Commons.

YOUR Majestie's most loyal and faithful Subjects, the Commons, now assembled in Parliament, have taken into their serious consideration the Message received from Your Majesty, the 7th of this instant, February, and do acknowledge, that the Speech therein mentioned to be delivered by M. Pym, in a Conference, was printed by their Order, and that what was therein delivered, was agreeable to the sense of the House. And touching that passage, wherein it is affirmed, that, since the stop upon the Ports, against all Irish Papists, by both Houses, many of the chief Commanders, now in the head of the Rebels, have been suffered to passe by your Majestie's immediate Warrants, they present your Majesty with this, their humble Answer.

That they have received divers advertisements, concerning the several persons, (Irish papists and others,) which have obtained your Majestie's immediate Warrants, for their passing into Ireland, since the Order of Restraint, of both Houses, some of which, (as they have been informed,) since their coming into Ireland, have joined with the Rebels, and been Commanders amongst them, and some others have been stayed, and are yet in safe custody; particularly the Lord Delvin, and four other persons in his company, whereof one is thought to be a Priest, one Colonel Butler, brother to the Lord Minyart, now in Rebellion, and Sir George Hamilton, all which are papists; And one other (as is reported) being son of the Lord Netersfield, whose father, and brother, are both in Rebellion: the particular names of others, we have not yet received, but doubt not, but upon examination, they may be discovered.

And your Majestie's most faithful Subjects, are very sorry, that the Extream Caution which your Majesty hath used, hath been so ill seconded with the diligence and faithfulness of your Ministers, and that your Royal Authority should be so highly abused; Although, (as it was exprest in that Speech by Master Pym,) we believe it was by the procurement of some evil Instruments, too neer your

Royal person, without your Majestie's knowledge, and intention. And we beseech your Majesty, to take such course, that not only your Honour may be vindicated for the time past, but your Kingdome may be secured from the like mischief for the time to come.

Read, and, by vote upon the Question, assented-unto, Feb. 10, 1641-2.

His MAJESTIE'S Reply to the House of Commons Answer.

Concerning LICENCES, granted by the KING, to several persons, to go into IRELAND.

AS his Majesty hath expressed a great desire, to give his House of Commons all possible satisfaction to all their just Requests, and a readiness to rectifie, or retract, any thing done by himself, which might seem to trench upon their Priviledges, by any mistake of his; So he doubts not, they will be ready, upon all occasions, to manifest an equal tenderness and regard of his Majestie's Honour and Reputation, with his good Subjects; and therefore his Majesty expects, they should review his Message, of the seventh of this moneth, concerning a passage, in Master Pym's Speech, and their Answer sent to his Majesty, by some of their Members, on the tenth of the same; with which his Majesty can by no means rest satisfied.

His Majestie's Exception to that Message was, that it was affirmed in that Speech, That, since the stop upon the Ports against all Irish Papists, by both Houses, many of the chiefe Commanders, now in the head of the Rebels, have been suffered to pass by his Majestie's immediate Warrant.

To this, the Answer is:

THAT the Speech, mentioned in that Message, to be delivered by M. Pym, was Printed by their Order, and that what was therein delivered was agreeable to the sense of the House: that they have received divers Advertisements, concerning several persons, Irish Papists, and others, who have obtained his Majestie's immediate Warrant, for their passing into Ireland, since the Order of Restraint, of both Houses; some of which, they have been informed, since their coming into Ireland, have joined with the Rebels, and been Commanders amongst them.

His Majesty is most assured, no such person hath passed by his Warrant, or Privity: and then he desires his House of Commons, to consider, whether such a general Information and Advertisement, (in which there is not so much as the name of any particular person mentioned,) be ground enough for such a direct and positive Affirmation as is made in that Speech, which, in respect of the place and Person, and, being now acknowledged to be agreeable to the sense of the House, is of that authority, that his Majesty may suffer in the Affections of many of his good Subjects, and fall under a possible construction, (considering many scandalous

scandalous Pamphlets to such a purpose,) of not being sensible enough of that Rebellion, so horrid and odious to all Christians, by which, in this distraction, such a danger might possibly ensue to his Majestie's Person and Estate, as he is well assured, his House of Commons, will use their utmost endeavours to prevent. And therefore his Majesty, thinks it very necessary, and expects, that they name those persons, who, by his Majestie's Licence, have passed into Ireland, and are now there in the head of the Rebels; Or that, if, upon their re-examination, they do not find particular Evidence to prove that Assertion, (as his Majesty is confident they never can;) then, as this Affirmation, (which may reflect upon his Majesty,) is very publike, so they will publish such a Declaration, whereby that mistake may be discovered; his Majesty being the more tender in that particular, which hath Reference to Ireland, as being most assured, that He hath been, and is, from his Soul, resolved to discharge his Duty, (which God will require at his hands,) for the relief of his poor Protestant Subjects there, and the utter rootingout that Rebellion; So that Service hath not suffered any but necessary delays, by any act of his Majestie's, or for the want of any thing proposed to his Majesty, within his Majestie's power to do.

For the persons named in the Answer, his Majesty saith, that Colonel Butler, and the son of the Lord Nettersfield, obtained his Warrants for their passage into Ireland, during the time of his Majestie's being in Scotland, which was long (as his Majesty thinks,) before the Order of both Houses: His Majesty, knowing the former of them to be one who hath always made Professions to his Service, and to be Uncle to the Earle of Ormond, of whose affection to the Protestant Religion and his Majestie's Service His Majesty hath great cause to be assured; And, the latter being a person of whom, at that time, there was no suspicion to his Majestie's knowledge. For the others, it may be, they have obtained Warrants from his Majesty since the said Order; but his Majesty assures the Parliament, that he had no intimation of such an Order, till after stay made of Sir George Hamilton, who was the last that had any Licence from his Majesty to pass for Ireland.

And his Majesty, having, since this Answer from the House of Commons, used all possible means, by the examining his own memory and the Notes of his Secretaries, to find what Warrants have been granted by him, and to what persons, doth not find, That he hath granted any to any Irish but those who are named by the House of Commons, and, in December last, to the Earl of Saint Albans, and to two of his servants, and to one Walter Terrel, a poor man; they being such as, his Majesty is assured, are not with the Rebels, and, much less, chief Commanders over them. And, though it may be, the Persons named by the House of Commons are Papists, yet his Majesty, at that time, thought it not fit, (in respect of their Alliance in that Kingdom to such Persons of great power, of whom his Majesty hoped well,) to discover any suspicion of them; the Lords-Justices having declared by their Letters, (which Letters were not disapproved of by the Parliament here,) that they were so far from owning a publike jealousy of all Papists there, that they had thought fit to put Arms into the hands of divers

Noblemen of the Pale [that were] of that Religion, who made Professions to His Majestie's Service, and desired the same. And, since so great a trust reposed in some of the Lords of that Religion, was not disapproved by the Parliament here, His Majesty could not imagine it unsafe, or unfit, for him to give Licences to some few to passe into that Kingdom, who, though Papists, professed due Allegiance and Loyalty to His Majesty.

And therefore, unlesse the first Affirmation of the House of Commons can be made good by some particulars, His Majesty doth not know that his Ministers have failed in their diligence and faithfulnesse to His Majesty in this point, or that his Honour hath suffered so much by any Act of his own, as that it needs be vindicated for the time past by any other way than such a Declaration which he expects

from this house, as in Duty and Justice due to His Majesty.

A Message from His Majesty to the House of Peers, on Friday the 11th of February, 1641, concerning his acceptance of Sir John Coniers, in the place of Sir John Byron, to be Lieutenant of the Tower.

ALTHOUGH His Majesty conceives that he is not obliged to give an Answer in any particular concerning the Forts and Militia of the Kingdom, until he shall know and consent to the Power and the time, how and to whom, the Forts and Militia shall be disposed; Yet to shew his real intention to satisfie the feares of his People, He is content to accept of Sir John Coniers, in the place of Sir John Byron, for to be Lieutenant of the Tower of London, having already, at his earnest desire, received the surrender of the said Place from him.

A true and exact List of those Persons, nominated and recommended by the House of Commons to His Majesty, As persons fit to be entrusted with the Militia of the Kingdom: wherein they desire the concurrence of the House of Peers, Feb. 12, 1641.

BERKSHIRE, Earl of Holland. Bedfordshire, Earl of Bullingbroke. Buckinghamshire, Lord Paget. Cambridgeshire and the Isle of Ely, Lord North. Cheshire, and the County and City of Chester, Lord Strange. Cornwall, Lord Robarts. Cumberland, Lord Gray of Wark. Derby, Earl of Rutland. Devonshire, and of the County and City of Exon, Earl of Bedford. Dorsetshire, and the County of the Town of Poole, Earl of Salisbury. For the Isle of Purbeck Com. Dorset, Sir John Banks, Knight, Lord Chief Justice of the Common Pleas, and Constable of Corffe Castle. Durham, Sir Henry Vane, the Elder. Essex, Earl of Warwick. Gloucestershire, and of the County and City of Gloucester, Lord Chandois.

Chandois. Hampshire, and of the Town and County of Southampton, and of the Isle of Wight, Earl of Pembroke, Hartfordshire, Earl of Salisbury. Herefordshire, Lord Dacres. Huntingdonshire, Lord Mandevile. Kent, and the City and County of Canterbury, Earl of Leicester. Com. Lancaster, Lord Wharton. Leicester, Earl of Stamford. Middlesex, Earl of Holland. Com. Northampton, Lord Spencer. Nottingham, and of the Town and County of Nottingham, Earl of Clare. Northumberland, and of the Town and County of Newcastle, and of the Town of Barwick, Earl of Northumberland. Norfolk, and of the County and City of Norwich, Earl of Warwick. Oxfordshire, Lord Viscount Say and Seale. Rutland, Earl of Exon. Salop, Lord Littleton, Lord-Keeper of the Great Seal of England. Somerset, Marquis Hertford.

That the Lieutenant of the County of Worcester shall be nominated before Somerset.

Staffordshire, and of the County of the City of Lichfield, Earl of Essex. Earl of Suffolk. Surrey, Earl of Nottingham. Sussex, Earl of Northumberland. Warwick, and of the County of the City of Coventry, Lord Brooke. Westmerland, Earl of Cumberland. Wilts, Earl of Pembroke. Wigorn, and of the County of the City of Worcester, Lord Edward Howard of Eserig. For the County and City of Bristol, Master Denzil Hollis. Yorkshire, and of the County of the City of York, and of the County of the Town of Kingston on Hull, Earl of Essex. Of the parts of Kestaven and Holland, and the County of the City of Lincolne, Earl of Lincolne. For the parts of Lindsay, in the County of Holland, Lord Willoughby of Parham. Monmouth, Lord Philip Herbert. Isle of Anglesey, Earl of Northumberland. Brecknock, Lord Philip Herbert. gan, Earl of Carbery. Carmarthen, and Carmarthen-Town, Earl of Carbery: Carnarvon, Earl of Pembroke. Denbigh, Lord Fielding. Flintshire, Lord Fielding. Glamorgan, Lord Philip Herbert. Montgomery, Earl of Essex. Merioneth, Earl of Pembroke. Pembroke, and the Towne of Haverford West, Earl of Radnor, Lord Littleton, Lord-Keeper of the Great Seal of Northumberland. England.

That for the levying, ordering, and exercising the Militia of the City of London, power is given unto Sir John Gaire, Sir Jacob Garret, Knights and Aldermen, Thomas Atkins, Alderman, Sir John Wollastone, Knight and Alderman, John Warner, Alderman, and John Towse, Alderman, Serjeant-Major General Shippon, or any three, or more, of them, Randolph Manwaring, William Gibs, John Fowke, James Bunce, Francis Peck, Samuel Warner, James Russell, Nathaniel Wright, William Barkley, Alexander Normington, Stephen Estweeke, Owen Rowe,

Citizens of London, or any six, or more, of them.

His

His Majestie's Message to both Houses of Parliament: February 14, 1641.

THOUGH His Majesty is assured, that His having so suddenly passed these two Bills, being of so great importance, and so earnestly desired by both Houses, will serve to assure His Parliament. That He desires nothing more than the satisfaction of His Kingdom; yet, that He may further manifest to both Houses how impatient He is, till he find-out a full remedie to compose the present Distempers, He is pleased to signifie:

That His Majesty will, by Proclamation, require, that all Statutes made concerning

Recusants be, with all Care, Diligence, and Severity, put in execution.

That His Majesty is resolved, That the seven Condemned Priests shall be immediately Banished, if His Parliament shall consent thereunto: And His Majesty will give present Order (if it shall be held fit by both Houses) that a Proclamation issue, to require all Romish Priests within twenty days to depart the Kingdom; and, if any shall be Apprehended after that time, His Majesty assures both Houses, in the Word of a King, That He will graht no pardon to any such without consent of His Parliament.

And, because His Majesty observes great and different Troubles to arise in the hearts of His People concerning the Government and Liturgie of the Church, His Majesty is willing to declare, That He will referre that whole Consideration to the Wisdom of His Parliament, which He desires them to enter-into speedily, that the present Distractions about the same may be composed. But he desires not to be present to any single Act on His Part, till the whole be so digested and settled by both Houses, that His Majesty may cleerly see what is fit to be left, as well as what is fit to be taken away.

For Iretand (in behalf of which His Majestie's heart bleeds) as His Majesty hath concurred with all Propositions made for that Service by His Parliament, so He is resolved to leave nothing undone for their Relief, which shall fall within His possible Power, nor will refuse to venture His owne Person in that Warre, if His Parliament shall thinke it convenient for the reduction of that miserable Kingdome.

And, lastly, His Majesty, taking notice, by several Petitions, of the great and general decay of Trade in this Kingdome, and more particularly of that of Clothing, and new Draperies (concerning which He received lately at Greenwich a modest, but earnest, Petition from the Clothiers of Suffolke) of which decay of Trade, His Majesty hath a very deep sense, both in respect of the extreme want and poverty it hath brought, and must bring, upon many thousands of His loving Subjects; and of the influence it must have in a very short time upon the very subsistence of this Nation: Doth earnestly recommend the consideration of that great and weighty Businesse to both Houses; Promising them, that He will most readily concurre

Digitized by Google

in any Resolution their Wisdomes shall find-out, which may conduce to so neces-

THE Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament, do, with much Joy, receive and with Thankfulnesse acknowledge, Your Majestie's Grace and Favour, in giving your Royal Assent to a Bill, intituled, An Act for disenabling all Persons in Holy Orders, to exercise any Temporal Jurisdiction or Authority: And also Your Majestie's Care for Ireland, expressed in the dispatch of the Bill of Pressing, so much importing the safety of that, and this, Kingdom.

To the King's Most Excellent Majesty.

The humble Petition of the Lords and Commons new Assembled in Parliament.

Sheweth,

THAT Your Majesty, in answer to their late Petition touching the proceedings against the Lord Kimbolton, Master Hollis, Sir Arthur Hasterig, Master Pym. Master Hamden, and Master Strode, Members of the Parliament, was pleased to signifie. That, as Your Majesty once conceived that you had ground enough to accuse them, So now Your Majesty findes as good cause wholly to desert any further prosecution of them. Notwithstanding which, they remaine still under that heavy charge so imputed unto them, to the exceeding prejudice not only of themselves, but also of the whole Parliament. And, whereas, by the express Laws and Statutes of this Your Realm, that is to say, by two Acts of Parliament, the one made in the 37th. and the other in the 38th, year of the Reign of your most Noble Progenitor, King Edward the Third: "If any person whatsoever make suggestion to the King himself, of any Crime committed by another, the same person ought to be sent with the suggestion, before the Chancellor or Keeper of the Great Seal, Treasurer, and the Great Council, there to find surety to pursue his suggestion; which if he cannot prove, he is to be imprisoned till he hath satisfied the Party accused of his damages and slander, and made fine and ransom to the King:" The said Lords and Commons humbly beseech Your Majesty, That, not only in point of Justice to the said Members in their particulars, but for the Vindication of the Rights and Priviledges of Parliament, Your Majesty will be pleased to send the Person or Persons. that in this case made the suggestions, or informations, to Your Majesty, against the said Members of Parliament, Together with the said suggestions or informations, to Your Parliament, That so such fruits of the said good Laws may be had as were intended by them, and the Rights and Priviledges of Parliament may be Vindicated: which of right and justice ought not to be denyed.

An Ordinance of both Houses of Parliament, for the safe-guard of the Parliament, Tower, and City of London, under the Command of Serjeant-Major General Skippon.

WHEREAS upon the 12th of January last past, (amongst other things in that Order;) It is ordered by the Lords and Commons in Parliament, in these words: "And for the better safeguard of the Tower, It is further Ordered by both Houses of Parliament, That the Sheriffs of London and Middlesex shall appoint and place a sufficient Guard about the Tower, both by Land and Water, under the Command of Serjeant-Major General Shippon, Commander of the Guards of the Parliament, And that those Guards be careful to see the former Order observed." Now, whereas the said Serjeant-Major having (in his great care and faithfulnesse) given his advice to the said Sheriffs, concerning what Guards he conceived to be fitting, and how the same Guards ought to have been Ordered by Water and Land, as he thought most advantageous for the said service.—Whereas also the said Serjeant-Major hath given his further advice and Order, to divers other persons, concerning the timely discovery and preventing of any thing that might have been attempted, or done, contrary to the intent of the said Order of both Houses of Parliament.

And whereas the said Serjeant-Major Shippon hath, according to the trust reposed in him by the City of London, placed the Trained-Bands of the said City, at the further end of Tower-Street, and in such other places within and about the City, as he conceived to be most for the safety of the City: All and every particular of the which premisses, and whatsoever else in the same kind, and to the same ends, that he the said Serjeant-Major hath advised, or done, or shall advise or do, according to the Order aforesaid, is hereby well-approved-of and fully warranted by both Houses of Parliament, as being for the real good service of His Majesty, and the Common-wealth; as also for the safety of the Parliament and City. And is in all and every part thereof, according to his Duty, the last Protestation, and the Laws of this Kingdom. And, if any person shall arrest, or any other way trouble, him for so doing, he doth break the Priviledge of Parliament, Violate the Libery of the Subject, and is hereby declared an Enemy to the Common-wealth.

A Message from a Committee of both Houses of PARLIAMENT, to the SPANISH AMBASSADOR, to make stay of Ships at DUNKIRK, intended for the supply of the Rebels in IRELAND.

THE Lords and Commons have commanded us to intimate to the Spanish Ambassadour the advertisement, that they have received, of certaine Ships lying in Dunkerke, laden with Ammunition, ready to take sail, intended for the relief of the Rebels of Ireland. This they hold contrary to the Articles agreed-upon, in

the Treaties of Peace between the two Crowns; And therefore the Ambassadour is to be moved from both Houses, to send speedily to Dunkerke, and to all other His [Spanish, or Catholick] Majestie's Dominions, and unto the King his Master, to make stay of those, and all such Ships as may carry any supply of Men, Victuals, Money, or any other aid, to His Majestie's Subjects, that at this present are in Rebellion in Ireland; Which otherwise will be understood to be a Breach of the Treaties between the Crowns of England and Spain, and so resented by the Parliament.

The Spanish Ambassadour's Answer to the Message from a Committee of both Houses of Parliament.

THE Lord Ambassadour of Spain, Don Alonso de Cardenas, having understood what the Lord Fielding, of the Lords House, and Sir Thomas Barrington, Baronet, and Sir John Holland, Baronet, of the House of Commons, All three Commissaries from the Parliament, have said in behalf of both Houses, concerning the advertisement given them, that in the Haven of Dunkerke, there were certain Ships laden with Ammunition, ready to take sail, intended for the relief of the Rebels of Ireland, which they hold contrary to the Articles of Peace between the two Crowns; And that they required he should send to Dunkerke, and all other His Majestie's Dominions, and that he should write unto the King His Master, to make stay of those and all such Ships as may carry supply of Powder, Victuals, Money, or any other aid, to His Majestie's Subjects, that at this present are in Rebellion in Ireland; because, otherwise, it would be understood to be a Breach of the Treaties between the two Crowns, and so resented by the Parliament:—The said Ambassadour of Spain answered, That, besides the understanding which he hath of the King his Master's mind and intention to conserve the friendship which he professeth with His Majesty of Great-Britain, he hath express and most particular notice, that the Ships which are now in Dunkerke-Haven, laden with Souldiers and Ammunition and ready to sail, neither are for Ireland, nor were they provided for any such purpose; And that this notice was given him by Don Francisco de Mello, Earl of Assumar, Governour and Captain-General of the States of Flanders, whom the Resident of His Majesty of Great Britain, that assists in Brussels, assured that he is fully satisfied of their not going for Ireland, as is also his King, who signified so much unto him in a letter, in which he likewise commanded him to thank the said Don Francisco de Mello, for denying leave, which certain Irish, serving in those States, had asked to return to their Country, which he denied, to avoid all suspicion; Notwithstanding their end for asking it was unknown. The same assurance did the same Ambassadour give unto the Commissaries aforesaid of the Parliament, concerning the mentioned Ships in Dunkerke, laden with Ammunition and Souldiers, "that they are not for Ireland;" And he proffered to write to Dunkirk, and all other Parts of Flanders, and Dominions of the King his Master; and particularly to His Catholick Majesty,

to the end, That the observance of the Articles of Peace, (which hitherto havebeen so religiously observed of the King his Master's part, and his Subjects,) may be continued; and that new and strait Orders be given, That no Subject of His Catholick Majesty shall dare to violate them, by sending any kind of aids to foster the Insurrection in Ireland, under pain of the punishment imposed upon the transgressors. And the said Ambassadour, to manifest the sincerity of his heart, proffered to solicite it with the readiest and most forcible means that lay in his power, hoping (as in reason helshould,) that His Majesty of Great-Britain, and the Parliament, will, for their part, punctually observe the same in the aforesaid conformity towards the Rebels of the King his Master, not permitting any kinds of succour or assistance, in whatsoever quality, to be afforded them, from these King-Renewing for this effect, all requisite Orders unto the Officers and Ports of the said Kingdoms, chastising the transgressors of what is settled in the Peace, with the punishments contained in the Articles of it; that so, by reciprocal observance, the good correspondency, which is at this present between the two Crowns of Spain and England, may be assuredly maintained.

HIS MAJESTIE'S MESSAGE to both Houses, concerning the MILITIA.

HIS Majesty, having received an humble Petition of the Lords and Commons, by the hands of the Earls of Carlisle and Monmouth, returns this Answer; That his dearest Consort the Queen, and his dear Daughter the Princess Mary, being now upon their departure for Holland, He cannot have so good time to consider of a particular Answer, for a matter of so great weight as this is: therefore he must respite the same until his return.

To the KING's Most Excellent MAJESTY.

The humble Petition of the Lords and Commons, concerning this Message.

May it please your Most Excellent Majesty,

YOUR humble and loyal Subjects, the Lords and Commons, have, with a great deal of grief, received Your Majestie's Answer, to their just and necessary Petition, concerning the Militia of the Kingdom; which, Your Majesty, by a gracious Message formerly sent unto them, was pleased to promise, should be put into such hands as your Parliament should approve-of, or recommend unto you; the extent of their power, and the time of their continuance, being likewise declared. That being done, and the persons by both Houses nominated, Your Majesty, nevertheless, refers Your resolution herein, to a longer, and a very uncertain, time, which (the present dangers and distractions being so great and pressing) is

as unsatisfactory and destructive, as an absolute denial. Therefore we once again beseech Your Majesty, to take our desire into Your Royal thoughts, and to give us such an answer as may raise in us a confidence, that we shall not be exposed to the practices of those who thirst after the ruin of this Kingdom, and the kindling of that combustion in *England*, which they have, in so great a measure, effected in *Ireland*; from whence (as we are daily informed) they intend and endeavour to invade us, with the assistance of the Papists here amongst us.

Nothing can prevent these evils, nor enable us to suppress the Rebellion in Ireland, and secure ourselves, but the instant granting of that our humble Petition; which we hope Your Majesty will not deny to those who must, in the discharge of their duties both to your Majesty and the Common-wealth, represent unto your Majesty, what they find so absolutely necessary, for the preservation of both; which the Laws, both of God and man, enjoin them to see put in execution, as several Counties, by their daily Petitions, have desired of us, and in some places, have begun already to do it of themselves, Feb. 22, 1641.

Resolved, upon the question, and assented-unto, and ordered, That Master. Hollis carry it up to the Lords, to desire their concurrence herein.

A Message from both Houses of Parliament, sent to the King and Queen's Majesties, Touching certain Letters, lately intercepted, and, (as it may be conjectured), sent from the Lord Digby, to the Queen's Majesty.

Most gracious Sovereign,

YOUR Majestie's most Loyal and faithful Subjects, the Lords and Commons in Parliament, have received Your Message of the sixteenth of this instant February, sent at the instance of the Queen's Majesty; and, upon consideration thereof, to our great joy and content, find therein clear expressions of Grace and Favour, from both Your Majesties; for which we return our most humble thanks: and have herewithall sent the Transcript of that Letter required by Your Majesty, as likewise of two other Letters, directed to Master Secretary Nicholas, and Sir Lewes Dives, all which were brought to us under one cover, indorsed to Master Secretary, with information, that they were written by the Lord Digby; who, being a person who had fled from the Justice of Parliament, and one who had given many evidences of the dis-affection to the public good; we conceived it necessary to open the two former, and finding sundry expressions in them full of Asperity and Malignity to the Parliament, We thought it very probable, That the like may be contained in that to her Majesty, and that it would be dishonourable to her Majesty, and dangerous for the Kingdom, if it should not be opened, wherein we were no whit deceived, as Your Majesty may well perceive by the Contents thereof.

And although we cannot but be very sensible of the great dishonour therein done

done to your Majesties, and the malicious endeavours of fomenting and increasing the Jealousy betwixt Your Majesty and Your people; Yet we are far from reflecting any thing upon the Queen, or expecting any satisfaction from Her Majesty; But impute all to the bold and envenomed spirit of the man. Only we most earnestly beseech your Majesty, to persuade the Queen, that she will not vouchsafe any countenance to, or correspondency with, the Lord Digby, or any other of the Fugitives, or Traitors, whose offences now depend under the examination and judgement of Parliament; which we assure ourselves will be very effectual, to further the removal of all Jealousies and Discontents, betwixt Your Majesty and Your People, and the settling the great affairs of Your Majesty, and the Kingdom, in an assured State and condition of Honour, safety, and prosperity.

A Message from both Houses of Parliament unto His Majesty, concerning the Prince, His Son.

- THE Lords and Commons in Parliament, humbly desire his Majesty, That the Prince may not be removed from *Hampton-Court*; and that for these ensuing Reasons.
- 1. They conceive his Majesty had resolved, that the Prince should stay at Hampton-Court, until his Majestie's Return.
- 2. That the Lord Marquess Hertford, appointed by his Majesty to be Governour of the Prince, and approved-of, and commanded by the Parliament to give his personal attendance on the Prince, is now so indisposed in his health, that he is not able to attend the Prince to any other place.
- 3. That the Prince's removal at this time from Hampton-Court may be a cause to promote Jealousies and fears in the hearts of his Majestie's good Subjects; which, they conceive, it is very necessary to avoid.

Die Jovis, 24 Febr. 1641.

Ordered by the Lords and Commons in Parliament, that the Lord Howard of Char. shall attend upon the King, and present these Reasons unto his Majesty.

John Brown, Cler. Parliament.

HIS MAJESTIE'S ANSWER to the REASONS He Received by way of MESSAGE from both Houses, concerning the Prince, his Son.

THAT his Majesty intended, at his remove from Hampton-Court, with his Royal Consort the Queen, towards Dover, That the Prince, his Son, should stay at Hampton-Court, till his Majesty returned to some of his Houses; and thereupon, as soon as his Majesty resolved upon a certain day to be at Greenwich, he commanded

commanded that his Son should attend him there, which was no way contrary to his former intention.

- 2. That his Majesty was very sorry to hear of the Indisposition of the Marquess Hertford, being the Person upon whom he principally relies for the Care of his dearest Son; But, if that indisposition should have lasted, his Majesty could no ways think fit, that his want of health should have hinder'd the Prince from waiting upon his Majesty, according to his command; and therefore would have been much offended, if the Prince had failed of meeting his Majesty, according to his appointment.
- 3. To the Fears and Jealousies, his Majesty knows not what Answer to give, not being able to imagine from what grounds they proceed. But, if any Information have been given to that purpose, His Majesty much desires that the same may be examined to the bottom; and then he hopes that their Fears and Jealousies will be hereafter continued only with reference to his Majestie's Rights and Honour.

The Votes of the Lords, and Commons, Upon the Propositions, made by divers worthy and well-affected persons, for the speedy and effectual reducing of the Kingdom of IRELAND.

THE Lords and Commons, taking into their serious considerations, as well the necessity of a speedy reducing of the Rebels of Ireland to their due obedience, as also the great sums of money, that the Commons of this Realm have, of late, paid for the publike and necessary Affairs of the Kingdom; whereof, the Lords and Commons are very sensible, and 'desirous to embrace all good and honourable ways, tending to his Majestie's greatness and profit, the settling of that Realm, and the ease of his Majestie's Subjects of England; And whereas, divers worthy and well-affected persons, perceiving that many millions of Acres of the Rebels Lands of that Kingdom, which go under the name of profitable Lands, will be confiscate and to be disposed-of, and that in that case two millions and a halfe of those Acres, to be equally taken out of the four Provinces of that Kingdom, may be allotted for the satisfaction of such persons as shall disburse any sums of money, for the reducing of the Rebels there, which would effectually accomplish the same, have made these Propositions ensuing.

1. That two millions and an half, of those Acres, may be assigned, allotted, and divided amongst them, after this proportion: viz.

For each Adventure of

200 li. 1000 Acres in *Ulster*.

300 li. 1000 Acres in *Conaght*.

450 li. 1000 Acres in *Munster*.

600 li. 1000 Acres in *Leinster*.

All according to the English measure, and consisting of Meadow, Arable, and 2 R 2 profitable

profitable Pasture; the Bogs, Woods, and barren Mountains, being cast-in, over and above. These two millions and a half of Acres, to be holden, in free and common Soccage, of the King, as of his Castle of Dublin.

2. That out of those two millions and an half of Acres, a constant Rent, shall be reserved to the Crown of England, after this proportion, viz.

Whereby his Majestie's Revenue, out of those Lands, will be much improved, besides the advantages that he will have, by the coming to his hands of all other the Lands of the Rebels, and their personal Estates, without any charge unto his Majesty.

- 3. That for the erecting of Manors, settling of Waste and Commons, maintaining of Preaching Ministers, creating of Corporations, and regulating of the several Plantations, one or more Commissions be hereafter granted by Authority of Parliament.
- 4. That monies for this great occasion may be the more speedily advanced, All the Undertakers, in the City of London, and within twenty miles distant thereof, shall under-write their several sums, before the twentieth day of March, 1641, and all within sixty miles of London, before the first day of April, 1642. And the rest of the Kingdom, before the first day of May, 1642.
- 5. That the several sums to be under-written, shall be paid-in at four payments, viz. one fourth part, within ten days, after such under-writing, and the other three parts, at three moneths, three moneths, and three moneths: all to be paid into the Chamber of London.

6. That, for the better securing of the said several sums accordingly, every one that doth so under-write, shall, at the time of his Subscription, pay-down the twentieth part of the total sum that shall be by him then under-written.

And in case that the residue of his first fourth part be not paid in to such person, or persons, as shall be appointed to receive the same, within the ten days before limited; then such a Party shall not only forfeit the twentieth part of the Sum total, formerly deposited, but so much more of his first fourth payment, to be added thereunto, as shall make up the one moiety of the said first payment. And, if the same person shall fail in any other of the three payments, he shall then forfeit his entire first fourth part, and all the benefit of his Subscription; which forfeiture shall accrue to the common benefit of the rest of the Undertakers.

The Lords and Commons, upon due and mature deliberation of these Propositions, have approved of them, and given their consent unto the same, and will become humble Petitioners to his Majesty for his Royal approbation thereof; and that hereafter he will be pleased, upon the humble suit of both Houses of Parlia-

Digitized by Google

firent, to give his Royal Assent to such Bills as they shall tender unto Him, for the settling of those Propositions and all other things necessarily conducing thereunto.

By vertue of an Order of the Honourable House of Commons, made on Monday, the seventh of this present Moneth of February, 1641; We (the Committee appointed to receive the moneys given by the Members of the House of Commons, for the Relief of the poor, distressed, people that are come out of Ireland,) are to require you to send unto us, or any one of us, a Certificate, what sums of money are collected within your Parish, for the relief of the poor, distressed, people of Ireland, and to require you to bring-in such sums of money as you have received, to that Committee; who are authorized by the House to receive the same.

Dated at Westminster, the fifteenth day of February, 1641.

The Committee appointed by the House for the said Collection, are,

Sir Edward Aiscough, Knight, Francis Rowse, Henry Martin, and William Wheeler, Esquires.

To the Minister, and Churchwardens, of the Parish of -.

His Majestie's gracious Answer and Assent, Declared unto both Houses of Parliament, February 24, 1641, was as followeth.

HIS Majesty, being very glad to receive any Proposition that may repair the calamity of his distressed Kingdom of *Ireland*, especially when it may be without burthen, or imposition, and for the ease of his good Subjects, of this Kingdom, hath graciously considered the Overture, made by both Houses of Parliament, to that purpose, and returns this Answer:

THAT, as he hath offered, and is still ready, to venture his own Royal Person, for the Recovery of that Kingdom, if his Parliament shall advise him thereunto, so he will not deny to contribute any other assistance he can, to that Service, by parting with any profit, or advantage, of his own there: And therefore, (relying upon the wisdom of his Parliament,) doth consent to every Proposition now made to him, without taking time to examine, whether this course may not retard the reducing of that Kingdom, by exasperating the Rebels, and rendering them desperate of being received into Grace, if they shall return to their Obedience.

And his Majesty will be ready to give his Royal assent to all such Bills as shall be tendered unto him by his Parliament, for the confirmation of every particular of this Proposition.

Die Veneris, 25th Feb. 1641.

Ordered, by the Lords in Parliament, That the Propositions concerning Ireland,

and his Majestie's gracious Answer thereunto, together with the Directions, shall be forthwith Printed and published.

And for the better effecting of this Work, the Lords and Commons have thought fit to Publish these ensuing Directions.

1. WHEREAS, according to the proportion of Lands in the Propositions mentioned, (being two millions and a half of Acres,) the Sums to be under written, will not exceed one million of money. It will be requisite that, together with the Sums under-written, the day and time of each Subscription be likewise set-down; to the intent, that those who do under-write before the million of money shall be made-up, may not be excluded from the benefit of their respective Subscriptions, in case they make payment of the respective Sums according to the Propositions.

Nevertheless, if any shall under-write after the million of money shall be madeup, they shall be admitted to the shares of such as (having under-written to the million,) shall fail of payment according to the Propositions, or else (at their election,) shall be forthwith repayed, all such Sums as they shall have paid-in,

upon hope of taking benefit of the Propositions.

2. The places to be appointed for the several under-writings, to be, For the Cities of London and Westminster, and the Counties of Surry, and Middlesex, the Chamber of London: for all other Counties in England and Wales, the Towns where the last Assises were kept:

But any of those Counties that shall desire to under-write in London, may be at liberty to do it there.

3. The persons to be employed in taking the under-writings, and receiving the monies, for London and Westminster, Middlesex and Surry, are to be such, as upon further consultation with the Citizens of London, shall be appointed.

And in all other Counties, the Sheriffs of the several Counties respectively:

who are to give Acquitances for such Sums as they shall receive.

- 4. That printed Books of the Propositions, and his Majestie's Answer there-unto, and of the Instructions, shall be sent, and Letters written from the Speaker, to the several Sheriffs of the said Counties, who shall publish the Books, and Letters at the next Assizes, and shall then likewise give publike notice of the times and places by them to be appointed, as well for the several under-writings, as for the payment of the Sums that shall be under-written: And for the better publishing of those Books, the several Citizens and Burgesses of the House of Commons, shall forthwith send-down several Books and Letters to the head-Officers of their Cities and Boroughs, respectively.
- 5. That the several Sheriffs shall, from week to week, send-up to the Chamber of London, a true List of the names and Sums subscribed, and of the time of the Subscription.
 - 6. For the better encouragement of such persons as shall be employed for the City.

City of London and the parts adjoining, as likewise of the said Sheriffs, and such other persons, as shall be by them employed herein, it shall and may be lawful, for the said Sheriffs, and for the said persons, appointed for the City of London, respectively, to deduct, and retain to his or their use, after the rate of one penny in the pound, for their pains and charges, in receiving the said Sums, and in returning the same.

7. That, together with the Printed Propositions and Letters from the Speaker, Paper-Books, with Titles prefixed, shall be sent-down to the Sheriffs of each County, in the beginning of which Books, next under the Titles, the Knights, Citizens, and Burgesses respectively, that serve for the same, and who shall underwrite any Sum, according to the said Propositions, shall subscribe their names and Sums in the first place.

An Ordinance of both Houses of Parliament, for the ordering of the MILITIA, of the Kingdom of England, and Dominion of WALES.

WHEREAS there hath been of late, a most dangerous and desperate Design upon the House of Commons, which we have just cause to believe to be an effect of the bloody Counsels of Papists, and other ill-affected persons, who have already raised a Rebellion in the Kingdom of Ireland. And, by reason of many discoveries, we cannot but fear they will proceed, not only to stir-up the like Rebellion and Insurrections in this Kingdom of England, but also to back them with Forces from

For the safety, therefore, of His Majestie's Person, the Parliament, and King-

dom, in this time of imminent danger;

It is ordained by the King, the Lords and Commons, now in Parliament asshall have power to assemble and call-together all sembled, that and singular his Majestie's Subjects, within the County of within Liberties as without, that are meet and fit for the Wars, and them to traine, exercise, and put in readiness, and them after their abilities, and faculties, well and sufficiently, from time to time, to cause to be Arrayed, and Weaponed, and to take the muster of them in places most fit for that purpose.

shall have power, within the said County, to nominate, and appoint such persons of quality, as to him shall seem meet, to be his Deputy-Lieutenants, to be approved-of by both Houses of Parliament. And that any one, or more, of the said Deputies, so assigned and approved-of, shall, in the absence, have power and authority to do and exor by the command, of the said all such powers and authorities, before in ecute, within the County this present Ordinance contained: And shall have power to make Colonels and Captains, and other Officers, and to remove them out of their places, and to make others, from time to time, as he shall think fit for that purpose. And his

Digitized by Google

his Deputies, Colonels, and Captains, and other officers, shall have further power and authority, to lead, conduct, and employ the persons aforesaid, Arrayed, and Weaponed, as well within the County of as within any other part of this Realm, of England, or Dominion of Wales, for the suppression of all Rebellions, Insurrections, and invasions that may happen, according as they, from time to time, shall receive Directions, by his Majestie's Authority, signified unto them by the Lords and Commons, assembled in Parliament.

And it is further ordained, that such persons, as shall not obey in any of the premisses, shall answer their neglect and contempt, to the Lords and Commons, in a Parliamentary way, and not otherwise, nor elsewhere; and that every the powers granted, as aforesaid, shall continue, until it shall be otherwise ordered, or

declared by both Houses of Parliament, and no longer.

This to go also to the Dominion of Wales.

John Brown, Cler. Parliament.

CHARLES REX.

To Our Trusty, and Right well-beloved Counsellour, Edward, Lord Littleton, Keeper of the Great Seale.

Right

TRUSTY, and Right well-beloved Counsellour, We greet you well. Our will and pleasure is, that you deliver, to be read in the House of Peers, this, Ou answer to the desire from both Houses concerning the Militia; and, for so doing, this shall be your sufficient warrant. Given at Our House at Greenwich, the 28th of February, 1641.

HIS MAJESTIE'S ANSWER to both Houses of Parliament, concerning the Militia, February 28, 1641.

HIS Majesty having, with his best care and understanding, perused and considered, that which was sent him from both Houses, for the ordering of the Militia, (presented unto him, to be made an Ordinance of Parliament, by the giving of his Royal Asssent,) as he can by no means do it for the reasons hereafter mentioned, so he doth not conceive himself obliged, by any promisemade in his Answer of the second of this month to the Petition of both Houses, to yield the same.

His Majesty finds great cause to eccept against the Preface, or Introduction, to that Order, which confesseth a most dangerous and desperate design upon the House of Commons of late, supposed to be an effect of the bloody counsels of Papists and other ill-affected persons; by which many may understand (looking upon other Printed Papers to that purpose) his coming, in Person, to the House of Commons on the fourth of January, which begot so unhappy a misunderstand-

Digitized by Google

ing between him and his People: and, as to that, (though he now believes it, upon the information since given him, to have been an apparent breach of their priviledge; and hath offered, and is ready, to repair the same for the future by any Act that shall be desired of His Majesty;) yet he must declare, and require to be believed, that he had no other design upon that House, or any Member of it, than to require, as he did, the surrender of the persons of those five Gentlemen whom His Majesty had the day before accused of High Treason, and to declare that he meant to proceed against them legally and speedily; upon which he believed that House would have delivered them up. And His Majesty calls the Almighty God to witness, that he was so far from any intention, or thought, of force, or violence, although that House had not delivered them according to his demand, or, in any case whatsoever, that he gave those his Servants, and others who then waited on His Majesty, express charge and command, that they should give no offence to any man; nay, if they received any provocation, or injury, that they should bear it without return: and His Majesty neither saw nor knew, that any person of his train had any other weapons, but such as were suitable to their several conditions, that is, his Pensioners and Guards, those weapons with which they usually attend his person to Parliament, and the other Gentlemen their swords. And, therefore, His Majesty doubts not but his Parliament will be regardful of his honour herein; that he shall not undergo any imputation by the rash, or indiscreet, expressions of any young men then in his Train, or by any desperate words uttered by others, who might mingle with them without his consent, or approbation.

For the persons nominated to be Lieutenants of the several Counties of England and Wales, His Majesty is contented to allow that recommendation. Onely concerning the City of London, and such other Corporations as, by ancient Charters, have, granted unto them, the power of the Militia, His Majesty doth not conceive, that it can stand with justice, or policy, to alter their government in that

particular.

And His Majesty is willing forthwith to grant every of them, (that of London and those other Corporations excepted,) such Commissions as he hath done this Parliament to some Lord-Lieutenants by your advice. But, if that power be not thought enough, but that more shall be thought fit to be granted to these persons named than by the Law is in the Crown itself, His Majesty holds it reasonable, that the same be, by some Law, first vested in him, with power to transferre it to these persons; which he will willingly do. And, whatever that power shall be, to avoid all future doubts and questions, His Majesty desires it may be digested into an Act of Parliament, rather than an Ordinance, so that all his loving subjects may thereby particularly know both what they are to do, and what they are to suffer for their neglect; that there be as little latitude as possible for his good subjects to suffer under any Arbitrary power whatsoever.

As to the time desired for the continuance of the powers to be granted, His Majestie giveth this Answer, "That He cannot consent to divest Himselfe of the just power which God and the Lawes of this Kingdom have placed in Him for the de-

fence

fence of His people, and to put it into the hands of others for any indefinite time. And, since the ground of this Request from his Parliament was, to remove their present feares and jealousies, that they might with safety apply themselves to the matter of his Message of the 20th of January, His Majesty hopeth that His Grace to them since that time in yielding to so many of their desires, and in agreeing to the Persons now recommended to him by his Parliament, and the power before expressed to be placed in them, will wholly dispell those feares and jealousies, and assured them, that, as His Majesty hath now applyed this unusual remedy to their doubts, so (if there shall be cause) He will continue the same to such time as shall be agreeable to the same care he now expresseth towards them.

And, in this Answer, His Majesty is so far from receeding from any thing he promised, or intended to grant, in his Answer to the former Petition, that His Majesty hath hereby consented to all that was then asked of him by that Petition concerning the Militia of the Kingdom (except that of London, and those other Corporations) which was to put the same into the hands of such persons as should be recommended unto Him by both Houses of Parliament: And His Majesty doubts not, but the Parliament, upon well-weighing the particulars of this His Answer, will find the same more satisfactory to their ends, and the peace and welfare of all His good Subjects, than the way proposed by this intended Ordinance, to which, for these Reasons, His Majesty cannot consent.

And, whereas His Majesty observes; by the Petition of both Houses, presented to Him by the Earl of *Portland*, Sir *Thomas Heale*, and Sir *William Savile*, That in some places, some persons begin already to intermeddle, of themselves, with the Militia, His Majesty expecteth that His Parliament should examine the particulars thereof, it being a matter of high Concernment and very great Consequence.

And His Majesty requireth, that, if it shall appear to His Parliament, that any persons whatsoever have presumed to command the Militia without lawful Authority, they may be proceeded against according to Law.

A Copy of the Petition of both Houses of Parliament, concerning the Militia, &c. Presented to His Majesty at Theobalds, 1 Martii, 1641.

Most Gracious Sovereigne,

YOUR Majestie's most loyal and obedient Subjects, the Lords and Common in Parliament, doe find their just apprehensions of sorrow and feare, in respect of the publick dangers and miseries like to fall upon Your Majesty and the Kingdom, to be much increased, upon the receipt of Your unexpected denyal of their most humble and necessary Petition concerning the Militia of the Kingdom; especially grieving, that wicked and mischievous Counsellours should still have that power with Your Majesty, as in this time of imminent and approaching Ruine, rather to incline Your Resolutions to that which is apt to further the accomplishment of the

desires of the most malignant enemies of God's true Religion, and of the peace and safety of Your Self, and Your Kingdom, than to the dutiful and faithful. Counsel of Your Parliament.

Wherefore they are enforced in all humility to Protest, That, if Your Majesty shall persist in that denyal, the dangers and distempers of the Kingdom are such. as will endure no longer delay: But, unlesse You shall be graciously pleased to assure them by these Messengers, that you will speedily apply Your Royal Assent to the satisfaction of their former desires, they shall be enforced, for the safety of, Your Majesty and Your Kingdomes, to dispose of the Militia by the Authority of both Houses, in such manner as hath been propounded to Your Majesty, and they

resolve to doe it accordingly.

They likewise most humbly beseech Your Majesty to believe, That the dangerous and desperate Designe upon the House of Commons, mentioned in their Preamble, was not inserted with any intention to cast the least aspersion upon Your Majesty, but therein they reflected upon that malignant party, of whose bloody and malicious practices they have had so often experience, and from which they can never be secure, unlesse Your Majesty will be pleased to put from You those wicked and unfaithful Counsellours, who interpose their own corrupt and malicious Designes betwixt Your Majestie's Goodness and Wisdome, and the prosperity and contentment of Your Selfe' and of Your people: And that for the dispatch of the great affaires of the Kingdom, the safety of Your Person, the protection and comfort of Your Subjects, You will be pleased to continue Your abode near to London and the Parliament, and not to withdraw Your Selfe to any the remoter parts; which if Your Majesty should doe, it must needs be a cause of great danger and distraction.

That Your Majesty will likewise be graciously pleased to continue the Prince's Highnesse in these parts, at Saint James's, or any other of Your houses neere London, whereby the Designes which the enemies of the Religion and Peace of this Kingdom may have upon his Person, and the jealousies and feares of Your

People, may be prevented.

And they beseech Your Majesty to be informed by them, That, by the Lawes of the Kingdom, the power of raising, ordering, and disposing of the Militia within any City, Town, or other place, cannot be granted to any Corporation by Charter, or otherwise, without the Authority and consent of Parliament: And that those parts of the Kingdom which have put themselves in a posture of defence against the common danger, have therein done nothing but according to the Declaration and direction of both Houses, and what is justifiable by the Lawes of this Kingdom.

All which their most humble counsell and desires, they pray Your Majesty to accept as the effect of that Duty and Allegiance which they owe unto You, and which will not suffer them to admit of any thoughts, intentions, or endeavours, but such as are necessary and advantageous for Your Majestie's Greatnesse and

Digitized by Google

Honour,

Honour, and the safety and prosperity of the Kingdom, according to that Trust and Power which the Lawes have reposed in them.

HIS MAJESTIE'S ANSWER, to the PETITION of both Houses, Presented the first of March, 1641.

I AM so much amazed at this Message, that I know not what to Answer: You speak of Jealousies and Feares: Lay you hands to your hearts, and ask your selves whether I may not likewise be disturbed with Feares and Jealousies: And, if so, I Assure you this Message hath nothing lessened them.

For the Militia, I thought so much of it before I sent that Answer, and am so much assured that the Answer is agreeable to what in Justice or Reason you can

ask, or I in Honour grant, that I shall not alter it in any point.

For my Residence neere you, I wish it might be so safe and Honourable, that I had no cause to absent my Selfe from White-hall; Aske your selves whether I have not.

For my Son, I shall take that care of him, which shall justify me to God as a

Father, and to my Dominions as a King.

To conclude, I assure you, upon my Honour, that I have no thought but of Peace and Justice to my People, which I shall, by all faire meanes, seek to preserve and maintain, relying upon the Goodness and providence of God, for the preservation of my Selfe and Rights.

Divers Questions upon HIS MAJESTIE'S last Answer, concerning the MILITIA, Resolved-upon by the House of Commons.

RESOLVED, &c. That this Answer of His Majesty, is a denyal to the desires of both Houses of Parliament, concerning the Militia.

Resolved, &c. That those that advised His Majesty to give this Answer, are Enemies to the State, and mischievous Projectors against the defence of the Kingdom.

Resolved, &c. That this denyal is of that dangerous Consequence, that, if His Majesty shall persist in it, It will hazard the Peace and safety of all his Kingdoms, unlesse some speedy remedy be applied by the Wisdome and Authority of both Houses of Parliament.

Resolved, &c. That, such Parts of this Kingdom as have put themselves into a Posture of defence against the common danger, have done nothing but what is justifiable, and is approved by the House.

Resolved; &c. That, if His Majesty shall remove into any remote Parts from his Parliament, it will be a great hazard to the Kingdom; and a great prejudice to the Proceedings of the Parliament.

Resolved,

Resolved, &c. That this House holds it necessary, That His Majesty may be desired, That the Prince may come unto Saint James's, or to some other convenient place near about London, and there to continue.

Resolved, &c. That the Lords be desired to join with this House in an humble request unto His Majesty; That he will be pleased to reside neere his Parliament; That both Houses may have a convenience of Accesse unto him upon all occasions.

Resolved, &c. That the Lords be moved to join with this House in some fit course of examination, to find "who were the Persons that gave His Majesty this advice;" That they may be removed from His Majesty, and brought to condigne punishment.

Resolved, &c. That no Charter can be granted by the King to create a power in any Corporation over the Militia of that place, without consent of Parliament.

Resolved, &c. That the Lords shall be moved to join with this House in these Votes.

Resolved, &c. That the Lords shall be desired to appoint a select Committee, that may join with a Committee of a proportionable number of this House; to consider, and prepare, what is fit to be done upon these Votes, or upon any thing else that may arise upon this Answer of His Majesty concerning the Militia and concerning the Prince.

March 2.

Questions resolved upon by both Houses of PARLIAMENT, with an Order for the speedy Rigging of the NAVY, for the defence of the KINGDOM.

RESOLVED, &c. That the Kingdom be forth-with put into a Posture of defence, by authority of both Houses, in such a way as is already agreed-upon by both Houses of Parliament.

Resolved, &c. That the Lords be desired to join with the House of Commons in this Vote.

Resolved, &c. That a Committee shall be appointed to prepare a Declaration upon these two Heads, viz.

- 1. To lay-down the just causes of the feares and jealousies given to these Houses: and to clear these Houses from any jealousies conceived against them.
- 2. And to consider of all matters that may arise upon this Message of His Majesty, and to declare their opinions what is fit to be done thereupon.

Die

Die Mercurii, 2 Martii.

THE Lords and Commons in this present Parliament assembled, having received advertisement of extraordinary preparations made by the neighbouring Princes, both by Land and Sea; the intentions whereof have been so represented as to raise an apprehension in both Houses, That the publick Honour, Peace, and Safety of His Majesty and his Kingdom, cannot be secured, unlesse a timely course be taken for the putting of this Kingdom into a Condition of defence, at Sea, as well as Land: It is therefore Ordered by the Lords and Commons aforesaid, That the Earl of Northumberland, Lord-High Admiral of England, do forth-with give effectual direction and order, that all and every the Ships belonging to His Majestie's Navy, which are fit for service, and not already abroad, nor designed for this Summer's Fleet, be with all speed rigged, and put in such a readinesse, as that they may soon be fitted for the Sea; And that his Lordship do also make knowne unto all the Masters and Owners of such Ships as now are in, or about, any of the Harbours of this Kingdome, and may be of use for the publick defence thereof, That it will be an acceptable service to the King and Parliament, if they likewise will cause their Ships to be Rigged, and so far put in a readinesse as that they may be, at a short warning, set-forth to Sea, upon any emergent occasion: Which will be a means of great security to His Majesty and his Dominions.

The DECLARATION.

May it please your Majesty,

ALTHOUGH the Expressions in your Majestie's Message, of the second of this instant, March, do give just cause of sorrow to us, your faithful Subjects, the Lords and Commons in Parliament, yet it is not without some mixture of confidence and hope, considering they proceeded from the mis-apprehension of our Actions and Intentions; which, (having no ground of Truth, or reality,) may, by your Majestie's Justice and Wisdom, be removed, when your Majesty shall be fully informed, that those Feares and Jealousies of ours, which your Majesty thinks to be causeless and without any just ground, do necessarily and cleerly arise from those dangers and distempers, into which the mischievous and evil Counsels about you have brought this Kingdom; And that those other Fears and Jealousies, by which your favour, your Royal Presence, and confidence, have been withdrawn from your Parliament, have no foundation, or subsistence, in any action, intention, or miscarriage, of ours, but are meerly grounded upon the falshood and malice of those, who, (for the supporting and fomenting their own wicked designes, against the Religion and Peace of the Kingdom,) do seek to deprive your Majesty of the Strength and Affection of your People, and them of your Grace and Protection, and thereby to subject both your Royal Person and the whole Kingdom to ruin and destruction.

To satisfy your Majestie's judgement and conscience in both these points, we desire to make a cleer and free Declaration of the causes of our fears and jealousies; which we offer to your Majesty in these particulars:

- 1. That the designe of altering Religion, in this, and in your other Kingdoms, hath been potently carried-on by those in greatest Authority about you, for divers yeers together. The Queen's Agent at Rome, and the Pope's agent, or Nuncio, here, are not only evidences of this design, but have been great Actors in it.
- 2. That the War with Scotland was procured to make way for this intent, and chiefly invited and fomented by the Papists, and others Popishly-affected: whereof we have many evidences, and especially their free and general contribution to it.
- 3. That the Rebellion in Ireland was framed and contrived here in England; and that the English Papists were expected to have risen about the same time, we have several testimonies and advertisements from Ireland; and that it is a common speech amongst the Rebels: wherewith concur other Evidences, and observations, of the suspicions, meetings, and consultations, the tumultuary and seditious carriage, of those of that Religion, in divers parts of this Kingdom, about the time of the breaking-out of the Irish Rebellion. The deposition of O'Connelly,—the Information of Master Cole, Minister,—the Letter of Trestram Whitcombe,—the deposition of Thomas Crant,—and many others which we may produce, do all agree in this. The publike Declaration of the Lords, Gentlemen, and others of the Pale, that they would join with the Rebels, (whom they call the Irish Army,) or any other, to recover unto his Majesty his Royal Prerogative, wrested from him by the Puritan Faction in the Houses of Parliament in England, and to maintain the same against all others, as also to maintain Episcopal Jurisdiction, and the lawfulness thereof; these two being Quarrels, upon which his Majestie's late Army in the North should have been incensed against us.

The great cause we have to doubt, that that late design, styled, The Queen's pious Intention, was for the alteration of Religion in this Kingdom; for the success whereof, the Pope's Nuncio, the Count Rosetti, enjoined Fasting and Praying to be observed every Week by the English Papists; which appeared to us by one

of the Original Letters directed by him to a Priest in Lancashire.

The boldness of the Irish Rebels, in affirming that they do nothing, but by Authority from the King: That they call themselves the Queen's Army: That the prey, or booty, which they take from the English, they mark with the Queen's Mark: That their purpose was to come to England, after they had done in Ireland, and sundry other things of this kind, proved by O'Connelly, and divers others, especially in the fore-mentioned Letter from Trestram Whitcombe, the Mayor of Kinsale, to his Brother Benjamin Whitcombe, wherein there is this passage, "That many other strange speeches they utter about Religion and our Court of England, which he dares not commit to paper."

The manifold attempts to provoke Your Majestie's late Army, and the Army of the Scots, and to raise a faction in the City of London and other parts of the Kingdom:

N. B.

N.B.

N. B.



Kingdom: That those who have been Actors in those businesses, have had their dependance, their countenance, and encouragement from the Court; Witness the Treason whereof Master Jermin and others stand accused, who was transported beyond Sea by Warrant under Your Majestie's Hand, after Your Majesty had given Assurance to your Parliament, that Your Majesty had laid a strict command upon all your Servants, that none of them should depart from Court: And that dangerous Petition, delivered to Captain Leg by your Majestie's own Hand,

accompanied with a direction, Signed with C. R.

The false and scandalous accusation against the Lord Kimbolton and the five Members of the House of Commons, tender'd to the Parliament by your Majestie's own command,—endeavoured to be justified in the City by your own. presence and perswasion, and to be put in execution upon their persons, by your Majestie's demand of them, in the House of Commons, in so terrible and violent a manner as far exceeded all former breaches of Priviledges of Parliament, acted by your Majesty, or any of your Predecessors: And (whatsoever your own intentions were,) divers bloody and desperate persons, which attended your Majesty, discovered their affections and resolutions to have massacred and destroyed the Members of that House, if the absence of those persons accused had not, by God's providence, stopt the giving of that word, which they expected, for the setting them upon that barbarous and bloody act:—The Listing of so many Officers, Souldiers, and others,—putting them into pay and under command of Colonels,—feasting and caressing them in an unusual manner at Whitehall;—thereby maintaining them in the violent assaults, and other injuries, which they offered to divers of your Subjects who were coming that way in a lawful and peaceable manner:—the carrying them out of Towne; after which, they were told by the Lord Digby, That the King removed on purpose, that they might not be trampled in the dirt:—And keeping them so long in pay, and endeavouring to engage the Gentlemen of the Innes of Court in the same course:—The plotting and designing of a perpetual Guard about your Majesty:—The labouring to intuse into your Majestie's Subjects an evil opinion of the Parliament thorow the whole Kingdom;—and other Symptoms of a disposition of raising Arms and dividing your people by a Civil War; in which combustion, Ireland must needs be lost, and this Kingdom miserably wasted and consumed, if not wholly ruined and destroyed.

That,—after a Vote had passed in the House of Commons, declaring, That the Lord Digly had appeared in a warlike manner at Kingston upon Thames, to the terrour and affright of your Majestie's good Subjects, and the disturbance of the publike peace of the Kingdom; and that, therefore, the Lords should be moved to require his attendance;—he should, nevertheless, be of that credit with your Majesty, as to be sent-away by your own Warrant to Sir John Pennington to land him beyond the Sea; from whence he vented his own traiterous conceptions, "That your Majesty should declare yourself, and retire to a place of strength in this Kingdom," as if your Majesty could not be safe among your people: And, withall, took that transcendent boldness, to write to the Queen, offering to entertain cor-

respondency,

N. B.

N. B.

respondency with her Majesty by Cyphers, intimating some service which he might do in those Parts, for which he desired your Majestie's instructions; whereby, in probability, he intended the procuring of some foreign Force, to strengthen your Majesty in that condition into which he would have brought you: Which false and malicious counsel and advice, we have great cause to doubt, made too deep an impression on your Majesty, considering the course you are pleased to take, of absenting yourself from your Parliament, and carrying the Prince with you; which seems to express a purpose in your Majesty, to keep yourself in a readiness for the acting of it.

The manifold Advertisements, which we have had from Rome, Venice, Paris, and other parts, that they still expect, that your Majesty has some great design in hand, for the altering of Religion, and the breaking the neck of your Parliament:—
That you will yet find means to compass that Design;—that the Pope's Nuncio hath sollicited the Kings of France and Spaine to lend your Majesty four thousand men a-piece, to help to maintain your Royalty against the Parliament. And this Foreign force, as it is the most pernicious and malignant Design of all the rest, so we hope it is, and shall always be, farthest from your Majestie's thoughts; because no man can believe that you will give-up your people and Kingdom to be spoiled by strangers, if you did not likewise intend to change both your own Profession in Religion and the publick Profession of the Kingdom, that so you might still be more assured of the assistance of those Foreign States who are attached to the Popish Religion, for your future support and defence.

These are some of the grounds of our fears and Jealousies, which made us so earnestly to implore your royal Authority and Protection for our defence and security, in all the ways of Humility and submission: which being denyed by your Majesty, seduced by evil Counsel, we do (with sorrow for the great and unavoidable misery and danger which thereby is like to fall upon your own person and your Kingdoms,) apply ourselves to the use of that power, for the security and defence of both, which, by the fundamental Laws and Constitutions of this Kingdom, resides in us; yet still resolving to keep ourselves within the bounds of faithfulness and allegiance to your sacred Person and your Crown: so that, as to the second sort of Jealousies and tears of Us, exprest by your Majesty, we shall give a

whereas, Your Majesty is pleased to say, that, as to your residence neere the Parliament, you wish it might be so safe and honourable that you had no cause to absent yourself from Whitehall.—This we take as the greatest breach of Priviledge of Parliament that can be offered;—As the heaviest misery to yourself, and imputation upon us, that can be imagined;—And the most mischievous effect of evil Counsels. It roots-up the strongest foundation of the safety and honour which your Crown affords; It seems, as much as may be, to cast upon the Parliament such a charge as is inconsistent with the nature of that great Council, being the Body whereof your Majesty is the Head: it strikes at the very being, both of King and Parliament; depriving your Majesty, in your own apprehension, of

N.B.

their Fidelity, and them of your Protection; which are the mutual bands and sup-

ports of Government and Subjection,

We have, according to your Majestie's desire, laid our hands upon our hearts; we have asked ourselves, in the strictest examination of our Consciences; we have searcht our affections, our thoughts; considered our Actions: and we find none that can give your Majesty any just occasion to absent yourself from Whitehall and the Parliament; but that you may, with more honour and safety, continue

there than in any other place.

Your Majesty lays a general tax upon us. If you will be graciously pleased to let us know the particulars, we shall give a clear and-satisfactory Answer: But what hope can we have of ever giving your Majestie satisfaction, when those particulars which you have been made to believe were true, did, nevertheless, when they were produced and made known to us, appear to be false; and your Majesty, not withstanding, will neither punish nor produce the Authors, but go-on to contract new Jealousies and Fears, upon general and uncertain grounds, affording us no means, or possibility, of particular Answer, to the cleering of ourselves: For proof whereof, we beseech your Majesty to consider these Instances.

The Speeches alledged to be spoken in a meeting of divers Members of both Houses at Kensington, concerning a purpose of restraining the Queen and Prince: which, after it was denied and disavowed, yet your Majesty refused to name the

Authors, though humbly desired by both Houses.

The report of Articles framed against the Queen's Majesty, given-out by some of neer relation to the Court: but, when it was publickly and constantly disclaimed, the credit seemed to be withdrawn from it. But the Authors, being kept safe, will always be ready for exploits of the same kind, wherewith your Majesty, and the Queen, will be often troubled, if this course be taken to cherish and secure them in such wicked and malicious slanders.

The heavy charge and accusation of the Lord Kimbolton, and the five Members of the House of Commons, who refused no trial or examination which might stand with the Priviledge of Parliament: yet no Authors, no witnesses, have been produced; against whom they may have reparation for the great injury and infamy cast upon them, notwithstanding three several Petitions of both Houses, and the authority of two Acts of Parliament vouched in the last of those Petitions.

We beseech your Majesty to consider, in what State your are; how easy and fair a way you have to happiness, honour, greatness, plenty, and security; if you will join with the Parliament and your faithful Subjects, in defence of the Religion and publick good of the Kingdom. This is all we expect from you; and for this we shall return to you our lives, fortunes, and uttermost endeavours, to support your Majesty, your just Soveraignty and power over us. But it is not words that can secure us, in these our humble desires. We cannot but too well and sorrowfully remember, what gracious Messages we had from you the last Summer, when, with your privity, the bringing-up the Army was in agitation. We cannot, but with the like affections, recal to our minds, how, not two days before you gave directions,

' N B.

Digitized by Google

rections for the above-mentioned accusation, and your own coming to the Commons House, that House received from your Majesty a gracious Message, that you would always have as great care of their Priviledges as of your own Prerogative; and of the safety of their persons, as of that of your own children. That which we expect;—which will give us assurance, that you have no thought, but of peace, and justice to your People;—must be some real effect of your goodness to them, in granting those things which the present necessities of the Kingdom do enforce us to desire: And, in the first place, that your Majesty will be graciously pleased to put from you those wicked and mischievous Counsellors which have caused all these dangers and distractions, and to continue your own Residence, and the Prince's, near London and the Parliament: which, we hope, will be a happy beginning of contentment and confidence betwixt your Majesty and your People, and be followed with many succeeding blessings of Honour and Greatness to your Majesty, and of security and prosperity to them.

The Additional REASONS.

THE Lords and Commons have commanded us, to present unto your Majesty this further Addition to their former Declaration.

That your Majestie's return and continuance near the Parliament, is a matter, in their apprehension, of so great necessity and importance, towards the preservation of your Royal Person and your Kingdoms, that they cannot think they have discharged their duties, in the single expression of their desire, unless they add some further Reasons to back it with.

- I. Your Majestie's absence will cause men to believe, that it is out of design to discourage the undertakers, and hinder the other Provisions, for raising money for the defence of Ireland.
- II. It will very much hearten the Rebels there, and disaffected persons in this Kingdom, as being an evidence and effect of the jealousy and division betwixt your Majesty and your People.
- III. That it will much weaken and withdraw the affection of the Subject from your Majesty; without which a Prince is deprived of his chiefest strength and lustre, and left naked to the greatest dangers and miseries that can be imagined.
- IV. That it will invite and encourage the Enemies of our Religion and the State, in foreign Parts, to the attempting and acting of their evil designs and intentions towards us.
 - V. That it causeth a great interruption in the proceedings of Parliament.
 - These considerations threaten so great danger to your Majestie's Person, and to all your Dominions, that, as your Majestie's great Council, they hold it necessary to represent to You this their faithful Advice, that so, whatsoever followeth, they may be excused before God and man.

His

His Majestie's Speech to the Committee, on the ninth of March, 1641, when they presented the Declaration of both Houses of Parliament, at Newmarket.

I AM confident that you expect not that I should give you a speedy Answer to this strange and unexpected Declaration; And I am sorry that, (in the Distraction of this Kingdom,) you should think this way of Address to be more convenient than that proposed by my Message, of the 20th of January last, to both Houses.

As concerning the grounds of your Fears and Jealousies, I will take time to answer particularly, and doubt not but I shall do it to the satisfaction of all the World. God, in his good time, will, I hope, discover the secrets and bottoms of all Plots and Treasons; and then I shall stand right in the eyes of all my People. In the mean time, I must tell you, That I rather expected a Vindication, for the Imputation laid on me in Master Pym's Speech, than that any more general Rumours and Discourses should get credit with you.

For my Fears and Doubts, I did not think they should have been thought so groundless, or trivial, while so many Seditious Pamphlets, and Sermons, are looked-upon, and so great Tumults are remember'd, unpunished, uninquired-into. I still confess my Fears, and call God to witness, That they are greater for the true Protestant Profession; my People, and the Laws, than for my own Rights or Safety; though I must tell you, I conceive that none of these are free from danger.

What would you have? Have I violated your Laws? Have I denied to pass any one Bill, for the ease and security of my Subjects? I do not ask you, what you

have done for Me.

Have any of my People been transported with Fears and Apprehensions? I have offered as free and general a Pardon as yourselves can devise. All this considered, There is a Judgement from Heaven upon this Nation, if these Distractions continue.

God so deal with Me and Mine as all my thoughts and Intentions are upright for the maintenance of the true Protestant Profession, and for the Observation and Preservation of the Laws of this Land: And I hope God will bless and assist those Laws for my Preservation.

As for the Additional Declaration, you are to expect an Answer to it, when

you shall receive the Answer to the Declaration itself.

Some Passages, that happened the 9th of March, between the KING'S MAJESTY, and the Committee of both Houses, when the Decla-BATION was delivered.

WHEN His Majesty heard that Part of the Declaration which mentioned Master Jermin's Transportation, His Majesty interrupted the Earl of Itolland in reading, and said, "That's false." Which being afterwards touched-upon again,

His Majesty then said, "'Tis a lye." And when he was informed, that it related not to the Date, but to the Execution, of the Warrant, His Majesty said, "It might have been better expressed then, and that it was a high thing to tax a King with breach of Promise." As for this Declaraton, His Majesty said, "I could not have believed that the Parliament would have sent me such a one, if I had not seen it brought by such persons of honour. I am sorry for the Parliament; but glad I have the Declaration: For by that I doubt not to satisfy my People; though I am confident the greater part is so already."

Ye speak of ill Counsels: but I am Confident the Parliament hath had worse Informations than I have had Counsels. His Majesty asking, what he had denied the Parliament, The Earl of Holland instanced that of the Militia. His Majesty replied, "That was no Bill;" the Earl of Holland then said, "it was a necessary request at this time;" and his Majesty also then said, "he had not denied it."

What passed the next day, when HIS MAJESTY delivered his Answer.

WHICH was read by the Earl of Holland to the rest of the Committee; And that being done, His Lordship endeavoured to perswade his Majesty to come near the Parliament. Whereunto his Majesty answered, "I would you had given me cause; but I am sure this Declaration is not the way to it. And in all Aristotle's Rhetoricks, there is no such Argument of Perswasion." The Earl of Pembroke, thereupon, telling him that the Parliament had humbly besought his Majesty, to come near them aforesaid, His Majesty replied, "He had learnt by Our Declaration, that words were not sufficient." His Majesty being then again moved, by the said Earl of Pembroke, to express what he would have; said, "He would whip a boy in Westminster School, that could not tell that by his Answer." And further said, "They were much mistaken, if they thought his Answer of that a denial:" And, being also asked by the said Earl of Pembroke, "Whether the Militia might not be granted, as was desired by the Parliament, for a time?" His Majesty swore, "By God, not for an houre; you have askt that of me in this, which was never askt of a King, and with which I will not trust my Wife and Children."

His Majesty said, The Businesse of Ireland will never be done in the way that you are in; Foure hundred will never doe that Work. It must be put into the hands of One. If I were trusted with it, I would pawn my head to end that Work. And, though I am a beggar my-selfe, yet (speaking with a strong asseveration) I can find money for that.

HIS MAJESTIE'S DECLARATION to both Houses of Parliament, (Which He likewise recommends to the consideration of all His loving Subjects) in Answer to that presented to Him at Newmarket, the ninth of March, 1641.

THOUGH the Declaration lately presented to Us at New-market, from both Our Houses of Parliament, be of so strange a nature, in respect of what We expected

pected (after so many Acts of Grace and Favour to Our People) and some expressions in it so different from the usual Language to Princes, that We might well-take a very long time to consider it; Yet the cleerness and uprightnesse of Our Conscience to God, and love to Our Subjects, hath supplyed Us with a speedy Answer, and Our unalterable Affections to Our People have prevailed with Us to suppresse that passion which might have well-enough become Us upon such an Invitation.

We have reconsidered Our Answer of the first of this moneth at *Theobalds*, which is urged to have given just cause of sorrow to Our Subjects. Whosoever looks over that Message (which was in effect to tell Us, That, if We would not join with them in an Act which, We conceived, might prove prejudicial and dangerous to Us and the whole Kingdome, they would make a Law without Us, and impose it upon Our People) will not think that sudden Answer can be excepted-to.

We have little encouragement to Replyes of this nature, when We are told of how little value Our words are like to be with you, though they come accompanied with all the Actions of Love and Justice, where there is room for such Actions to accompany them. Yet We cannot but disavow the having any such evil Counsel, or Counsellours, about Us, to Our knowledge, as are mentioned; and, if any such be discovered, We will leave them to the Censure and Judgement of Our Parliament. In the mean time, We could wish, that Our owne immediate Actions, which We avow, and Our own Honour, might not be so roughly censured and wounded, under that common style of Evil Counsellours.

For Our Faithful and zealous affection to the true Protestant Profession, and Our resolution to concur with Our Parliament in any possible course for the propagation of it and the suppression of Popery, We can say no more than We have already expressed in our Declaration to all Our loving Subjects, published in January last, by the advice of Our Privy-Council; in which We endeavoured to make as lively a Confession of our Self in this point, as we were able, being most assured, that the constant Practice of Our Life hath been answerable thereunto: And therefore We did rather expect a Testimony and acknowledgment of such Our Zeal and Piety, than those Expressions which We meet-with in this Declaration, of any designe of altering Religion in this Kingdom. And We doe (out of the innocency of Our Soul) wish, that the Judgements of Heaven may be manifested upon those who have, or had, any such Designe.

As for the Scots troubles, We had well thought that those unhappy differences had been wrapt-up in perpetual silence, by the Act of Oblivion; which, being solemnly past in the Parliaments of both Kingdoms, stops Our mouth from any other Reply than to shew Our great dislike to the reviving the memory thereof.

If the Rebellion in *Ireland*, (so odious to all Christians) seems to have been framed and maintained in *England*, or to have any countenance from hence, We conjure both Our Houses of Parliament, and all Our loving Subjects whatsoever, to use all possible meanes to discover and find such out, that We may join in the

LHOS

most exemplary vengeance upon them that can be imagined: But We must thinke Our-self highly and causelessly injured in Our Reputation, if any Declaration, Action, or Expression, of the Irish Rebels, any Letter from Count Rosetti to the Papists for Fasting and Praying, or from Trestram Whitcombe, of strange speeches uttered in Ireland, shall beget any jealousy, or misapprehension, in our Subjects, of Our Justice, Piety, and Affection, it being evident to all understandings, That those mischievous and wicked Rebels are not so capable of great advantage, [by any other circumstance] as by having their false discourses so far believed as to raise Fears and Jealousies to the distraction of this Kingdom, which is the onely way to their security: And We cannot expresse a deeper sense of the sufferings of Our poor Protestant Subjects in that Kingdom than We have done in our often-repeated Messages to both Houses, by which We have offered, and are still ready, to venture Our Royal Person for their Redemption; well knowing, that, as We are (in Our own Interest) more concerned in them, so We are to make a strict Aecompt to Almighty God for any neglect of Our duty for their preservation.

For the manifold attempts to provoke Our late Army, and the Army of the Scots, and to raise a Faction in the City of London, and other part . of the Kingdom: If it be said, as relating to Us, We cannot, without great indignation, suffer Our-Self to be reproached, to have intended the least Force, or threatning, to Our Parliament; as the being privy to the bringing-up of the Army would imply: Whereas, We call God to witness, We never had any such thought, or knew of

any such resolution, concerning Our late Army.

For the Petition shewed to Us by Captain Legge, We well remember the same, and the occasion of that Conference. Captain Legge being lately come out of the An account of the North, and repairing to Us at White-hall, We asked him of the state of Our Army, Petition of the Engand (after some relation made of it) he told Us, That the Commanders and North of England Officers of the Army had a mind to petition the Parliament, as others of Our people to the Parliament, had done, and shewed Us the Copy of a Petition: which We read, and (finding tain Legge, and it to be very humble, desiring that the Parliament might receive no interruption in shewn to the King. the Reformation of the Church and State to the model of Queen Elizabeth's days;) We told him, We saw no harm in it: Whereupon he replyed, That he believed all the Officers of the Army would like it; onely he thought that Sir Jacob Ashley would be unwilling to sign it, out of feare that it might displease Us. We then read the Petition over again; and then (observing nothing in it, either in matter or forme, that, as We conceived, could possibly give just cause of offence,) we delivered it to him againe, bidding him give it to Sir Jacob Ashley, for whose satisfaction We had written C, R, upon it, to testify Our apprehation. And We wish that the Petition mi, ht even now be seen and published; and then, We believe, it will appear to have been of no dangerous tendency, nor a just ground for the least jealousy or misapprehension.

For Master Jermin, it is well known that he was gone from White-hall before We received the desire of both Houses for the restraint of Our servants: neither did he return thither, or pass-over, by any Warrant granted by Us after that time.

For

For the breach of Priviledge in the Accusation of the Lord Kimbolton, and the five Members of the House of Commons, We thought We had given so ample satisfaction in Our several Messages to that purpose, that it should be no more pressed against Us, being confident that, if the breach of Priviledge had been greater than hath been ever before offered, our acknowledgement and retraction hath been greater than ever King hath given;—besides the not examining how many of Our Priviledges have been invaded in defence and vindication of the other. And therefore We hoped that Our true and earnest Protestation in Our Answer to your Order concerning the Militia, would so far have satisfied you of Our intentions there, that you would no more have entertained any imagination of any other designe than We there expressed.

But, why the listing of so many Officers, and entertaining them at White-hall, should be misconstrued, We much marvel, when it is notoriously known that the tumults at Westminster were so great, and their demeanours so scandalous and seditious, that We had good cause to suppose Our owne Person, and those of Our Wife and Children, to be in apparent danger, and therefore We had great reason to appoint a Guard about Us, and to accept the dutiful tender of the services of any of Our loving Subjects; which was all We did to the Gentlemen of the

Innes of Court.

For the Lord Digby, We assure you, in the word of a King, that he had Our Warrant to passe the Seas, and had left Our Court, before We ever heard of the Vote of the House of Commons, or had any cause to imagine that his absence

would have been excepted-against.

What your Advertisements are from Rome, Venice, Paris, and other parts,—or what the Pope's Nuntio solicits the Kings of France or Spain to do,—or from what persons such Informations come to you,—or how the credit and reputation of such persons have been sifted and examined,—We know not; but we are confident no sober, honest, man in Our Kingdoms can believe, that We are so desperate, or so senselesse, as to entertain such Designes as would not only bury this Our Kingdom in sudden distraction and ruine, but Our owne Name and Posterity in perpetual Scorn and Infamy. And therefore We could have wished, that, in matters of so high and tender a nature (wherewith the minds of Our good Subjects must needs be startled) all the expressions were so plain and easy, that nothing might stick with them with reflection upon Us, since you thought fit to publish it all.

And, having now dealt thus plainly and freely with you by way of Answer to the particular grounds of your Feares, We hope (upon a due consideration and weighing both together) you will not find the grounds to be of that moment to beget, or longer to continue, a misunderstanding betwixt Us, or force you to apply yourselves to the use of any other power than what the Law hath given you; the which We alwayes intend shall be the measure of Our own power, and expect it shall be

the rule of Our Subjects obedience.

Concerning Our Feares and Jealousies, as We had no intention of accusing you, so are We sure no words spoken by Us (on the sudden) at Theobalds will beare

that Interpretation. We said, as to Our Residence neere you, "We wished it might be so safe and Honourable that We should have no cause to absent Our-Selfe from . Il hitehall:" and how this can be a breach of Priviledge of Parliament, We cannot understand. We explained Our meaning in Our Answer at New-Market, at the Presentation of this Declaration, concerning the Printed seditious Pamphlets and Sermons, and the great tumults at Westminster: And We must appeal to you and to all the world, whether We might not justly suppose Our Self in danger of either. And, if We were now at White-hall, what security have We, that the like shall not happen againe, especially if any Delinquents of that nature have been apprehended by the Ministers of Justice, and been rescued by the People, and so have, as yet, escaped unpunished? If you have not been informed of the seditious words used in, and the circumstances of, those Tumults, and will appoint some way for the examination of them, We will require some of Our learned Counsel to attend with such evidence as may satisfy you. And till that be done, or some other course taken for Our security, you cannot (with reason) wonder that We intend not to be where We most desire to be.

And can there yet want evidence of Our hearty and importunate desire to join with Our Parliament and all Our faithful Subjects in defence of the Religion and publick good of the Kingdom? Have We given you no other earnest but words, to secure you of those desires? The very remonstrance of the House of Commons (published in November last) of the State of the Kingdom, allows Us a more real testimony of Our good Affections than words: that Remonstrance valued Our Acts of Grace and Justice at so high a rate, that it declared the Kingdome to be then a gainer, though it had charged itself, by Bills of Subsidies and Poll-money, with the leavy of 600,000 pounds, besides the contracting of a Debt to Our Scots Subjects of 220,000 pounds.

Are the Bills for the Triennial Parliament, For relinquishing Our Title of Imposing upon Merchandize, and Power of Pressing of Souldiers,—for the taking-away the Star-Chamber and High-Commission Courts,—for the Regulating the Council-Table,—nothing more than words? Are the Bills for the Forests,—The Stannary-Courts, -The Clerke of the Market, -And the taking-away the Votes of Bishops out of the Lords House,—nothing but words?—Lastly, what greater Earnest of Our trust and reliance on Our Parliament could, or can, We give, than the passing of the Bill for the continuance of this present Parliament? The length of which, we hope, will never alter the nature of Parliaments and the Constitution of this Kingdome, or invite Our Subjects so much to abuse Our Confidence, as to esteem any thing fit for this Parliament to doe, which would not be as much so if it were in our power to dissolve the Parliament to-morrow. And, after all these, and many other, Acts of Grace on Our part (that We might be sure of a perfect Reconciliation betwixt Us and all Our Subjects) We have offered, and are still ready to grant, a free and general Pardon, as ample as yourselves shall think fit. Now, it these be not real expressions of the 2 U Affections

tented party at home; That there is an urgent and inevitable necessity of putting His Majestie's Subjects into a posture of defence, for the safeguard both of His

Majesty and his People.

That the Lords and Commons, fully apprehending this danger, and being sensible of their own duty to provide a suitable prevention, Have, in several Petitions, addressed themselves to His Majesty, for the ordering and disposing of the Militia of the Kingdom, in such a way as was agreed-upon by the wisdome of both Houses, to be most effectual and proper for the present Exigences of the Kingdom; yet could not obtain it; but His Majesty did several times refuse to give his Royal assent thereunto.

Ordered, that the House of Peers agrees with the House of Commons in this Proposition.

Resolved, &c. That in this case of extreme danger, and of His Majestie's refusal, the Ordinance agreed-on by both Houses, for the *Militia*, doth oblige the people, and ought to be obeyed, by the Fundamental Laws of this Kingdom.

Resolved, &c. That these shall be the Heads of a Declaration.

Resolved, &c. That such persons as shall be nominated Deputy-Lieutenants and approved of by both Houses, shall receive the commands of both Houses, to take upon them to execute their Offices.

Ordered, by the Lords and Commons in Parliament, That these several Votes shall be forthwith Printed and Published.

John Brown, Cler. Parliament.

HUNTINGTON, 15 Martii, 1641.

HIS MAJESTIE'S Message to both Houses of Parliament, upon His removal to the City of York.

HIS Majesty, being now upon His Remove to His City of York, where he intends to make His Residence for some time, thinks fit to send this Message to both Houses of Parliament.

That He doth very earnestly desire, that they will use all possible industry in expediting the businesse of *Ireland*, in which they shall find so cheerful a concurrence by His Majesty, that no inconvenience shall happen to that Service by His absence, He having all that Passion for the reducing of that Kingdom, which He hath expressed in his former Messages, and being unable by words to manifest more affection to it than He hath endeavoured to do by those Messages (having likewise done all such Acts as he hath been moved unto by his Parliament). Therefore, if the Misfortunes and Calamities of His poore Protestant Subjects there shall grow upon them (though His Majesty shall be deeply concerned in, and sensible

Digitized by Google

of their sufferings) he shall wash his hands before all the World from the least imputation of slacknesse in that most necessary and pious work.

And, that His Majesty may leave no way unattempted, which may beget a good understanding between him and his Parliament, he thinks it necessary to Declare, That, as he hath been so tender of the Priviledges of Parliament that he hath been ready and forward to retract any Act of his own, which, he hath been informed, hath Trencht upon their Priviledges, so he expects an equal tendernesse in them of His Majestie's known and unquestionable Priviledges (which are the Priviledges of the Kingdom) amongst which, he is assured, it is a fundamental One, "That His Subjects cannot be Obliged to Obey any Act, Order, or Injunction to which His Majesty hath not given his consent:" And therefore he thinks it necessary to publish, That he expects, and hereby requires, Obedience from all his loving Subjects, to the Laws established, and that they presume not, upon any pretence of Order or Ordinance (to which His Majesty is no Party) concerning the Militia, or any other thing, to doe or execute what is not warranted by those Laws; His Majesty being resolved to keep the Lawes himselfe, and to require obedience to them from all His Subjects.

And His Majesty once more recommends to his Parliament the substance of his Message of the twentieth of January last, that they compose and digest, with all speed, such Acts as they shall think fit, for the present and future establishment of their Priviledges; the free and quiet enjoying their Estates and Fortunes; The Liberties of their Persons; the security of the true Religion now professed in the Church of England; The maintaining His Majestie's Regal and just Authority, and settling his Revenue; His Majesty being most desirous to take all fitting and just ways, which may beget a happy understanding between him and his Parliament, in which he conceives His greatest power and riches doth consist.

3

The Votes of both Houses of Parliament, concerning the King's last Message, sent from Huntington, to both Houses, on Wednesday the sixteenth of March, 1641.

RESOLVED, &c. That this House shall insist upon their former Votes concerning the Militia.

Resolved, &c. That the King's absence so far remote from his Parliament, is not only an obstruction, but may be a destruction, to the affaires of Ireland.

Resolved, &c. That, when the Lords and Commons in Parliament, (which is the supreme Court of Judicature in the Kingdom,) shall declare what the Law of the Land is, to have this declaration, not only questioned and controverted, but contradicted, and a command issued that it should not be obeyed, is a high breach of the priviledge of Parliament.

Resolved.

Resolved, &c. That a Committee shall be appointed by this House to join with a Committee of the Lords, to enquire where this Message was framed.

Resolved, &c. That those persons that advise His Majesty to absent himselfe from the Parliament, are enemies to the peace of this Kingdom, and may justly be suspected to be favourers of the Rebellion in Ireland.

Resolved, &c. That those that advised His Majesty to this Message are enemies to the peace of this Kingdom, and justly to be suspected to be favourers of the Rebellion in Ireland.

A new Declaration of both Houses of Parliament, sent to the King's Most Excellent Majesty, the sixteenth of March, upon His Removal from Huntington to York.

May it please your Majesty,

YOUR Majestie's most humble and faithful Subjects, the Knights, Citizens, and Burgesses of the Commons House of Parliament, having considered Your Majestie's Reply to their Answer, touching such persons as have been licensed by Your Majesty to pass into *Ireland*, do most humbly beseech Your Majesty to believe, that they shall always with thankfulness and joy receive from Your Majesty any satisfactory Answer to their just requests; And, as they hope, they shall find in Your Majesty a readinesse to rectifie those things which have been done to their prejudice, so will they be careful to remove all apprehensions of their Actions, or Speeches, which may seem to cast any dishonour upon Your Majesty.

For Your Majestie's better satisfaction concerning the positive affirmation, that many of the chief Commanders now in the head of the Rebels (after the Ports were stopped by Order of both Houses) have been suffered to passe by Your Majestie's immediate Warrant: May it please Your Majesty to consider that therein they have affirmed nothing but what they had cause to believe was true; the grounds

whereof they humbly present to Your Majesty.

The first ground is this, that both Houses of Parliament, (having, upon Your Majestie's commendation, taken into their care the suppression of the Rebellion of Ireland) had reason to be especially watchful over the Ports, because the Rebels, abounding in numbers of men for the most part ignorant of the use of their Armes, could by no means become dangerous or formidable to this Kingdome, but by the accesse of Souldiers and Commanders, wherewith they were like to be furnished either out of France or Flanders; from both which places the passage into Ireland is speedy and easy through this Kingdome. And therefore they could not choose but be very sensible of whatsoever gave liberty, or opportunity, to such a passage, as of a very hurtful and dangerous grievance: for prevention whereof they did, upon the seventh of November, agree upon an Order, and restrain all pas-

Ircland, but upon due and strict examination by such persons as were nake those Licences.

ground, that the other Licences granted to the Lord Delvin, and then d by Your Majestie's Answer, were such (both in regard of the perthey were granted, and the extent of the words in which they were ere apt to produce such an effect as is mentioned in that positive it is, to open a way for the passage of Papists, and other dangerous ith the Rebels, and to be Heads and Commanders amongst them: ₽đ.

ranted to Colonel Butler, since the order of restraint by both t, did extend to all Ports of England and Scotland, and did mself and to his Company, without any qualification of per-Number: and this Colonel (who was himselfe a Papist, and 'n Rebellion, and was a General of the Rebels in Munster,) such desired by those Rebels; who, for a long time, kept mmanded by him, as we have been credibly informed.

... was granted to a Son of the Lord Nettersfield; which Lord hadfour ... in England since the Rebellion, one of which is settled in England, and the three others intended to passe into Ireland; and who were all dangerous persons, being Papists, bred in the Wars, in the service of the King of Spain; and one of them was lately become a Jesuit.

The third, granted to the Lord Delvin, extends to himselfe and foure persons more, unnamed. One of those who should have past with him, is taken to be a Jesuit; and another, who calls himself *Plonchet*, seems to be a man of some breeding and quality, and like to have been serviceable to the Rebels, and to have done mischief,

if he had gone-over.

The fourth granted to Sir George Hamilton, and three more persons unnamed. This Gentleman is likewise a profest Papist, and may be doubted to be of the party of the Rebels, one of that Name being mentioned in the instructions of Sempill the Jesuit, amongst divers other dangerous persons of the Popish party in Scotland and Ireland; which instructions were found in a ship stayed in Cornwall, which was going into Ireland with divers Jesuits, Souldiers, and others, for the encouragement of the Rebels.

A third ground is this, That, by virtue and authority of these Licences, several persons have passed-over, who are now in Actual Rebellion, and joyned with the Rebels; and some have command amongst them: which is thus proved.

One Captain Sutton did, by virtue and authority of your Majestie's licence, embark at Whitehaven, in the company of Colonel Butler, and was driven-back by foul weather; Whereupon the Colonel stayed, and went to Chester; but that Captain re-embarked himself in the same Bottom, and passed into Ireland, where he went into Rebellion, with the Lord Lunsany, and hath since obtained the place of a Colonel amongst the Rebels; as we are very credibly informed.

Two.

Two of the Sons of the Lord Nettersfield, one a Jesuite, and the other a Souldier, passed into Ireland, in December last; both of them by virtue of your Majestie's Warrant, as we have cause to believe; for that they went both together in one Ship, and the Licence, acknowledged to be granted by your Warrant, must needs be granted to one of them, seeing that the other Brother, who lately endeawoured to pass-over, did produce no Licence, and, upon his Examination, doth absolutely deny that he had any.

A fourth ground, (which we humbly offer to your Majesty,) is this, That your Majesty cannot be assured, that no other did pass upon your Licence, as your Majesty doth conceive, and is pleased to express in your Answer, and that we had great cause to believe, that divers others had passed-over by your Warrant, besides

the persons afore-mentioned, and that, for these reasons;

1. Because we received such a general information, that divers, now in the head of the Rebels, were passed by your Majestie's Licence, which (being true in part, and easy to be effected, in regard of the Nature and extent of the Warrants, and probable to be attempted, in regard of the subtilty and vigilancy of that party, to make use of all advantages,) seemed to deserve credit; which we should not have given to it, if it had been a naked information, without such circumstances.

2. Because we had concurring Advertisements, from *Ireland* and *Chester*, that divers Priests, Jesuits, and Popish Commanders, had passed-over, and were landed there; and particularly some of Colonel *Butler's* Company; and that the officers of the Ports had kept no Entry of the names of these persons, or of the Warrants by which they were transported.

These Instances, we hope, will be sufficient to perswade your Majesty to believe, that, as we had some cause to give credit to the said Informations, so we had no intention to make any ill use of them to your Majestie's dishonour, but did impute the blame to your Ministers, who might have been more careful to have informed your Majesty of the Quality of those persons, named in your Licences, and so to have limited them, that they might not have extended to others, as they did, how many and dangerous soever.

And they pray your Majesty to rest assured, that they shall always be tender of your Honour and Reputation with your good Subjects; and for this cause have made this true Declaration of the full state of this matter, that they may think no otherwise of it than the truth: and in all things they shall labour to establish a good understanding and confidence betwixt your Majesty and your people; which they heartily desire and pray for, as the chiefest means of preserving the honour, safety, and prosperity of your Majesty and your Kingdom.

His



His MAJESTIE'S Answer to a Message sent to Him by the House of Commons, concerning Licences granted by Him to persons to goe into IRELAND.

HIS Majesty hath seen and considered the Messsage presented to Him by the Lord Compton and Master Baynton, the nineteenth of March, 1641, at York, Touching such persons as have been Licensed by His Majesty to passe into Ireland.

Though He will not insist upon what little Reason they had to suspect that some ill-affected persons had passed into Ireland, under colour of His Majestie's Licence (Inferences, slender Proofs to ground belief upon) yet He must needs avow, That, for any thing that is yet declared, He cannot see any ground why Master Pum should so boldly affirme before both Houses of Parliament, That, since the stop upon the Ports by both Houses against all Irish Papists, many of the Commanders now in the head of the Rebels have been suffered to passe by His Majestie's immediate Warrant; For as yet there is not any particular person named that is now so much as in Rebellion (much lesse in the head of the Rebels) to whom His Majestie hath given Licence.

And therefore, according to His Majestie's Reply upon that Subject, His Majesty expects, That His House of Commons should publish such a Declaration, whereby this mistaking may be cleared: That so all the World may see His Majestie's Caution in giving of Passes; and likewise, That His Ministers have not abused

His Majestie's Trust, by any surreptitious Warrants.

And lastly, His Majesty expects, That hence-forth there be more Warinesse used, before such publick Aspersions be laid, unless the Grounds be before-hand better warranted by sufficient Proofs.

END OF THE APPENDIX.

R. Wilks, Printer, 89, Chancery-lane, Landon.

THREE TRACTS

PUBLISHED AT AMSTERDAM, IN THE YEARS 1691 AND 1692,

RMTITLED

LUDLOW'S LETTERS.

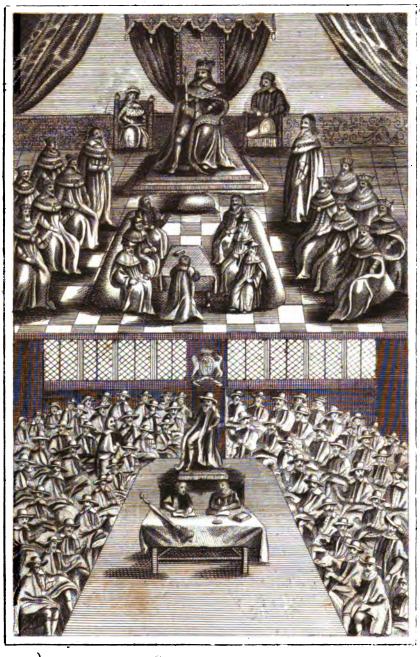
. By the $G^{G}(A)$ is a $G^{G}(A)$ to $G^{G}(A)$ and $G^{G}(A)$

TONDON'S DESTRUCT

PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR: LENGX AND TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

R 1.



A View of the two Houses of the Parliament of England ?
with Sing (hastes the First on the Throne;
on the 3th day of November, 1640, being the first day of the meeting of the said Parliament.

THREE TRACTS

PUBLISHED AT AMSTERDAM, IN THE YEARS 1691 AND 1692,

UNDER THE NAME OF

LETTERS OF GENERAL LUDLOW

10

SIR EDWARD SEYMOUR,

AND OTHER PERSONS,

COMPARING THE OPPRESSIVE GOVERNMENT OF

KING CHARLES I.

IN THE FIRST FOUR YEARS OF HIS REIGN.

WITH THAT OF THE FOUR YEARS OF THE REIGN OF

KING JAMES II.

AND VINDICATING THE CONDUCT OF THE PARLIAMENT THAT BEGAN IN NOVEMBER, 1640.

LONDON:

REPRINTED BY ROBERT WILES, 89, CHANCERY-LANE,
AND SOLD BY WHITE, COCHRANE, AND CO. FLEET-STREET, LONDON.

1812.

PREFACE

TO THE

PRESENT EDITION OF THESE THREE TRACTS.

INTITLED

LUDLOW'S LETTERS.

THESE three Letters were published at Amsterdam, in Holland, in the years 1691 and 1692, in the name of Major-General Ludlow. who was then living in a state of banishment in Switzerland, where he died at a place called Vevay in the following year 1693, at the age of seventy-three years. But, whether they were really written by him, or by some other person in his name, I do not know. But, by whomsoever they may have been written, they contain an admirable vindication of the conduct of the famous Parliament of England that met at Westminster on the 3d of November, in the year 1640, and obtained from King Charles the First several important Acts of Parliament for reviving and confirming the antient. Laws of the Kingdom for the protection of the personal liberty of English subjects against arbitrary imprisonment at the pleasure of the Crown, and of their property against arbitrary taxation, by Forced Loans, Ship-money, Coat and Conduct-money, and other such exactions, without the consent of Parliament; and for redressing other

other heavy grievances under which they had laboured throughout the whole course of his reign.

In the endeavours made to obtain these excellent Acts of Parliament great majorities of both Houses had concurred with ardour. But, when they had been obtained, about the end of the month of November, 1641, a great division of opinion began to appear in both Houses of Parliament concerning the further measures which were to be adopted. For a great many Members in both Houses alledged, "that the King had now made a sufficient number of concessions and confirmations of the rights and liberties of his subjects, to satisfy all reasonable men;" and expressed an apprehension that, if the powers of the Crown were to be reduced still further, they would not be sufficient to support the dignity of the Monarchical, or Executive, branch of the Constitution, and that the nation would be in danger of falling into the confusions of a democratical, or republican, form of Government." These were, as I conceive, the sentiments of that party in the two Houses, which now appeared in favour of the King, and was therefore called the Royal Party. And of this party the Marquis of Hertford, the Earl of Southampton, and the Earl of Lindsey, in the House of Lords, and Lord Falkland, Sir John Colepepper, and Mr. Edward Hyde, (who was afterwards Earl of Clarendon and Lord Chancellor,) in the House of Commons, were eminent members. And Lord Clarendon, in the History of his own life, (which was published in the year 1759, more than fifty years after the publication of his History of the Civil War, between the King and his Parliament, which he calls the Grand Rebellion,) informs us that, at this time of a division of opinion in the Parliament upon the further measures to be insisted-on by them for the settlement of the Nation, the King consulted with those three latter Gentlemen, and employed them as his confidential agents to support his Interests and Dignity in the

the further proceedings of the House of Commons; and that, of those three Gentlemen, the King was most inclined to listen to the advice of the last, Mr. Edward Hyde himself. The opposite party in both Houses was also very numerous, and especially in the House of Commons, where Mr. Pym Mr. Hampden, and Mr. Denzil Holles, seem to have been the principal leaders. This Party made answer to the Royal Party, "that they also should be satisfied with the several useful Acts to which the King had already given his consent, if they could be confident that the King would constantly observe them; but that,-from the reluctance with which the King had been seen to grant them, and from his former practice of breaking and setting-aside some acts of the same beneficial tendency in the first years of his reign, and more especially that very important act, called The Petition of Right, (to which he had, with great difficulty, and after shewing great unwillingness to pass it, been prevailed-upon to give his royal assent,)—and from his liaving totally laid-aside the use of Parliaments for eleven years together, and governed the nation without them, as an Absolute Monarch over his people, which he had declared himself to be; -they could not but think it necessary to require him to give his assent to one more Act of Parliament that might be a security to the Nation for his observance of all the rest. And the Act that they required for that purpose seemed to be the most simple and natural measure that could be resorted to on that occasion; namely, An Act to vest the command of the Militia of the several Counties of England and Wales (which was the only legal military power allowed by the English Laws and Constitution in time of Peace with foreign Nations,) in the hands of several Lords and Gentlemen, of known good affections towards Publick Liberty, who were to be named in the Act that was to be passed for that purpose, and were to be therein appointed Lords-Lieutenants of the said Counties, with a power to appoint

appoint their several Deputy-Lieutenants, Colonels, Captains, and other Officers under them, in their respective Counties. And this proposal was thought so reasonable, and even necessary, that a majority of the House of Commons voted for it, notwithstanding the opposition of the new royal party under the direction of Mr. Edward Hyde and his two associates above-mentioned. But the King, when requested by the two Houses of Parliament to agree to this proposal, refused to do so; and, when the Earl of Pembroke (who was one of the Commissioners sent by the two Houses of Parliament to make this proposal to him,) asked him, "whether he might not grant the regulation of the Militia, in the manner that was desired by the Parliament, for a limited time," the King, in answer, swore by God, "that he would not grant it even for a single hour;" adding these words, "You have asked that of me in this, which was never asked of a king, and with which I will not trust my wife and children." These words were spoken on the 9th day of March, 1641-42, when a Declaration of both Houses of Parliament was delivered to the King at Newmarket. And, soon after this refusal. the two Houses of Parliament issued an Ordinance by their own authority for the levying and regulation of the Militia, and the King raised an armed force at York under the name of a Life-guard for the defence of his person; and, in a few months after, the whole nation was engaged in a furious civil war.

It seems, therefore, to have been a measure of absolute necessity in the two Houses of Parliament,—after the King's refusal to settle the Militia in the hands of persons known by them to be true friends of Publick Liberty, and of the good Laws lately obtained for its protection,—to take upon themselves to do it by their own authority; though, in times of Peace and Harmouy between the King and the People, the right of raising the Militia and appointing the Commanders of it, belonged to the King alone. And, if they

they had not done so, it is almost certain that the King would have raised a Militia composed of men devoted to his own principles of arbitrary government, and under the command of Lords-Lieutenants and Deputy-Lieutenants, and Colonels, and Captains, and other officers, of the same way of thinking; with which he would have dissolved his Parliament, (as he had done all his former ones.) and have either resumed his favourite mode of government without any Parliament at all, or, if he had thought it safer to call another Parliament, would have contrived, partly by bribery and partly by the terror of his army, or Militia, to have it composed of such members as would be willing to consent to the repeal of several of the beneficial Acts to which he had lately given his consent. And therefore, if the two Houses of Parliament had, upon this refusal of the King to settle the Militia in the manner they proposed, abstained from settling it by their own authority, (as the royal party, by the advice of Mr. Edward Hyde, would have fain persuaded them to do) all their successful labours in the first year of their sitting, (from November, 1640, to November, 1641,) whereby the liberties of Englishmen had been recovered and confirmed. would have been lost and thrown-away. This would have been so great a calamity to the nation, that the conduct of the Parliament in taking that irregular step of settling the Militia of the kingdom, by their own authority, in order to prevent it, might justly be considered as an act of self-defence; which is a right that belongs to oppressed nations, as well as to injured individuals. And then it will follow, that, if the suspicion, or rather the strong opinion, entertained by the Parliament, of the King's insincerity, in giving his assent to those beneficial Acts that had been lately passed, and of his secret and earnest desire of revoking them, or setting them aside, on the first convenient opportunity, was wellfounded; the King, and not the Parliament, ought to be considered

Digitized by Google

as the guilty author, or causer, of the ensuing civil war, and of all the blood-shed and misery which it brought upon the nation.

Now "that this suspicion, entertained by the Parliament, of the King's secret desire of revoking, or setting-aside, all those good acts which he had lately assented-to, was well-founded," is amply proved in the three tracts here re-published, under the title of Ludlow's Letters; which contain an ample review of the several acts of misgovernment and oppression, from the beginning of King Charles the First's reign, to the month of April, 1642, when he had refused to reside near his Parliament, and to act in conjunction with them, and had retired towards the north of England, where he soon after raised a body of armed men for his defence; which, in a few months after, brought on the civil war. All these acts of misgovernment are set-forth in these letters, with great clearness and strength, and supported by indisputable proofs, and form a powerful confirmation of the summary account of the first part of King Charles's reign, given in the introductory chapters of Mr. May's excellent History of this Parliament.

The first of these three tracts is intitled, A Letter from Major-General Ludlow to Sir Edward Seymour, comparing the Tyranny of the first four years of King Charles the Martyr, with the Tyranny of the four years reign of the late Abdicated King, James the Second, and was printed at Amsterdam, in the year 1691, or about two years after the election of King William and Queen Mary to the Crown of England. And the drift of it is to shew, that the people of England of that time, had as much reason to be dissatisfied with the oppressive and illegal government of King Charles the First, in the first four years of his reign, as their successors of the then present day, had to be dissatisfied with the oppressive and illegal acts of the whole four years of the late reign of King James the Second, and, therefore, that it was unjust to censure

Digitized by Google

censure the great Parliament of November, 1640, for their resistance to King Charles the First, in the year 1642, when he refused to give them a reasonable security for the continuance of those good laws, for the redress of their grievances, which (in the great distress of his situation, when a Scottish army, who had opposed his attempts to alter their religion, had entered England in a hostile manner, and taken possession of the Northern Counties of it) he had reluctantly consented to pass. For, if the late resistance to King James the Second for his tyrannical proceedings in his reign of four years, (which produced his abdication of the Crown,) was justifiable and even laudable, (as the Lettter-writer allows it to have been in a high degree,) it must, surely, be allowed, that the resistance of the Parliament of November, 1640, to King Charles the First, after fifteen years of the like misgovernment, followed by a refusal of the natural security for his future observance of some late Acts of Parliament which he had, from the extream distress of his situation, been prevailed on to consent-to, must likewise have been justifiable and laudable. This Letter is writ in a clear, strong, and spirited style, and accompanied with an abundance of proofs and testimonies; and, with an Appendix of two pages, it extends through twenty pages of this Edition.

The second tract is intitled, A Letter from General Ludlow to Dr. Hollingworth, their Majesties' Chaplain, at St. Botolph, Aldgate; defending his former Letter to Sir Edward Seymour, &c. and vindicating the Parliament which began in November, 1640; and was printed also at Amsterdam, as well as the former tract, and in the same year, 1691. This tract was written in answer to a tract of Dr. Hollingworth, intitled A Defence of King Charles the First, occasioned by the lies and scandals of many bad men of this age; by Richard Hollingworth, D. D. their Majesty's chaplain at St. Botolph, Aldgate; in which Dr. Hollingworth had spoken of the foregoing b 2

Letter, of General Ludlow to Sir Edward Seymour, in these words: "Tis a lewd pamphlet that goes under the name of Ludlow," and had insulted all those persons who approved of that letter, and gave credit to the several charges of misgovernment, in the first four years of King Charles the First's reign, that are stated in it, by calling them a vile brood and a factious crew, and other such opprobrious names. General Ludlow in this second Letter, therefore, addresses himself to Dr. Hollingworth, in answer to the Doctor's charge against his former letter, of being a lewd, or lying pamphlet, and begins by observing, that, though Dr. Hollingworth has thought fit to bestow that appellation upon it, he yet has not attempted to shew the falsehood of any one of the many instances of misgovernment that had been set-forth in that former letter, as having taken place in the said four first years of King Charles's reign. He then states again in a summary manner, but with great strength and clearness, the same acts of misgovernment which he had mentioned in his former letter; and afterwards proceeds to give a very full account of the numerous acts of oppression and misgovernment, that King Charles was guilty of in the following part of his reign, even down to the breaking-out of the Civil War, in the autumn of the year 1642; and these acts he sets-forth with so much distinctness, and with such full and satisfactory testimonies and proofs of them, as to leave upon the reader's mind, no possibility of doubting of their truth. This second Letter of General Ludlow may, therefore, be considered as one of the most able and valuable histories of the whole peaceful part of the reign of King Charles the First, (from the very beginning of it, to the breaking-out of the Civil War in the summer of the year 1642,) that has ever been presented to the Publick view; and it compleatly justifies the Parliament of November, 1640, for their prudent and resolute conduct in supporting by arms the excellent laws, for the revival and confirmation of the liberties

liberties of the subjects of England, which the King, in his late state of extream distress, had been compelled to grant them, when they found that the King persisted in refusing to settle the Militia in such a manner, as was necessary to give them a reasonable ground to expect, that he would continue to observe those excellent laws for the future, and not (as he had done on former occasions,) take the first opportunity that should occur, to revoke them and set them aside. And, indeed, it may truly be said that it is to the wise and vigorous proceedings of this Parliament, in the two, or three, first years of their continuance, and before they were disturbed and over-awed by the mutinous conduct of their own victorious armies, after the King was made a prisoner, that the subjects of the kingdom of England, after the restoration of the Monarchy in the year 1660, have been principally indebted for the several political privileges and advantages, that have exalted their condition above that of the subjects of France and Spain, and most of the other Monarchies of Europe. And, therefore, the memories of Mr. Pym and Mr. Hampden, and Mr. Denzil Holles, and the other principal leaders of that great Parliament, in those two, or three, first years of their sitting, ought ever to be held, by all true lovers of the limited Monarchical Government of England, in the highest degree of honour and esteem.

This second Tract extends from page 20 to page 81 of the present Edition.

The third Tract that is here reprinted, is intitled Ludlow no Lyar; or a Detection of Dr. Hollingworth's Disingenuity in his second Defence of King Charles the First, and a further Vindication of the Parliament of the 3d of November, 1640; with exact Copies of the Pope's Letter to King Charles the First; and of his Answer to the Pope.

In a Letter from General Ludlow to Dr. Hollingworth.

Together,

Together, with a Reply to the false and malicious Assertions in the Doctor's lewd Pamphlet, intitled, "His Defence of the King's Holy and Divine Book against the rude and undutiful Assaults of the late Dr. Walker of Essex.

Amsterdam, Printed 1692.

It seems by this title of this third Tract, and by what is afterwards said in the Tract itself, that Dr. Hollingworth had, within the last twelve-month, published two Tracts; of which the first was intitled, "A Defence of King Charles the First against Ludlow;" and the other was entitled "A Defence of King Charles the First's Holy and Divine Book, against Dr. Walker's rude and undutiful assaults;" and that a Clergyman, named Luke Milbourn, (who was Minister of Great Yarmouth,) had assisted Dr. Hollingworth in composing the latter of these Tracts. And both these Tracts are answered in this third Tract here reprinted. The latter of them, (which is Dr. Hollingworth's Defence of the Authenticity of the King's Holy and Divine Book, called Eicon Basilice, against Dr. Walker's assaults, is answered by a Letter signed Joseph Wilson, and dated from Yarmouth, June 10, 1692, which is addressed to the aforesaid Mr. Luke Milbourn, and forms the first part of the Tract intitled Ludlow no Lyar; and is a clear refutation of Dr. Hollingworth's Defence of the authenticity of that famous book, and a full confirmation of what Dr. Walker had asserted concerning it, to wit, that it was not the work of King Charles himself, (as had been generally thought,) but was composed by Dr. Gauden, who was, after the Restoration, made Bishop of Exeter, as a reward for what was considered by the Government of that time as so eminent a service to the cause of Royalty. And, after this answer of Mr. Joseph Wilson to Dr. Hollingworth's second Tract relating to the famous book called Eicon Basilice, we have in this third Tract, an answer to Dr. Hollingworth's first Tract above-mentioned, intitled "A Defence of King Charles the First against Ludlow" that is, against Ludlow's former

former Letter to Dr. Hollingworth, or Ludlow's second Letter here reprinted. And this answer is a Letter from General Ludlow to Dr. Hollingworth, dated from Geneva, May 29, 1692. Letter the writer of it inserts a Letter from Pope Gregory the Fifteenth to King Charles the First, in the year 1623, when he was only Prince of Wales, and was also gone to Spain in the hope of marrying Donna Maria, the daughter of Philip the Third, King of Spain, who was the son of Philip the Second, who had been the cruellest and most tyrannical King in Europe, and had invaded England with a powerful Fleet and Army in the year 1588, with a view of thoroughly reducing it under his dominion, and re-establishing in it the Popish religion, with its usual appendage, the persecution of Protestants, or Hereticks. Into this most bigotted, Popish, royal family was this Prince, at that time, ambitious of entering; though the match was afterwards broke-off by some accident or other, (it does not appear clearly from what cause); and then he married another Popish Princess, named Henrietta Maria, the sister of Lewis the Thirteenth, King of France, who was very much bigotted to the Popish religion, and very desirous of introducing it into England; and who, by her pernicious advice to her husband in matters of Religion and Government, (in which he was weak enough to let himself be guided by her,) led him into many of the bad measures that gave rise to the misfortunes of his reign. There was, therefore, good reason for the suspicions that many of his subjects entertained of his being himself a Papist, though he always declared himself a Protestant, and even at the approach of death. But, at least, it is certain that (if he was a Protestant,) he was not such a sort of Protestant as, (for the good of the English nation, and the preservation of their religion,) a King of England ought to be; or it would never have come into his head to marry a Popish Princess. reads the Letter of Pope Gregory the Fifteenth to him, when he was

in Spain, (which is inserted in this third Letter of General Ludlow,) and then reads the Prince's answer to it, (which is also there inserted,) will be disposed to think that the Protestant Gentlemen of England, in that time, (who were real believers in their religion, and not persons who thought little about the matter, and complied with the religion of the kingdom merely because they found it established,) were very excuseable for entertaining some suspicions that the King was secretly inclined to Popery, notwithstanding his declarations to the contrary.

This third letter of General Ludlow, or second Letter addressed to Dr. Hollingworth, contains several further particulars concerning the cruel sentences of the Courts of Star-chamber and Highcommission against Dr. Leighton, and Dr. Burton, Dr. Bastwick, and Mr. Prynne, and concerning the King's proceedings against the Scots, in order to compell them to receive the new Liturgy composed for them by Archbishop Laud, and his raising an English army to force them to submit to his will in that alteration of their religion, though the English Nation had no right to intermeddle in the disputes between their Scottish neighbours and their King, concerning their national rights and privileges, either in Church or State, the Scots being a perfectly Independent Nation, and no way subject to the English Nation, though they happened, from the course of the hereditary succession to the two Crowns, to be at that time subject to the same King. All the King's proceedings in consequence of this attempt to alter the religion of the Scots, from the year 1637, when it was first made, to the meeting of the English Parliament of November, 1640;—and his conduct, after the rebellion of the Irish Papists, and their horrid massacre of the Protestants in October, 1641, in preventing the speedy suppression of that rebellion by the English Parliament, and in neglecting for more than two months to issue a Proclamation against them declaring them to be rebels:

rebels; and, when he did issue it in January, 1641-42, in his giving a special order that only forty copies of it should be printed; by which he raised a probable suspicion in the Parliament and people of England that he did not wish that rebellion of the Irish Papists to be suppressed, but rather that he might receive some assistance from them against his English Parliament:—All these things and many others, are stated in a very full and clear manner in this third Letter of General Ludlow, or of the person who wrote under his name, if he was not the real author of it. And all the three tracts that were published under the title of Ludlow's Letters, and which are here reprinted, are highly deserving of a careful perusal by all such persons as are desirous of rightly understanding the History of the reign of King Charles the First, and the true grounds of the great Civil War that afterwards took place between him and his Parliament; and they will be found to agree perfectly with the account of the same events given by Mr. Thomas May in a more summary manner in the Introductory Chapters of his excellent History of the three first years of that famous Parliament of November, 1640, of which I have lately published a new Edition.

FRANCIS MASERES.

Inner Temple, March 10, 1812.

LETTER

FROM

MAJOR GENERAL LUDLOW

TO

SIR EDWARD SEYMOUR,

COMPARING THE TYRANNY OF THE FIRST FOUR YEARS OF

KING CHARLES THE MARTYR,

WITH THE

TYRANNY OF THE FOUR YEARS REIGN OF THE LATE

ABDICATED KING.

Occasioned by the reading Doctor Pelling's Lewd Harangues upon the 30th of January,

BEING THE

ANNIVERSARY; OR, GENERAL MADDING-DAY.

Neque enim satis amarint Bonos Principes
Qui Malos non Oderint.

Plin. Panegyr.

They can never love Good Princes as they ought, who do not perfectly abhor wicked Tyrants.

AMSTERDAM, PRINTED ANNO DOMINI, 1691.

LETTER

FROM

MAJOR-GENERAL LUDLOW,

TO

SIR EDWARD SEYMOUR.

SIR,

MY Love to Old England is such as can never be shaken; no, not by an Eternal Banishment; but I must ever wish, and heartily pray for its Prosperity: And, though 'tis not permitted to me to breath my Native Air, yet, "That it is now, in a great measure, freed from those Pestilential Vapours which poysoned it in the late Reigns, and that my dear Country is at length delivered from that intolerable Oppression and Tyranny, under which it has long groaned," is to me a matter of great rejoycing. 'Tis (with me) beyond doubt, that the late happy Settlement of the Kingdom is well-pleasing to God, and consonant to the Laws of the Land: For, as Sir Robert Philips affirmed in his Speech in Parliament, in the year 1628, it is undoubtedly true, that the People of England are under no other Subjection than what they did voluntarily consent unto by the Original Contract between the King and the People. And King James the First was greatly in the right, when he told the Lords and Commons, in the Year 1609, That he is no King, but a Tyrant,

Tyrant, that governs not by Law: Which, (by the way) being true, the late King

James ceased to be King even before his Abdication. And,

Now (Sir,) you and I being agreed that (the late King having broken the Original Stipulation and Contract, and becoming a Tyrant, by transgressing and annulling the established laws;) the Crown is most rightfully placed upon the Heads of the most excellent Princes, King William and Queen Mary; I shall demonstrate to you, That King Charles the First, did equal (I might justly say, transcend) his Son, (whom you have deservedly Abdicated) in all his Acts of Tyranny. To this Undertaking I am provoked, by the reading the many Idle, malicious, and Lewd Expressions, and Extravagant Encomiums of the first, in the Rants of one Edward Pelling, who stiles himself Rector of S. Martin's, Ludgate,—a Person so brim-full of Spight, Falsehood and Venome, that (the Cock being turned, upon the thirtieth of January,) he spouts-out a Sea of Calumnies, Lyes and Poison. He, as you shall see, paints-forth King Charles the First more like a God than a Man; talking of him at this rate, viz. "That great Monarch and Martyr, of whom the World was not worthy, and perhaps will hardly ever see the like of him again; "That Incomparable Prince! That Mirrour of Princes, the Noblest of Martyrs, "the Wonder of Ages, and the Honour of Men; That Innocent; Virtuous, Re-" ligious, Matchless, Prince, The Lord's anointed, A Man according to God's own " Heart.

"No King could be ever better than this. Under the Shadow of his Wings we did rejoyce; Peace and Plenty was our Portion; Every Man was sure of his Right, as long as this Religious Prince had his just Authority; every Man was easie in his Cottage, as long as he sat at ease in the Throne; our Liberties were secure, our Laws had Life, and Religion never flourished more in this Nation than under him.—He died a Martyr for Religion, and a Victim for his People. I am of Opinion, that if the Blood of any Prince, or Martyr, could be so valuable as never to be atoned-for in this World, it would be that Royal, that Sacred, that Innocent, Blood." Now,

To shew the effronted impudence of this little, fawning, lying, Levite, and to set your own, with the Thoughts of the present Age, right, in reference to this Idolized, Deified, Tyrant, I shall endeavour to place him in his true and just Light. And, (not to forget my proposed Method of doing it by way of Parallel,) I shall, first, recount the Miscarriages wherewith the last Tyrant was most justly charged; and, when I have so done, I shall proceed to convince you and all the World (my Doctor excepted, to whom I pretend not to speak, in regard I find him telling his Kind and Noble Friend, the late Bloody Monster Jefferyes, in an Epistle Dedicatory to one of his Raving Tracts, upon the thirtieth of January 1683, that his Ears are past all feeling) how much his Father out-stript him, even in the first four Years of his Reign; for to that Time, I purpose to confine myself in this Letter. To begin:

The late King, by his Coronation-Oath, promised and Solemnly swore to maintain his Subjects in the free Enjoyment of their Religion, Laws and Liberties;

Nevertheless,

TO SIR EDWARD SEYMOUR.

Nevertheless, he overturned the Religion, Laws, and Liberties of the Kingdom, and subjected all to a Despotick and Arbitrary Government; and so broke his Oath to the People. To come to particulars herein.

I. He assumed to himself a Power to Suspend and Dispense with the execution of the Laws, enacted for the Security and Happiness of the Subjects, and thereby rendered them of no effect. And,

In order to the obtaining a Judgement in the Court of King's Bench for declaring the Dispensing Power to be a Right belonging to the Crown, he turned-out such Judges as could not in Conscience concur in so permicious a Sentence, and, having pack'd Judges for his Purpose, he obtained the Judgement he required.

- II. He, against Express Laws to the contrary, did set-up a Commission for Ecclesiastical Matters; which was executed contrary to all Law.
- III. None were raised to Ecclesiastical Dignities, but such Persons as had no Zeal for the Protestant Religion; He made Parker Bishop of Oxford, and Cartwight Bishop of Chester, and Watson Bishop of S. Davids, (who is most deservedly excepted in their Majesty's Act of Indemnity.)
- IV. The Bishop of London was suspended, only because he refused to obey an Order sent to him, to suspend Dr. Sharp. The President and Fellows of Magdalen Colledge in Oxford, were Arbitrarily, and against Law, turned out of their Freeholds, and the College was put into the hands of the Papists.
- V. Lords-Lieutenants, Deputy-Lieutenants, Justices of the Peace, and others in Publick Employments, who would not comply with the Design of Repealing the Test and the Penal Laws, were turned-out.
- VI. The Privileges of some Corporations were invaded, and their Charters seized. And Surrenders of the Charters of other Corporations were procured to be made.
 - VII. He put Papists into Civil and Military Employments and Trusts.
- VIII. The Archbishop of Canterbury, and six other Bishops, were sent to the Tower for setting-forth, in a Petition, their Reasons, why they could not obey an Order, requiring them to appoint their Clergy to read the Declaration for Liberty of Conscience.
- IX. The Earl of Devonshire was most exorbitantly fined Thirty Thousand Pounds, and imprisoned, for a trivial Matter: And the Lord Lovelace was treated as a Creamal, only for saying that the Subjects were not bound to obey the Orders of a Popish Justice of the Peace.
- SIR, I am the more brief in setting-down the Matters charged upon the late King, because the same are yet fresh in the Memories of all Men: but I shall be something more particular and larger in representing the Father's Tyranny, in regard that Time has placed us at a greater Distance from it.

 $\mathsf{Digitized} \; \mathsf{by} \; Google$

That

Suspicions concerning King James's death,

Rushworth's first Collections.

That King Charles H. went-off by poisoned Chocolate, to make way for his Brother, when Matters were well prepared to set-up the Romish Idolatry, is a thing generally believed: And so it was, that King James the First was so dispatched; as those persons may see who will turn to the Earl of Bristol's Speech in Parliament, and his Articles against the Duke of Buckingham; and to Sir Dudly Diggs's Speech at the Delivery of the Impeachment against the Duke, at a Conference with the Lords; and also to the thirteenth Article of that Impeachment, which charged the Duke with a very suspicious *Plaister* and *Potion* administered to that *King*.

King Charles's first Favourites were Buckingham and Laud.

Well, right or wrong, King Charles ascended the Throne upon the twentyseventh of March, 1625; and at the first gave the World a Prospect what was to be expected from him: for he instantly took the Duke of Buckingham and Laud. (then Bishop of Bath and Wells) into admired Intimacy and Dearness, and made them the Chief Conductors of all Affairs in State and Church; and that aspiring Prelate had the Guidance of his Conscience.

Buckingham.

The Duke's Mother, and many near about him, were Papists, and he advanced men Popishly-devoted to places of the Chief Command in the Court and Camp. The good Archbishop of Canterbury, Doctor Abbot, speaks thus of him; "He " was talented but as a common person; yet got that interest, that, in a sort, all the 66 Keys of England hung at his Girdle; and it appeared that he had a purpose to " turn upside-down the Laws and the whole Fundamental Liberties of the Subject, " and to leave us,—not under the Statutes and Customs which our Progenitors. " enjoyed,—but to the pleasure of Princes." Three Parliaments, in the beginning of this Reign, found and declared this Duke to be the Cause of all our Miseries and Disasters; The Grievance of Grievances.

The Character of Laud, by the same great Man, Archbishop Abbot, was this;

"He was the inward Counsellor with Buckingham, and fed his Humour with

Land.

Malice and Spight: His Life at Oxford was to pick Quarrels in the Lectures of "the Publick Readers, and to fill the Ears of King James with discontent against "honest men that took Pains in their Places, and settled the Truth, (which he " called Puritanism) in their Auditors: It was an observation, what a sweet Man "this was like to be, that the first observable Act he did, was the marrying the " Earl of D. to the Lady K. when it was notoriously known that she had another Husband, who had divers Children living by her. The Bishop of Lincoln (Doctor Williams) procured for him, at the first, the Bishoprich of S. Davids, which he " had not long enjoyed, but he began to undermine his Benefactor; and verily, " such is his aspiring nature, that he will underwork any man in the World, so he " may gain by it."

This Man, after the Death of the Duke of Buckingham, was the sole Favourite. and was preferred to the Bishoprick of London, in his way to Canterbury.

to return to our King.

He obliged himself, (as yours did) by his Coronation-Oath, to observe, keep, and maintain the Laws, Customs, and Franchises of the Realm: WHICH HAD HE OBSERV'D (Says Archbishop Abbot) ALL THINGS HAD BEEN KEPT IN ORDER: But But he broke the Oath of Protection and Justice which he took to his People, as the whole History of his Reign shews. To give you some few of the innumerable Instances which may be brought therein:

In the beginning of his Reign he married Henrietta Maria of France: Be-KingCharlesLagrees sides the General Articles upon that Marriage, he agreed to Private Articles in by his Marriage-Articles of Papists, (viz.) that those who had been imprisoned, as well Ecclesiasticks ticles to tolerate Pasiste. as Temporal persons, should be released: that Papists should be no more molested for

their Religion, &c.

Hereby a Toleration (little less) was instantly granted to Papists; who, without fear of Laws, fell to their Practice of *Idolatry*, and scoffed at *Parliaments*, at Law, and all: Their Numbers, Power, and Insolence daily increased in all parts of the Kingdom, especially in the City of London; which seem'd to be overflowed with Swarms of Locusts.

This King wrote to the Pope, and by his Letter saluted Antichrist with the Title He gives an Improof, SANCTISSIME PATER, MOST HOLY FATHER. He procured the Pope's Dis- per Title to the Pope. pensation for his Marriage; which was solemnized by Proxy, according to the Ceremonics of the Romish Church.

Pursuant to his Private Articles with France, he instantly granted a Special Pardons twenty Po-Pursuant to his Private Articles with France, he instantly granted a openin pish Priests, and in-Pardon to twenty Popish Priests, of all Offences against the Laws; and he built produces some a Chapel at Somerset-House, with Conveniencies for Friers, who were permitted Friers. to walk-abroad in their habits.

The Lords and Commons perceiving the Protestant Religion to be undermined, The King's first Parand all things apparently tending to an Innovation and Change of Religion in the liament. Kingdom; They presented to the King a Petition for advancing true Religion, and for suppressing Popery. He, by his Answer, assured them of performance; yet, the very next day after that promise made, He assumed to himself a Power to dispense with the Laws of the Twenty-first and Twenty-seventh of Queen Elizabeth, and of the third of King James, in granting Pardons to Baher a Jesuite, and many other Papiets, which passed by immediate Warrant; and were recommended by the Lord Conway, Secretary of State, without the payment of the Ordinary Fees.

The Secretary, being called to answer this in Parliament, very boldly said, that he never hated the Popish Religion; That the King commanded the granting the

Pardons, and that no Fees should be taken.

This King, as well as yours, made Papist Lords-Lieutenants, Deputy-Lieute-He puts Papists into nants, Justices of the Peace, &c. As you may see by the Petition of the House of places of trust and Commons, wherein they complained of the increase and countenancing of Papists; power. and named about One Hundred Popish Lords, Baronets, Knights, Esquires, &c. who held Places of Government and Trust in England and Wales: And I shall here remember you, that, as his Secretary of State did not hate Popery; so Weston, whom he made Lord-Treasurer of England, died a Papist.

He granted a Commission to certain Commissioners to compound with Papists for all forfeitures for Recusancy, from the Tenth Year of King James; whereby He prohibits his

Courts and Officers to intermeddle with Papists.

• N. B. This particular concerning Lord Conway is a mistake, as the author afterwards confesses.

they

Digitized by GOOGLE

they made their Compositions upon very easle Terms: And he inhibited and restrained both Ecclesiastical and Temporal Courts and Officers to intermeddle with Papists; which amounted to no less than a Toleration.

And allows the Poopenly protessed in It claud.

In Ireland the *Popish Religion* was openly profess'd without controll, and pracpish Religion to be tised in every part thereof; Popish Jurisdiction being there generally exercised and avowed: Monasteries, Nunneries, &c. were erected in Dullin, and most of the great Towns, and filled with Men and Women of several Orders.

He promotes Clergymen of Popish inclinations.

The Men whom he preferred to Bishoprichs, generally speaking, were unsound in their Principles; they set-up for a New Church of England; and corrupted our Religion, in Doctrine, Worship and Discipline: These laid new paintings on the old Face of the Whore of Babylon, to make her shew lovely: These were ready to open the Gates to Romish Idolatry and Spanish Tyranny; which, you well know, did, in that day, threaten our Nation to as high a Degree as that of France hath done of late. These,—particularly Neal, Bishop of Winchester, and Laud, Bishop of Bath and Wells,—were complained of by Remonstrance in Partiament, for courtenancing and cherishing Papists and Persons Popishly-affected, and depressing and discountenancing Pious, painful, and Orthodox Preachers, how conformable soever: And Bishop Laud, being advanced to London, was charged by a Petition of the To publish a good Printers and Booksellers, to the House of Commons, that, the Licensing of Books book, was made then being wholly restrained to him and his Chaplains, he allowed Books which favoured a Sin by this Rishop Deling whony restrained to this and his chapteris, he distance Book of London) and an il! Popery, but denied to License Books that were written against it.

one a Vertue; and

while one came-out with authority, the other could not have a Dispensation; So that we seemed to have got an Expurgatory Press, though not an Expurgatory Index; and the most Religious Truth must be expunged and suppressed, in order to the false and secular Interest of some of the Ciergy.

The House of Commons complains of Mountague's Books Tenets.

Mountague, one of the King's Chaplains, published a Book intituled, An Appeal to Cæsar, and another Book intituled, A Treatise of the Invocation of Saints: in favour of Popish these Books he asserted many things contrary to the Articles of Religion. being taken into consideration by the House of Commons in the King's first Year, They voted, that Mountague endeavoured to reconcile England to Rome, and instanced that he maintained these Positions:

Some of his Positions.

" 1. That the Church of Rome is, and ever was, a True Church. 2. That Images " might be used for the Instruction of the Ignorant, and for Excitation of Devotion. " 3. That Saints have not only a Memory, but a more peculiar Charge, of their " Friends, and that it may be admitted that some Saints have a peculiar Patron-" age, Custody, Protection, and Power, as Angels also have, over certain Persons and Countries by special Deputation. That he impiously and profanely scoff'd " at Preaching, Lectures, Bibles, and all snew of Religion, &c. That his Scope " and End in his Book was to encourage Popern, and to draw the King's Subjects " to the Roman Superstition, and consequently to be reconciled to the See of Rome" The Commons prayed, that Mountague might be punished, and his Books suppress'd and burnt.

The

The Pious Archbishop Abbot had disallowed and sought to suppress the Appeal to Casur: but it was approved by Laud and his Set of Bishops, and printed and dedicated to the King.

Laud sollicited the King to shelter Mountague from the Prosecution of the Com- He might indeed mons, and, upon the occasion of that Prosecution, said, I seem to see a cloud aris- have a more early ing and threatening the Church of England: God, in his mercy, dissipate it! because 'twas of his own raising.

sight of the Cloud than any Man living.

The King appeared incensed at the Prosecution, and sent a Message to the Com- The King protects mons, that Mountague was his CHAPLAIN, and that he had taken the business into and prefers him. his own hands: He afterwards granted him a Pardon of all Offences, and made him Bishop of Chichester.

It sufficed not to introduce an Innovation and Change of Religion at home: This The King assists the King, to the Dishonour of our Nation (formerly the Sanctuary of oppressed Pro-his Protestant Subtestants) the Scandal of our Religion, and the high disadvantage of the Protestant jecus. Interest throughout Christendom, did at this time (his first Year also) Lend Eight Ships, (which he equipp'd with the Subsidies given for the relief of his distressed Protestant Sister, the Electress Palatine, and the poor oppressed Protestants of the Palatinate) to the French King, to fight against the miserable Protestants of Rochelle. Of this Squadron, Captain Pennington, in the Vantguard, went Admiral: The Commanders and Mariners protested against the service, (though tempted with The English Cap-Chains of Gold, and other Rewards,) and returned with the Ships into the Downs, tains and Mariners decline the Service. declaring they would sink rather than fight against those of their own Religion: The Duke of Rohan, and the French Protestants, sollicited the King not to let the Ships go again, and had good Words and hopes from him: Nevertheless he wrote a Letter to Pennington, dated the Twenty-eighth of July, 1625, strictly requiring him, without delay, to consign the Vantguard into the hands of the Marquess D' Effact, for the French King's Service, and to require the seven other Ships, in his Name, to put themselves into the Service of the French, according to his promise: And commanding Pennington, in case of backwardness or refusal, to use all forcible means to compel them, even to sinking.

Penning ton hereupon went-back, and put his Ship into the absolute Power of the But they are forced. French King, and commanded the rest so to do; but the Mariners refused, declaring they would rather be hanged at home, than surrender their Ships or be Slaves to the French, and fight against their own Religion: and they were making-away. But Pennington shot, and forced them all in again, the Neptune excepted; which, in Detestation of the Action, Sir Ferdinando Gorges, (to his Eternal Honour,) brought-away.

All the Anglish, Men and Boys, except one Gunner, (who at his Return, which is somewhat remarkable, was slain in Charging a Piece of Ordnance, not well spunged) declined the Service and quitted the Ships, refusing to serve against the In September, 1625, Rochelters. In September following these Ships were actually employed against the English Ships the Rochellers, almost to their utter ruin: The French boasted that the Vant-Inhabitants of Ro-GUARD chelle.



Ruin of the Rochel-

The Sufferings and GUARD mowed the HERETICKS down like Grass. By these means were these good People wholly lost; They indeed held the Town till the Year 1628, but were reduced to incredible Misery, having lived long upon Horse-fiesb, Hides, and Leather, Dogs and Cats; There were at length but about four thousand left alive of fifteen thousand Souls; many died with Famine, and they usually carried their Coffins into the Church yard, and there laid themselves in and dyed: [A sad Story, never to be forgotten in the History of our Blessed Martyr's Reign.

SIR! Having thus shewed you how Rome was found to eat into our Religion, and fret into the Banks of it, the Laws and Statutes of the Realm; I shall now lead you to the remembrance of this *King's* Administration in *Civil Matters*, and how it fared then with the Subject in the Points of Liberty and Property; and shall evince, ministration in Civil That he took our Goods from us against our Wills, and our Liberties against the Laws: That he plucked up the Root of all Property: We were almost grown like the Turks, who send their Janizaries, and place the Halbard at the Door, and then are Masters of all. But not to hold you in generals:

King Charles's Ad-Matters.

Coat and Conduct-Money.

This King, in the very beginning of his Reign, levyed twelve thousand Soldiers. and, contrary to Law, required the Countries to furnish the Charge of Coat and Conduct-money.

Martial Law. .

He appointed Commissioners to Try, Condemn, and Execute Delinquents by Martial Law, against the known Laws of the Land; and some were executed thereby.

The Parliament is dissolved. Forced Loans of Money.

He struck directly at the Property of the Subjects Goods, and (having dissolved the Parliament) be, contrary to many Laws, issued Commissions for raising Money by way of Loan; and the Commissioners were ordered to certifie to the Council-Board, the Names of all Refractory Persons: particularly he demanded One hundred thousand Pounds of the City of London; and, upon the Magistrates representing the People's Excuses, the Council commanded them to proceed therein, threatening, that, upon their Failure, His Majesty would frame bis Counsels as appertained to a King, in such extreme and important Occasions.

Orders to the City of London and to other Places to furnish Ships.

He also required the City to set-forth Twenty Ships, Manned and Victualled, for three Months: The Mayor, Aldermen, and Common-Council, petitioned for Abatement of the Number of Ships demanded; but were answered, that Petitions and Pleadings were not to be received: That, as the Command was to all in general, and every particular of the City, so the King would require an Account both of the City in general, and of every particular: That the Precedents of former Times were Okedience, not Direction; and that Precedents were not wanting for the Punishment of those that disobey the King's Commands.

The Deputy-Lieutenants and Justices of Dorse's hire being commanded to set-forth Ships, insisted, That the Case was without Pr.c.dent. But they were severely checked, for that, instead of Conformity, they disputed; and they were told, That State-Occasions were not to be guided by ordinary Precedents.

The Persons of Quality who refused to subscribe to the Lean, were put out of the Comm;//icns

Commissions of the Lieutenancy and of the Peace (as they were who refused to comply Imprisonment of sewith your King's Humour) and were bound to appear at the Council-Table; where, as veral Persons for re-Refractory Persons, they were committed to Prisons, or put under Confinement. These King Money. were Persons both of Note and Number, as the Prisons in London demonstrated, and as you must conclude, when you read these following Names, and know they were of that Number; viz. Sir John Elliot, Sir John Heveningham, Sir Nathanael Barnardiston, Sir John Strangwayes, Sir Walter Earle, Sir Thomas Grantham, Sir Thomas Wentworth, Sir Harbottle Grimston, Sir Edward Hambden, Sir Thomas Dar- Names of Persone. nel, Sir John Corbet, Sir William Armin, Sir William Masham, Sir William Wilmer, so Imprisoned. Sir Erasmus Drayton, Sir Edward Ayscough, Sir Robert Pountz, Sir Beauchamp Saint-John, Sir Oliver Luke, Sir Maurice Berkley, Sir John Wray, Sir William Constable, Sir John Hotham, Sir John Pickering, Sir Francis Barrington, Sir William Chancey, George Ratcliff, Richard Knightly, John Hambden, William Anderson, Terringham Norwood, John Tregonwell, Thomas Godfrey, Thomas Nicholas, John Dutton, Henry Poole, Nathaniel Coxwell, Robert Hatley, Thomas Elmes, William Coriton, and Gearge Catesby, Esquires, besides above twenty Eminent Citizens of London, and many other Gentlemen of good Note.

fusing to lend the

Sir Peter Hayman, upon his refusal of the Loan, was commanded to go upon the Other Persons refusthe King's Service beyond the Seas; others, of a meaner Rank, were either bound to appear before the Lieutenant of the Tower, to be enrolled for Soldiers to be sent broad on the King's for Denmark, or were impress'd to serve in the King's Ships.

Now, can it be imagined that there could be found a Man so hardened in Wickedness, as to avow these unheard-of Violences, which trenched into all we had? Yes, All these oppressions there were in that, as in every age, Pellings, and Iscariots, among the Clergy; Base Sycophants, Aspiring Time-servers, the Vile Descendants of Combyses's Judges, who being demanded, Whether it was not lawful for him to do what in itself was unlawful, they (to please bim) answered, " That the Persian Monarchs might do what they listed." At the same Rate those lying Prophets, or flattering Gentlemen of the Cassock, to scandalize the Laws and subvert Parliaments, prated to this King; They told him, All we had was his JURE DIVINO; and persuaded him (who was most ready to believe it,) That THE RIGHT OF Empires WAS TO TAKE-AWAY BY STRONG HAND: Of these,

Service, or listed for Soldiers.

were justified by the Court-Clergy.

Doctor Manwaring, in two Sermons before the King, (printed under the Title of Dr. Manwaring. Religion and Allegiance) inculcated this Doctrine:

- "1, That the King is not bound to observe the Laws concerning the Subjects Rights, but that his Will in imposing Leans and Taxes, without Consent in Par-" liament, doth oblige the Subjects Conscience, UPON PAIN OF ETERNAL DAM-
- " 2. That they who refused the Loan, did offend against the Law of God, and against the King's Supreme Authority; and thereby became Guilty of Impiety, い Disloyalty, Rebellion, &c.

4 3. That

4 3. That Authority of Parliament is not necessary for the raising of Aids and Subsidies. And,

Dr. Sibthorp.

Doctor Sibthorp, Vicar of Brackley, printed a Sermon, which he preached at the Assizes at Northampton, and dedicated to the King: wherein he obliged his Country with these Positions.

A Deo Rex. a Rege Lex. Title page of Pelling's Doctrine in Bracton

1. That it is the Prince's duty to direct and make Laws, (his Text, by the way) Somon, 30 Jan. 1083, was Rom. xiii. 7. Render therefore to all their dues) He justified this by that apposite dedicated to Jefferys. Proof, Eccl. viii. 8, 4. He doth whatsoever pleaseth him --- Who may say unto him, IV bat doeth thou?

us, That Rex Angliæ habet Superiores, viz. Legem, per quam factus est Rex; ac Comites & Barones, qui debent el fræmum ponere; The King of England hath for Superiors both the Law, by which he is constituted King (and which is the measure of his Governing Power, Reaction, lib. 2, cap. 16. Fleta lib. 1. cap. 17.

Archhishop Abbot (not being tainted with this slavish and and Temporal Things. Adulatory Doctrine)

2. That all Antiquity is absolutely for absolute Obedience to Princes, in all Civil

did well observe hence. That such Cases as Naboth's Vineyard might fall within this: And that by this Divinity, if the King had commanded all the Clergy of England to send him all the Money and Goods they had, they must have obeyed him, and left their Wives and Children in a miserable Case. The Good Old Man added, If the King do it not, the defect is not in tuese Flattering Divines.

Non-resistance and Passive Obedience.

3. That, if Princes command any thing which Subjects may not perform, because against the Laws of God, of Nature, or Impossible; yet they are bound to undergo the Punishment, WITHOUT RESISTANCE, and so to yield A PASSIVE OBEDIENCE Where they cannot exhibit an active one (right Sherlock.)

Dr. Harenet.

At this rate Doctor Harsnet, Bishop of Chester, had before preached to King James in the Time of Parliament. He insisted (from the Text, Give to Casar the things that he Cæsar's) that Goods and Money were Cæsar's, and therefore were not to be denied him. Hereat the Lords and Commons took great Offence: The Sermon was burnt: but, instead of hanging the Bishop, he was shortly after promoted to the Bishoprick of Norwich; and afterwards, in the Time of our King, designed by Laud to the Archbishoprick of Yerk.

Archbishop Abbot refuses to licence Sibitore's Sermou,

But, to return to Sherlock the First; Bishop Land took Sibthorp into his Bosom, and, that he might undermine Good Old Actet, whose Bishoprick he coveted, he put it into the King's Head, to require the Archbishop to Licence Sibtborp's Sermons; 30 (to use Doctor Abbot's own Words) He is Called-upon to Make THAT GOOD BY DIVINITY, WHICH HAD BEEN DONE AGAINST THE LAWS: He Honestly, and like himself, declined to do it; and termed it, A Contemptible Treattise; an Idle Work of an Hungry Man, that understood no Logic. The King the stigated by Laud) pressed the thing upon him, and that with Menaces: Good Old Man persisted in his Refusal, saying, with the Psalmist (to the Lord Conway, Secretary of State, whom the King had sent to him) I shall not be afraid of any Evil Tidings; for my beart is fixed, trusting in the Lord.

But the Bishop of London appeared more plyable, and gave Licence to this Ser-

mon:

mon; and it came-out approved by my Lord of London, as a Sermon learnedly and is licensed by the discretely preached.

The King instantly suspended the Archbishop, and also Confined bim, and com- The King suspends mitted the Archi-piscopal Jurisdiction to Five Bishops, all of the New Church of England, and Sibthorp's Patrons, viz. London, Durbam, Rochester, Oxford, and Honest Laud of Bath and Wells.

the Archbishop for

The Commons Impeached Manwaring for his Sermons; and, by the Judgement of Manwaring is Imthe House of Lords (amongst other Penalties) be was disabled from holding any future mons and Condemn-Ecclasiastical Preferment or Secular Office. But the King granted him a Pardon of ed by the Lords; but all Offences; and he was presented to the Rectory of Stamford-Rivers in Essex, is pardoned and rewarded by the King. and had a Dispensation to hold it, together with the Rectory of St. Giles's in the $oldsymbol{Fields}$.

I shall in this Place remember you, That another Bisbop, Doctor Williams, of Lin- The King oppresses coln, (as well as the Archbishop) felt the Heavy Oppression of this your Protestant Bishop Williams. King. In the first Year of his Reign the Bishop of Lincoln was Lord-Keeper of the Great-Seal; but, upon his appearing in Parliament against the Kingdom's great Grievance, the Duke of Buckingham, he was Disgraced and Sequestered from the King's Presence and the Council-Table. In his second Year he was accused for speaking publickly against the Loan; and also for refusing to give-way to Proceedings in his Courts against the Puritans; and Doctor Sibthorp charged him that he should say, He was sure the Puritans would carry all at last. The King now imprisoned him in the Tower; and so the late King was not without a Precedent, when he sent Seven Bishops thither. Well, this Good Bishop out-living his Imprisonment; when (upon the King's throwing the Gantlet) we came to A TRYAL OF SKILL for the Old English Liberties, he resolutely said NOLUMUS LEGES ANGLIÆ MUTARI; and took a Command in our Army, and bravely asserted his Countrie's Liberties with his Sword.

Having thus (Sir) shewed you that the King, which I Abdicated, made no more Of King Charles's Bones of Pious Protestant Bishops, when he found them standing in the way of his respect to the Judge Tyranny, than this last King did, to whose abdication you lent your Hand: I shall now es of Westminster proceed to remind you, That both the Tyrants went pari passu in their Dealing With Westminster-Hall. It is before remembered, That yours modelled the Courts of Justice, till he got Judges to declare his Right to the Dispensing Power: but Mine set him the Example; for he, resolving to subject the Liberties and Estates of the Subject to his Will and Pleasure, and finding that the Grave and Learned Judge, Sir Randolph Crew, Lord Chief-Justice of the Kings-Bench, had declared Chief-Justice Crew, himself against the Loan, and would not serve the Turn in that Day, to give a for declaring himself Judgement, "That the King might imprison, durante bene placito, and thereby leave against the Loan. the Subject in Gaol, and Remediless; * turned him out, and substituted Sir Nicholas Hide* in his room, and so gained his Point. For,

Sir Thomas Darnel, Sir John Corbet, Sir Walter Earl, Sir John Heveningham, Imprisonment by the and Sir Edward Hambden, Five of the Gentlemen imprisoned for refusing the Special Command of the King.

 This Sir Nicholas Hyde was uncle to Sir Edward Hyde, who was afterwards Lord Chancellar of England, and Earl of Clarendon. c 2

Loan,

Loan, brought their Writs of Habeas Corpus in Michaelmas Term, in the Third Year of this King: The Warden of the Fleet made Return, That they were de-

tained in his Custody by the Special Command of the King.

Sir Robert Sawyer.

We had then an Attorney General, (Sir Röbert Heath) little short of your late Sir Robert* at the Knack of Enslaving the People; he maintained and justified this sort of imprisonment, though no Special Cause was assigned; and the Lord Chief Justice Hide, (who was created on purpose for it,) did singly (as the Practice has also been of late) give Judgement for remanding the Gentlemen to Perpetual Imprisonment. For that Judgement did in effect declare upon Record, That by the

King's Command a Subject might be detained in Prison for ever.

Soldiers billeted on Private Houses.

To the Imposition of the Loan, and the many other Grievous Sufferings and Violent Oppressions, under which we groaned; This King added the Burthen of Billeting Souldiers, of whom many were Papists. They brake-out into great Disorders; mastered the People, disturbed the Peace of Families, and the Civil Government. To some Places they were sent for a Punishment [of the Inhabitants:] and, wherever they came, there was a general Outcry; the Highways were dangerous, and the Markets unfrequented; they were a terror to all, and an undoing to many of the People.

Commissions to raise Money by an Excise.

> He also (towards the End of the Year 1627,) issued a Commission, under the Great-Seal, to several Temporal Lords, with Neal and Laud, Bishops of Winchester and Bath and Wells, and others, to raise Money by an Excise. And, to enforce the Payment, and (which is very probable) to awe the Parliament, (which was to assemble the Seventeenth of March;) He,

Project of bringingover German Horse

> Upon the THIRTIETH Day of JANUARY, 1627-28, sent a Privy-Seal to the Lord Treasurer to this effect: "We Command you forthwith to pay to Philip Burle-

Dolbier was a Papist. " mark, Merchant, Thirty Thousand Pounds, to be paid by him over, by Bill of " Exchange, into the Low-Countries and Germany, unto Sir William Balfour s and John Dolbier, Esquire, for Levying and Providing certain numbers of " Horses with Arms for Horse and Foot, to be brought-over into this Kingdom,

" for our Service, &c.

Burlemark, being afterwards called into the House of Commons, and examined about this Matter, declared, That he received the Thirty Thousand Pounds; That One thousand Horses were levied, and these Horses and their Riders were to comeover; and Arms were provided for them in Holland. But he heard that a Counter-

mand was gone to stay them.

The King's Third Parliament, March 17, 1627-28.

> In this King's Third Parliament, (to which the Extremity of his Affairs brought him, much against his Will;) The Commons, with sad Hearts, taking notice of the high oppressions of the People, by heavy and illegal Exactions, by false and arbitrary Imprisonments, &c. and reflecting upon the strange and dangerous Purpose of bringing-in German Horse and Riders, to change the Frame both of Religion and Government: They found it as necessary as just, to Vindicate our Ancient Vital Liberties: and in order thereto, They drew-up a Petition of Right, "thereby complaining of the levying of Moneys without Authority of Parlia-" ment: Of the Imprisoning the Subject without any Cause shewed, and not being delivered by Habeas Corpus, as by Law they ought: Of the Subjects " being

The Petition of Right.

being compelled to receive Soldiers into their Houses, and to sojourn there against their wills; And of the Executing Martial Law, contrary to the Laws " and Statutes of the Realm: Whereupon they prayed, As THEIR RIGHTS AND " LIBERTIES, that none should hereafter be compelled to yield any Gift, Loan, " Benevolence, Tax, or such-like Charge without common Consent by Act of "Parliament: And that no Freeman should be imprisoned without Cause " shewed: And that the People might not be burthened with Soldiers in time " to come: And that no Commission for proceeding by Martial Law, may " hereafter issue; They further prayed (as their Right) that the King would "declare that the proceedings to the prejudice of the People, in any of the Preis mises, should not hereafter be drawn into Example: And that in all the things " aforesaid, All his Officers and Ministers should serve him according to the " Laws and Statutes of the Realm."

This highly necessary and seasonable Petition met with great interruption and The King endeaviolent Opposition: The King urged that it trench'd upon his Prerogative, his vours to avoid Sovereign Authority, Regal Power, Sovereign Power, &c. (Which imported no less than the King's being loose and free from all Ties and Restraints, either by fundamental Stipulations, or superadded Laws;) The great Sir Edward Coke said, in answer thereunto; MAGNA CHARTA IS SUCH A FELLOW, THAT HE WILL HAVE NO SOVEREIGN: Let us not yield a Sovereign Power above all ·Laws; Power in Law (as the Sheriff's Posse Comitatús) is taken for a power with force; The King struggled long to shift it off, and to avoid the answering this Petition in a Parliamentary way, pressing them again and again, by Messages, to rest and rely upon his Royal Word: The Commons persisting, pursued their Petition, and to have it pass into a Law; and Sir Edward Cohe said, "Was ever " a Verbal Declaration of the King Verbum Regni?—The King must speak by "Record, and in Particulars, not in Generals: All succeeding Kings will say, "Ye must trust me as well as ye did my Predecessors: Let us put up our Petii tion of Right; Not that I distrust the King, but that I cannot take his Trust, " but in a Parliamentary way."

At length this Petition being unanimously agreed-unto by the Lords, it was presented to the King, who at first gave a lame and uncertain Answer to it; and, being press'd to give a direct and plain Answer, he resolutely sent word to the House, That he would not alter his Answer: But he was afterwards brought to do it by the importunity of the Lords and Commons, and gave a clear and satis- But is at last brought factory Answer; and so that excellent Law pass'd. But,

He had no sooner granted this Petition, but we found it notoriously violated, Immediately after he by his Billetting of Soldiers, and Levying the Subsidies of Tonnage and Poundage, acts in opposition to it, by Billeting Solwhich determined by his Father's Death, and were never payable to any of his diers, and Ancestors, but only by special Act of Parliament: Hereupon the Commons shewed by Remonstrance, that Tonnage and Poundage were always the Free Gift Levying Tonnage of the Subject for Guarding the Seas, and that the taking the same without Act of Parliament, is a Breach of the Fundamental Liberties of the Kingdom, and . contrary

to consent to it.

contrary to the King's Answer to the Petition of Right: However, by order of

Council, he commanded the Customs to be Levyed.

Mr. Vassal is sued in the Exchequer, for refusing to pay them;

Pursuant thereto the Custom-House Officers siezed great quantities of the Goods of Mr. Vassal, a Merchant, because he refused to pay Customs; and an Information being brought in the Exchequer, Mr. Vassal pleaded Magna Charta, and the Statute de Tallagio non concedendo, &c. and that the imposition was not Antiqua seu certa Consuetudo, and that it was imposed without assent of Parliament. The Attorney General having demurred to Mr. Vassal's Plea, and he joined in Demurrer, the Barons of the Exchequer publickly denyed to hear Mr. Vassal's Counsel to argue for him; and said, That the King was in Possession, and they would heep him in Possession. And shortly after they imprisoned Mr. Vassal for not paying the Customs, as he had been before for refusing the Loan.

and afterwards Imprisoned for the same.

The goods of Mr. John Rolls, a Merchant and Member of Parliament, and of Mr. Richard Chambers, a Merchant, being seized for Non-payment of Customs, they brought Writs of Replevin, to regain the Possession ot their Goods, but the Barons of the Exchequer sent an Injunction to the Sheriffs of London, commanding them not to execute the Writs. Also the Warehouse of Mr. Rolls was lock'd-

Mr. Rolls's Goods are seized on the same account,

up by Pursuivants, at the time when he was sitting in Parliament.

and his Warehouse is locked-up.

Mr. Chambers was likewise prosecuted in the Star-Chamber, for saying that the Merchants are in no part of the World screwed and wrung, as in England: That in Turkey they have more encouragement. For this he was Fined 2000s. committed to the Fleet, and ordered to make submission, which being drawn-up and rendered to him, he thus, (like a brave English Man,) underwrote it: All the abovesaid Contents and Submission, I do utterly abhor and detest, as most Unjust and False, and never till death will acknowledge any part thereof. Rich. Chambers.

Mr. Chambers is heavily fined by the Star-Chamber.

To this he added, Wo to them that devise Iniquity, because it is in the Power of their hand; and they covet Fields, and take them by violence, and Houses, and take them away: So they oppress a Man and his House, even a Man and his Heritage, Micah ii. 1, 2.

Imprisonment of the Earl of Bristol.

Now, (Sir) to draw towards a Conclusion, I shall observe that no Rank or Order of Men stood clear from the Oppression of this Tyrant: He kept the Earl of Bristol under Confinement near two Years witnout being charg'd with any Accusation, or brought to Tryal, or permitted to answer for himself: And, upon his Petitioning the Lords to be restored to his Liberty, and to his seat in Parliament, and offering an Accusation against the Duke of Buckingham, This King, upon his own Accusation, sent him in Custody as a Delinquent, and Prosecuted him as such. Also,

And of the Earl of Arundel.

He committed the Earl of Arundel to the Tower, in time of Parliament, without expressing any Cause of his Commitment, in Violation of the Privileges of the Peers. This Lord was long detained a Prisoner, though the House of Lords presented

sented a Remonstrance, and many Petitions for restoring him to Parliament. And,

As he oppressed our best Patriots, so he upheld and sheltred the grand Enemies The King protects When the Commons in Parliament prosecuted the the Duke of Buckof the Commonwealth: Duke of Buchingham, as the principal P atron and supporter of a Popish Faction, Prosecution of the set on foot to the Danger of the Church and State: As a Person so notorious in Commons. Evil that all our Evils came by him: As the Man who had cast the Body of the Kingdom into an high Consumption: The King interposed to rescue him: When the Commons impeached him, and by one of their Articles charg'd him (in effect) with the Murder of King James: The King told the House of Lords, that to approve Buckingham's Innocence, he could be a Witness to clear him in every one of the Articles. When the Earl of Bristol exhibited Articles to the Lords against the Duke, the King took upon himself to become a Witness to accuse the Earl of Traiterous Practices some years before.

Notwithstanding it is well known that no abuse can arise in any Department of the Government beyond the Power of the House of Commons to inquire into;

and it hath been their Ancient and Undoubted Right and Usage to question and complain of all Persons, of what Degree soever, that are found grievous to the Commonwealth: (Whereof there was a noted instance in 30 Edward III.; When they accused John de Gaunt, the King's Son, for mis-leading and mis-advising the King; and he went to the Tower for it;) yet our King told the House of Commons, "That he would not allow any of his Servants to be questioned amongst them; " much less such as were near him,—that he saw they aimed at the Duke; but he

assured them that the Duke had not intermeddled, nor done any thing concerning the "Publick, but by his special Directions. He added, that he wondered at the foolish impudence of any Man, to think he should be drawn to offer such a Sacrifice.

He, in scorn and desiance of the Parliament, procured the Laudean Faction in This might be the the University of Cambridge, (who were gaping for Ecclesiastical Preferment) first, but 'twas not to choose the Duke their Chancellor at the Time when he stood Impeach'd in Partitle last time that the University hath liament.

made an election in contempt of the l'arliament.

He constantly gave interruption to the Parliament, when they had the Duke's Offences under Examination, not bearing their mentioning his name and Misdoings; And he dissolved three Parliaments when they were intent upon his prosecution, refusing, to receive a Petition of the House of Lords against one of those Dissolutions, and denying them access to his person.

Upon the Dissolution of his second Parliament, he sent Sir Dudley Diggs and Members of Parlia-Sir John Elliot Prisoners to the Tower, (to the infringing the undoubted Privitings done in Parlege, of the Commons) for managing a Conference with the Lords, upon their Im- liament.

peaching the Duke.

He, in the time of his Third Parliament, sent Warrants for sealing-up of the Studies of Sir John Elliot, Mr. Holles, and Mr. Selden, and also sent Summonses to Mr. Holles, Sir Miles Hobart, Sir John Elliot, Sir Peter Hayman, John Selden, William



William Coryton, Walter Long, William Strode, and Benjamin Valentine, Esqrs; all Members, to appear before the Privy-Conneil. Mr. Holles, Sir John Elliot, Mr. Coryton, and Mr. Valentine appeared, and refusing to answer out of Parliament, what was said and done in Parliament, they were (during the Parliament) committed close Prisoners to the Tower; and a Proclamation was issued for apprehending Mr. Long and Mr. Strode, who, coming-in, were committed close Prisoners to the King's Bench: And all the rest of the before-named Members were committed to several Prisons.

They bring their Writs of Habeas Corpus.

But are removed to other prisons to avoid a discharge.

These imprisoned Gentlemen in Trinity Term following, (1629,) brought their Writs of Habeas Corpus, and were brought to the King's Bench Court, where very learned Arguments were made on their behalf, shewing the illegality of their imprisonment; and being to be brought again upon another day, to receive the Judgement of the Court, they were (by the unprecedented Arbitrary Practices of that time) removed and shifted to other Prisons, and toss'd from Gaol to Gaol, and by that wicked Artifice, as they were imprisoned in notorious Breach of the Priviledge of Parliament, so they were now deprived of the Fruit of the Habeas Corpus, and of the benefit of Freeborn Subjects, for obtaining their Liberty; and were long detained in Prison; and the brave Sir John Elliot ended his days in the Tower, not without suspicion of foul play.

But why have I detained you so long in recounting these particular Violations that he will lay-aside of the Priviledges of Parliament, when 'tis so evident that this King struck at the very being of Parliaments, as many instances fully demonstrate?

Sir Dudly Carleton, his Vice-Chamberlain, and a Privy-Counseltor (whom he

The King threatens the use of Parliaments.

CES, Noblest of

soon after created a Lord) " warned the Commons to take heed of bringing the " King out of love with Parliaments, and said, that in all Christian Kingdoms, "Parliaments were anciently in use, until the Monarch's BEGAN TO KNOW THEIR " own STRENGTH, and at last overthrew Parliaments, throughout Christendom, except here only with us: He proceeded setting-forth the wretched Condition " of Subjects in Foreign Countries, and said, This is a Misery which yet We are " free from: Let us then be careful to preserve the King's good Opinion of Par-" liaments, LEST WE LOSE THE REPUTE OF A FREEBORN NATION, by our "Turbulency in Parliaments.

The King himself sent a threatening Message to the Commons, that, if he had not a timely supply, he would betake himself to New Counsels, (which could only mean the putting an End to the use of Parliaments.)

At another time, speaking to the Lords and Commons, he said, REMEMBER THAT PARLIAMENTS ARE ALTOGETHER IN MY Power; therefore as I find the Fruits We here have Dr. Edw. Pelling's MIR- of them, good or evil, They are to continue, or not to be.

Martyre, Wonder of Ages, and the Henour of Men, laying-down his living Opinion of the Constitution of our Government, and (according to his then Judgement) passing a sentence of Death upon our Parliaments. And (seeing the Doctor told CAPTAIN SIMMONS of the WONDER TAVERN, with his goodly Petitioners, Bedingfield, Sissan, Owin, and Saltmarsh, and the rest of his Parishioners, upon the Thirtieth of January, 1690, "That his most Noble Martyr, BEING DEAD, YET SPEAKETH,") I do put-in an early request to him, on behalf of the Commons of England, that he would oblige them upon the next Madding-Day, the (twenty-ninth of May) in letting them know what his Matchless Saint now speaks, and in particular what he says about their Right to Annual Parliaments: For tis to be hoped that by this Time, if he be kept apart from ARCHBISHOP LAID. he may be set-right in this great Point of English Parliaments. LAUD, he may be set-right in this great Point of English Parliaments.

Digitized by GOOGIC

At the opening of the Parliament, the 17th of March, 1627, he told them, if they should not contribute what the State needed, he must use those other MEANS, which God and LAUD, SIBTHORP and MANWARING, &c.] had put into his Hands: To this the Lord-Keeper added, that if the King found the readiness of their supplies, he might the better forbear the Use of his Prerogative: That the King chose that way of Parliament, not as the only way, but as the fittest: Not as destitute of others, but as most agreeable to his Disposition.

Thus (Sir) have I (as I promised) run through the first four years of this King, and shew'd you how our Liberties and Properties were invaded: How our Religion and Government were undermined: How an Army was raised to subject our fortunes to the Will of Power, and to make good the Breaches upon our Liberties: And how Parliaments were contemned and cast-off; so that it was well and truly said in the House of Commons, that the Subject suffered more in the first three Years of this King, in violation of Ancient Liberties, than in three hundred Years before.

It remains now, That I recall into your Memory, what the Carriage of our Parliaments was, under this Universal Oppression: Why, their Temper, Mildness, The great mildness and Moderation was incredible, as their Speeches, Petitions, and even Remon- and moderation of these Parliaments. strances, do evince: they dealt long with the King, with no other Weapons but Sweetness, Trust, and Confidence; and 'twas their only Endeavour and End to make-up all Rents and Breaches between the King and his Subjects; but they found in him A sourness of Temper, Fierceness of Disposition and Pride, joined with a peevishness of Humour, not to bear the having his Will disputed or controlled by the established known Laws; HE WAS wilful and inexorable, and knew not the things of his peace.

Having Abdicated Parliaments, (for from this Time We had eleven years interval of Government without a Parliament,) He (as idle Boys say when they act Mischief) began to play absolute Reaks, instead of Rex. 'Tis a certain Rule, Nemo repente fit turpissimus; and I have here given you but a Taste of the miserable and Calamitous State, under which he laid us; as you must conclude, when you remember how (after the Dissolution of his third Parliament) he betook himself to New Counsels, and exerted his Sovereign absolute Power, and how despetically

he used and exercised it.

Were I to continue his *History*, (as I may in another Letter, if you accept this) when I lead you into Westminster Hall, you would see the Illegal and Wicked Judgements of the Courts there, to the compleat Overthrow of the Liberty of our Persons, and the Property of our Goods; and in opening to you his accursed Star-Chamber and High Commission Courts, I should shew you his most Cruel and Barbarous Finings, Pillory-ings, Stigmatizings, &c. His Suspending, Excommunicating, Depriving and Imprisoning the Conforming Clergy of the Church or England, for Preaching against Popery, for not reading his Book for Sports on the Lord's Day, and for not making Corporal Reverence at the Name of Jesus; I should not forget to lay before you his Billeting of Saldiers, and his most Arbitrary

N.B.

N. B.



Arbitrary Imposing and Exacting of Ship-Money, against the known Laws, and contrary to his Late Promise in the Petition of Right; and (which is never to be forgotten) his Accession to the Horrid Murders of those many Thousands of Miserable Protestants, who fell in Ireland. But,

To conclude your present trouble, We long bore our Heavy Burdens, and the Yoke of this Oppressor, with Patience, even almost to the Breaking of our Backs; at length (no other Means availing to rescue Us from utter Ruin) We struggled to continue the English Liberties to ourselves, and to the Generations that should come after us, and to leave our Posterity as free as our Ancestors left us: And had we not so done, and that in the way we did it, where had your English Liberties been at this Day? the Great Lord Holles told you the Truth therein, in his Letter to Van Beuninghen, in the Year 1676, when he said, That had not We, in the Parliament of 1640, interposed, the English Government must have sunk ere now: for, save what we did, Not one true Stroke had been struck since Queen Elizabeth.

SIR! Having now made an End with my Tyrant, and, by the Particulars which I have presented to your View, set it beyond all possibility of rational Controul, That the Tyrants of whom I have treated, were at least Parallels: I shall now offer one Word for myself, which is, That in whiatsoever I have said, I have had a Due and faithful regard to truth; and do challenge even Pelling himself (who ought, for his own vindication, to do it, if he can) to convict me of Falshood in any one Particular here charged upon his INCOMPARABLE PRINCE; and, if you shall esteem me over-tart in any of my Expressions, I say, That, if to call a Spade a Spade, be unbecoming, I have transgressed; if not, I cannot see how I ought to have expressed the Despotic and Arbitrary Pranks I have mentioned, by any other Name than that of Tyranny; nor to have styled him, who acted them, other than a Tyrant. And, as to my Reverend Doctor, it seems a difficulty to me to find Words, proper and severe enough, wherewith to brand and stamp a Character of Infamy upon him, who, with such Loathsome Flattery and Slavish Sycophancy (at a most bold, wild, and impudent rate) calls such a Man as this, The best of Kings, A Man according to God's own heart: Therefore, to vindicate myself in treating the Doctor as I have done, I tell him, in his own slovenly Pulpit-Language, (in his Sermon upon the thirtieth of January, 1683; dedicated to that Viper, Jeffryes) That such a superlative piece of Putid Imposture may well stir an honest Man's Choler, and provoke him to spit some of it in the Villain's Face.

And now (Sir) wiping my mouth, as good Manners require, after this so foul Pollution, I take my leave of you, declaring, that I will ever approve myself, King William's and Queen Mary's, and my most Dear Country's,

Most Affectionate, Loyal, Dutiful, and Obedient Subject and Servant,

EDMUND LUDLOW.

POSTSCRIPT.

THOUGH King Charles the First hated nothing more than to Govern by Precedent, yet he would not pray without it; and, none of the Liturgies suiting his Fancy, he had recourse to a Romance, as you may here see.

The Prayer of King Charles, stiled A Prayer in Time of Captivity, Printed in a great Folio, called, The Works of K. Charles, and also in his Eicon Basilice.

Powerful, O Eternal God, to whom nothing is so great that it may resist, or so small that it is contemned; look upon my Misery with thine Eye of Mercy, and let thine infinite Power vouchsafe to limitout some proportion of Deliverance unto me, as to thee shall seem most convenient: Let not Injury, O Lord, triumph over me, and let my Fault by thy Hand be corrected; and make not my Unjust Enemies the Ministers of thy Justice. But yet, my God, if in thy Wisdom this be the aptest Chastisement for my unexcusable Transgressions; if this ungrateful Bondage be fittest for my. over-high Desires; if the Pride of my (not enough humble) Heart be

The PRAYER of PAMELA (to an Heathen Deity) being under Imprisonment. In Pembroke's Arcadia 248, edit.

13. printed 1674.

O All-seeing Light, and Eternal Life of all things, to whom nothing is either so great that it may resist, or so small that it is contemned; look upon my Misery with thine Eye of Mercy, and let thine infinite Power vouchsafe to limit-out some Proportion of Deliverance unto me, as to thee shall seem most convenient: Let not Injury, O Lord, triumph over me, and let my Faults by thy hand be corrected; and make not mine unjust Enemy the Minister of thy Justice. But yet, my God, if in thy Wisdom this be the aptest Ghastisement for my unexcusable Folly; if this low Bondage be fittest for my over-high desires; if the Pride

thus to be broken, O Lord, I yield unto thy Will, and cheerfully embrace what Sorrow thou wilt have me suffer; only thus much let me crave of Thee (let my Craving, O Lord, be accepted of, since it even proceeds from Thee) that by thy Goodness, which is thyself, thou wilt suffer some Beam of thy Majesty so to sbine in my Mind, that I, who, in my greatest afflictions, acknowledge it my noblest Title to be thy Creature, may still depend confidently on thee; Let Calamity be the exercise, but not the Overthrow, of my Virtue; O let not their Prevailing Power be to my Destruction; and if it be thy Will that they more and more vex me with Punishment, yet, O Lord, never let their Wickedness have such a Hand, but that I may still carry a Pure Mind and stedfast Resolution ever to serve Thee without Fear, or Presumption, yet with that humble Confidence which may best please Thee; so that at the last I may come to thy Eternal Kingdom, through the Merits of thy Son, our alone Saviour, Jesus Christ. Amen.

of my not-enough humble Heart be thus to be broken, O Lord, I yield unto thy Will, and joyfully embrace what sorrow thou wilt have me suffer; only thus much let me crave of Thee (let my Craving, O Lord, be accepted of thee, since even that proceeds from Thee,) let me crave, even by the noblest Title which in my greatest Affliction I may give myself, that I am thy Creature, and by thy Goodness, which is thyself, that that thou wilt suffer some Beam of thy Majesty to shine into my Mind, that it may still depend confidently on thee; let Calamity be the Exercise, but not the Overthrow, of my Virtue; let their Power prevail, but prevail not to Destruction; let my greatness be their Prey; Let my Pain be the Sweetness of their Revenge; Let them (if so it seem good unto Thee) vex me with more and more Punishment; But, O Lord, let never their Wickedness have such a Hand, but that I may carry a pure Mind in a pure Body; and, pausing awhile; and, O most gracious Lord, said she, whatever becomes of me, preserve the Vertuous Musiderus.

LETTER

FROM

GENERAL LUDLO W,

TO

DR. HOLLINGWORTH,

THEIR MAJESTIES CHAPLAIN AT ST. BOTOLPH-ALDGATE:

DEFENDING HIS FORMER LETTER TO SIR E. SEYMOUR,

WHICH COMPARED THE TYRANNY OF THE FIRST FOUR YEARS OF

KING CHARLES THE MARTYR,

WITH THE TYRANNY OF THE FOUR YEARS OF THE LATE

ABDICATED KING.

AND VINDICATING THE PARLIAMENT WHICH BEGAN IN NOVEMBER, 1640.

Occasioned by the Lies and Scandals of many bad Men of this Age.

Veritas emergit Victrix.

AMSTERDAM, PRINTED ANNO DOM. 1691.

AND NOW RE-PRINTED AT LONDON, BY ROBERT WILKS, IN CHANCERY-LANE.

IN THE YEAR 1811.

I acknowledge it were better if we could have Job's Wish, That this Day should perish, that Darkness and the shadow of Death should cover it, that it should not see the dawning of the Day, nor should the Light shine upon it; It were better to strike it out of our Kalendar, and to make our January determine at the 29th, and add these remaining days to February.—Dr. Burnet, Bishop of Salisbury, his Sermon at St. Laurence Church, Loudon, January 30th, 1680.

Epistle Dedicatory

to the Defence.

called, A VINDICATION of their Majesties Wisdom, in the late nomination of some Reverend Persons to the vacant Arch Bishopricks and Bishopricks, OCCASIONED by the scandalous Reflections of unreasonable Men. By A MINISTER of London. Now,

This Author baving sought these OCCASIONS to be troublesome, and declaring a doughty Resolution that he will be further so, rather than lose the Lechery of his Scribbling, and the vain-glory of his Pedantry, 'tis fit that such an arrogant Levite, who seats himself in * a Juncto, with their Majesties, to consult wisely bow to preserve them from a People who mean them no Harm, should be a little animadverted-upon; which task I undertook, after I found that Persons of better Ability would not trouble them elves with such contemptible Pamphlets.

I had prepared, and did purpose to have sent with this, some Remarks upon the pretended Vindication of their Majesties Wisdom; but finding that my Notes upon the Doctor's Defence of King Charles the First, are swell'd beyond the Bulk which I intended, I have laid aside those Remarks, 'till I have occasion to write again to this

mighty Vindicator.

When I wrote to Sir Edward Seymour this time twelve-Month, I only discours'd of the King's first four Years; and did intend, if ever I wrote further upon that Subject. to have proceeded regularly with the succeeding Years of his Tyranny; but baving engaged myself to follow the Doctor in his Ramblings, I could not at present pursue my Intention; but may bereafter do it.

Having resolved to make this Address to you, my honoured Countrymen, I will take the liberty to observe two or three things, which are omitted in my Letter to the Doctor. He saith, page 3. That great Numbers call this King a Tyrant and A PAPIST too, though he so strenuously asserted and pleaded the Protestant Cause. as it is professed by THE CHURCH OF ENGLAND, [That means, THEIR PARTY.

Now, that he highly favoured POPERY, is most evident: and to what I have al-

ready offered to evince the Truth of that Charge, I do add these Instances.

I have told the Aldgate Chaplain, that this King, by a Letter to the Pope, saluted Antichrist with the Title of Most Holy Father. That Letter from the beginning to

the end savours of Popery. For,

King Charles's Deter to the Pope. ,

1. He professes therein, that nothing could affect him so much, as AN ALLIclaration in his Let- ANCE with a Prince that had the same apprehensions of THE TRUE RELI-GION with himself, [That was the KING of SPAIN, A NOTABLE PRO-TESTANT.

2. He calls Popery THE CATHOLICK, APOSTOLIC, Roman RELI-

GION, all other, NOVELTY and FACTION.

He protests he did not esteem it a Matter of greater Honour, to be descended from great Princes, than to imitate them in the Zeal of their Piety, who had often exposed their Estate and LIVES for THE EXALTATION OF THE HOLY CROSS,

∿ત He

4: He solemnly engaged to the Pope, to spare nothing in the World, and to suffer all manner of Discommodities, even TO THE HAZARDING OF ESTATE AND LIFE, for to settle a thing so pleasing to God, as UNITY WITH ROME.

Bebold, what a good Sign of PROTESTANTISM here hangs at the King's Door. Moreover, when the Pope's Nuncio delivered a Letter to him from the Pope, wherein PROTESTANTS are called MONSTERS of HERESIES, and the King was invited to return the Possession of these most noble Isles to the PRINCE OF THE APOSTLES; He expressed bimself in these words: I KISS HIS HOLI-NESS FEET for the Favour and Honour he doth me; so much the more esteemed, by how much the less deserved of me HITHERTO. And HIS HOLINESS SHALL SEE WHAT I DO HEREAFTER. So that his Holiness shall not repent him of what he hath done.

He was as good as his word here passed to the Pope, as all the World afterwards He delays above two The that most borrid IRISH REBELLION broke-out the 23rd of October, Months to Proclaim the Irish Massacrers 1641, the Lords and Commons, who complained that it was framed and cherish'd to be Traitors. in England, could not obtain a Proclamation to declare those bloody Miscreants, Traitors, till January ensuing; and then the following Warrant went to the King's Printer from bis Secretary of State.

"IT is his Majestie's Pleasure, that you forthwith Print, in very good Paper, and And Olders only send unto me, for his Majestie's Service, forty Copies of the Proclamation in Proclamation to be " closed; leaving convenient space for his Majesty to sign above, and to affix the printed.

" Privy-Signet underneath: And HIS MAJESTIE'S EXPRESS COMMAND

" IS, THAT YOU PRINT NOT ABOVE THE SAID NUMBER OF

" FORTY COPIES, and forbear to make any further Publication of them, till

" his Pleasure be further signified; for which this shall be your Warrant.

Wbiteball, January 2, 1641.

EDWARD NICHOLAS.

See bere what special care was taken, that a few only should come to the knowledge But in proclaiming of this Proclamation; which was at that time made more observable, by the late contrary the Scots to be Traitors, he had used Practice against the Scots, who were, in a very quick and sharp manner, proclaimed, the greatest diliand those Proclamations forthwith dispersed with all imaginable diligence throughout gence. the whole Kingdom, and ordered to be read in all Churches, accompanied with Publick Prayers and Execrations. But bis Aversion to the proclaiming and proceed, ing against the Irish Rebels, is not to be much admired-at; for they called themselves THE QUEEN'S ARMY, and declared that they rose to maintain the KING'S PREROGATIVE, and the QUEEN'S RELIGION, against the PARLIAMENT: And be had no sooner yielded to issue this Proclamation, than (to obstruct the quelling these Rebels, and give them time to increase and strengthen themselves) the King withdrew from the Parliament, and began Domestic Dissensions.

Having

N. B.

Having given these slight Touches at the King's favouring Popery, and at his Accession to the Irish Rebellion; I do now leave it to you to make a Judgement, whether he were so STRENUOUS AN ASSERTER OF THE PROTESTANT CAUSE as your DOCTOR insinuates; and I care not if, once for all. I do acknowledge, that THE CLERGY may, with good pretence to Reason, say, that HE DIED THEIR MARTYR; for his being wrought-upon by JFSUITICAL COUNSELS, to impose a Liturgy upon the Scots, who had no such thing before, did very much contribute to the bringing him to the FATAL BLOCK.

I shall now, for my own Vindication, entreat you to remember, that I never call this King A PAPIST, and I have ever esteem'd it a piece of Artifice in OUR PRIESTS, to amuse the People with the Suggestion, that he is falsely charged with Popery, thereby to induce them to dishelieve or forget his Crime, which was most visible to all Men, the Violation of the Laws and Liberties of the Kingdom; I have therefore chosen to decline the Dispute about his Religion; and am sure 'twill be found that I have not unjustly tax'd him with the Crimes of his Misgovernment, which did so prainly and inexcusably appear to all. And why should we not think that such things were cause enough to be stood-upon by the Parliament, and to justify their Quarrel hifore God? As if the Almighty aid not abbor INJUSTICE, OPPRESSION AND TYRANNY, unless Profession of Religion were also depraved:

Nay, be abbors it more in that place where the purest of Profession is.

That this King intended to bow or break us, to perswade or force us, to Slavery, is so clear by the whole course of his Reign, that 'tis amazing that Men, (even of the highest stamp of TORYISM) should have front enough to deny it. The Parasitical Court-Priests did then preach, That we were bound to obey whatsoever the King commanded, without questioning the Lawfulness. And why did they vert such stuff, but to flatter and please the King? And how could be be delighted with it, unless be thought it true and agreeable to his Designs? And that he honoured these false Teachers, above the Prophets of the Lord, is evinced both by his advancing them, and suffering those Sons of Chenaanah to smite those Micaiahs, and to push them with Horns of Iron that they might-consume them.

The great Philosopher Themistius, did say with equal truth and Wit, that Flattering Clergymen did not worship God, but the Imperial Purple; and 'tis a sail Truth, that in our day they have been SETTING THE PEOPLE ON MADDING; and the low Dejection and baseness of Mind in too many of this Generation, is to be ascribed to their PULPIT-STUFF, which has been the Doctrine and perpetual Infusion of Servility and Wretchedness into the minds of their Hearers.

The Case being thus, it becomes necessary to expose such Men as these; for 'tis intolerable that your Doctor, in his dull way of Calumniating, should (as he deth) censure, reproach, and blacken the Actions and Memories of so many excellent Persons, both Lords and Gentlemen, and also very learned and pious Divines. And on the other hand, a Reputation is to be won for King Charles the First, of Wisdom, by Wilfulness and subtile Shifts; of Goodness, by multiplying Evil.; of Piety,

by endeavouring to root-out true Religion. I have, therefore, in the ensuing Letter, taken some little pains in comparing his fair-spoken Words, with his far-differing Deeds; for 'tis most certain, that the World ever looks more at real Actions than verbal Protestations.

I am sensible, my good Friends, that I now write to Men endued with Reason; let not the Goose-quill of a Chaplain at Aldgate make you all Ganders, and a sound of Words bewitch you; bis Tracts which I have mentioned look like pieces of Flattery compiled by A HUNGRY LEVITE, gaping after a Deanery, or Chaplainship at Whitehall. He, by his Counterfeit Colours, setts-off a deformed Cause to gull you. Have you read this King in his Actions? and shall experimental Knowledge be confuted by this Doctor's bare Assertions? Should we esteem Truth by Words, bow many Romances would be accounted as Authentic as our Bibles? 'Tis Truth only which conquers the wise; to be captivated by ought else, argues Folly.

My last request to you is, that I may be rightly understood; I protest that no intent so trample on the Dead, or dishonour his Dust, but a desire to vindicate the Liberties of my Country, moved me to this undertaking. This unhappy King's Miscarriages and Crimes, should have lain buried in oblivion, if ECCLESIASTICAL MAKE-BATES did not rake all up again into fresh Remembrance, whether we will or no. I am not conscious to myself, that, by what I have wrote, I have loaded his Memory with other than Matter of Fact and Truth, which will be too hard for the greatest

Doctor of them all, I am,

Gentlemen.

Your affectionate Country-man and Servant,

EDMUND LUDLOW.

A LETTER

A

LETTER

FROM

GENERAL LUDLOW

To

DR. HOLLINGWORTH,

THEIR MAJESTIES' CHAPLAIN, &c.

MADDING-DAY: Another being now come, I esteem myself obliged to justify what I asserted in my last year's Letter: to the end that I may keep my Countrymen, and in particular those of your Coat, right in their Senses; and inculcate into the Men of this Generation, a due abhorrence of Tyranny, and a just Veneration for English Parliaments. Having come to this Resolution, and that upon reading your Jewel of a Book, which you style A Defence of King Charles the First, (occasioned by the Lies and Scandals of many bad Men of this Age) which came to me as a New-Year's Gift from an endeared Friend in London; I suppose you will readily allow me to pretend to a title to an Acquaintance and Correspondence with you: For, though in the conclusion of my last to Sir Edward Seymour, I gave a Challenge to DOCTOR PELLING, (who occasion'd that) to *convict me of

- Falshood

[•] Tho' I never have been, nor do think that I ever can be, convicted of one Falsehood in my former Letter, (or in this which I am writing) yet I will confess one Error committed this time twelvemonth; 'twas this, I following a very faithful Historian, whose Printer, by an unhappy omission of one Letter, ran him, and me by consequence, into a great mistake; and I relying upon that Print, said, That the Noble Lord Conway had avowed in Parliament, that he never hated Popery; whereas his words in truth were, that he ever hated it.

Falshood in any one Particular there charged upon his incomparable Prince; yet I have not had one Word either from him or Sir Edward Seymour. Therefore in good Manners, I dismiss them from further trouble, as I might have done myself, had you not fallen foul of me: But, seeing you must be scribbling, and have taken up the Cudgels, we must come to A TRYAL OF SKILL.

To begin;

You appear very warm at first, and therefore not so civil as a Man might hope you would be found, who profess so much Candour and Temper as you sometimes do. You say, 'Tis a LEWD PAMPHLET, which goes under the Name of LUDLOW. Why Lewd, dear Sir! 'Tis a received Opinion amongst your Acquaintance at Billingsgate, that to call a woman Whore, and say you will prove her so, will bear an Action; otherwise not: I shall not therefore prosecute you for that, because 'tis only your say-so; you neither undertake nor offer one word to prove it: And indeed, should I implead you upon it, I perceive you have express'd yourself with that Caution, that I should be non-suited; For you add, that it goes under the Name of Ludlow; by consequence it may not be his. Why thus unmerciful, Doctor? You will not allow me to be Author of my own Book or Letter; and yet you declare it a barbarous Act in a certain Essex Doctor, (his Name, I understand, is Walker) and his Virtues and Piety will, I doubt not, find a room in future Annals and Records, ('tis your own delicate expression) when yours will be forgotten. I say, you allow him not to deny that your Martyr was the Author of Eicon Basilice.

I meet, Sir, in the next place, with a taste of your healing Spirit. me, and those who believe the Truth that you are no way able to gain-say, in a highly obliging, and most endearing, manner, A vile Brood, a factious Crew, &c. We are, say you: I may not now betray my own innocence so far, as to suffer any thing of this to pass upon me without a Vindication. I have asserted, that your SAINT was a NOTORIOUS TYRANT, and, for aught you tell me to the contrary, have very fairly proved it, and that by abundance of Instances. Am I unjust therein? Why then do not you refute me? Am I in the Right? Why then will you set yourself to out face the Truth? That you do so, I shall demonstrate, after I have minded you, out of my former Letter, what things you are either to falsify or justify (for you must know, that Railing, no more than Persecution, can ever make a Convert) when you scribble again, if you intend to convince any Man of an Error, who believes that King Charles the First was a Tyrant: And I must tell you, that I am induced to make the Repetition which ensues, because I cannot perceive, by the reading your Tract, that you have look'd beyond my Title Page; for there you find the only thing you mention of mine, and that with indignation; THE VILE BROOD, you say, call this Day THE MADDING-DAY. I am most sure that you do not answer, nor so much as cast a look towards any one Paragraph or Sentence of my Letter. Therefore,

Page 2, 3.

-This

An enumeration of several Acts of Tyranny and Mis-goby KingCl:arles, in the first four years of State. his Reign.

This informs you, that (amongst many others) the following Acts of Tyranny, are there enumerated, and placed to your Martyr's Account. I shall, (to oblige vernment committed you) begin with the Church; for I know it will please you to see that precede the

I. 'THE KING we are talking of, in a Letter which he wrote to the Pope, sa-' luted Antichrist with the Title of Sanctissime Pater, Most Holy Father; HE procured the Pope's Dispensation for his Marriage, which was solemnized according to the Ceremonies of the Romish Church. HE agreed to Articles upon his 'Marriage, that Papists should be no more molested for their Religion. He built Somerset-House Chapel, with conveniency for Friars; and permitted them to walk abroad in their Habits. HE assumed to himself a Power to dispense with • the Laws, in favour of Popery; particularly the 21st and 27th of Queen Elizabeth, by granting pardons to Jesuits and Papists, which passed by immediate Warrant. HE inhibited and restrained both Ecclesiastical and Temporal Officers to intermeddle with Papists; which amounted to a Toleration. ' Jurisdiction was exercised and avowed in Ireland; Monasteries and Nunneries were erected there, and filled with Men and Women of several Orders. HE ' made above an hundred Popish Lords and Gentlemen, Lords-Lieutenants, Deputy-Lieutenants, Justices of the Peace, &c. And his LORD TREASURER (Weston) died a Papist. Are these, my good Doctor, any of the VIRTUES and GRACES which King William and Queen Mary (as you tell them in your • Dedication) do daily imitate?

2. (To pass-on to the State of the Church of England in his Reign: ' might Men cry in that day, The Church! O THE CHURCH! ' This King's Bishops, generally speaking, were unsound in their Principles; they laid new Paintings on the Face of the old Whore of Babylon, to make her shew lovely: They countenanced and cherished Papists, and depressed Orthodox Preachers, how conformable seever; in particular Archbishop Laud (whom you, Doctor, " will have to be a tolerably good Man) allowed Books which favoured Popery, but denied to license Books that were written against it. 'This King's CHAPLAINS endeavoured to reconcile England to Rome, and scoffed at Preaching, Bibles, and all shew of Religion. MOUNTAGUE, one of

his Chaplains, being prosecuted in Parliament, for Crimes of this Nature, your Martyr was incensed thereat, granted him a Pardon, and made bim Bisbop of Chichester.' [And now, Doctor, pray tell me, bave our most Excellent King and Queen made any such Bishops or Chaplains as these?

3. 'THIS KING, in his first Year, lent eight SHIPS, (which he equipp'd with N.B. Monies given for the relief of his distressed Protestant Sister, the Electress Palatine, and the oppressed Protestants of the Palatinate) TO THE FRENCH KING, to fight

> against the distressed Protestants of Rochelle: These Ships were employ'd against the Rochellers; and the French boasted that they mowed the Hereticks down like

Grass.' [Pray, Sir, your opinion in the case; Can you think their present Majesties will ever imitate their ROYAL GRANDFATHER in this Point?]

4. 'King Charles the First, in the very beginning of his Reign, took our Goods from us against our Wills, and our Liberties against the Laws; he raised an Army, and required the Counties to furnish Coat and Conduct-Money; and against the known Laws, put several to death by Martial-Law; HE levied Money upon the Subject, by way of Loan, and menaced the City of London, that, if they would not advance him Money, HE WOULD FRAME HIS COUNSELS AS APPERTAINED TO A KING.' [That surely, dear Doctor, could intend no other than such a one as France is now plagued with; it may signify King in that Language; in our plain English, 'tis downright Tyrant.]

When it was urged that his requiring Ship-Money was unprecedented; His haughty answer was, That Precedents were not wanting for the Punishment of those that disobey the King's Commands; and that State-Occasions were not to be guided by ordinary Precedents. Those that refused to subscribe to the Loan, were put out of the Commissions of the Lieutenancy and the Peace, and also imprisoned; and the Refusers of the meaner Rank were bound to appear, and to be enrolled for Soldiers to be sent for Denmark; or were impress'd to serve in the King's Ships. [Here now is a ready way not only for the raising of Money, but also an Army for Flanders, and Sai'ors for cur Fleet. But all your Rhetorick, Reverend Sir, will not work upon their Majesties to imitate your good and great Man in these things neither.]

5. YOUR MARTYR suspended Dr. ABBOT, Archbishop of Canterbury, $ilde{ullet}$ who was a Man that wholly followed the true Interest of England, and that of the Reformed Churches in Europe; so far, as that in his time the CLERGY was not much envied here in England, nor the Government of Episcopacy much disfavoured by Protestants beyond the Seas.) I say, HE SUSPENDED this Excellent Person, and also CONFINED him, because (to use his own words) HE REFUSED TO MAKE THAT GOOD BY Divinity, WHICH THE King HAD DONE AGAINST THE LAWS. HE also thrust Dr. WILLIAMS. * Bishop of Lincoln, from the place of Lord-Keeper, and his Presence, and the Council-Table, for appearing in Parliament against the Kingdom's great Grievance, the Duke of Buckingham; and afterwards he imprisoned him in the Tower for speaking against the Loan, for refusing to allow Proceedings against • Puritans, and prophesying that the Puritans would carry all at last. Doctor, that should the King and Queen imitate their Grandfather in these Practices, you would find yourself, AS IT WEKE, overwhelm'd with Sorrow, and that such Actions would swell your Grief above its usual Banks, if not stir your Indignation.

6. 'THE TYRANT, resolving to subvert the Liberties and Estates of the Subjects to his Will and Pleasure, removed that grave and learned Judge, Sir Randolph Crew, from the place of Lord Chief-Justice of the King's Bench, because

- cause he had declared himself against the Loan, and would not serve his turn in declaring that the King might legally imprison Men, durante bene placito. [My life for yours, Doctor, their present Majesties will never follow this Example of your PATTERN FOR PRINCES.
- 7. 'HE upon the 30th of JANUARY, (of all the days in the Year) 1627, sent a Priny-Seal to the Treasury, for the remitting S0,000l. into Holland to Burlemark, a Merchant, to be employed for levying horse and Men to be brought into England to support his Tyranny.' [And can you think their Majesties will ever write after this Copy?]
- 8. 'HE had no sooner passed the PETITION OF RIGHT into a Law, than 'he was found to violate it, by billeting of Soldiers, and levying the Subsidies of Tonnage and Poundage, which determined by his Father's Death; and were never payable to any of his Ancestors, but only by special Act of Parliament.' [And what opinion have you of King William and Queen Mary, in reference to this point, my good Doctor?
- 9. 'He kept the Earl of Bristol under Confinement, near two years, without being charged with any accusation, or brought to Tryal: And HE committed the Earl of Arundel to the Tower in the time of Parliament, without expressing any cause of his Committment, in Violation of the Privileges of the Peers.' [I'll warrant you, Sir, you'l never find their present Majesties at this Work.]
- the Duke of Buckingham was prosecuted in Parliament, as the principal Patron and Supporter of a Popish Faction, set on foot, to the danger of the CHURCH and STATE, THE KING interposed to rescue him: When the Commons impeached him, and by one of their Articles charg'd him in effect) WITH THE MURDER OF KING JAMES; THE KING told the House of Lords, That to approve Buckingham's Innocence, HE could be a Witness to clear him in every one of the Articles. HE told the House of Commons, That he would not allow any of his Servants to be questioned among them, much less such as were near him. That he saw they aimed at the Duke, but assured them, he had not intermeddled, nor done any thing concerning the publick, but by his special Directions. He added, That he wondered at the FOOLISH IMPUDENCE of any Man, to think that he should be drawn to offer such a Sacrifice. HE dissolved three Parliaments, when they were intent upon the prosecution of the Duke. [We are still at a loss, good Decter; this will not fass with our King and Queen; we shall never here there are to the think that he said at the same are to the said at the same are the said at the said and the said are the said at the said and the said are the said at the said at the said are the said at the said and Queen; we shall never here the said at the said at the said are the said at the said are the said are the said are the said at the said are the
- bear them speak, or act, at this rate.]

 11. 'HE imprisoned several Members of the House of Commons, (during the Parliament) for refusing to answer out of Parliament, what was said and done in Parliament. HE imprisoned others for managing a Conference with the Lords upon their impeaching the Duke. HE, in the time of Parliament, sent Warrants for sealing-up the Studies of other Members; and he caused the imprisoned Members

- bers to be shifted and toss'd from Gaol to Gaol, to deprive them, by that wicked Artifice, of the Fruit of their Habeas Corpus; and of the Benefit of Freeborn
- Subjects for the obtaining of their Liberty; and thus they were long detained in Pri-
- son. The brave Sir John Elliot ended his days in the Tower, not without suspi-
- 'cion of foul play.' [I am sure, Sir, you will not recommend those virtuous Practices to the imitation of their present Majesties.]
- 12. 'HE struck at the very being of Parliaments; he sent a threatening Message to the Commons, that, if he had not a timely Supply, he would betake himself to
- NEW COUNSELS. At another time he said to the Lords and Commons, RE-MEMBER THAT PARLIAMENTS ARE ALTOGETHER IN MY
- POWER. THEREFORE, as I find the Fruits of them, Good or Evil, THEY
- ARE TO CONTINUE, OR NOT TO BE. HE told the Parliament, the
- 17th of March, 1627, That, if they should not contribute what the State needed, be
- must use OTHER MEANS. And his Lord-Keeper added, That, if the King
- found the Readiness of their Supplies, he might the better forbear the use of his
- Frerogative; That the King chose that way of Parliament, not as the only way,
- but as the fittest; not as destitute of others, but AS MOST AGREEABLE TO
- "HIS DISPOSITION." [You will readily agree with me, dear Sir, that King William hath not learn'd this way of speaking to Parliaments.]

I have now, Reverend Sir, briefly run-over my former Letter, and thence presented you with a Bone to pick; indeed a dozen, as luck will have it: and I could have doubled the number. But, for the present, these may stay your Stomach, this being a Fasting-Day.

I must now tell you, that I am as much to seek as ever, for the Virtues of the Martyr, which deserve their Majesties imitation. But, methinks, I hear you reply to me, "So you will eternally be, if you read such lewd Pampblets as Ludlow converses with; you must apply yourself to the impartial, learned, and infallibly convincing Works of the most candid Dr. Hollingworth, if you will be enlightened in this great Point: He, good Man, jogs steadily on in the way of Truth, sparing no Parly, you may take my word for it." May I so? He's then the Man for my Money; and, casting-off my Strumpet of a Pampblet, I will READ, TRY, and JUDGE, according as another Dostor advises the Lewd Folks. And,

I proceed (Sir) to the Examination of your Defence of King Charles the First. You tell us, that, in looking-into and considering his Life, you will find yourself equally affected with Joy and Grief. Now I shall attempt to assuage your Grief; but, in doing it, shall abate so much of your conceived Joy, that, with the late Eloquent Recorder, I doubt I shall bring you to a handful of Grief and a handful of Sorrow.

You ground your joy upon your meeting with a Person so admirably tempered, so greatly condescending, so ready to comply with whatever was presented to him for the good of his Subjects, of so great Constancy to the Religious Persuasions of his own Mind, that he would not farsake them.

.

To begin with the last; because you will have the Church to take place of the State. Are not we made happy at this day by the Hereditary Stubbornness of your Martyr's son? he was so constant to the Religious Persuasions of his own Mind, that, rather than forsake them, he very faithfully abdicated the Throne; He sacrificed his Crown to FATHER PETRE'S IDOLATRY; his Father sacrificed his to FATHER LAUD'S SUPERSTITION.

HIS TEMPER will be seen hereafter: I shall in this place only enquire, whether it appeared so admirably good as you insinuate, when he struck the Noble Earl of Denbigb A BOX ON THE EAR, for only walking in the Privy Gallery at Whiteball. We are anon to examine his Condescension and Compliance for the good of the People; and, in doing it, shall evince, how little you understand the History of his Life, and what reason there is to mortify a Chaplain of their present Majes-

ties, for recommending this KING as a pattern to future Princes.

I come now (Sir) to your Melancholy Part, which you thus express; I have been often overwhelmed, AS IT WERE, with Sorrow and loading Grief. That, AS IT WERE, secures some hope in your case; for which there had been no room, had you been in earnest overwhelm'd. But, pray, what brings you, Doctor, into this unhappy case? "Why, this Prince, (you will tell me) so every-way great and good, is libell'd by every sawcy Scribbler. A factious number of Men never speak of him but as a TYRANT, A ROGUE, A RASCAL: They call the Day on which he was murdered, and which is appointed by the Supream Power of the Nation to be religiously observed, THE MADDING-DAY."

There's no remedy (Sir) but Patience; there will ever be found some sawcy Scribbler, or other, upon this Subject, whilst the World is troubled with any silly Defender of this TYRANT; for, as such, I shall continue to talk of him, and that with Demonstration. But I must suspect that you have learn'd the rude Terms of ROGUE AND RASCAL from your own factions Crew, (you know who I mean)

when they are speaking of his present Majesty.

Now (dear Doctor) as to your MADDING-DAY, allow me to present you with the Opinion of a Person tolerably wise and thoughtful; I mean Dr. Burnet, now Lord Bishop of Salisbury, in his Sermon before the Aldermen of London, (the Lord Mayor being sick, and therefore absent) at St. Lawrence Church, upon the 30th of January, 1680. He did express himself in these words: I acknowledge it were better if we could have Job's Wish, That that Day should perish, that Darkness and the shadow of Death should cover it, that it should not see the dawning of the Day, nor should the Light shine upon it: It were better to strike it out of our Kalender, and to make our January determine at the 29th, and add these remaining days to February.

In hope (Sir) that I have here offered something to cool your red-bot Zeal for the Observation of this Day; upon which, you, and many of your bigb-flown Bretbren, have too long spouted-out most fulsome Flattery upon your Koyal Martyr, and been infusing Principles of Slavery into the free-born People of ENGLAND. I now proceed upon your Defence: You say, that your Grief swells above its usual Bank; and stirs your indignation against a VILE BROOD. Why? in earnest, Doctor,

Doctor, 'tis time to look-out for a Cure; 'tis not above two or three Minutes since you appeared only, AS IT WERE, overwhelm'd with Sorrow: Now the overflowing of your Grief, and raising your Choler, speaks your case, AS IT WERE, desperate; and I doubt you will run mad before your next MADDING. DAY: But I have undertaken the drudgery of reading you through, and must take what follows; and so must you.

You go-on telling me, That from these two Passions of Grief and Anger, you are resolved in vindicate this great Prince; and, IF POSSIBLE, to shame those who do shew by what they vent, that they have neither Knowledge, Wisdom, nor good Manners, nor indeed any thing else, that belongs to the Human as well as Christian

Nature.

I found (Sir) by your staring and foaming at the Mouth, what you would come to, and 'tis now with you as I foretold; Would any man in his Wits set himself not only to put a Herd of Wild Beasts to shame, but also to teach them Letters and Breeding? But an angry Doctor thinks himself fit for any thing, when at the same time I esteem him capable of nothing; for no man that falls into a passion can argue well; and you, Sir, have undertaken a much more difficult task than you are aware of. For I have read in the fore-mentioned Sermon of the Learned Bishop of Salisbury, an Expression to this effect; That it might be expected that he should enlarge on the Virtues, the Piety, the Magnanimity and Constancy of Mind, of this your Martyr; but be confessed the performing this to be a Task above his strength. But what will not an aspiring Chaplain essay? I have now (Sir) reached to what you resolve-upon.

You tell me, that you intend only to run through the last eight Years of his reign. Do you so, Sir? here's a snake in the Grass, Doctor, or else, why do you skip his first Sixteen Years? I wish, that, instead of running-through (which argues you in haste) I do not find you flying-over, the Years you pitch-upon; if you do, I shall endeavour to lure you back again; which that I may the more certainly do, I deter-

mine to keep pace with, or in sight of, you.

Proceeding; you say, that you are certain, that from the beginning of the Long Parliament, November 4, to the day of his Death, he did every thing ALMOST that deserved a better Reception than it met withal; and made such various Offers and Condescensions, as would have pleased any sort of Men but those who were resolved to

be Masters of his whole Crown and Dignity, &c.

'Tis something unhappy, good Doctor! when you seem to speak with assurance, that you dare not adventure to do it without a Reserve; your ALMOST in this place, abates much of the Glory of this Paragraph: He did every thing ALMOST; he made Offers and Condescensions; what those were, I suppose you intend to inform me by and by. When I see them, we will talk about them; and then, should it be found that they were such as were not satisfactory to the Lords and Commons in that great Parliament, you will deserve to be TOPHAMIZED for slandering the Representative Body of the English Nation: and truly I think you merit something beyond that punishment, for saying that their most Excellent Majefies.

Page 4.

35



jesties, King William and Queen Mary, do daily imitate the virtues and graces of a King, who, you agree, might have committed some Mistakes in his Government, in his first sixteen Years Reign, and yet did every thing (with an unlucky) ALMOST to redress such things as his Male-Administration had put out of order, SO FAR AS HE COULD BE SATISFIED THEY WERE OUT OF ORDER. For the eternal Honour of their present Majesties, and to the unspeakable Comfort of all good Englishmen, we see them daily acquiescing in the Wisdom of their great Council, and redressing, not only ALMOST, but ALTOGETHER, the Disorders and Grievances of two or three unhappy Reigns.

In the next place you affirm, That, when the Parliament sat-down in 1640, the King proposed and resolved to consent to every thing they could offer, which might be really for the good of his Kingdom. You are, Sir, too general herein for my Conversation; you talk as though you had been one of his Privy-Council, or, at least, a Chaplain to Archbishop Laud. I cannot say what his Purposes or Resolutions were; but, when

we come to Particulars, shall endeavour to weigh them by his Actions.

Page 5.

Pursuant to what he proposed and resolved, (say you) he tells them frankly in his first Speech, that be was resolved to put himself freely and clearly on the Love and affection of his ENGLISH SUBJECTS, and withal, promises them to concur so beartily with them, that all the World may see, that his Intentions HAVE EVER BEEN, and shall be, to make THIS a glerious Kingdom. Having said this, you are running-on, Doctor, but with too much speed for me; you instantly add, I think, Well, so you may, and I intend to hear what that is anon; for now, and not till now, you have cut me out Work, and I must intreat you to pause a little, and hear what I observe upon what you but now declared; He told them be resolved to put himself freely and clearly on the LOVE und AFFECTION of his ENG-LISH SUBJECTS. Can this be true, Doctor? Did he in earnest say so? Why he was born at Dumferling; how then can you represent him as abdicating his Ancient Kingdom, and renouncing the Love and Affection of the Scottish Nation? - Seeing you are silent in this matter, I must, it seems, take the pains to examine it; and I promise to supply your Omission with Impartiality, and all imaginable regard to Truth. And, in doing it, shall shew, with what brevity I can, not only the reason why your Martyr did, at this Juncture, caress and cajole an English Parliament; but how our Nation became so happy as to see one assembled, when our Fathers had almost forgot the Name of a Parliament. The Story is this:

Rise of the troubles in Scotland.

The Reformation of England had never abrogated, nor scarce shaken, the Prelatical Dignity in any Parliament. But in Scotland it was quite rooted out by Law, that Church having been ever much addicted to the Reformation of Geneva. By degrees it was restored, by the extraordinary Interposition of the Power of King James the First; yet not without many Difficulties, nor without great Reluctancy of the Nobility, Gentry, and most of the Ministers of that Nation. They suffered a great Diminution of their Temporal Liberties by the Introduction of Episcopal Jurisdiction, the Bishops using rigorous proceedings against Gentlemen

Digitized by Google

of Quality, by Fines, Imprisonments, &c. And the whole structure of Ecclesiastical Policy; -so long used in Scotland, and established by so many Acts of Parlia. ment, -was, at one blow, thrown-down; their Confistories, Classes, and Presbyteries, were held to be of the nature of Conventicles; and all Decision of Ecclesiaftical Controversies was confined to the Tribunal of a Bishop.

That fierce, cruel, insolent, and Popishly-affected Archbishop Laud,* was the main instrument in this fatal work: He in the year 1637, composed a Common-Prayer-Back for Scotland; and, desiring to demonstrate his great Affection to the Court of Rome, sent it thither to be approved by the Pipe and Cardinals: They returned it, with thanks for his Respect to them, but sent him word, that they thought The GOOD MAN thereupon, further to ingratiate himit not fit for Scotland. self with his ELDER BROTHER, alter'd some things in it, and made it more harsh and unreasonable; and then instigated the King to send it to the Scots, with an The King orders a express command to have it read in their Churches. It varied from the English new Liturgy to be Common-Proyer-Book: but the Alterations were for the worse, especially in the Lord's read in the Churches of Scotland. Supper; It was expressly commanded that the Altar (so called) should be situate close to the Eastern Wall, together with many Postures of the Minister, whilst he officiated. And, in the consecrating Prayer, those words which, in the English Liturgy, are directly against Transubstantiation, were quite left out of that Book, and, instead. of them, such other words as, in plain sense, agreed with the Ronan Miss Book, were inserted, viz. Hear us, O most merciful Father, and of thy Omnipotent Goodness grant, so to bless and sanctify; by thy Word and Spirit, these Creatures of Bread and Wine, that they may be to us THE BODY AND BLOOD of thy beloved Son. In a word, the Sco's affirmed, that all the material Parts of the Muss-Book were seminally in this; and they could not relish it, that Laud, and his Set of English Bishops, should urge them to a Liturgy more Popish than their own; and observed, that, for the sake of Unity, those English Bishops were content to meet Rome, rather than Scotland.

The Book being read by a Bishop in the City of Edenburgh, the People ex- The people oppose pressed great detestation thereof; and the Bishop who read it, would, probably, have the reading of it. been slain as he was coming out of the Church, had not a Nobleman rescued him. July 23, 1637. The N.b:lit, Gentry, and Ministers petitioned against it. The King threatened to prosecute them as Kebels, and commanded the Council to receive no more Petitions: Thereupon several of the Nobility, in the Name of the Petitioners, made a Protestation, that the Service-Book was full of Superstition and Idolatry, and ought not to be obtruded upon them without consent of a National Synod, which in such Cases should judge: I hat it was unjust to deny them Liberty to accuse the Bishops being

* Dr. Hollingworth; in his Tract called A Vindication of their Majestics Wisdom, &c. p. 9, saith, that Land was a VERY GOOD MAN, the Book of Storts excepted. For aught I know, he meant this Scotch Book; for it made Sport with a witness: If he did not, I am sure this deserved an exception also.

guilty

Iam sensible of the Doctor's infirmities, "that he is addicted to rash and inconsiderate Railing." Therefore, though I will not humour him, in reciting the Authority which I have for this black story of his otherways very good man, because I have in his Works no more than his bare word for what he asserts; my goodnature prompts me to advise him not give me the Lie in this matter: for I know those who have been at Rome, and I can produce a most reputable Member of the Church of England for what I here charge upon that very ill Man, Land. After this friendly caution, the Doctor may deny it, if he dares.

guilty of High Crimes; of which till they were cleared, they did reject them as Judges or Governours of them: They justified their own meetings, and subscribing to Petitions, as being to defend the Glory of God, the King's Honour, and The Scottish nation- Liberties of the Realm.

al Govenant of 1580 is renewed in Feb. 1638.

The Scots concluded to renew the COVENANT which had been made and sealed under King James's Hand, in the Year 1560; afterwards confirmed by all the Estates of the Kingdom, and the Decree of the National Synod, in 1581; This COVENANT was for the Defence of the Purity of Religion, and the King's Person and Rights, against the Church of Rome. This was begun in February, 1638, and was so fast subscribed throughout the Kingdom, that, before the end of April, a man was scarce accounted to be of the Reformed Religion that had not subscribed the Covenant. The Non-Covenanters were; first, the Papists, not exceeding 600 in number throughout the Kingdom; 2ndiy, the Statesmen in Office and Favour at that time; and Sdly, some few Protestants who were affected to the Ceremonies of the Church of England, and the Book of Common-Prayer.

The King sent the Marquis of Hamilton, to deal with the Scots, to renounce their Covenant: but they affirmed, It could not be done without manifest Perjury and Profanation of God's Name; and insisted to have the Service-Book utterly abolished, as being obtruded against all Law upon them. That their Meetings were lawful, and such as they would not forsake, until the Purity of Religion and Peace might be fully settled, by a free and National Synod: And they declared THAT THE POWER OF CALLING A SYNOD, IN CASE THE PRINCE BE AN ENEMY TO THE TRUTH, OR NEGLIGENT IN PROMOTING THE CHURCH'S GOOD, IS IN THE CHURCH PTSELF: And that the State of the Church at that time necessitated such a course.

The King calls a national Synod in Scotland, Nov. 1638.

He declares the Scots to be Rebels,

War upon them.

The King at length (fearing lest the Covenanters, if he delayed to do it, would do it themselves,) called a National Synod, to begin at Glasgow, the 21st of November. 1638; But, within seven days after it met, it was dissolved, by the Marquis of Hamilton, in the King's Name, and the members of it were commanded to sit no more. But they protested against that dissolution, and continued the Synod when the Marquess of Hamilton was gone; and they then deposed all the Bishops; condemned the Liturgy, took-away the High-Commission Court, and whatsoever bad crept into the Church since the Year 1580; when the NATIONAL COVENANT was first established. And at last, when they themselves broke-up the Synod, they wrote a Letter of Thanks to the King, and published a Declaration, Feb. 4, 1638, directed to all the sincere and good Christians in England, to vindicate their Actions and Intentions, from those Aspersions which their Enemies might throw upon them.

This Declaration was welcome to the People of England in general, and especially to those who stood best-affected to the Reformed Religion and the Laws and Liberties of their Country. In fine, the Scots are declared Rebels, and the and resolves to make King in person, with an English Army, resolved to chastise them. But,

The generality of the English nation detested the War, knowing that the Scots were innocent, and were wronged by the same Hand by which they themselves were oppres-

sed; and they concluded that the same Sword which subdued the Scots, must destroy their own Liberties! Yet glad they seem'd to be, that such anoccasion happen'd which might in reason necessitate the King to call an English Parliament. But the King, whilst he could make any other shift, how low and dishonourable soever, would not endure to think of a Parliament. He borrowed great Sums of Money of the Nobility, and required Loans of others; and the CLERGY contributed liberally to the The Bishops war. War, which was called BELLUM EPISCOPALE, THE BISHOPS War.

The Kinz, being animated to the War by the Bisbops, both of England and Scot. land, (the last perswading him, that the COVENANTER; were in no sort able to resist bim; that scarce any English Army at all should be needful to fight, but only to appear, and his MA/ESTY would find a Party great enough in SCO FLAND to do the work;) did thereupon raise a gallant Army, which rendevouzed at Tork.

The Scots likewise (to render the King unwilling, or unable, to be a Tyrant) levied a brave Army; which advanced forward under the Command of General Lesley. They, nevertheless, continued their firs' course of Pesitioning the King: which being favoured by almost all the Nobility of England; at last, (by the happy Mediation of those Wise and Noble Counsellors) a PACIFICATION, to the great The Pacification, Joy of all good men, was solemnly concluded on the 18th of June 1689; and the June 18, 1689. King granted them a free National Synol, to be holden August 6th, and a Parliament to begin the 20th, to ratify what the Synod should decree. Hereupon the English and Scots returned home praising God; who, without any effusion of Blood, had compounded this difference, and prevented a War so wickedly design?d.

Shortly after the King's return to London, his Heart was again estrang'd from The King soon after the Scots and thoughts of Peace; and be commanded the PACIFICATION to be burnt orders it to be burnt by the Hands of the common Hangman: An Act, than which nothing could more blemish his Reputation, and which rendered him not to be believed for any thing: For what Tie would hold him, whom the Engagement of his Word, his Royal Word, given in sight of G.d and Man, could not bind? and having, upon the 18th of December, broke-up the Scotch Parliament, he began to prepare for a new War. The Scots complained, that it was a Breach of their Liberties, not heard-of before in twenty Ages, that a Parliament should be dissolved without their Consent, whilst Business of Moment was depending; That, whatsoever Kings in other Kingdoms might do, it concerned not them to enquire; but such a dissolution of the Parliament was absolutely against their Laws.

They hereupon sent four Earls, as their Commissioners, to the King, to complain, that nothing was performed which he had promised at the PACIFICATION; and to intreat redress of those Injuries which had been offered them since the Pacificazicn. But, to add to the Grievances of that Oppressed Nation, the King committed two of their Commissioners to Prison.

In April 1640, the King called a Parliament in England; not to seek Counsel The King called a Parliament and Advice of them, but to draw Countenance and Supply from them; resolving in April, 1640. either to make the Parliament pliant to his Will, and to establish Mischief by a Law, or else to break it. The Scots wrote a Justification of their Proceedings to

this Parliament; and advised them, to be wary in vindicating their own Laws and Liberties; this Parliament being procured to no other End, but to arm the King against his Scottish Subjects, and by that War to enslave both the Nations; That, after so many Violations and Dissolutions of Parliaments in England, this was not called to redress Grievances; but to be so over-reach'd, (if they were not careful) that no possibility should be left, for the future, of redressing any. That some dangerous Practice might be well suspected, when at the same time a Parliament was denied to Scotland, though promised by the WORD OF A KING; granted to England, when not expected; and obtruded upon Ireland, when not desired.

The Parliament are unwilling to assist him against the Scots... The Parliament met the 13th of April, when the King required a Supply to carry-on his War against the Scots, with a Promise that he would afterwards redress the Kingdom's Grievances. To which it was answered by many, That redress of Grievances was the chief End of assembling Parliaments, and ought to precede granting of Subsidies: That the people had no reason to pay for that which they neither caused nor desired; and which could not prove to their Good, but, quite contrary, to the great detriment of the whole Kingdom; That they would more willingly pay, to prevent that unhappy War: That the War would make the Breach wider, and the Remedy desperate: That THE BEST JUSTICE WOULD BE, TO FILL UP THE PITS WHICH WERE MADE TO ENTRAP OTHERS, WITH THE BODIES OF THOSE THAT DIGGED THEM.

And is therefore dissolved, May 5, 1640.

Upon the 5th of May, the King, to the great grief of both Kingdoms, dissolved this Parliament, finding them no way disposed to countenance the War: But he PROTESTED, HE WOULD GOVERN ACCORDING TO LAW, as if the Parliament were constantly sitting. And yet, the very next day, to the extream grief of the People, he was seen to break his Word; for he commanded the Lord BROOK'S Study and Pockets to be searched: and Mr. Bellasis, (Father of the present Earl of Fauconberg) Sir John Hotham, and Mr. Crew, Members of the House of Commons, were imprisoned: And the King published a false and scandalous Declaration against the Commons. He then betook himself to other Courses to carry-on this War: The CLERGY contributed freely to it, and Collections were made among the PAPISTS. Great Loans were attempted to be drawn from the City; and for not complying therein, Sir Nicholas Rainton, Sir Stephen Soame, and other eminent Citizens, were imprisoned: Nay, he went further, and had it under consideration to coin 400,000 l. of BRASS MONEY.

[A Precedent for what the late King James did in Ireland.]

The King takes violent measures to carry-on the war.

The Scots, (taking Alarm at the Breach of the English Parliament, and at the King's Preparations, and finding themselves bereaved of all possibility of satisfying him by any naked Supplication,) in order to provide more effectually for their own Safety, resolved to enter England, with a Sword in one hand, and a Petition in the other.

The second Scotch war.

The

⁴ Upon the News of the Dissolution of this Parliament, Cardinal Barberini, intituled, The Protector of England, though he greatly affected Archbishop Laud, declared, That he feared he would cause some great Disturbance in England, and that certainly, for his sake, and by his means, the King had dissolved this Parliament; which, he feared, Scotland, and most part of England, would take very ill.

The King marches his Army Northwards; but the Common Soldiers were found sensible of Public Interest and Religion, though many Commanders and Gentlemen seemed not to be so: they declared their aversion to the War, and questioned whether their Captains were not Papists.

Upon the 28th of August 1640, the Scots marching towards Newcastle, the English Army encamped to intercept their Passage; but many of the Souldiers, not liking the Cause, forsook their Commanders: However, the Horse engaged the Scots, but received a Repulse, some on both sides being slain; and Colonel Wilmot, with Sir John Digby, and Oneale, both Captains of Horse, and PAPISTS, were made Masters of Newcastle Prisoners. Hereupon the Scots became Masters of Newcastle and Durham.

The King, by proclamation, summoned all the English Nobility, with their The King summons Followers and Forces, to attend his Standard at York, upon the 20th of September, the English Nobility against the Scots. But about twenty Peers, considering the great Calamity into to meet him at York. which the King's rash Proceedings had thrown the Kingdom, framed, and sent his Majesty, an humble Letter, representing the mischiefs attending his wicked War; the Rapines committed by his Army, wherein Papists were armed, though the Laws permit them not to have Arms in their Houses, &c. and they humbly entreated him to summon a Parliament. The King thereupon summoned all the Lords to appear at York, upon the 24th of September, and then declared to them, that, OF HIS OWN FREE ACCORD, be bad determined to call a Parliament; and sixteen Lords were agreed-upon to treat with the like number of the Scots, and at length a Cessation of Arms, till the 16th of December, was agreed-upon; and that, during that time, the Scots should be paid 850l. a day; and they allowed Winter between the King quarters in England.

Both Nations hereupon rested in assured Confidence, that the Parliament would put a period to this War; which could never have been begun, but for want of a Parliament. They were also confident, that the Freedom which the Fundamental Laws allow to Parliaments, could not be denied to this; to which the King WAS NECESSITATED, and upon which the PEOPLE had set their utmost Hope, whom it seemed not safe, after so many and often-repeated Oppressions, to provoke

any further. So much for the Scottish Affairs.

Now, it may be thought that I have too long digressed; therefore, to return to you, Reverend Doctor Hollingworth, We will try what Inferences may be raised from this Melancholy History, to render it useful to the English Reader. I have declared that King Charles the First was an insufferable Tyrant; you affirm him to have set a Pattern for the best of future Princes, and that King William and Queen Mary are daily imitating him: And the last thing you said, was, That, when the Parliament met in November, 1640, He frankly told them, that he was resolved to put himself freely and clearly on the LOVE AND AFFECTION OF HIS ENGLISH SUBJECTS. Now, I have been taking a great deal of pains to set this Matter in its true Light; and to shew whence this sudden fit of Love to our Nation, with an exclusion of Scotland, arose. And (with your

and Durham.

and the Scots.



leave, Sir,) here are two or three Uses of Information, or Instruction, from what hath been said.

Inferences from the foregoing facts.

1. That this Declaration of your Martyr's; that he would put himself on the Love and Affection of his English Subjects, was to draw them in, to support him in his Wicked War against the Scottish Nation; whom at the same time he called Rebels, and urged their Expulsion; tho' he was under an Agreement for a Cessation of Arms, and to allow them 8501. per diem, and Quarters in England, till their complaints might be weighed in this Parliament.

2. Information, That he appeared an exorbitant and outragious Tyrant, in his

Attempts upon that People.

This appears in many Particulars; to recount some of them briefly:

1. In overturning their Church-Government, established by many Acts of Parliament; and obtruding upon them Laud's Liturgy, and Popish Ceremonies.

2. In denying them (the undoubted Right of all Subjects,) to petition for Redress

of their Grievances.

3. In dissolving their Synod and Parliament; burning the Pacification made with them, by the Hangman's Hands; and imprisoning the Lords, sent by them to petition him to perform his solemn Promises, and redress their Grievances.

4. In levying Armies against them, and raising a Civil War, to justify himself in the violation of their Laws. A CIVIL WAR it was, said the great Lord Digby, seeing we are of the same Religion, and under the same King. And,

5. In the very thing which you, Doctor, are now magnifying him; I mean, in attempting to make use of the Love and Affection of the English, to enslave and ruin

the Scottish Nation.

3. Information, That the Scottisk Covenant was not a new Invention, or Innovation, but established by the Law of Scotland, and taken by King James the First, seventy Years before King Charles the Second took it.

4. Information; That Bishops and Clergy-men, in Conjunction with Papists, abetted and assisted this Tyrant, in the Violation of the Laws, when the bulk of the Nobility, Gentry, and People of England, appeared undauntedly, in defence

of the Laws and Liberties of the Kingdom.

5. Information, That Popery hath greatly spread in Scotland, ever since Laud's Superstition was introduced there; their number then not exceeding 600. And therefore, Presbytery being now restored there by Law, it may be reasonably hoped, that it will bring-back to the Protestant religion many who have been deluded into that Idolatry.

6. Information, That PRINCES ARE NOT ALWAYS TO TRUST TO THE Insinuations and Suggestions of Scottish Bishops; seeing that, when they instigated King Charles the First to dissolve the Synod and Parliament, he was seduced by them into a Belief, that the Scottish Covenanters were a contemptible number; and that THEIR PARTY in Scotland, was sufficient to deal with them.

7. Information, That the Scots were not Rebels, in taking Arms to assert their Rights, and vindicate the Laws and Liberties of their Country. - For my noble

Lord Russel (the Honour of our Age) was most undoubtedly in the right, when, the day before his Murder, he wrote in his Paper, left behind him, the following words: I cannot deny but that I have been of Opinion, that a free Nation, like this, might defend their Religion and Liberties, when invaded and taken from them, tho' under pretence and colour of Law. I do affirm that this was his Orthodox Opinion, and these the words he wrote, tho' they were left out of the Print, and, in that day, there might be reason to omit them.

But, to bethink myself (Reverend Sir,) and to return to what we were upon; The King calls and I left you thinking, at our last parting: I will now hear what your Head run upon. ther Parliament, Nov. 5, 1640. I think (say you) he that reads the first half-Year's Transactions betwixt King Charles and this Parliament, will find he made his word good to a tittle; for whatsoever they offered to him by way of Bill, which the Nation groaned under before, as a real, nay, but as a fancied, burden, he PRESENTLY passes it. To shew that,

Page 5.

Against experience you believe, And argue against Demonstration; Pleas'd that you can your self deceive, And set your judgement by your Passion.

We must have a little Chat about this half-Year, which has exercised your The King's conduct Thoughts; and I shall shew you the reasons, wherefore L dissent from your Opinion, during the first half-That your Marter READILY PASSED subattoener Bills the Parliament officer of this Parlia-That your Martyr READILY PASSED whatsoever Bills the Parliament offered ment. for the Redress of the Nation's Grievances. Now I cannot remember one Instance, in the whole History of his Reign, of a willing and ready Compliance with his People, in any one Act of Grace or Justice. Every thing of that kind, in the whole course of his Life, was wrested from him by the universal Outcry of the Kingdom against his high Oppressions; which did never avail, but when the extremity of his Affairs wrought his stubborn Mind to a Compliance, And most sure I am, that you are mistaken in the few Instances you bring: You say, That he PRE-SENTLY pass'd the Bills for putting-down the Star-Chamber and High-Commission Courts: But I affirm the contrary, and do thus prove it. The Parliament High-commissioncould never bring him to make a fair Bargain with them; they bought every court and Star-chamthing at a very dear rate; and, when they had come to his Price, they were ever in danger of being trick'd. They came to a Contract with him, to yield-up those two accursed Courts of Oppression and Tyranny, and agreed to a POLL-BILL, A Poll-tax granted wherein every Duke was assessed at 100 l. a Marquess at 80 l. Earls at 60 l. Viscounts to obtain this favour. and Barons at 40 l. Knights of the Bath, and Baronets, at 30 l. other Knights at 20 l. Esquires at 10 l. every Gentleman dispending 100 l. per Annum, at 5 l. and all other of Ability to pay a competent proportion; and the meanest Head in the whole Kingdom was not excused. I bear there is now a Poll-Bill on foot, in this present Parliament; and therefore, from the high Affection and Duty which I bear, and shall ever pay, to those extellent Princes who do so happily fill their Grandfather's and Father's

Throne,

Throne, I do bere remember my Country-men at what rate, and for what, they were thus accessed in 1640. Then they were forced to buy-off the Encroachments of a TIRANT, who had sworn to maintain their Laws and Liberties; but now they, at lower rates, are only to enable the best Princes that ever sway'd the English Supter, to vanquish the worst of Tyrants.] Well,

The King endeavours to get the l'ax, without abolishing the two Courts.

This Bargain was struck, and, the Parliament resolving very honestly to stand to it, they prepared the Bills; but, finding the King begin to faulter, declaring that he would take their Money, but would not, at that time, pass the Bills to put-down the Star-Chamber and High-Commission-Courts; They voted, that he should pass all the three Bills, or none at all. However,

Neither the Contract nor their Vote could hold him; he trick'd them here; and upon the 2d of July, passed the Poll-Money Bill, but demurred upon the other two. Tho' afterwards, finding that the matter was very ill taken, and that it was not seasonable to displease the kingdom at that time, he passed the other two Bills. And now I hope that you are convinced, that he did not so PRESENTLY pass Bills for Redress of Grievances, as you inconsiderately suggested.

Page 5.

N. B.

To proceed, (Sir,) you say, That THE STAR-CHAMBER bad been long complain doof as a Grievance; be signs the Bill to take it away: The HIGH-COM-MISSION was a Court that most Mens Mouths were opened against; and be consent

to take that away too.

Very good! We have settled the Fact; these Courts were taken-away. I have told you in what manner, and for what Consideration: I will now take leave to inform you, what great Reasons there were to put them down. Archbishop Laud, and divers of his Brethren, had cast-off all Humanity, and were metamorphos'd into ravenous Wolves; and these Courts were under their management. The Star-Chamber had abounded in extravagant Censures, whereby the Subjects were oppressed by grievous Fines, Imprisonments, Stigmatizings, Mutilations, Whippings, Pillories, Gags, Banishments, &c. And the High-Commission was grown to such excess of Sharpness and Severity as was not much less than the Spanish Inquisition. To repeat two or three of the many instances of the horrid Oppression, and barbarous cruelty, exercised in these Tyrannical Courts:

Cruel treatment of Dr. Leighton, in Nov. 1630.

Upon the 17th of February, 1629, Dr. LEIGHTON, coming out of Black-friant in Church, (it seems that he was no Conventicler) was seized by a Warrant from the HIGH-COMMISSION-COURT, and drag'd to Bp. LAUD's HOUSE; from thence, without any Examination, he was carried to Newgate, and there clay'd into Irons, and thrust into a a nasty Hole, where he continued from Tuesday night till Thursday noon, without Meas or Drink: They kept him in that loathsome place where Snow and Rain heat-in upon him, fifteen Weeks, not permitting his Wife, or any Friend, to come near him, and denied to give him a Copy of his Commitment; then they brought him into the STAR-CHAMBER-COURT, where an Information was exhibited against him, for publishing a Book, called, SION'S PLEA AGAINST THE PRELATES.

Digitized by Google

· By

By his Answer he confessed, that, when the Parliament was sitting, in the Year 1628, he drew-up the Heads of that Book, and, having the approbation of five hundred Persons under their Hands, whereof some were Members of Parliament, he went into Holland to get it printed. That he printed but between five and six hundred only, for the use of the Parliament: but, they being dissolved, he returned home, not bringing any of them into the Land, but made it his special

Care to suppress them.

The Doctor, being charged by the Information with these words in the said Book, We do not read of greater Persecution of Goa's People in any Nation professing the Gospel, than in this our Island, especially SINCE THE DEATH OF QUEEN ELIZABETH. He confessed the words, and answer'd, That the thing was too true, as appeared by the Prelates taking-away Life and Livelibrod from many Ministers and private Men; of whom many were pined to death in Prison, and many wandered up and down, their Families being left desolate and helpless: That, besides this, the Blood of Souls had been endanger'd, by the removal of the faithful

Shephards from the Flock. This was a cutting Truth. And,

LaUD, being enraged, desired the Court to put the highest Censure that could be put upon him: That they did to his Content, condemning him to have his Ears cut, his Nose slit, to be branded in the Face, whipp'd at a Post, to stand on the Pillory, to pay 10,000l. Fine (tho' they knew he was not worth so much) and to be perpetually imprison'd. The grateful Sentence being past, Laud pull'd off his Cap, and, holding-up his Hands, gave Thanks to God, who had given him Victory over his Enemies. A Knight moved one of the Lords about the dreadfulness of the Censure, intimating that it opened a Gap to the PRELATES, to inflict such disgraceful Pun shments and Tortures upon Men of Quality: That Lord replied, That it was but in terrorem, and that he would not have any one think, that the Sentence should ever be executed. Nevertheless,

Laud had his design; for, upon the 26th of November 1630, the Censure was executed in a most cruel manner; bis Ears were cut, bis Nose slit, bis Face branded with burning Irons, be was tied to a Post, and whipp'd with a treble cord, to that cruel degree, that he himself, writing the History thereof ten Years after, affirmed, that every Lash brought away the Flesh, and that he should feel it to his dying day. He was, lastly, put in the Piliory, and kept there near two bours, in Frost and Snow: And then, after this most barbarous Usage, not permitted to return to his Quarters in the Fleet, in a Coach provided to carry him; but compelled, in that sad Condition, and severe Season, to go by Water.

After this, was kept ten weeks in Dirt and Mire, not being sheltered from Rain and Snow. They shut him up, most closely, 22 Months; and he remained a Prisoner ten or eleven Years, not suffered to breathe in the open Air, until the Parliament of November 1640, most happily delivered him. When he came abroad, to

prosecute his Petition in that Parliament, be could neither go, see, nor bear.

Now, surely, Dr. Hollingworth (for I do not forget to whom I am writing) this dismal

Vindication of their dismal Story had slip'd your Memory, when you said, That Bishop Laud was a very Majesties Wisdom, good Man, save in the Matter of the Book of Sports, and some other, as you fair (for, you say, you are tender of judging) unnecessary Innovations. But you must puton Patience, to hear something more of this bloody Villain's Barbarity.

Cruel treatment of Upon the 1st of February 1632, Laud procured Mr. Pryn to be sent close Pri-Mr. Prynne, in May, soner to the Tower: There he lay till the 21st of June 1633, when an Irformation

1634.

mation,

1682.

was exhibited against him in the Star-Chamber, for publishing a Book concerning Note, that no par-Interludes, intituled, * Histriomastix, WHICH WAS LICENSED BY A Chapticular Passages in lain of Dr. Abbot's, Arch-Bishop of Canterbury. Upon the 17th of Feb. 1633. the Book were men- lam of Di. Moon's, Archi-Dishop of Cameroury. Opon the 1750 of 120. 1003. tioned in the Infor. he had this heavy Sentence pass'd upon him; To be imprison'd for Life, pay 5000%. Fine; be expelled Lincolns-Inn, disabled to exercise the Profession of a Barrister; degraded by the University of Oxford, of his Degree there taken: and that done, n be set in the Pillory at Westminster, and have one of his Ears there cut-off; and, at another time, to be set in the Pillory, in Cheapside, and there have his other Ex cut-off.

the King, but without success.

Tho' many of the Lards never dreamt of the Execution of this horrid Judgement; Queen inter- Nay, tho' Queen Henrietta Maria, (which deserves an honourable mention; and cedes for him, with she shall have it: for she was their present Majesties Royal Grandmother;) earnestly intexceeded with the biggotted, cruel, and merciless King, (he shall have that too, with your leave. Doctor; for be was a Tyrant:) to remit its execution; yet on the 7th and 10th of May, it was fully executed, with great rigour.

> Mr. Pryn remained sundry Years in the Tower upon this Censure; and in that time Dr. Bastwick, (in the Year 1635), was brought-into the High-Commission

Inquisition, and imprison'd in the Gatehouse, Westminster.

In the Year 1636, Mr. Burton preached a Sermon upon the 5th of November, at his Church, in Friday-street, London, wherein he laid-open the Innovations in Doctrine, Worship, and Ceremonies, which had lately crept into the Church; and wished the People to beware of them. For this, LAUD caused Articles to be drawn against him in the High-Commission Court, and suspended him: Then, causing his House to be broken-open, took and committed him to the Fleet, close Prisoner; and he was shut-up there divers Weeks from his Wife and Friends.

Upon the 11th of March, 1636, they exhibited an Information against Dr. Cruel treatment of Bastwick, Mr. Pryn, and Mr. Burton, in the Star-Chamber. And upon the 14th of Prynne, Burton, and Bastwick, in June, June, 1637, they pass'd this Sentence on them, viz. To lose their Ears in the Palace-yard, Westminster: To pay a Fine of 5000 l. a man; and be perpetually imprisoned in three remote Places of the Kingdom, viz. the Castles of Carnarvon, Cornwal, and Lancaster; and Mr. Pryn to be stigmatized in the Cheeks with two Letters, (S. and L.) for a seditious Libeller.

> Upon the 30th of June, 1637, to the great regret of the People, who strewed their way with Herbs, these Confessors for English Liberties, were brought to the Place

Place appointed for the Execution of the accursed Sentence; which was done in a

manner extraordinary cruel.

Dr. Bastwick, being upon the Pillory, spoke thus to the lamenting People:—I wrote a Book against the Pope, and the POPE OF CANTERBURY said I wrote against him.—So far am I from base Fear, that had I as much blood as would swell the Thames, I would shed it every drop in his Cause: Had I as many Lives as I have Hairs on my Head, I would give them all for this Cause. Being let out of the Pillory, he took the Spunge from one of his Ears, which was all bloody, and waving it over his Head, said, Blessed he my God, who hath counted me worthy, and of his mighty Power bath enabled me to suffer any thing for his sake. And as I have now lost some of my Blood, so am I ready and willing to spill every drop in my Veins in this Cause, for which I have now suffered; which is, for maintaining the Truth of God, and the Honour of my King, against Pipish Usurpations. LET GOD BE GLORIFIED, AND LET THE KING LIVE FOR EVER. [These were not Expressions of a COMMON-WEALTH'S MAN, or a Rebel; Were they, good Doctor Challain at Aldgate?]

Mr. Pryn's turn being next; he expressed himself thus: We are accounted FAC-TIOUS FELLOWS, Hereticks and REBELS, for * DISCOVERING A PLOT *Discoverers of Plots OF POPERY; Alas! POOR ENGLAND! What will become of thee and thy against the Protestant Religion, if thou maintainest not thy own ESTABLISH'D FAITH [you see, Doctor, English Liberties, Mr Pryn was for the Church, as established by Law] AND LAWFUL LIBER. have been ever used at the rate which TIES? [Ay, that spoils all; for it renders him a Common-wealth's man, no doubt; Mr. Prynne was, ever yet 'tis but such a one as the late King Charles the Second frankly told the Duke of since Laud's Faction Buckingham he would have been had he not been a King.] Christian People (proceeded Mr. Rrvn) I beseech you all stand firm, and be zealous for the Cause of God and his true Religion, to the shedding of your dearest Blood: otherwise you will bring your-selves and your posterities INTO PERPETUAL BONDAGE AND SLAVERY,

E 90

The Executioner coming to sear and cut his Ears, he said, Come Friend, come, burn me, cut me, I fear not; I bave learn'd to fear the Fire of Hell, and not what Man can do unto me: Come, sear me, sear me, I shall bear in my Body the Marks of the Lord Jesus. The Executioner having done his part, and that with the utmost Cruelty, Mr. Pryn, with a smiling Countenance, said; Now, blessed be God, I have conquer'd and triumphed over the Bishop's Malice; and, returning to the Tower, he made these Verses by the way:

S. L. STIGMATA LAUDIS.

Stigmata Maxillis referens insignia Laudi, Exultans remeo, victima grata Deo.

Triumphant I return: My Face descries; Laud's scorching Scars, God's grateful Sacrifice.

Next

Next follows the Reverend Mr. Burton; he being in the Pillor, said, I was never in such a Pulpit before; but little do you know, what Fruit God is able to produce from this dry Tree; MARK MY WORDS; I say through these Holes, God can bring Light to his Church. Moreover, he said, My conscience, in the discharge of my Mi isterial Duly in admonishing my People, to beware of the CREEP ING-IN OF POPERY, and exharting of them to stick close to God, and the King, in Duties of Obedience, was that which first occasioned my Sufferings: For the Truth I have preached, I am ready to seal it with my Blood; for this is my Crown, both here, and hereafter.

After this Execution done, they were banished to the remote parts of the Kingdom, and there kept several Years in close and solitary Confinement, not allowed Pen, Ink and Paper, nor the sight of any Friend; and in this most deplorable case, did the Parkament, in November, 1640, find these three distressed Gen'lemen, of several Professions, the noblest in the Kingdom, Divinity, Law, and Physic. But they were soon sent-for from their Exile, and brought into Lendon by many thousands of rejoicing Gentlemen and Citizens, who went-out on Horseback, to meet them and congratulate their Deliverance. And the Parliament, taking their Case into Consideration, voted, THAT THE JUDGEMENTS GIVEN against them quere illegal, unjust, and against the LIBERTY OF THE SUBJECT. Now, good Dector, was not here reason with a witness, to open every Man's Mouth with Complaints, against these most arbitrary and pernicious Courts, and to induce the Parliament to remove these Forges of Misery, Oppression, and Violence? Nevertheless, the KING, with a very unwilling Mind, as I have shew'd, yielded therein; but, as he lost much of the Thanks which so great a Grace, freely and forwardly express'd, might have deserved; so I doubt it will be some diminution to your Credit, dear Doctor, that, contrary to what you affirm, HE DELAYED, and did not presently comply in this matter. Well! what follows now? The King is still on the giving hand; no doubt of it.

These cruel judgements are censured in Parliament as illegal.

Ship Money. Page 5. THE SHIP-MONEY (you add) the great, and very learned, Lawyers, had given their Op nich, that the exacting of it in some Cases, was according to Law; yet he GOOD MAN, gives-up that also.

Here, go d Doctor, you speak like A MEER CLERGY-MAN, and I begin to suspect that you never read any other than Dr. NALSON'S HISTORY, and are tainted with the Principles of those famous Gentlemen of the Cassoch, SIB-THORP and MANWARING, who, as well as some designing Lawyers, told your Martyr, That Authority of Parliament is not necessary for the raising Acis and Subsidies. That all Antiquity is absolutely, for absolute Obedience to Princes, in all Civil and Temperal Ibings. You make the yielding-up the Claim of Ship Money to be an act of pure Grace; for very able Lawyers gave their Opinion, that the King might exact it by Law: and so, I have told you, did as able and no less knavi b Divines. But hearken, I beseech you, what the Wisdom of Parliament told him. They declared it a new and unheard-of Tax; they voted it a most illegal Taxation, and unsufferable Grievance; they looked-into the Carriage of those

Judges who advised the King in this matter, and found that Sir JOHN FINCH (a Gentleman of good Birth, of an high and Imperious Spirit, ELOQUENT IN SPEECH, though in the knowledge of the Law not very deep,) in the Year 1636, (when Ship-Money was first plotted and set on foot,) was made Lord Chief-Justice of the Common-Pleas. And it appeared that, by his Brokage and Sollicitation, and that with Threats and Promises, several of the Judges were wroughtupon to give it under their hands, that the King might by Law exact Ship-Money. Thereupon an Impeachment of High-Treason was drawn-up against him; and the great Lord FAULKLAND (though an Admirer of the Church, as you tell me,) presented it to the Lords with a very pithy and sharp Oration against Finch; but he (being at this time Lord-Keeper) not daring to abide the Test, took his Wings, and fled in a disguise to Holland. In Conclusion, the Arbitrary Power, pretended to be in the King, of taxing the Subject without Consent in Parliament, was not only declared to be against Law by the Judgement of both Houses, but also by Act. of Parliament. Thus we rid our Hands of SHIP-MONEY.

Now indeed, Sir, you come to that which might well raise your Choler, and stir your Indignation: The King passed a Bill to remove the Bishops out of the The Bishops are re-House of Lords; he also passed a Bill for attainting the great Earl of Strafford, moved from the which offered Violence to the Peace and Quiet of his Mind all the days of his Life,

To tell you the Truth, Doctor, the Parliament found the Bishops of that day, to be the Troublers of the State, and that it was, by consequence, become most necessary to abridge their immoderate Power usurped over the Clergy and other good Subjects, which they had most maliciously abused, to the hazard of Religion, and greatest Prejudice and Oppression of the Laws of the Kingdom, and the just Liberty of the Subject: They had cherish'd Formality and Superstition as the Their great corrupprobable Supports of their own Ecclesiastical Tyranny and Usurpation; they had ton at that time. multiplied and enlarged the Differences between the common Protestants and those whom they called *Puritans*; under which Name they included all those that desired to preserve the Laws and Liberties of the Kingdom, and to maintain the true Protestant Religion. They had been designing a Conjunction between Papists and Protestants in Doctrine, Discipline and Ceremonies; only it must not yet be called Popery. They had triumphed in the Suspensions, Excommunications, Deprivations and Degradations of divers learned and pious Ministers; and in the Vexation and grievous Oppression of great numbers of the People, whereby many thousands were impoverished, and others were so afflicted and troubled by them, that great numbers departed into New England and other parts of America, and others into Holland. The most of the Preaching that was allowed, was degenerated into railing against Parliaments and Puritans, (because they were tenacious of just Liberty and true Religion) crying-up Absolute Authority, Passive Obedience, &c. Strains of Wit, fitter for a Stage than a Pulpit. After the Dissolution of the Parliament in May 1640, They continued the Convocation, and, by unheard-of Presumption, they made Canons contrary to the King's Prerogative, to the Fundamental Laws of the Realm, to the Right of Parliaments, to the Property and Liberty of the Subject.

Subject, thereby establishing their own Usurpations, justifying their Altar-Worship, and other Superstitious Innovations, which they had formerly introduced without Warrant of Law; they imposed a new Oath on the Subjects for maintenance of their own Tyranny, and laid a great Tax upon the Clergy. And now, to fill-up the measure of their iniquity, the House of Lords, upon the 30th of December 1641, at a Conference with the Commons, told them, that the Bishops, by a Protestation which they made to the King and Lords, had deeply intrenched upon the Fundamental Priviledges and Being of Parliament; whereupon the Commons impeached Twelve of them of High Treason, in endeavouring to subvert the Fundamental Laws of the Realm, and the very Being of Parliaments; and they were, by the House of Peers, sequestered from Parliament, committed to the Tower, and, shortly after, by Act of Parliament, most deservedly deprived of voting in the House of Peers.

The Earl of Strafford's attainder.

I hope, good Doctor, you will acquiesce in the Reasons which I have here offered for the passing this Bill of Exclusion; but the other Bill for attainting the great Earl of Strafford, you say, offered Violence to the Peace and Quiet of the King's

Mind, all the days of his Life.

This great Man, who had long run-on in a full Career to establish Tyranny, trampling down the Peoples Liberties, leaping the Hedges of the Laws, or making Gaps through them, was impeached by the Commons in many Articles, some whereof were for ruling Ireland (of which he had been Lord-Lieutenant) in an Arbitrary way, against the Fundamental Laws, which he had endeavoured to subvert. For abusing his Power to the increase and encouragement of Papists; for maliciously endeavouring to stir-up Hostility between England and Scotland; for labouring to subvert Parliament, and incense the King against them; for levying Money by force of Arms; for imposing an Oath upon the Subjects, That they should not protest against any of the King's Commands: for telling the King, That he had an Army in Ireland, which his Majesty might employ to reduce this Kingdom to Obedience.

Upon this Impeachment the Earl was brought to Trial before the Lords, which lasted from the 22d of March, (with but few days intermission) till the midst of April. After this long Trial, the Commons voted him guilty of High-Treason, in divers Particulars, and drew-up and passed a Bill of Attainder against him, but 59 dissenting. This Bill being carried to the Lords, the King's Sollicitor-General made it good by Law, to the satisfaction of almost all that heard him: The Judges also delivered their Opinions, That the Matters proved against him amounted to Treason; and so the Lords passed the Bill. The King, having after this, called all the Judges to deliver their Opinions before him; and also sent for FOUR BISHOPS TO RESOLVE HIM UPON SCRUPLE OF CONSCIENCE; He, at length, gave the Royal Assent to this Bill.

Prithee now, Doctor, tell me what ail'd your Martyr's Conscience at this time? There must be something extraordinary and not commonly taken notice of in this Matter, that must (as you affirm) offer Violence to the Peace and Quiet of his Mind,

Digitized by Google

all the Days of his Life. You know, he exacted the Ship-Money without scruple of Conscience, upon the Advice of some Lawyers. And though they retracted their Opinions, both Houses of Parliament voted; and his Majesty at length acknowledged, it to be an illegal and unjust Exaction: Yet that Guilt soon wore-off, and we never heard that thereby, or by any other of the almost innumerable Oppressions of his People; no, nor by his destroying the poor Provest ants of Rochelle; the Quiet of his Mind was any way disturbed. Now, in the case we are upon, here was a fair and most solemn Trial; The Lords and Commons voted the Crimes to be Treason; The King's Counsel and Judges avowed the same; The Bisbops (MARK THAT, DOCTOR) pick'el the Thorn out of his Conscience. Nevertheless, his passing this Bill violated the Peace of his Mind all the days of his Life. To offer something towards the enlightening you in this Matter, allow me to remind you of what you have before read: When the Duke of Buckingbam was impeached for Treason, this same King told the Parliament, THAT BUCKINGHAM HAD NOT INTER-MEDDLED, NOR DONE ANY THING CONCERNING THE PUBLICK, BUT BY HIS SPECIAL DIRECTIONS. Now, I have a strong fancy, that the unhappy Earl of Strafford's Case was the same with the Duke's; and that it disturbed the Quiet of the King's Mind, that he could not preserve this, as he had done his other Servant, in the execution of his own Commands*. And no marvel it stung his Conscience to adjudge to death the doers of those Misdeeds whereof himself had been the chief Author.

In the next place, good Doctor, you inform us, That the King signed a Bill for a An Act for Triennial Triennial Parliament; which certainly was as great a condescention as was ever made by a Prince. Why now, 'tis very unlucky, Doctor, that when you think your self certainly in the right, you are most undoubtedly in the wrong; for this Act for a TRIENNIAL PARLIAMENT, did not extend to so much as by the Law the Parliament aught to have required, there being at that time two Statutes of Edward 8d in force for a Parliament to be bolden once a Year.

But now you bring me to an Act of superabundant Grace; you say, That be Page 6. An Act for pass'd an Act for the Parliament to sit during pleasure. This was something indeed; continuance of the Parliament. we must therefore examine what Reasons the Parliament had to insist upon this Bill, and what the Motives were that brought the King to comply herein.

It appeared most evidently to both Houses, by the Examinations and Confes- A Conspiracy to sions of several of the Criminals, that some time before the passing of the Bill for bring-up the Army the continuance of the Parliament, (which was upon the 10th of May 1641) The to curb the Parliament, May, 1641. KING had been tampering with the Army which he had raised against the Scott, and which lay undisbanded in the North, to bring them up to curb the Parliament, and subdue them to his Will. Many great men were found to be engaged in this Conspiracy, viz. Mr. Piercy, Brother to the Earl of Northumberland; Mr. Henry Jermin the Queen's Favourite (afterwards Earl of St. Albans;) Mr. Goring, eldest

Digitized by Google

Tis a mischievous Conscience with which one good Deed is so hard to pass-down as to epdanger almost a choaking; and bad Deeds without number, (tho' as big and as bulky as the Ruin of three Kingdoms,) go-down currently without straining. н 2

Son to the Lord Goring, Mr. Wilmot, the Lord Wilmot's eldest Son; Sir John Suckling; Colonel Asbburnham; Pollard; Oneal, an Irish Papist; and many others: tiese bad taken an Oath of Secrecy among themselves. To joyn with this Army, and strengthen the Plot, a French Army was to be landed at Portsmouth, which Towne, for that purpose, was to be put into Mr. Jermyn's bands; and the Irish Army, consisting of 8000, almost all Papists, was to be brought-over.

Upon the Discovery of this horrid Plot, Piercy, † Jermin, and Suckling fled into France; Gering, being taken, made an ingenuous Confession, and so was discharged: Oneal, Wimot, Asbburnham, and others, were committed to the Tower, from

whence Oneal was permitted to make his Escape.

Mr. Piercy's letter concerning it.

Mr. Piercy, by a Letter from beyond the Seas, to his Brother the Earl of Northumberiand, dated the 14th of June, confessed much of this Conspiracy; in particular the taking the Oath of Secrecy; And that they had agreed to engage the Army to stand by the King against the Parliament, in

The preserving the Bishops Functions and Votes.

The not dishanding the Irish Army till the Scots were dishanded.

The endeavouring to settle his Revenue to that proportion it was formerly.

That be imparted all this to the King, and perceived, that he had been treated-with by others concerning something of the Army; which did not agree with those Proposals, BUT INCLINED A WAY MORE HIGH AND SHARP, NOT HAVING LIMITS EITHER OF HONOUR OR LAW. That Goring and Jermin were acquainted with the other Proceedings; and that the King pressed Mr. Piercy to admit them to consultation; To which he having yielded, and sworn them to Secrecy, acquainted them what he had proposed; but HE FOUND THEIR PROPOSALS DIFFERED FROM HIS, IN VIOLENCE AND HEIGHT.

Colonel Goring's confession.

Colonel Goring confessed, upon his Examination, that Jermin carried him to the King, who asked him, If he was engaged in any CABAL concerning the Army? To which Goring answering, That he was not: The King said, I command you then to join yourself with Piercy, and some others whom you will find with him at his Lodgings. That he thereupon went, and found with Mr. Piercy, Wilmot, Oneal, and others: That he and Jermin having first taken the Oath of Secrecy, which the others had taken before; Mr. Piercy made his Propositions, viz. That the Army should presently be put into a posture to serve the King, and then should send-up a Declaration to the Parliament of these particulars: That nothing should be done in Parliament, contrary to any former Act of Parliament; and the King's Revenue be establish'd: That Jermin prepounded, that the Army should be immediately brought to London; and they SHOULD MAKE SURE

Digitized by Google

OF

The Parliament had addressed the King to disband this Army; but he answer'd, That he would not allow of the disbanding the Irish Army, for divers reasons best known to himself,

† Jermin, after this Discovery, went-off with a Pass under the King's own hand; which commanded the Governour of Portsmouth to provide, with all speed, a Ship to carry him to any Port of France.

OF THE TOWER. And he confessed, that he himself urged these things, to shew the Vanity and Danger of the other Propositions, without undertaking these. Lieutenant-Colonel Ballard and Capt. Chudleigh confessed, that the French that were about London, were to be mounted, and would join with the Army; and that the Clergy would raise 1000 Horse to assist them. And Chudleigh added, that the Queen had sent down Money to fortify PORTSMOUTH: Further, that Mr. Jermin ask'd him, if he thought the Army would stick to their Officers, in case the King and Parliament should not agree?

It further appeared by the Confessions of Sir Jacob Ashley, Sir John Coniers, Other confessions. and Capt. Legg, eminent Commanders in the King's Army, that Oneal, the Papist, was a principal Agent in carrying-on their Intrigue of working upon the Army to engage them against the Parliament; That THE KING sent Instruc- The King himself is tions under his Hand, for a Petition to be presented from the Army: In which was engaged in this Plot a Clause to this effect; That, whereas all Men ought to give God thanks, for of binging-up the putting it into the King's Heart, to condescend to the Desires of the Parliament, Parliament, in May, to do many things, which none of his Ancestors would have consented unto, as 1641. giving way to the Triennial Parliament, and granting many other things for the good of his Subjects; yet, notwithstanding, some turbulent Spirits seem'd not to be satisfied, but WOULD HAVE THE TOTAL SUBVERSION OF THE GOVERNMENT: That, therefore, the Army, being of good comportment, though ill-Paid, might be called up to attend the Person of the King and Parliament for their Security.

That the Design was, that the Army should move towards London, and spoil the Country all along as they went, to hinder the Scots from following them. That Oneal proposed to Sir Jacob Ashley, the making the Scots Neutral; but Sir Jacob said, that they would lay him by the Heels, if he should come to move

such a thing; for they would never break with the Parliament.

Upon this Discovery, I must tell you, Doctor, the Hearts of honest Men were highly grieved to find the King in this Conspiracy; and they began to despair of that Happiness which they had hoped-for by this Parliament: And the two Houses, doubting (as they well might) the King's sincere affection to them, and considering what great Disturbance they had met-with, and were like to meet-with, in settling the State. and what great Disbursements of Money were to be made for the payment of the English and Scottish Armies: They unanimously moved the King to sign a Bill for continuance of this present Parliament: That it should never be dissolved -till both Houses did Consent and agree, that Publick Grievances were fully redress'd; and her Plot made it unsafe for him to deny it: Besides, as his extream The necessity the King was under of Wants had forced him to call this Parliament, so the same necessitated him to com-granting the Bill for ply with them. For, thus great Parliament (taught by world experience, that he the continuance of the Parliament) used Parliaments only to serve his Turn; and so, when he had attained his Ends, the Parliament. their End ensued in a sudden Dissolution) would grant no Supply to relieve his Necessities, until, by his Concession, they had obtained this continuance, to redress the People's many and great Grievances: And they themselves declared, That, though



though there were in it some seeming Restraint of the Regal Power in dissolving Parliaments; yet it was no taking that Power from the Crown, but suspending the Execution of it for this Time and Occasion only: Which was so necessary for the Publick Peace, that without it they could not have undertaken any of those great Charges, but must have left both the Armies to Disorder and Confusion, and the whole Kingdom to Blood and Ruin; for to pay the Armies, Money was to be borrowed upon the Publick Faith, which had been nothing worth, it that Parliament could have been dissolved at the King's Pleasure.

And whereas (Sir) you express yourself as astonished at this gracious Compliance, and say, that no King ever granted the like before. I answer 'Twas most evident, that no King before ever made so great a Necessity for a Parliament to insist upon it. And besides, in the Constitution of ENGLAND's GOVERN-MENT, it was never the meaning of the LAW-GIVERS, that the King should dissolve Parliaments, whilst the Great Affairs of the Kingdom were aepending:

And though Kings have used to do so, it was never the more lawful.

Well, Doctor, I agree with you, that the King passed these Bills, very advantageous for the Subject; yet in none of them was he bereaved of any just, necessary, or profitable Prerogative of the Crown. And I must tell you, because you are silent, and for aught I know, ignorant in the Point, All this was not done for nought; for the King had out of the Subjects Purse, in the first Year of this Parliament, ONE MILLION AND AN HALF OF MONEY: And yet some Men have the impudence to suggest, That the Parliament did nothing for him.

To proceed;

Page 7.
The Grand Remonstrance. Dec. 15, 1641.

What's the next Article in the Impeachment against this Parliament? These Men, to shew their Gratitude for what was done before, drew up a Remonstrance, wherein they made the most bitter Reflections upon the King's former Government.——And which was so unmannerly, as well as false, that when it came to be debated in the whole House, 'twas carried only by eleven Voices.

You are out again, most unlucky Doctor! My Authentick Historian tells me a Tale quite contrary to yours; The Remonstrance, or Declaration of the State of the Kingdom, was carried but by eight Voices, saith he; yet it contained plain (which I will allow you to call Unmannerly but must not yield to be false) Truths, reciting the chief Grievances and Oppressions which the Nation had groaned under since the beginning of this King's Reign until that time, but with as much tenderness of expression, and respect to his Person, as so much Truth could possibly be uttered. Many of the Members who opposed this Remonstrance, were of the same Opinion with those who voted for it; but urged, that no Cure could be hoped-for by it: That, instead of directing a stubborn King for the future, it would teach him only to hate the Makers of it, as Upbraiders of his Crimes: And they held it fitter to win him by the sweeter way of concealing his Errors, rather than, by publishing them, to hazard the provoking him. And now, Sir, not to contend it with you, whether

whether the little Majority, or great Minority, were the best Politicians, and most in the right; you are certainly in the wrong, when you insist, that this Remonstrance was so strenuously opposed, because the Matter thereof was unmannerly and false.

You add, That the King fairly auswered this Remonstrance, and vindicated himself

from those borred Aspersions wherewith they loaded bim.

Not to be transported, Reverend Sir, to such an indecency of replying, as is usual in such a Case as this; I barely tell you, that you talk loosely, and with no regard to Truth, in what you now say: for I have the R yal Answer and Vin ication now under my Eye, and do find that the King doth f irly answer the Remonstrance, (which sets-forth the many Grievances and high Oppressions of the People,) in these only words, We shall IN I-EW WORDS PASS-OVER that part of the Narrative, wherein the Misfortunes of this Kingdom, from our first entring to the Crown, to the beginning of this Parliament, are remembered in so sensible Expressions. And to this be adds not one u ord in vindication of himself from those Miscarriages enumerated in the Parliament's Remonstrance, which you call HORRID ASPER-SIONS, but his Majesty knew to be sad Truths.

What follows next?

The Ki g (you say) through TUMULTS, and too-much countenanced RIOTS, withdrew from Whitehall, being under apprehensions of Affronts design'd to be offer'd to be Person, if not something worse.

The Story of these p.e. ended Tumults and Riots, (dear Doctor) is so intermixt with another, relating to the greatest Violation of the Privileges of Parliament

that ever was committed, that 'tis most necessary to talk of both together.

About the beginning of January, 1641-2, the King sought nothing more than to The violent proceed-begin a Quarrel; and, to support himself therein, he employed Emissaries to cajole ings of the King in January, 1641-2. the young Gentlemen of the Inns of Courts, to make offer of their Service to him, as a Gua d of Defe :ce; and divers of them, to ingratiate themselves, repaired to the Court and were highly caressed by the King and Queen: He at the same time ordered Cannonee's, and other Assistants, into the Tower, and removed the Lieutenant thereof: He fort fiel Wvite-ball with Men and Munition in an unusual manner. And about the same time, Calonel Lunsford and others, gathered Troops of Horse at Kingston upm Thames, where the Magazine of Arms for that part of the County of Survey lay. Matters on his part being thus prepared, upon the third of January (not only against the Priviledge of Parliament, but the common Liberty of every Subject) he commanded the Chambers, Studies, and Trunks of the Lord Manneville, a Member of the House of Lords, (Grandfather to the present N ble Ears of Manchester, who inherits as well the Vertues as Honours of that great Patriot) and of Denzil Holles, Esq. (since known by the name of the great 1. d Holles) Sir Arthur Haslerig, Mr. J. Pym, Mr. J bn Hampden (Grandfather to a a highly deserving Gentleman, who at this day bears his Name, and in whom his Vertues do live and flourish) and Mr. William Strode, Members of the House of

Page 8.

Ibid.

Commons,

the five Members. January 4, 1641-42.

His attempt to seize Commons, *to be sealed-up. Upon the next day the King came with about 300 Soldiers, Papists and others, to the House of Commons, armed with Swords, Pistols, and other Weapons; and there demanded the said five Members to be delivered to him, upon a pretended Charge of High-Treason. His Followers, at the same time, thrusting-away the Door-keepers and Attendants of the House, held-up their Swords and some their Pistols ready-cock'd, saying, I am a good Marks-man, I can bit right, I warrant you: Others of them said, A Pon take the House of Commons; a P x of God confound them, and violently assaulted and by Force disarmed, some of the Servants of the Members, and said, WHEN COMES THE WORD? and afterwards declared, that, questionless, if the Word bad been given, they should bave fallen upon the House of Commons, and HAVE CUT ALL THEIR THROATS; which Doings the Commons declared, were A TRAITEROUS DESIGN against 'the King and Parliament, and that they could not sit any longer without a suffieient † Guard, wherein they might confide; wherefore they adjourned to the Tuesday following, having appointed a Committee to sit in the mean time at Gui. aba'l, London, to consider of all things that might concern the Good and Safety of the Kingdom, and the Relief of Ireland. And I am to tell you, Doctor, that the great Lord Falkland was the fourth Person named to this great Committee.

The Commons further declared, That they were so far from protecting any of their Members that should, in a due manner, he prosecuted according to the Laws of the Kingdom, and the Rights and Priviledges of Parliament, for Treason, or any other Misdemeanours, that none should be more ready and willing than themselves to bring them to a speedy and due Trial. And upon the 15th of January, they ordered the Attorney-General, who had prepared the Articles of Treason against the Members, to bring in his Proof, and make them good, if be could: Whereupon the King sent a message, that HE NOW FOUND CAUSE wholly to desist from preceeding against them; and had commanded his Attorney-General to proceed no further therein, nor to produce, nor discover, any proof concerning the matter. Also BOTH HOUSES petitioned the King for the speedy proceeding against the accused Members, IN A LEGAL WAY, whereby they might be brought to condign Punishment, if guilty; or discharged from so beavy an Accusation, if innocent. The King giving an evasive Answer to this Petition, the Lords and Commons apply to him again, by a second Petition, praying that the Parliament might be informed before Friday then next ensuing, what Proof there is against them, that they may be called to a Legal Trial.

trary to the Pin iledges of that high Court.

† They petitioned the King to allow them a Guard, to be commanded by the Lord Chamberlain of his Houshold, but could not obtain it.

To

[•] These were all Gentlemen of great Esteem and Reputation in the House. Two of them, Mr. Holles, and Mr. Strede, having before suffered many Years of sharp and harsh Imprisonment from the King, after the Dissolution of the Parliament in the fourth Year of his Reign, for Matters done in Parliament, con-

To which Petition * the King answered, that, AS HE ONCE CONCRIVED, he had ground enough to accuse them, so now bis Majesty finds, as good Cause subolly to desert any Prosecution of them. Do you hear this, DOCTOR? If you ever had till now, you would not surely have assumed the Confidence to have said, as you do, (Pa. 11, 12.) That nothing less would satisfy the Parliament, than that he must be obliged, AS IT WERE, and IN EFFECT, to beg the Members Pardon for wronging them, with what he thought and COULD BY GOOD EVI-DENCE PROVE MATTER OF TRUTH. Now I do (AS IT WERE) think that you ought (not only IN EFFECT, but in earnest) to humble your-self to the Descendants of these bonourable and never-to-be-forgotten PATRIOTS, for the horrid Slander which you here lay on their great Names and Families: For, the' the King gave-up the Cause, saying that HE FOUND GOOD REASON wholly to desist from proceeding against them; and at another time, that he found GOOD CAUSE wholly to desert any prosecution of them; Yet you, forsooth, must keep-up the wicked Clamour, and falsely inform this Generation, that his Majesty, GOOD MAN, bad pregnant Evidence to prove them guilty of Treason. But, to put yeu to shame, if possible ('tis what you threatened me with, Reverend Sir!) I shall add a few words more upon this occasion. The Lords and Commons told the King in a third Petition, that, notwithstanding his Majesty found good cause, wholly to desert any farther prosecution of the accused Members; yet they remained still under that heavy Charge so imputed unto them: And that, by two Acts of Parliament, viz. 37 and 38 Edw. 3. it was enacted, That, if any Person whatsoever, make Suggestion to THE KING HIMSELF of any Crime committed by another, the same Rerson ought to be sent with the Suggestion before the Chancellor, or Keeper of the Great-Soal. the Treasurer, or the great Council; there to find Surety to pursue his Suggestion, which, if he cannot prove, he is to he imprisoned till he satisfy the Party accused, of his Damages and Slander, and make Fine and Ransom to the King. Wherefore, the Lords and Commons beseeched the King, that he would be pleased to send the Person or Persons, that in this Case made the Suggestion or Information to him, against the said Members; together with the Suggestion or Informations; to the Parliament; that so such Fruits of the said good Laws may be had as was intended by them, and the Rights and Priviledges of Parliament may be vindicated; WHICHOF RIGHT AND JUSTICE OUGHT NOT TO BE DENIED,

Notwithstanding this Petition, no Authors nor Witnesses were ever produced, to avow the heavy Charge and Accusation of the noble Lord Mandeville and the five Members, till now, that fifty Years are elapsed, You, unbappy Doctor, are trumping-

The City of London also petitioned, that the Lord Mandeville, and the five Members might not be restrained of Liberty, or proceeded against otherwise than according to the Priviledges of Parliament.

άħ

[•] A Petition of about two thousand Freeholders of Bucking hamshire was presented to the King, setting forth that Mr. Hambden, Knight of their Shire, (a Gentleman in high Esteem with them, and the whole Kingdom) was accused of Treason; that they believed it to be the Malice which his Zeal to his Majesty's Service and the State had contracted in the Enemies to the King, the Church and the Common-wealth, had occasioned this foul Accusation; and they prayed that he and the other Members might enjoy the Priviledge of Parliament.

up good Evidence, though, for want of just Matter, (which never yet came to light;). the King let the Business fall of his own accord. And, see now, how neatly you have noos'd yourself; for, by your idle dedication to their Majesties, you have made this false Suggestion TO THE KING HIMSELF, and so are fallen into the Mercy of the noble Earl of Manchester, and become liable to the severe Penalties in the

Statutes of King Edward the Third.

To dispatch this Head; Was it not a Crime against the Law of Nature, against the Rules of Justice; that innocent Men should be charged with so great an Offence as Treason, in the Face of the highest Judicature in the Kingdom, without Witness, without any possibility of Reparation, even in point of Innocency? Such was the case of these great Men; for the King denied to discover their Accusers, and yet, would not pass a Bill for their Discharge, unless in the Narration they would desert the avowing their own Innocency. Nay, was it not an Act of Tyranny beyond Parallel? He accused them, and yet would produce no Witness:? be confessed them clear in his own Judgement, yet they must not profess their own Innocency, for fear of wounding his Honour?

The King pretends to be afraid of the tumults in London.

We will proceed now, Reverend Doctor, to what remains to be said, about the terrifying Tumults and Riots, which frighted his Majesty from Whiteball. that be withdrew through Tumults, and too much countenanced Riots, being under apprebension of Affronts, design'd to be offered to his Person, IF NOT SOMETIING WORSE. When you return me an Answer to this Letter, dear Sir, you will infinitely oblige me, if you will tell me, in plain English, what you intend by SOME-THING WORSE, than that the Mob would affront his Majesty's Royal Person? For, according to my present Apprehension, you seem to insinuate, that he ABDI-CATED WHITEHALL, under a dread, that these wicked Rioters would have forced his COMFORTABLE IMPORTANCE, or perpetrated some Act so highly Villanous, that you could not find a Name for it. For the present, till I have better Light herein, I will lay before you my Thoughts in this Case: In the doing whereof, we must examine how things stood at that time, whereby 'twill be seen, whether there were any such Tumuks; and if there were, whether the King himself did not cause them?

The King's Attendthe Citizens.

He had tempted the ENGLISH ARMY, with no less Reward than the Spoil of the City of LONDON, to come-up and destroy the PARLIAMENT; He bad, in an inants wound some of excuseable and bestile manner, made a most high Invasion upon the Priviledges of BOTH HOUSE'S. Hereupon, many Citizens, unarmed, resorted to Westmunster to present their Petitions, and express their steadfastness to the Parliament, whose Lives and Safeties, by more than slight Rumours, they doubted to be in Danger; the King, having fortified Whiteball, and entertained Armed Men, not a few, planted them at the *Gate of bis Palace, where they reviled, menaced, and, with drawn Swords, actually wounded many of the Citizens, as they passed-by in a peaceable manner, whereof some died. Nay, they went farther, and were come to that height of Boldness, as to give out insolent and menacing Speeches against the *Parliament* itself, and to

·imbrue

^{*} The first Blood that was drawn in this Cause, was in that very place where the King's own Blood was afterwards shed.

imbrue beir Hands in the Blood of the King's Subjects in Westminster-ball, and at the doors of the Parliament, as well as at his own Gate. And when the Parliament and People complained, and demanded Justice for those Assaults, he justified and

abetted his own Crew in what they did.

Now the passing-by of a multitude of the King's Subjects, armed with no other Weapons than Petitions, could neither be justly called Tumults, nor could the Parliament have forbid them, without breach of the People's Freedom: unarmed Petitioners, surely, could not be formidable to any: And I must remember you, D ctor. that a very short time before his Majesty pretended to dread these tumultuary Citizens, The City entertained, feasted, and conducted him to Whitehall with as pompous Solemnity, and costly Expressions of Love and Duty, as ever bad been known. Nay, did he not, the very next day after his irruption into the House of Commons, (than which nothing had more exasperated the People,) go in bis Coach, unguarded, into the City? Did he receive the least Affront, much less Violence, in any of the Streets, and not rather humble Demeanours and Supplications? He knew the People to be so full of Awe and Reverence to his Person, as to commit himself single. amongst the thickest of them, at a time when he had most provoked them: This shews, beyond doubting, that all bis fear of Tumulis was but a mere Presence and Occasion taken of his resolved absence from the Parliament, that he might turn his Slashing at the Court-gate to Slaughtering in the Field. Well,

The King, retires, first to Hampton-Court, commanding those of his Servants who The King withdraws were Members of Parliament, to leave their Service there, and to give their Attend. from London. ance upon his Person. Shortly after, the QUEEN passes into Holland, carrying with ber all, or the greatest part of, the Crown-Jewels; which she immediately pawn'd,

and, with the Money, bought Arms and Ammunition for the War, which was not yet

begun.

But I have almost forgot my self, Reverend Sir, I must attend to what you say in the Case; 'Tis this, I see; The King, though withdrawn, yet ceases not to call upon the Parliament to consider the Nation's Good, and the settling it upon such Foundations as that neither the Monarch might invade the just Rights of the People, nor the People encroach upon the Rights of his Crown and Dignity. Having said this, you intimate that he told them something upon their presenting Petitions to him at Theobalds and Newmarket. Then it seems that they called upon him likewise; and 'tis fit my Countrymen should know for what, seeing you do maliciously with hold it.

Upon the 1st of March, 1641-42, BOTH HOUSES CALLED UPON HIS The two Houses MAJESTY, by their Petition presented at Theobalds; That, for the dispatch of the petition him to comegreat Affairs of the Kingdom, the Safety of his Person, the Protection and Comfort of back. his Subjects, he would be pleased to continue his Abode near the Parliament, and not to withdraw himself to any the remoter Parts; which if he should do, it must needs he a cause of great Danger and Distraction: And they prayed him to accept this humble Counsel, as the effect of that Duty and Allegiance which they owed unto kim, and which would not suffer them to admit of any Thoughts, Intentions, or Endeavours, but such as were necessary and advantageous for his Majestie's Greatness and Honour, and the Safety

N. B.

Page 8.

Safety and Prosperity of the Kingdom: Expressions surely, that do not in the least sayour of that Sedition and Rebellion, with which at this time, by you, Dector, and many other WICKED Clergymen, the Memory of this great Parliament is charged.

They send a declaration to him at Newmarket.

The King being deaf to the importunate Supplication of the Lords and Commons for his Return: They again called upon bim more earnestly, sending after him a Declaration to Newmarket, by the Earls of Pembroke and Holland, and a Committee of the Commons, wherein they laid before him the Causes of their own Fears and - Jealousies in these Particulars:

The grounds of the fears and jealousies entertained by the Parliament.

1. That the design of altering Religion had been potently carried on by those in greatest Authority about him; the Queen's Agent at Rome, the Pope's Nuncio bere, are not only Evidences of this Design, but bave been great Actors in it.

'2. That the War with Scotland was procured to make way for this Intens, and chiefly fomented by the Papists, and other persons Popishly-affected; whereof we have

' many Evidences.

's 3. That the Rebellion in Ireland was framed and contrived here in England; and "that the English Papists should have risen about the same time, we have several 'Testimonies. &c. The Irish Rebels affirm, that they do nothing but by Authority from the King; they call themselves the Queen's Army: The Booty which they take from the English, they mark with the Queen's mark; and it is proved that their purpose was to come to England, after they had done in Ireland.

4. The labouring to infuse into your Majesty's Subjects an evil Opinion of the Parliament, and other Symptoms of a Disposition of raising Arms, and dividing your People by a Civil War; in which Combustion Ireland must needs be lost, and this Kingdom miserably wasted and consumed, if not wholly ruined and

destroyed.

"5. That your Majesty sent-away the Lord Digby by your own Warrant beyond the Sea, after a Vote had passed in the House of Commons, declaring, that he had appeared in a Warlike manner at Kingston upon Thames, to the Terror of vour Majesty's good Subjects; that he, being so got beyond Sea, vented his * traiterous Conceptions, That your Majesty should declare yourself; and retire to a place of Strength; and intimated some Service which he might do in those Parts; whereby, in probability, he intended the procuring of some Foreign Force to strengthen your Majesty, in that Condition into which he would have brought you; which malicious Counsel, we have great Cause to doubt, made too deep an Imoression on your Majesty, CONSIDERING THE COURSE YOU ARE PLEASED TO TAKE, OF ABSENTING YOURSELF FROM YOUR PARLIAMENT, and carrying the Prince with you, which seems to express a purpose in your Majesty to keep yourself in a readiness for the acting of it.

6. The manifold Advertisements which we have had from Rome, Venice. Paris. and other parts, that they still expect that your Majesty has some great-Design in

s band for the altering of Religion, and breaking the Neck of your Parliament; and that you will yet find means to compass that Design: That the Pope's Nuncio bath sollicited the Kings of France and Spain to lend your Majesty 4000 Men apiece, to help to maintain your Royalty against the Parliament.

'These are some of the grounds of our Fears and Jealousies, which made us so earnestly to implore your Royal Authority and Protection for our Defence and Security in all the ways of Humility and Submission: which being denied by your "Majesty, We do with Serrow apply curselves to the use of that " Power, which, by the Fundamental Laws of this Kingdom, resides in us; yet still resolving to keep our- selves within the Bounds of Faithfulness and Allegiance to your Sacred Person and Syour Crown.

And as to the fears and Jealousies which his Majesty seemed to have entertained

of them; The Lords and Comm ns thus answered:

4

2

ŧ,

' We have, according to your Majesty's Desires, laid our Hands upon our Hearts; we bave ask'd ourselves in the strictest Examination of our Consciences, we have search'd our Affections, our Troughts; considered our Actions, and can find none that can e give your Majesty any just occasion to absent yourself from Whitehall and the Par-* l:ament; but that you may with more Honour and Safety continue there than ' in any other place.

*Your Majesty lays a general Charge upon us; if you will be graciously pleased to let us know the Particulars, we shall give a clear and satisfactory Answer. But what hope can we have of ever giving your Majesty Satisfaction, when those · Particulars which you have been made believe were true, yet, being produced and made * known to us appeared to be false; and your Majesty, notwithstanding, will neither punish nor produce the Authors; but go on to contract new Jealousies and Fears, upon general and uncertain grounds, affording us no means, or possibility,

of particular Answers, to the clearing of ourselves?

• WE BESEECH YOUR MAJESTY TO CONSIDER IN WHAT STATE YOU ARE, bew easy and fair a way you have to Happiness, Honour, and Greatness, Plany and Scurity, if you will join with the Parliament in the Defence of the Ree ligion and jubick Good of the Kingdom. THIS IS ALL WE EXPECT FROM 'YOU; and for this we return to you our Lives, Fortunes, and utmost Endeavours to support your Majesty, and your just Sovereignty and Power over us; but IT IS NOT WORDS THAT CAN SECURE US in these our humble Desires: We cannot but too well and sorrowfully remember what GRACIOUS MESSAGES we had from you this Summer, when, WITH YOUR PRIVITY, the bringing-up the Army was in Ag tation: We cannot but with the like affections, recall to our Mirds, bow, not two days before your own coming to the Commons House, you sent a GRACIOUS MESSAGE, that you would always bave the same care of their Privi-· leages as of your own Prerogative; of the Safety of their Persons as of that of your own Chil. " dren. That which we expect,—which will give us assurance, that you have no thought

• but of Peace and Justice to your People,—must be some real Effect of your Goodness to them, in granting those things which the present necessities of the Kingdom N.B.

do enforce us to desire; And that you will be graciously pleased to put from you those mischieveus Counsellors who have caused all these Dangers and Distractions, and to continue your own Residence and the Prince's, near London and the ' Parliament: which, we hope, will be a happy beginning of Contentment and Confidence betwirt your Majesty and your People; and be followed with many succeeding Blessings of Honour and Greatness to your Majesty, and of Security

'and Prosperity to them.'

These are brief Heads, good Doctor, of the Declaration which you mention to be read to the King at Newmarket; and you, with very little regard to his Majesty's Honour, do affirm, that, after the hearing this Declaration read, be expostulated in these words: What would you have? Have I violated your Laws? Were you as well read in the History of that Day as you pretend to be, this his strong Expostulation with the Lords and Commons would never have found room in your Defence of the King; for his high violations of the Laws were too well known to the whole World, to be denied; and you, bis Majesty's Defender, would never have revived the thing, had you remember'd the short, but most pertinent, Reply which lost Houses made thereto, in these words; We are beartily scrry we bave such plentiful matter of an Answer to that Question, HAVE I VIOLATED YOUR LAWS?

Page 9. The Militia.

Page 8.

You proceed, Sir, saying, That the Applications from the two Houses at this time, were for NOTHING LESS than the MILITIA. You are out again, Doctor, and, would I use the R yal Language, wherewith the Earl of Holland was interrupted by the King in reading the Declaration to him at New-Market, I might, with more Truth than he did, say, THAT'S FALSE, THAT'S A LIE: For in recounting some Particulars of the Declaration, I have demonstrated, that their Application was also for other and less Matters than the Militia; they humbly petitioned bim to put-away bis wicked Counsellors, and to return to bis Parliament.

You add; That the King continuing stedfast to his Resolution, and DEAF TO ALL THEIR IMPORTUNITIES, [The want of Ears, I must tell you, Reverend Sir, cost him his Head at last lelling them. That he would not part with his Militia for an Hour. I must help you a little in this part of the Story too; The Earl of Pembrook ask'd him, Whether the Militia might not be granted, as was desired by the Parliament for a time? HIS MAJESTY SWORE, BY GOD, NOT FOR AN HOUR. This shews him a little more stubber nly stedfast than you would tell the World; however, you teld too much in this place, or bis Majesty resolved and swore too fast; for afterwards you say, That, at the Treaty at Uxbridge, He consented that the Militia, for three Years, should be in the Hands of twenty Commissioners, the one half to be nominated by the two Houses.

Your next words are these, THE MILITIA THEY MUST HAVE, OR THE NATION IS UNDONE.

The State of the Kingdom at that Day considered, there never fell from your Pen a greater Truth than what you have here delivered. For, besides the particular Instances which I have already given you of the King's Invasion of the Privi-

Digitized by GOOGLE

Page 20.

Page 9.

ledges of the Parliament, of the Rights of the People, and of his Preparations for War against them; I must here inform you, that in the beginning of the Year A striking instance 1641-42, a time when the King was, in appearance, transacting Matters amicably of the King's Insinwith the two Houses, and we seemed to be in a deep Peace; a time when be declared, that he had received no other carriage from his Parliament than what he profes. sed bimself satisfied with; and that, if the Bills he had past were again to be offered, he should chearfully and readily assent unto them; even then he dispaiched-qway Letters and an Agent to the King of Denmark, complaining of the Parliament, and asking Supplies from thence, AD PROPULS ANDOS HOSTES; (you know the English of that is, to subdue bis Evenies;) and declared himself in these words, ad alia Consilia Animum convertendum duximus; We resolve to betake ourself to NEW COUN-SELS; which are the very words he used to the Parliament in the Year 1628.

the Parliament, he turned to the Scottish Army, then at Newcastle, and baited to the Scottish army. his Temptation with a rich Reward, not only to have 300,000 l. in hand, and the Spoil of London, but four Northern Counties to be made Scottish. Moreover, to encourage them to joyn with him, he declared to them, that he was to have Money and Horse from Denmark, and that he would make York the place of his Residence, for the better Accommodation of both Nations, or fuller Revenge upon London: He also gathered Men in London, under pretence of raising Forces for Portugal, who were to possess themselves of the Tower. The Queen in Holland was buying Arms, and his Majesty had actually raised Forces in divers Counties: The Parliament was all this time petitioning in Peace: And for the Reasons now assigned, amongst v any others, They humbly becought him, that he would be pleased to put the Tower of London and the Militia, into the kands of such Persons as should be recommended to him by both Houses of Parliament. The King seemed to comply herein, and by his Answer promised them that the Militia should be put into such hands as they should approve of, or recommend to him: hereupon both Houses nominated Persons of the greatest Honour, as fit for that Trust; to give you the Names of some of them, the Earls of Holland, Rutland, Bedford, Bullingbrook, Salisbury, Warwick, Pembrook, Leicester, Stamford, Essex, Clare, Northumberland, Lincoln, Suffolk, &c. Lords, Paget, North, Strange, Roberts, Grey of Werk, Chandois, Dacres, Mandeville, Wharton, Spencer, Brook, Herbert, Fielding. Littleton, Lord-Keeper, &c. Men eminent in all Qualifications of Honour and Sufficiency were recommended for several Counties, and the King was desired to agree thereunto, as he had promised; upon his delaying to give a satisfactory Answer, they again petition him to give such an Answer as might raise in them a Confidence that they should not be exposed to the Practices of those who thirst after the Ruin of the Kingdom, and the kindling that Combustion in England

which they had effected in Ireland: That nothing could enable them to suppress THE REPELLION IN IRELAND, and secure England, but the granting of their humble Petition: which they find so absolutely necessary for the preservation of the King and Common-wealth, that the Laws of God and Man injoun

Further, upon the Discovery of his Plot to bring-up the English Army against His traiterous offers

N. B.

them to see it put in Execution. They again, by a Petition presented at Theobalds, March 1, 1641-42, intreated him, that he would at last be pleased to grant their necessary Petition concerning the Militia, and declared; that, if he refused to do it in these times of Distraction, they must be enforced to dispose of it for the Safety of the Kingdom, in such manner as had been propounded to his Majesty. followed him with the same humble Supplication, in his several Removes to York: But, (HE HAVING ABDICATED the Parliament, and BEING DEAF (as you most ingenuously confess) TO ALL THEIR IMPORTUNITIES;) they declared, that there had been of late a most desperate Design upon the House of Commons, which they had just cause to believe was an Effect of the BLOOUY COUNSELS of PAPISTS. and other ill affected Persons, who had already raised A REBEL. LION IN IRELAND, and; by reason of many Discoveries, they could not but fear they would proceed, not only to stir-up the like REBELLION AND INSUR-RECTION in this Kingdom, but also to back them with Forces from abroad; and thereupon both Houses made an Ordinance for the ordering the Militia of England and Wales; there appearing an urgent and inevitable Necessity for putting his Majesty's Subjects in a Posture of Defence for the Safeguard of both his Majesty and the People. And they RESOLVED, that, in this case of extream Danger, and of his Majesty's refusal, the Ordinance agreed to by both Houses for the Militia doth oblige the People, and OUGHT TO BE OBEYED, by the Fundamental Laws of this Kingdom. They further, about that time, RESOLVED, That the King's Absence, so far remote, from his Parliament, was not only an Obstruction, but MIGHT BE A DESTRUCTION to the Affairs of Ireland.

The ordinance of both Houses for the Militis.

The spirited behaviour of the Parliament self from them.

And now, Sir, having laid before you the Grounds of the Parliament's proof Ri hard II upon ceeding as they did, in the business of the Militia: I will shew you how much his withdrawing him- higher our Fore-fathers went than we did in 1641-42. They were of that Courage and Severity of Zeal to Justice and their Native Liberty, against the proud Contempt and Mis-rule of their Kings: that, when RICHARD the Second departed but from a Committee of Lords, who sat preparing Matters for the Parliament, they required the King, (who was then withdrawn no further off than to the Tower). to return to Westminster; WHICH HE REFUSING, THEY FLATLY TOLD HIM, THAT, UNLESS HE CAME, THEY WOULD CHOOSE ANOTHER KING. So high a Crime it was accounted then, for a King to absent himself from his Parliament. Much less would they have suffered, that a King should leave his Regal Station, and the whole Kingdom bleeding to Death of those Wounds which his own unskilful and perverse Government had made. Yet, WE IN OUR DAY went not their length; THE KING HAD ABDICATED; our Keligion, Lives and Liberties were threatened with most imminent Danger, from intestine Enemies and Foreign Force; WE only made a most necessary Provision, that our own Swords should not be employed to the Destruction of all that was dear unto us. And pray, what herm, what Rebellion, was there in all this?

Page 101

The next thing we meet with in your Defence, REVEREND DOCTOR, is this; Before the War actually broke-out, the King was gone to York, hoping therely

thereby to COOL THE HEATS that were AT LONDON, and in some little time TO BE INVITED thither, to live with more Honour and Safety than he did before.

The King in truth went to York in a high Chafe, hoping for something beyond, The King goes to and contrary to, what you intimate; 'twas in hopes that, (to enable himself the bet-York, in order to and contrary to, what you intrmate; twas in nopes that, (to chaote inflocing the oct possess himself of the for that dismat War which he had resolved upon,) he might possess himself of the Magazine at Hull, a Town of great Strength, and most advantageously situated, both for Sea Hull. and Land Affairs; and which was at that time the Magazine of all the Arms which he had bought with Money most illegally extorted from his Subjects, to use in a causeless and most unjust Civil War against his Subjects of Scotland. Did he hope for an Invitation back to London? Why, he had had that very often made to him, in a most humble and earnest manner; in particular, by a Petition of the Lords and Commens, presented to him at York, the 26th of March, 1642. They bumbly advised and beseeched bim, that, FOR THE RECOVERY OF IRELAND and securing this Kingdom, be would be graciously pleased, with all convenient speed, to return to London, The two Houses send and to close with the Counsel of bis Parliament; where he should find their dutiful Commissioners to the Affections and Endeavours ready to attend bim, with such entertainment as should king at York to invite him to return to them. not only give him just cause of Security in their Faithfulness, but other manifold Evidences of their Intentions and Endeavours to advance his Majesty's Service, Honour, and Contentment, and to establish it upon the sure Foundation of the Reace and Prosperity of his Kingdoms. EXPRESSIONS, surely, Doctor, THAT DO NOT IN THE LEAST SAVOUR OF REBELLION AND TREASON. But the deaf The King endea-King, instead of hearkening to this dutiful Petition and Invitation, summoned the yours to raise an Gentry of that County to attend him at York, where he made the most bitter Invec- Parliament. tives against the Parliament, and stirred them up to raise Horse and Foot for his Service. His Majesty found but six Gentlemen to comply with his Demand of raising Men, tho' made under the pretence of a Guard. The greater part of the Gentlemen, and divers thousands of Freeholders, gave him an Answer under their hands to this effect, We bumbly beseech your Majesty to impart the grounds of your Fears and Jealousies to your High Court of Parliament (OF WHOSE MOST LOYAL CARE AND AFFECTION TO YOUR MAJESTY'S HONOUR AND SAFETY, WE ARE MOST CONFIDENT) and WHATSOEVER SHALL BE ADVISED by YOUR GREAT COUNCIL, we shall most willingly embrace, and give our Concurrence and Assistance to it, as shall become us,----And WE ARE MOST ASSURED, that your Royal Person shall be secure in the general Fidelity of your Subjects of this County without any extraordinary GUARD.

The King was presented the next day with a Petition from many thousands, who justly styled themselves peaceably-affected Subjects in the County of York, in which they speak thus:

That many of them, in their late Desires of petitioning your Majesty, were denied The Yorkshire-men Access to your Person, kept-back with Vielence, and affronted by some who had De-petition the King to be reconciled to the pendance Parliament.

N. B.

pendance on your Majesty; and were threatened, that, WHEN YOUR MAJESTY'S ARMY SHOULD BE ON FOOT, those should be first piliaged that refuse to subscribe to the raising of Forces; which, we humbly conceive, are POSITIVELY CONTRARY TO YOUR MAJESTY'S OWN EXPRESSIONS, &c.

We bumbly supplicate your Majesty, to tast your Eye upon the present State of this your Kingdom.—We are confident that no so absolute and bearty Observence to your Majesty's just Commands can be demonstrated, as what your Majesty in Parliament shall declare; which, IF IT BECOME DIVIDED, (as God forbid!) our Hearts even tremble to consider the Dangers and Diminution of the Honour and Safety which your Majesty's Posterity and Kingdoms will unavoidably be put upon: Since it is clear to every Understanding, that IT IS NOT A DIVIDED PART OF ONE OR SEVERAL COUNTIES THAT can afford that Honour and Safety to your Majesty, AS THE WHOLE KINGDOM; WHICH YOU MAY COMMAND, no ground of Fear or Danger remaining, if a good Confidence were got betwixt your Majesty and your Parliament; whose grave and loyal Counsels are, we bumbly conceive, the visible way, under God, to put a speedy end to the Troubles of Ireland, and establish your Throne in Righteousness.

We most bumbly supplicate, that we may represent our Unfitness to become Judges betwixt your Majesty and Parliament, in any thing, or dispute the Authority of either; which, we humbly conceive, do fortific each other——We shall be ready to maintain your Majesty's just Rights, the Priviledges and Power of Parliament, and the

lawful Liberties of the Subjects.

I have now shewn you, Doctor, that the King wanted not Invitations to return and live in Honour and Safety at London: The Parliament importunately pressed it; the Gentlemen and Freebolders of Yorkshire humbly supplicated it. But nothing is more certain than that, instead of hoping to cool the Heats at London by retiring to York, 'twas his sole purpose and intention to put that Country, and the whole Kingdom, into a Flame, as he quickly did; and, pursuant to that Design, having rejected, with Scorn, the Retitions I have mentioned, he persisted in his former way of raising Forces, and made a Proclamation, requiring all Gentlemen, and others, of that Country, to attend him in Arms.

The King rejects these Petitions, and continues to raise Forces.

The Parliament votes that the King intends to make war upon them.
May 20, 1642.

The Lords and Commons, wisely foreseeing the impending Mischief, and observing the Clouds to gather so fast, and threaten a Storm, they as wisely endeavoured to prevent it; and therefore passed a Voie, May 20, 1642, That it appears that the King (Seduced by wicked Counsel) intends to make War against the Parliament; whe, in all their Consultations and Actions, have proposed no other end unto themselves, but the Care of his Kingdom, and the performance of all Duty and Loyalty to his Person.

2. That unbensoever the King maketh War upon the Parliament, it is a Breach of the Trust reposed in him by his People, contrary to his Oath, and tending to the Dissolution of the Government.

3. That whosoever shall serve, or assist him in such War, are Traitors, by the Fundamental Laws of this Kingdom, and have been so adjudged by two Acts of Parliament, and ought to suffer as Traitors, 11 Rich. 2. 1 Hen. 4.

But

Ť

Page 10.

But I must hear you, Sir, upon this Point, of the first beginning of the unnatural and bloody War. You suggest, that be was forced to raise an Army, which was after the Parliament had voted a Necessity of a War with him.

Will you never leave your L Doctor? The Parliament did not vote a necessity of a War; They indeed voted, as I told you but now, That it appeared that the King intended to make War against them; and it was near two Months afterwards, They afterwards viz. the 12th of July, 1642, that the Lords and Commons, (finding his Majesty to vote that an Army persist in that Intention) voted, that an Army should be forthwith raised for the Sufedefence. ty of the King's Person, Defence of both Houses of Parliament, and preserving of the true July 12, 1642. Religion, the Laws, Liberty, and the Peace of the Kingdom. That the Earl of Essex should be General, and that they will live and die with him in this Cause; and that the Earl of Bedford should be General of the Horse. Nevertheless, they resolved, But first present a that a Petition should be presented to his Majesty, by the Earl of Holland, Sir John Petition to the King Holland, and Sir Philip Stapleton, to move the King to a good Accord with his war. Parliament, to prevent a Civil War; which was to the effect following.

'Although, We, your Majesty's most bumble and faithful Subjects, the Lords and Their Petition.

" Commons assembled in Parliament, have been very unhappy in many former Petitions to your Majesty; and, with much Sorrow, do perceive that your Majesty, incensed by many false Calumnies and Slanders, doth continue to raise Forces against us, and to make great Preparations for War, both in the Kingdom, and from beyond the Seas; yet, such is our earnest desire of discharging our Duty to your "Majesty and the Kingdom, to preserve the Peace thereof, and to prevent the Miseries of Civil War: That (notwithstanding we hold ourselves bound to use all the Means and Power which, by the Laws and Constitutions of this Kingdom, we are trusted with, for Defence and Protection thereof, and of the Subjects, from Force and Violence;) We do, in this our humble and loyal Petition, prosfrate ourselves at your Majesty's Feet, beseeching that you will forbear and remove all Preparations and Actions of War; - That you will come nearer to your Parliament, and hearken to their faithful Advice and humble Petitions, which shall only tend to the Defence and Advancement of Religion, your own Royal 4 Honour and Safety, and the preservation of our Laws and Liberties. And we bave been, and ever shall be, careful to prevent and punish all Tumults and Seditious Actings, Speeches, and Writings, which may give your Majesty just cause of Distaste. or apprehension of Danger.

'And we, for our Parts, shall be ready to lay-down all those Preparations which we have been forced to make for our Defence. And with respect to the Town of Hull and the Ordinance concerning the Militia;—as we have, in both these Particulars, only sought the preservation of the Peace of the Kingdom, and the Defence of the Parliament from Force and Violence, so we shall most willingly leave the Town of Hull in the state in which it was before Sir John Hotham drew any Forces into it, delivering your Majesty's Magazine into the Tower of London: and We shall be ready to settle the Militia by a Bill, in such a way as shall be honourable and safe for your Majesty, most agreeable to the Duty of Parliament, and effectual to the Good of

6 th

Digitized by Google

the Kingdom, that the Strength thereof be not employed against itself; and that which ought to be for our Security, applied to our Destruction. And that the Parliament and those who profess and desire still to preserve the Protestant Religion, both in this Realm, and in Ireland, may not be left naked and indefensible, to the mischievous Designs and cruel Attempts of those who are the profess'd and confederate Enemies thereof, in your Majesty's Dominions, and other Neighbour Nutions: To which, if your Majesty's Courses and Counsels shall from henceforth concur; We doubt not but we shall quickly make it appear to the World, by the most eminent Effects of Love and Duty, That your Majesty's personal Safety, your Royal Honour and Greatness, are much dearer to us than our own Lives and Fortunes, which we do most heartily dedicate, and shall most willingly employ, for the support and maintenance thereof.

And now, Sir, I appeal to you, and to all the World, Whether these Men talk'd here, as though they were resolv'd to make War, and engross all into their own hands, let what would become of the King? as a certain Aldgate Doctor of Divinity falsey accuses the Lords and Commons. Thanks be to God, Sir John Holland (as well as Sir John Prattle) is yet alive in Norfolk, in perfect Health and Understanding; and is ready to give the same account I have here given you,

to any Man that asks him about it.

What say you next, Mr. Chaplain of Aldgate? Why, To let the World see what the King aimed-at, He does assure the Gentlemen, whose Loyalty engaged them early on his Side, and does promise them, in the Presence of Almighty God, and as he hopes for his Blessing and Protection, that he would, to the utmost of his Power, defend and maintain the true Protestant Religion establish'd in the

Church of England.

You almost provoke me, Doctor, to draw-up a Petition to your Right Honourable and Right Reverend Diocesan, to suspend you from writing DEFENCES, till you swear to do them honestly; then, and not till then, we may hope for the Truth, the whole Truth, and nothing but the Truth. I am credibly informed, that there was something more in this Speech, than you are willing to acknowledge; 'Tis the same, I take it for granted, that his Majesty made at the Head of his Army, between Stafford and Wellington, the 19th of September 1642. He then had these Expressions also; The time cannot be long before we come to Action—You shall meet with no Enemies, but TRAITORS, MOST OF THEM BROWNISTS, ANABAPTISTS, AND ATHEISTS. These were the Words of a King; I shall not therefore reflect further upon them, than to ask you, upon the Oath which you are to take, Whether you do in your Conscience believe, that the Great, the Good, the pious King, spoke Truth here? Whether he had not more Atheists and Papists in his Army, than the Parliament had Brownists and Anabaptists in theirs?

Page 12.

Your next effort is this; You fall upon the Consideration of the Steps his Majesty made towards Peace, and thus express yourself; Truly, I think; ACCORDING TO MY POOR JUDGEMENT, he now Acts according to what he always

niways pretended, and solemnly avowed; to wit, as a true Father of his Country; for he purposes, That HIS REVENUE, MAGAZINES, TOWNS, SHIPS AND FORTS may be restored to him, and all should be well.

Now I will readily agree, that there is here and there found a Doctor, nay a Chaplain too, of a poor Judgement; but one would think, that he that is conscious of his own Weakness and Incapacity, should not assume the Arrogance to judge in Matters of Right between Princes and their People And I will here tell you, what better Heads than you or I ever wore, said upon this Point; The Opinion of the Parliament was, That his Majesty's Towns were no more his own, than the The King's revenues Kingdom is his own; and his Kingdom is no more his own, than his People are his and prerogatives are own: And if the King had a Propriety in all his Towns, what would become of not for his own bethe Subjects Property in their Houses therein? And if he had a Propriety in his nest, but for the Kingdom, what would become of the Subjects Property in their Lands throughout good of the Kingdom. the Kingdom, or of their Liberties, if his Majesty had the same Right in their Persons, that every Subject hath in his Lands? This ERRONEOUS MAXIM being infused into Princes, THAT THEIR KINGDOMS ARE THEIR OWN: and that they may do with them what they will, (AS IF THEIR KINGDOMS were for them, and not THEY for their Kingdoms) is the Root of all the Subjects Misery, and of the invading of their just Rights and Liberties; whereas INDEED THEY ARE ONLY INTRUSTED with their Kingdoms, and with their Towns, and with their People, and with the Publick Treasures of the Common-Wealth, and whatsoever is bought therewith; and by the known Law of the Kingdom, the VFRY JEWELS OF THE CROWN are not the King's PROPER Goods, but are only intrusted unto him for the Use and Ornament thereof; as the Towns, Forts; Treasure, Magazines, Offices and the People of the Kingdom; and the whole Kingdom itself is entrusted unto him, for the Good, Safety, and best Advantage thereof. And AS THIS TRUST IS FOR THE USE OF THE KINGDOM, SO IT OUGHT TO BE MANAGED BY THE ADVICE OF THE HOUSES OF PARLIAMENT, whom the Kingdom hath trusted for that purpose, it being their Duty to see it be discharged, according to the condition and true intent thereof, and as much as in them lies, by all possible means to prevent the contrary.

Not to enquire what you, Sir, in your poor Judgement, do think of this high Principle, I will move with what speed I can, to a Conclusion: I told you, not long since, That the Lords and Commons voted the raising an Army to be commanded by the Earl of Essex; and at the same time humbly (but in vain) supplicated the King for Peace, and to return to his Parliament. When the General marched with his Forces towards the Army raised against the Parliament and Kingdom: He was instructed to fight at such Time and Place as he should judge most to conduce to the Peace and Safety of the Kingdom, but was also commanded to cause a Petition of both Houses to be presented to his Majesty; wherein they

thus expressed themselves.

we cannot, without great grief and tenderness of Compassion, behold the both Houses to the ' pressing King.

* pressing Miseries, the imminent Dangers, the devouring Calamities, which de extreamly threaten the Kingdams of England and Ireland, by the practice of a Party prevailing with your Majesty; who by many wicked Plots and Conspiracies, have attempted the alteration of the true Religion, and the Antient Government of this Kingdom, and the introducing of POPISH IDOLATRY AND SUPERSTITION in the CHURCH, and TYRANNY and CONFUSION in the STATE: And, for the compassing thereof, have long corrupted your Majesty's Counsels, abused your power, and, by sudden and untimely dissolving of the former Partiaments, have often hindred the Reformation and Prevention of those Mischiefs; and, being now disabled to avoid the Endeavours of this Parliament, by any such means, bave TRAITEROUSLY attempted to over-awe the same by Force: And, in Prosecution of their wicked Designs, bave EXCITED, ENCOURAGED, AND FOSTER'D an unnatural REBELLION in IRELAND; and have drawn your MAJESTY to make War against your Parliament, as if you intended, by CONQUEST, to establish an ABSOLUTE, ILLIMITED, POWER over them.

And by YOUR POWER, and the countenance of your Presence, they have SPOILED, IMPRISONED, MURDERED divers of your People. And, for their better
assistance in these wicked Designs, they do seek to bring-over the Rebels of Ireland to
join with them. WE HAVE, for the just and necessary Defence of the Protestant
Religion, of your Majesty's Person, of the Laws and Liberties of the Kingdom, and
the Priviledge and Power of Parliament; TAKEN-UP ARMS, and appointed
Robert, Earl of Essex, to be Captain-General of all the Forces by us raised; and
to head and conduct the same, against these REBELS and TRAITORS, and

them to subdue and bring to condign Punishment.

And we do most bumbly beseech your Majesty to withdraw your Royal Presence and Countenance from these wicked Persons; and THAT YOUR MAJESTY WILL NOT MIX YOUR OWN DANGER WITH THEIRS; but, in Peace and Safety, forthwith return to your Parliament, and by their faithful Counsel and Advice, compose the present Distempers and Confusions abounding in both your Kingdoms, and provide for the Security and bonour of your Royal Posterity, and the prosperous Estate of all your Subjects: And we do, in the presence of Almighty God, profess, That we will receive your Majesty with all Honour, yield you all due Obedience, and Subjection, and faithfully endeavour to secure your Person and Estate from all Danger; and, to the uttermost of our Power, to procure and establish to Tourself, and to your People, all the blessings of a glorious and happy Reign.'

You see, Sir, the LORDS AND COMMONS TALK'D LIKE CHRISTIANS; They were grieved at the Miseries of the Kingdoms; They detested the Romish Idolatry: When they sent their Army against the Enemies of the King and Kingdom, they supplicated his Majesty not to mix his Danger with theirs, but to return in Peace to his Parliament, and compose the Distempers of his Kingdoms, and provide for the Security and Honour of his Posterity: They, IN THE PRESENCE OF GOD, PROFESS, that they would receive him with all Honour, yield him all due Subjection, endeavour to secure him from Danger, and make his Reign Glorious and Happy; WHICH

WHICH WORDS CERTAINLY ARE NOT THE WORDS OF TRAI.

TORS. But all this would not do: for be resolved to answer their Petitions in The King proclaims Blood, and proclaimed the Earl of Essex, a Rebel. Yet, to blind the Eyes of the the Earl of Essex, a Multitude, and disguise his pernicious and cruel Intentions, under the semblance of Peace and Justice, he made (as you, Doctor, bave observed) divers solemn Protestations, with fearful Imprecations upon bimself and invocation of God's Holy Name, That be intended nothing but the Peace and Welfare of his People, the maintenance of Religion, and the Laws of the Kingdom; and for his own security only, to raise a Guard for his Person; and that he did from his Soul abbor the thought of making War against the Parliament, or to put the Kingdom into a Combustion: Nevertheless, his contrary Intentions were at that very instant manifested, by these ensuing Actions and Proceedings, before the Parliament voted the raising of their Army.

He put a Garrison of Souldiers into Newcastle.

The * Papists, in a peremptory manner, in the King's Name, demanded their Arms, taken from them according to the Laws, to be again restored to them.

He caused the Mouth of the River Tine to be fortified, whereby the whole Trade of Newcastle for Coals, was subject to be interrupted whensoever he should please.

A Ship laden with Cannon for Battery, Powder, and Ammunition, was brought for him into the River of Humber; which also brought several Commanders from Foreign Parts: Also divers other large Preparations of Warlike Provisions were made beyond the Sea, and shortly expected; besides, great Numbers of Gentlemen, Horses, and Arms, were drawn from all parts of the Kingdom; and all the Gentlemen of Yorkshire required to bring-in their Horses for the King's Service.

Commissions for raising Horse were granted, and divers Officers for his Army were

appointed.

Upon the 4th of July, the King rendezvouzed an Army of a considerable number of Horse and Foot at Beverly; amongst whom there were divers Papists, and other persons of desperate Fortune and Condition, ready to execute any Violence, Rapine, and Oppression.

He sent some Troops of Horse into Lincolnshire, to the great Terror of the People; They began to take-away Men's Horses by force, and to commit Acts of Hostility.

These are sad Truths, Reverend Doctor; and the King having thus, contrary to his solemn Protestation, begun the War; the Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament, held themselves bound in Conscience to raise Forces for the preservation of the Peace of the Kingdom, and Protection of the People in their Persons and Estates, according to Law; and for the Defence and Security of the Parliament: and accordingly, upon the 12th of July, 1642, and not before, (as I have already told you) they voted the raising an Army for these purposes.

Now in regard, as I understand, you were, before your Dotage, a Presbyterian

Minister

Upon the 27th of September, 1642, he not only allowed, but required, the Papists of Lancashire to
provide Arms for themselves, their Servants and Tenants; and all, without doubt, for the Service of the
Church of Eugland.

Minister of Emas; I would gladly set your poor Judgement right in this great Point, of as well the Necessity as the Justice of the Parliament-War; and, in regard that I find you prejudiced against Dr. Seaman and Mr. Calamy, I will not offer their Opinion to you; but, pray, see what the learned and pious Mr. Daniel Rogers, of Wethersfield, Mr. Matthew Newcomen of Dedham, and above sixty eminent Ministers of so many several Towns in Essex, left under their hands, in relation to this Controversy between you and me.

A declaration of sixin Essex concerning

We (say they) sall the God of Heaven and Earth to witness upon our Souls, ty eminent ministers that it was not hatred to any Party or Person, much less to the Person of OUR the cause of the civil 'KING, that first drew us to engage with, and for, the PARLIAMENT; but clearly this.—Some Years before the assembling of this Parliament, we evidently e saw the Affairs of Church and State in imminent and apparent hazard; many and great Alterations made in Doctrine, Innovations in Worship, the Power of God-· liness disgrac'd, true Religion undermined; the faithful and conscientious Professors of it pensecuted, even to Bonds, Flight, and Imprisonment:—POPERY CONNIVED-AT, COUNTENANCED; COURTED:—besides many grievous Oppressions of the Subjects in their Liberties and Properties. These things we e saw and sighed for, but had no thoughts of inviting any to make Resistance, (tho' e against the abused Name and Power of a misguided King, whom we much pitied in ! his Missarriages) until it pleased God to bless us with A PARLIAMENT .—THE. •ORDINARY MEANS WHICH HE HATH APPOINTED IN THIS NATION FOR THE REDRESSING OF SUCH GROWING EVILS.

See the Remonstrance of the State of the Kingdom. December 15, 1641.

'The Parliament meet, declare their Apprehensions of the Danger of CHURCH AND STATE, apply themselves to all humble and submiss ways, by PETL TIONS, REMONSTRANCES, &c. speak nothing but honourably of the • King; lay the Blame of all Miscarriages upon Evil Counsellors; require them to Tryal. But God, for our Sins and his, shuts-up his Majesty's Heart against these Addresses; Instead of yielding-up those whom the Parliament demands, he demands some of their Members, and seconds his Demand with a Face of Kiolence. And HERE BEGAN THAT MOST UNHAPPY BRLACH: the Parliament, upon this, desire a Guard; the King apprehended, OR PRETENDED, 'Terror; he leaves his Parliament upon it, and, UNDER SHADOW OF A 'GUARD for his Person, RAISETH AN ARMY, sets-up his STANDARD, • &c. The Story is too long and sad for us to relate; but hence arose that Fire, which since hath burnt almost to the very Foundation; And who knows when it * will be quenched?

'The Parliament, seeing which way the Counsels of the King steered, apprehend ^ca necessity of rassing Arms FOR THE DEFENCE OF THEMSELVES ' AND THE KINGDOM.—When the War was first commenced, their Army carried a Petition in the one hand, as well as a Sword in the other, in which the * Lords and Commons do, IN THE PRESENCE OF ALMIGHTY GOD. profess

* profess, That if his Majesty will forthwith return to his Parliament, &c, they will receive him with all Honour, yield him all due Subjection and Obedience; and faith-' fuily endeavour to secure bis Person and Estate from all Danger, and do the utmost of their Power, to procure and establish to himself and his People all the Blessings of a glerious and bappy Reign. WE DID THEN VERILY BELIEVE, AND 'YET DO, that these were the sincere and cordial Intentions of the Lords and Commons; and, although the King was so unhappy as to reject that Petition, yet they e persisted still in the same Loyalty of Intentions and Affections towards him, as appears in their many Messages to himself, and Declarations to the Kingdom.

' Upon these Grounds we engaged in this CAUSE, being called to it by a lawful ' Authority; The TWO HOUSES OF PARLIAMENT BEING THE OR- DINANCE OF GOD UNTO THIS NATION, FOR THE PREVENTING $m{\cdot}$ OF TYRANNY, AND THE REGULATING OF THE EXORBITAN- CIES OF REGAL POWER, and being convinced in our Judgements, both of the Equity and Necessity of THE PARLIAMENT'S DEFENSIVE ARMS, &c.

"WE APPEAL TO GOD, the Searcher of all Hearts, to whom we must give can Account of all our Ways, THAT THESE WERB THE GROUNDS OF

· OUR FIRST ENGAGEMENT.

Now, Sir, to look-back to your Defence of the King; I find you frequently glorying in his Majesty's oft-repeated Gracious Messages, Offers, Proposals, and Condescensions, for Peace; and in relation to the Deportment of the Parliament, you thus express your poor Judgement. I cannot but perswade myself, they were resolved to continue the War, and engross all into their own hands, let what would become of the King: But yet, that they might pacify the Minds of a great Number of the Nation, who grouned under the Miseries of the War, and began to see too much of a private The Treaty of Un-Spirit under publick Pretences; they consent to a Treaty at Uxbridge. They did so; 1644-5. and you declare that two Heads were agreed to be there debated, viz.

1. Of Religion and Church-Government.

2. Of the Militia.

Now, in reading the History of that Treaty, I find, that a third great thing, was agreed to be also *debated*, viz. The business of Ireland. But, that being a Point

which you care not to touch, I must not allow you to hide it.

To discourse a little about this Treaty. Notwithstanding the King (for bis Credit's sake, and to satisfy his own Party, weary of War,) yielded to a Treaty; I cannot perswade myself, but . be was resolved to continue the War. And, if you appear not a man of resolved Prejudices, or else of profound and stupid Ignorance, I do half think that I may bring you over to my Opinion in this matter. For, to let you see what disposed him to hearken to this Treaty, take his own words in his Letter to the Queen in December, 1644. " I shall shew thee upon what Grounds I came to a Treaty, to the end thou may'st the better understand and APPROVE of my Ways; Then know, (as A CERTAIN TRUTH) that all, EVEN MY PARTY, are strongly impatient for Peace; which obliged me so much the more, (at all occasions) to show my

Digitized by Google

. (

real Intentions to Peace.—NO DANGER OF DEATH SHALL MAKE ME DO ANY THING UNWORTHY OF THY LOVE.

At the very instant of this Treaty, which was had in February, 1644, the King used all imaginable means to bring, not only FOREIGN FORCES, but the Irish CUT-THROATS, against the Parliament. To clear-up this Point, and also to evince how insincere he was in his pretended Intentions of Peace, I will briefly present to your view his under-band Transactions, as well with Foreign Princes, as those Rebels: and in the first place, I shall mind you of some Passages between Him and the Queen, in relation to this and other Treaties.

Instances of the King's Insincerity in carrying-on this treaty.

In a Letter to her of January 9, 1744. he writes thus. The Scots Commissioners have sent to me to send a Commission to their General Assembly; WHICHIAM RESOLVED NOT TO DO: But, to the end of making some use of this occasion by sending an honest man to London, and that I may have the more time for the making A HANDSOME NEGATIVE, I have demanded a Passport for Phil. Warwick, by whom to return my Answer.

At another time in the same Month he tells her, that, as for my calling those at London * A PARLIAMENT, IF THERE HAD BEEN BUT TWO OF MY OPINION, I had not done it: THE CALLING DID NO WAYS ACKNOW-LEDGE THEM TO BE A PARLIAMENT; upon which Condition and Con-

struction I did it, and accordingly it is registered in the Council-Books.

Nothing is more evident than that the King was steered by the Queen's Counsel in the Management of this Uxbridg-Treaty, and that which you call the Church of England [THE BISHOPS] was greatly her Care. By Letter in January 1644, before the beginning of that Treaty, She instructs him not to abandon those who have served him, lest they forsake him in his need; that SHE hopes he will bave a care of her and her KELIGION: That in her Majesty's Opinion, RELIGION SHOULD BE THE LAST THING UPON WHICH HE SHOULD TREAT: for, if he do agree upon Strictness against the Catholicus, it would discourage them to serve him; and, if afterwards there should be no Peace, he could never expect Succours either FROM IRELAND, or any other CATHOLICK PRINCE.

In another of her Letters we find her writing thus, Jan. 17, 1644: It comforts me much to see the Treaty shall be at Uxbridge.—I RECEIVED YESTER-DAY LETTERS FROM THE DUKE OF LORRAIN, WHO SENDS ME WORD, IF HIS SERVICE BE AGREEABLE TO YOU, HE WILL BRING YOU 10,000 MEN—ABOVE ALL, have a care not to ABANDON those who have served you, AS WELL THE BISHOPS, AS THE POOR CATHOLICKS.

By the King's Letters to the Queen in February, when the Treaty at Uxbridge was depending, he styles the Parliament UNREASONABLE, STUBBORN, PERFIDIOUS REBELS; presses her to hasten all possible Assistance to him,

particularly

[•] He had agreed to treat with them as a Parliament; the Queen upbraided him for so doing; and he thus vindicates himself.

particularly that of the Duke of Lorrain. He tells her, that the limited days for treating are now almost expired, without the least Agreement upon any one Article; wherefore I sent for enlargement of Days, THAT THE WHOLE TREATY MAY BE LAID OPEN TO THE WORLD; and I ASSURE THEE THOU NEEDEST NOT DOUBT THE ISSUE OF THIS TREATY; for MY COMMISSIONERS ARE SO WELL CHOSEN, (tho' I say it) that they will neither be threatened, nor disputed, from the Grounds I have given them, which (upon my word) IS ACCORDING TO THE LITTLE NOTE. THOUSO WELL REMEMBEREST—Be confident that in making Peace I shall ever shew my CONSTANCY IN ADHERING TO BISHOPS AND ALL OUR FRIENDS, and not forget to put a short Period to this perpetual Parliament.

We find him in another Letter, dated the 5th of March, expressing himself in these words: I have thought of one means more to furnish thee with for my Assistance, than hitherto thou hast had; it is, that I GIVE THEE POWER TO PROMISE, IN MY NAME, THAT I will a take-away all the Penal Laws against the Roman-Catholicks in England, as soon as God shall enable me to do it.

Another Letter to her of the 20th of March, hath this Expression: I find that Thou much mistakest Me concerning Ireland; I DESIRE NOTHING MORE THAN A PEACE there, and never forbad thy Commerce there.

In relation to Ireland, he wrote to the Marquess of Ormond to this effect, Jan. 7.

THE REBELS HERE have agreed to TREAT: AND MOST ASSUREDLY ONE OF THE FIRST and chief ARTICLES they will insist-on will be, TO CONTINUE THE IRISH WAR; WHICH IS A POINT NOT POPULAR FOR ME TO BREAK ON: of which you are to make a double use: First, TO HASTEN WITH ALL POSSIBLE DILIGENCE THE PEACE THERE; the timely conclusion of which, will take-off that Inconvenience which otherwise I may be subject to, by the refusal of that Article, upon any other Reason. Secondly, By dexterous conveying to the Irish, the Danger there may be of their total and perpetual EXCLUSION FROM THOSE FAVOURS INTEND THEM, in case THE REBELS here clap-up a Peace with me.

NOT DOUBTING OF A PEACE, I must again remember you TO PRESS THE IRISH for their speedy Assistance to me here; and their Friends in Scotland.

—I DESIRE that THE IRISH would send as great a Body as they can, to land about Cumberland; WHICH WILL PUT THOSE NORTHERN COUNTIES IN A BRAVE CONDITION.

Digitized by Google

[•] If this were so good a King, Why so much Clamour against King James the Second for designing the same thing?

L 2

Upon

Upon the 14th of January he writes thus to the Queen: As for the Peace of Ireland, to show thee the Care I have had of it, and the Fruits I hope to receive from it, I have sent thee the last Dispatches I have sent concerning it.—FOR GOD'S SAKE LET NONE KNOW THE PARTICULARS OF MY DISPATCHES.

By another Letter, he commanded Ormand, To dispatch the Irish Peace out of band; and thereby promises 'that the PENAL LAWS against Roman-Gatholicks SHALL NOT BE PUT IN EXECUTION, the Peace being made; and that, when the Irish give him that Assistance which they have promised for the suppression of THIS REBELLION, then he would consent to the Repeal of them by a Law; and contludes, RECOMMENDING TO HIM AGAIN, THE SPEEDY DISPATCH OF THE PEACE OF IRELAND.

Another Letter to Ormond, upon the 27th of February, 1644, was, That HE THOUGHT HIMSELF BOUND IN CONSCIENCE not to lose that Assistance volich be might hope from his IRISH SUBJECTS, for such Scruples as in a less pressing condition might reasonably he stuck-at by him, and therefore commanded him to conclude a Peace with the Irish, WHATSOEVER IT COST; so that his Protestant Subjects there might be secured, and his Regal Authority preserved.—If the present taking-away of the Penal Laws against Papists will do it, (said he) I shall not think it à hard Bargain, so that freely and vigourously they engage themselves in my Assistance against MY REBELS of England and Scotland, FOR WHOM NO CONDITIONS CAN BE TOO HARD, not being against Conscience or Honour.

By another Letter "to' the Marquis of 'Ormond, in the same Month, he writes thus: Now again I cannot but mention the Necessity of bastening the Irish Peace; for which I hope you are already furnished by me with Materials sufficient. But in case (against all Expectations and Reason) PEACE CANNOT BE HAD UPON THOSE TERMS, YOU MUST NOT BY ANY MEANS FALLTO A NEW RUPTURE with them, but continue THE CESSATION.

He wrote to the Duke of Richmond, one of his Commissioners for the Uxbridge Treaty; TO REMEMBER TO CAJOLE WELL THE INDEPENDANTS, AND THE SCOTS: Nay, be instructed Secretary Nicholas to bribe the Commissioners for the Parliament, with the promise of Security, Rewards, and Places.

Well, now, upon the whole Matter, pray tell me ingenuously, good Doctor, whether did the King, or the Parliament, more sincerely aim at the desired Peace in this Trea y? I am clearly of opinion, that he frustrated the Hopes of a happy Composure at this time; for, whatever you alledge, had he used the same moderation here, and granted those things he offered to yield to afterwards, (as I may have occasion to shew you hereafter) the unbappy War had then been ended: But though he pretended to listen to Overtures of Peace, because his own Party were weary of the

Digitized by Google

There was at this time high Division in London, between the Presbyterians and Independents; therefore, to ruin both, by fomenting Misunderstandings between them, the Independents are to be explore: A thing worthy remembrance in all times.

War:

War; yet he was found to use 'Tricks of Legerdemain, and by this, and his other Treaties, aimed only at the getting same Advantage by secret Treatheries and underband Dealings.

I have told you, that one of the three main Heads to be treated upon, was Ireland; That was to be anticipated and forestall'd by a Peace at any Rate to be buddled-up with the Irish Rebels, e'er the Treaty could begin; that he might pretend his Word and Honour past, against the popular Arguments which the Parliament might urge upon him, for the continuance of that just War. The English, during the Treaty, were called perfidious Rebels, but the IRISH were called GOOD AND CATHOLICK SUBJECTS. He contrived bow to make bandsome Negatives. For fashion-sake be call at the Parliament a PARLIA MENT; yet, by a Jesuitical Slight; he-did not acknowledge them to be so, though be called themse. He pressed earnestly for Ten thousand Lorrainers, to be transported hither, and that a Body of the bloody Irish Rebels might be landed in Cumberland, delighting himself with the hope that they would put the Northern Counties into A BRAVE CON-DITION. For he well knew that they had destroyed above One buildred and forty thousand Protestants in their own Kingdom; and were therefore, without doubt, very fit Men to assist bim in the Maintaining THE CHURCH OF ENGLAND. Heboasted of his choice of Commissioners for the Treaty, and that they would stick close to the NOTE OF INSTRUCTIONS, which be and the Queen had concerted; and assured ber that HEWOULD EVER SHEW HIS CONSTANCY IN ADHER-ING TO BISHOPS AND PAPISTS. He impowered the Queen to treat with the Irish, and to give assurance, that be would take-away THE PENAL LAWS against Papists in England. In fine, Nothing is more evident, than that be used Treaties, pretending Peace, to no other End than to gain Advantages that might enable bim to carry-on a War. And, methinks, it should not offend you to hear what Opinion, not only a Minister, but a Martyr for Monarchy, had of this King. The famous The opinion of King Mr. Christopher Love, who lost his bead upon Tower-hill, (which I am confident Charles's character, you will never do for any Cause, though you live near it) preaching before the Par- entertained by the liament-Commissioners at this Uxbridge Treaty, expressed himself thus: It would search pious minister, Mr. Christopher Love. to the quick to find-out WHETHER KING JAMES AND PRINCE HENRY, HISSON, CAME TO A TIMELY DEATH, YEA OR NO; Some Parliaments have been but short-liv'd, when there was but a muttering, that enquiry should be made of their Deaths. It would search to the quick, to know, WHETHER ROCHELLE and all THE PROTESTANTS in it, were not betrayed sinto the bands of their Enemies; AND BY WHOM. It would go to the quick to find-out WHETHER THE IRISHREBELLION was not plotted, promoted, countenanced, and contrived. in England; AND BY WIIOM.

Now, I hope, Reverend Sir, that you will not have the face to deny, but Mr. Love was a Conscientious and Pious Divine; and I will finish this Head in telling you, (though a little out of course) that the Earls of Northumberland, Pambroke, Salisbury, and Denbigh, with the Lord Wainman, Sir Henry Vane, Mr. Pierrepont, Mr. Holies, Mr. Prideaux, Mr. St. John, Mr. Whitlock, and Mr. Crew, (who were Commisscioners for the Parliament, in the Treaty we have been talking of,) were (as well as

N. B.

you

you boast the King's Commissioners to have been Men of Honour and Honesty, Men of Fortunes and Estates, Men of great Parts and Endowments, who understood the business they went about, and were very fond of bealing the Nation's Breaches, and putting things into such a posture as might settle the King upon his just Rights, and the People upon their ancient Priviledges.

The affair of the Scottish army retileaving the king in the hands of the Enset in its true light.

Well, Sir, for my own Comfort, if not for your's, I purpose to trouble myself (at ring to Scotland, and least at this present) with but one thing more in your Tract. You say, " That the Scots, notwithstanding all their Promises and Obligations, SELL THE KING TO glish Commissioners, THE ENGLISH PARLIAMENT." 'Tis a Divine Truth, "that Men are not only ignorant because they cannot, but because they will not, know the Truth:" And I cannot conceive that you believe what you here assert. Therefore, that my Country-men may be undeceived, and our Brethren of Scotland vindicated, I will set this Matter in its true Light: -The King had fled to the Scottish Army at Newcastle, then in the Parliament's Service and Pay; and there Propositions for Peace were made unto him, which he rejected. The war being happily ended, the Parliament were in arrear to the Scots, for their assistance in it, Four hundred thousand Pounds: It was agreed, that half that Sum should be presently paid; upon receipt whereof, the Scots were to deliver-up (not the King, but) the towns of Berwick, Newcastle, and Carlisle, to the Parliament. 'Tis far from Truth, that this was the Price of the King. For the Parliament freely granted to the Scots; that they might carry him (if they pleased) to Edinburgh; But they refused it, affirming, that by his Presence, in an unsettled Nation, new Commotions might arise. They rather desired (which was also the King's desire) that he might be carried into the Southern parts of England, and live in some of his Palaces near London, which they thought more convenient for treating of a Peace: So that in all the whole Debate, they seemed to contend, not who should have the King, but who should not have him. Nevertheless, to cast a slander upon both Nations, (for, certainly, 'tis as wicked a thing to buy, as to sell, such Merchandize,) You, Sir, will have it, that the Scots sold him, and the English bought him. But WILFULNESS EVER WAS THE GREATEST BLINDNESS.

> Reverond Sir, I shall for the present discharge you and myself from further trouble. You think, I suppose, that you make me a very merciful Offer, That, if I will repent, and do so no more, I may hope to live in Peace, and you will not further lash me with any more such Scourges, as I have been but now tortured with; but, if I shall persist, and appear incorrigible, you have more Rods in Piss, and will pay me off. You have much more to say in the behalf of King Charles the First, ['tis well if you have; for I am sure, 'tis very little that you have hitherto said] and you assure me I shall have it; and resolve, That, as long as you can hold a Pen in your Hand, you will not drop his Cause. There's no Remedy then, but I must abide your Fury: For I resolve never to ask Forgiveness and promise to do so no more: But, on the contrary, to write-on, as I have leisure, and you give me occasion, in the defence of the Laws and Liberties of my Country. Upon which Subject I have much more to say, and, if you will not be quiet, you shall have it; I love the Cause

> > Digitized by Google

N. B.

Cause too well to drop it, and will wear my Steel Pen to the stumps, in its cefence. And,

Now, seeing we are eternally to differ in this Point, I desire to settle two things

with you, for the more orderly Prosecution of this dreadful War.

1. That we (as Duellists agree upon the length of their Weapons) may resolve how often to trouble the World with our Impertinences. I think once, or, if you will have it so, twice (because there are TWO MADDING-DAYS) in a Year, may suffice.

2. That, after you have fairly answer'd this and my former Letter, by falsifying (which, as a Preliminary, I shall expect from you) the many particular Instances I have brought to shew that your admired Prince was a Tyrant, or else by proving that they are not Acts, or Evidences, of Tyramy, you would then (in the further Prosecution of that Defence which you have undertaken, accompanied with in design of Griminating at the same time one of the greatest and best-deserving Rarliaments that ever England saw) lay-aside your loose and general way of discoursing, and come to Particulars. When you shall so proceed, and I shall have failed to give you a clear, Answer to every thing you shall have advanced, then, and not till then, the day will be your own. For, tho' (throughout your whole Discourse, which I have been examining,) you Rebellize the Lords and Commons, and fly in the Pare of the Parks. ament, with the King's gracious MESSAGES, SAYINGS, &c;. Others may, upon better grounds, sum-up the humble, condescending, convincing PETITIONS, MESSAGES, DECLARATIONS, &c. of the Parliament, and dash themsall into your Face, than you can those Meseages and Sayings of the King into the Faces of all who declare that he was a proud Nimrod, a hardened Pharach; in plain English, A MERCILESS TYR T.

Lastly; To encourage you to further Conversation with me, tho' some Men are so impudent as to say that it is not Day when the Sun itself doth shine, you shall see that I am not resolved against Conviction, but that, being under the Command of good Manners, I rest not satisfied in the Confession which I made in the beginning An acknowledgment of this Letter, of an Error committed in my former Letter in relation to the Nable former Letter relating Lord Conway, (sometime Secnetary of State to King: Charles the First) but shall to Lord Conway.

more fully do it in this place.

Being misguided by the Printer's Missues in Rusbevarth's first Collections, from whence I took it, I was led to say, in my last Year's Letter, page 7, That the Lord Conway said in Partiament that he never bated Papery; whereas, his words were, that he ever vated it: and I have now certain ground to say, that those words were not only consonant to his Speech then made in Partiament, but agreeable to the con-Some particulars of stant Tenour of his whole Life, even unto the last Period. His Father and Mohis life and character. ther lived and died pious Protestants; such was his Religious Lady, and such are his Grand Children at this day.

This Lard Conway was Knighted at the taking of Cadiz, in Spain, in the time of Queen Elizabeib; he was afterwards, for many Years, Governor of the Brill in Holland, where he and his Family lived as became zealous Protestants, and were greatly beloved and esteemed by the Protestant Magistrates and Ministers of that Town.

He

He was greatly favoured by the never-to-be-forgotten MOST PIOUS PRINCE HENRY.

When the Brill and other Cautionary Towns were delivered to the Dutch; upon his return into England, he was employed to Jersey, to compose some Differences there; which he performed to so much Satisfaction, that the good Protestants of that

Place always mentioned him with Honour,

He was then sent Ambassador to Germany, in behalf of the King-and Queen of Bobemia, and was very acceptable to those UNHAPPILY-DESERTED Protestant Princes. Upon his return to England the Spanish Match was warmly pressed; against which he spake with so much Reason and Courage, that the Duke of Buckingham (who, for particular ends, resolved to ruin that Project) introduced him as a proper Instrument for that purpose to be Principal Secretary of State.

- In that Station he refused many Gifts tendered to him by particular Persons, and

10,000! Sterling offer'd and pressed upon him by the Spanish Ambassador.

In the beginning of King Charles I. Reign, at the opening of one of those Parhiaments, and according to the Custom then, the Holy Communion being to be received by both Houses of Parliament, by the Contrivance of same LAUDEANS, the SACRAMENT was offered to the Lords, in Henry the Seventh's Chapel, NOT IN BREAD, BUT IN WAFERS. This Lord Conway was one of the Lords who refused the Wafers, and caused them to be taken-away, and Bread to be brought.

* Not long after King Gharles 1. sent for the Seals of the Secretary's Office from bim; which (as the Lord employed in that Message would often say) the Lord Common delivered with an admirable Generosity, becoming indeed one that, in that Ministry of State, had served the Publick with extraordinary Ability and Integrity, had performed many noble Offices to particular Persons, without Injury to any, and left that Place and some others of great Profit, without one Farthing advantage to the State of his Family.

When he was upon his Death-Bed; a Lady of great Wit, who was turned Papist, and was the Widow of a near Relation of his Lordship, very subtilly and earnestly pressed upon him concerning his Religion; whereupon he strengthened himself, and made full profession of his firm Steadfastness in the Reformed Protestant Religion, caused the Servants to convey this Lady out of his House, and commanded

them not to suffer any of that Religion to come to him.

And now, Doctor, I assure you at parting, That, as fast as you convince me of any Error, or Mistake, committed in my Scribblings about your Martyn, I shall as openly and frankly retract it, as I have now done this, which relates to my Lord Conway. Might I be made so happy as to find a suitable return from you, and that you would give a free and impartial Liberty to the use of your own Reason, I would yet hope, that we might mutually conclude, as I now do,

Your Friend in and for Truth,

Amsterdam, Jan. 30, 1690.

EDMUND LUDLOW.

* He that would not make the necessary Advances to Rome, was to be neither Secretary, nor Minuter of State to King Charles I.

A Table of some remarkable Things in this Book.

Page	1	Per
KING CHARLES I. favouring Popery,	That War called Bellum Episcopale	- 3
and dispensing with the Laws, &c 3	The Scots raise an Army.	- 3
His Bishops cherished Popery, and dis-"	A Pacification concluded; the King soo	D.
countenanced conformable Orthodox	after burns it by the Hangman's hands.	. 3
Ministers 3	Scottish Commissioners sent to the King	
Montague, one of his Chaplains, who endca-	imprisoned.	- 3
voured to reconcile England to Rome,	A Parliament called in April, 1640, and	di '
made a Bishop 6	soon after dissolved.	- 40
The King's lending Ships to the French to		40
destroy the Protestants of Rochelle 7	Clergy and Papists contribute to a second	ì
Ship-Money, Loan, Coat, and Conduct-	War against Scotland	-' 40
Money required, and the Refusers im-	Sir Nicholas Rainton, Sir Stephen Soame	,
prisoned and impress'd to serve at Sea. 8	and other eminent Citizens, imprisoned	ŧ
Archbishop Abbot suspended and confined,		- 40
Bishop Williams disgraced and impri-	The Scots possess themselves of Newcastle	3 .
soued '- 11		41
Sir Randolph Crew, Lord Chief Justice,	The Lords at York petition for a Parlin-	
displac'd 11		41
Tonuage and Poundage levied against Law. 13		41
Earl of Bristol confined 14		43
Earl of Arundel imprisoned 14	Star-Chamber and High Commission-	
Duke of Buckingham protected against the	Courts suppress'd by Act of Parliament	
Parliament 15 Members of Parliament imprison'd 15	Poll-Money granted. Dr. Leighton's Censure in the Star-Cham-	43
Sir John Elliot's Death in the Tower 16	ber	44
The King's threatning Speeches in Parlia-	Mr. Pryn's, Dr. Bastwick's, and Mr. Bur-	**
ment 16	ton's Censures and horrid Oppressions	
His Speech at the Meeting of the Parlia-		46
ment, Nov. 1640 36	Those Sentences declared illegal in Parlia-	-
Bishops obtruded upon Scotland against	· · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·	48
their Laws 36	G11 5 G 111 1	48
Laud framed a Book of Common-Prayer	Lord Keeper Finch is impeached of High-	
for Scotland, and sent it to be approved	Treason about Ship-Money, and flies	49
by the Pope 37	The many Exorbitances and Oppressions of	
The Scots protest against it 37	the Bishops	49
King James I. took the Scottish Covenant	Twelve of them impeach'd of Treason, and	_
in the Year 1580 38		49
The Scots renewed that Covenant in the	The Earl of Strafford impeach'd and at-	
Year 1638 38		49
The Scots require to have the Liturgy abo-	Bills for I riennial Parliaments, and for con-	
lished, and to have a National Synod 38	tinning the present Parliament, passed.	51
A Synod called, and soon after dissolved by	Conspiracy to bring the Army against the	
the King; the Scots protest against the		51
Dissolution, and continue the Synod 38	The King had a Million and a half of	
The King resolves upon a War against	Money in the first Year of the Parliament	K.A
Scotland 38		54
	. 5	i he

r	rke
The Grand Remonstrance of the State of the	
Kingdom, Dec. 1641	54
	55
An Account of the occasion of those Tu-	
<u> </u>	55
The King accuses the Lord Mandeville and	
five Members of the House of Commons.	
	55
He goes to the House of Commons with an	
armed Force, and demands the five	
	55
	56
The Case of the five Members discussed.	-
	50
The Parliament petitions him at Theobald's	
	50
They send a Declaration to him at New-	-
market, praying his return, and the put-	
ting the Militia into safe hands.	60
His Answer about the Militia.	6 2 .
His sending to the King of Denmark for	•
Aid against the Parliament	63
tra aparest the same and	68
are minited the dense all mines and and are	63
the Aucen Only 121 mo in Thomas	ψ.
Names of the Peers recommended by the	
Parliament to be entrusted with the Mi-	60
	63
The Lords and Commons petition about	60
	63
THEM CHARACTER IN CHARLES	6 3
The Proceedings of the Parliament with	c.
	64
The Lords and Commons petition the King	•-
at York to return.	65

	-51
The King summous the Gentry to York,	
and requires them to raise him a Guard	65
They petition him to return to the Parlia-	
	65
Petition of many thousand Freeholders of	
Yorkshire	
•	65
The King requires the Gentlemen, &c. of	
Yorkshire to attend him in Arms.	Ćΰ
The Lords and Commons vote, that the	
King intends to raise War, and that it is	
a Breach of his Trust, and that such as	
assist him in that War are Traitors	66
They vote the raising an Army, to be com-	
manded by the Earl of Essex	67
Their Petition to the King to return	67
The King's Speech at the head of his Army.	Ú8
The Petition of the Parliament sent by the	
Earl of Essex.	65
The Preparations made by the King for	•
War.	71
The Opinion of above sixty Essex Ministers	
of the Parliament-War.	75
	73
Heads of Letters between the King, Queen,	1.3
and Manages of Owners about the	,
and Marquess of Ormond, about the	;
Uxbridge-Treaty, and for procuring a	ļ.
Peace with the Irish Rebels, to bring	
them against the Parliament	74
The vulgar Error of the Scots selling the	
King refuted.	. 78
▲ Vindication of the Lord Conway	75
` '	

LUDLOW NO LYAR,

OR A DETECTION OF

DR. HOLLINGWORTH'S DISINGENUITY

4N HIS

Decond Defence

OF

KING CHARLES I.

AND A FURTHER

VINDICATION OF THE PARLIAMENT

OF

The 3d of November, 1640;

With Exact Copies of the Pope's Letter to King Charles I. and of his Answer to the Pope.

IN A

LETTER FROM GEN. LUDLOW TO DR. HOLLINGWORTH.

TOGETHER -

With a Reply to the false and malicious Assertions in the Doctor's lewd Pamphlet, Entituled, "His Defence of the King's Holy and Divine Book, against the rude and undutiful Assaults of the late Dr. Walker, of Essex.

AMSTERDAM, PRINTED 1692.

TO MR. LUKE MILBOURN

MINISTER OF GREAT YARMOUTH, AND ASSISTANT TO DR. HOLLINGWORTH, IN HIS MIGHTY UNDERTAKINGS.

SIR.

I Must Confess, that, when the Act of Parliament Injoyned the Clergy to take an Oath of Fidelity to our unquestionably Lawful Sovereigns, their Sacred Majesties, King WILLIAM and Queen MARY; myself and your other Fellow-bowlers upon Yarmouth-Green, were under a Jealousie, that you would, by refusal of that Oath, have spoiled the old Proverb, and parted the honest Man from the good Bowler. But, seeing that the Biass of your Interest, wrought your Conscience to Compliance in that point, it hath been an amazement to your Friends, that (you having left us near a Year since, with promise to come-back within a very few weeks,) any such Rub could come in your way, as to stop your return to us; and that we never received any Letter from you, nor knew how to direct to you, till now; that yours (which I received this day Se'nnight,) tells us, that you have constantly lodged at Dr. Hollingworth's, and had been engaged with him in a business of a Close and Comfortable Importance, of which we should be farther informed by the return of our next Carrier. Now we all remembered that Comfortable Importance, according to your Admired Dr. Sam. Parker's refined way of expressing it, meant a Mistress: but, when we do daily see here, your vertuous and well-deserving Wife and hopeful Children, we were utterly at a loss how to understand you, till the Carrier brought us, this last Tuesday, the Two Books, Entituled, Dr. Hollingworth's Defence of King Charles the First against Ludlow, and of his Holy and Divine Book against Dr. Walker's rude and undutiful Assaults; to the Compiling whereof, you say you had not a little Contributed.

In truth (Sir,) till now, at some times I suspected that you had repented, (as other frail Clergymen have done before you) of the only good deed you ever did,—I mean your having Sworn to their Majesties,—and had unsworn your Oath, and were Caballing with your endear'd Friends, the Jacobites; At other times it ran in my head, that you and the Dr. having been long in most inward Conversation with them, you had redintegrated yourselves, and insinuated into those your old Associates, the present Plotters:—with purpose to search-out, and discover their horrid design against the invaluable Lives of their Majesties, against our Church and Nation. But, your Books have put me out of doubt in the Point; and, as you requested, I have given them a reading, and should have now presented you with some Transient Remarks upon them

them both, if, to my great Content I had not found that Ludlow, by a Letter to the Dr. (a Copy whereof was sent to a Friend here) hath, in great part, prevented me. However, I shall make some general Observations upon both these famous Tracts, and then speak more particularly to that which rudely traduces the Memory of

the most pious Dr. Walker,

The Arrogance which runs through both these Books is insupportable; the Author boasting proudly of himself, and vilifying and censuring others to such a degree, that nothing is more like it than the conduct of Mountebanks, who, after a deal of Scaffold-Pageantry to draw an Audience, entertain them by decrying all other medicines, with a Panegyrick on their own Balsam: All his Arguing is frivolous and trivial; and, though he knows, or should know, that the Rhetorick of Barking never moved any man, he writes as though he had ingross'd all the Ammunition of Railing to himself; he appears as serious as a mad-man, and answers demonstration with the Lye. It is, surely, the highest Indecorum for a Divine to write in such a style as this; and methinks, if our Author had the least spark of vertue unextinguished, he should, upon considering these things, retire to his Closet, and there lament and pine-away for his desperate folly, and for the eternal shame to which he has hereby condemned his own Memory. His Friends should give him good Counsel before his understanding be quite unsettled; or, if there be none near, the Neighbours should be called in, and a Parson sent-for, to perswade him in time, and not let it run on thus, till he is fit for no place but Bedlam. Nothing will serve him but he must be a Mad-man in Print, and write in defence of a King, and that at such a rate, that, if the King were alive, he would be out of love with himself; he hath, (like those frightful Looking-Glasses that are made for sport,) represented his Idolized Saint in such bloated Lineaments, that, I am confident, if he could see his face in it, he would break the Glass. But, to pretermit his defence against Ludlow, I descend to make a few Animadversions upon his Treatise against Dr. Walker, wherein I discern, all along, the footsteps of a most inveterate and implacable Malice. However, I am obliged to handle it with the more tenderness, in respect to the venerable Licence the Title-page shews in these words, Imprimatur Carol. Alston, R. P. D. Hen. Epis. Lond. à Sacris *.

In the discharge of my Undertaking, I shall, in the first place, take leave to recount the heads of some of those proofs, offer'd by Dr. Walker, to demonstrate that Dr. Gauden, and not King Charles, was the Author of the Idolized Book; call-

ed Eicon Basiliké.

'This good Man, in his Introduction, saith, that Dr. Hollingworth did put him upon that unwelcome labour, by falsely accusing him of telling a false story, with-

for thinking that Dr. out consulting him, by word or letter, before he did it; and that he was constrained by unavoidable necessity (unless the Doctor expected that, as a Felo de se, he should, by silence, give consent to his unjust Calumnies) to vindicate himself: And ' he declares his resolution to keep that modest temper, which becomes one who King Charles the 1st. designs no personal Quarrel, nor writes for Victory, but for Truth: The search and "discovery of which needs no Tricks, no little Arts, no big Words; but is best attained by sedate proceedings, and plain and open dealing. And be solemnly Ap-

epeals .



Dr. Walker's Account of his Reasons Gauden was the Author of the famous Book called Eikon Basilikee, which is enerally ascribed to

Reverendo Patri in Dea, Henrico, Episcopo Londinensi, à Sacris.

' peals to the Searcher of Hearts, the Avenger of Falsehood, and Revealer of Secrets, ' that he will write nothing, of the Truth of which he is not thoroughly persuaded.

finished, acquainted him with his design, and shewed him the heads of diverse Chapters, and some of the discourses written of them, and asked his Opinion concerning it; who told him, he supposed it would be much for the King's Reputation, Honour, and Safety; but added, he stuck at the lawfulness of it, and asked him how he satisfyed himself so to impose upon the World? To which Dr. Gauden so readily replyed, that he concluded he had thought of it before; look on the Title, 'tis the Portraiture, &c. and no man draws his own Picture.

'2. That, some good time after, Dr. Walker being with Dr. Gauden in London, he went with him to Dr. Duppa, Bishop of Salisbury, and, in the way thither. Dr. Gauden told him, that he was going to the Bishop (whom he had acquainted with his design) to fetch what he had left with him to be perused; or to shew him what he had farther written; that the Bishop had some private Discourse with Dr. Gauden, who, in their return, told Dr. Walker, that the Bishop said there were two Subjects more, which he wished he had thought-on, and propounded them to him, viz. The Ordmance against the Common Prayer-Book, and the denying his Majesty the Attendance of his Chaplains; (which are now the 16th and 24th Chapters in the Printed Book) and desired Dr. Gauden to write two Chapters ' upon them, which he said he promised he would do; but, before they parted, the Bishop recalled that request, and said, "pray go you on, to finish what remains, and leave these two subjects to me; I will prepare two Chapters upon them: which he accordingly did; as Dr. Gauden owned to Dr. Walker, and others whom he had made privy to the whole, and never pretended to have written these, as he ' did to have done all the rest.

'3, That Dr. Gauden, some time after the King, was Murdered, upon Dr. Walker's asking him, whether the King had ever seen the Book, answered, that he did not certainly know; but he had used his best endeavours that he might; for he delivered a Copy of it to the Marquess of Hertford, when he went to the Treaty at the Isle of Wight, and entreated him to deliver it to his Majesty, and humbly desire to know his pleasure concerning it; But the Violence which threatened the King hastening on so fast, he ventured to Print it, and never knew what was the Issue of sending it; for, when the thing was done, he judged it not prudent to make further noise about it by enquiry.

'4. That Dr. Walker asked Dr. Gauden, whether King Charles the Second knew that he wrote it; he answered, I cannot positively and certainly say he doth, because he was never pleased to take express notice of it to me. But I take it for granted he doth; for I am sure the Duke of York doth; for he hath spoken of it to me, and owned it as a seasonable and acceptable Service; and, he knowing it, I question not but the King also doth.

5. That Dr. Gauden's Wife, some others, and Dr. Walker, believed it as much as they could believe any thing; and, when they spake of it in his presence, or in

Digitized by Google

* his absence, did it without the least doubt of his having writ it; being as much assured of it, as 'twas possible they could be of any matter of Fact; And there is on shadow of Appearance, why he should put so gross a cheat upon them all; for 'twas before it was finished, and a good while before 'twas Printed, they so believed; and therefore he had not the Temptation to steal the Applause it met with when made publick.

6. That Dr. Gauden delivered to Dr. Walker, with his own hand, what was * last sent-up, (after Part was Printed, or at least in Mr. Royston's hands to be Printed) and, after he had shew'd it him, and Seal'd it up, gave him strict Caution with what Wariness to carry and deliver it: and, according to his direction, he delie vered it: Saturday 23d of December, 1648, in the Evening, to one Peacock, who was instructed by what hands he should transmit it to Mr. Royston, and in the is same method a few days after, the Impression was finished, and Dr. Walker * received six Books, by the hand of Peacock, as an acknowledgment of the little he had Contributed to that Service; one of which he affirmed he had still by him, 'at the time of his writing this Account.

To these reasons Dr. Walker adds (page 7) that 'he meets with expressions in the devotional part, very frequently used by Dr. Gauden in his Prayers (for he used Conceived Prayer both in his Family and in Publick) which he never heard

from any other man.

Now, Sir, you are not to take these things, which I have transcrib'd, to be the Sum total of what Dr. Walker offers in order to evince, that Dr. Gauden was the Author of the Book we are talking of; he lays-down many other Arguments of mighty weight in the point; to which I must refer you, and shall only conclude his modest Account of this matter, in these words: 'These are the Reasons why I believe, as I do, the 'Affirmative part of the Question, that Dr. Gauden was the Author; and, as I be-' lieve, so I have also spoken. And, if any Man can produce stronger Reasons for "the Negative part, I do not say only that I will, but that I must, believe that contrary part: for no Man who Considers, can believe as he lists; but the weightiest "Arguments will turn the Scale.

And, if any Man will be so Charitable as to endeavour to reclaim me from an Error, which he supposes I am in; I even beseech him to write nothing, for the * Truth of which he does not make the like Appeals to God which I have done. For, if he attempts it by Raillery or Railing, by feeble Conjectures, or Stories inconsistent with themselves, or contradicting one another, he may with more discretion spare his pains. For, as no wise man will be influenced farther by such Tools, than to pity those who use them, or make themselves merry, so I confess I am so tired with examining such Ware, and so cloyed with such Quelk-chose, I shall have no stomach to such Fare, or think myself concern'd to take any Notice of it.

I come now, Sir, to consider Dr. Hollingworth's Answer to Dr. Walker, and Dr. Hollingworth's I come now, Sir, to consider Dr. Hollingworth's Allswer to Dr. Wal-before I enter upon his Arguments, I desire you to smell to a Nose-gay of Flowers, which I have gather'd out of the Garden of Their Majesties Chaplain at Ald-gate. · His Title-page terms the Reverend Dr. Walker's Assertions, Rude and undutiful Assaults.

Digitized by GOOGLE

Assaults. 'He Affirms in his Preface, That in his Answer to Dr. Walker's Book, he has omitted many Inconsistencies therein, because he resolved to dwell on matter of Fact; and has forborn returning those Scurrilities and Scorns he had loaded ' him withal, upon himself; because he was dead, (p. 3, of his Pamphlet.) The Aldgate Doctor saith, that if God, the Avenger of the injured and oppressed, had 'not called the Essex Doctor to an Account before his Book was published, he should have been so bold as to have given, and that by undeniable Proofs, such Instances of the Man, as would have invalidated his whole Testimony, and made him, and his Book too, a Scorn to the World; but being dead, he will as much as he ought in this Case, forbear him. (p. 4) He doubts, nay scorns to believe, that Dr. Gauden made the Book called the King's, and told Dr. Walker so; and the more, because he Asserts it; who, was he not dead, the Chaplain would give Reasons sufficient to satisfy any Man why he doth not believe it, upon his Authority. —Dr. Walker's Book, saith he, is an unseasonable, false, and undutiful Book, 'which gratifies none but the great Enemies of Monarchy and Episcopacy.—'Tis a a Forgery, and, to Dr. Hollingworth's knowledge, has Amazed and Grieved a great part of the Subjects of the Kingdom;—The Sum total of the thing is, to serve the Lusts of a party of Men against Monarchy and Episcopacy. — That Good, that pious Man, Dr. Walker, does Assert, that Dr. Gauden said he Composed the Book; and his words weigh more with us, say the Common-wealth's men, than a Thousand Witnesses to the Contrary.—The Essex Doctor is a bold man, an audacious Slanderer, - True Church of England-men scorn to carry-on their designs by Lies and Forgeries, by Tricks and Devices. —I was personally Acquainted with Dr. Walker, and know he was an Encourager of, and Comrade with, those who had no kindness for the Church at all,—Well done, Dr. Walker, if thou hadst a man alone with thee, undoubtedly he was always on thy side, and thou wert always in the right, and, when the Man was dead, wouldest assume the Confidence to Print it.—The Common-wealth men say, it looks very hard upon the Memory of such a Man as famous as Dr. Walker, to give him the Lye.—The Essex Doctor's talk is vain and rash, false and undutiful—His Book is vain, shuffling, proud, and inconsistent, — I hope I have made good what I Asserted, and prov'd Dr. Walker's Say-soes to be but meer Fictions of his own.——I wish he had resisted Temptations to Revenge, and Vain-glory: Revenge against a Church to which he was never true, for he was an Enemy within our Gates; and then I am sure the world would not have been pester'd with a Book, stuft with so many notorious falshoods.

Thus, Sir, hath your Host at Aldgate, (whose Mouth wants scowing) unloaded his Lay-stall; and how justly these vile Calumnies might be retorted upon him who utters them, let the world judge. But I shall not rake further in this Dunghill; 'tis most certain, that an ill Man cannot, by praising, confer Honour, nor by reproaching, fix an Ignominy. The late Dr. Walker had such a Stock of solid and deserving Reputation, that it is more than a wild, rambling, Slanderer can spoil, or deface, by all his Revilings; he was such a judicious, conscientious, learned, and

 $\mathsf{Digitized} \; \mathsf{by} \; Google$

sincere Protestant, so true a Son of the Church of England, that, had this hot-headed Turn-coat had any Modesty, he would have blush'd to reproach and load him with Contempt, Malice, and Obloquy: but vile and insolent Language costs him nothing, and therefore he has laid it on so prodigally.

I am now to look a little farther into the Aldgate Doctor's Defence of that which he will call the King's Book, against the Essex Doctor's Assaults, that I may shew

you how he hath left Matters standing between him and his Adversary.

He saith, (page 2) It was for his Holy and Divine Book, that that great King was so highly venerated, so deservedly applauded; and, indeed, upon the score of which the greatest part of his Actions were vindicated; and therefore this Book must be considered and weighed in a just and proper Ballance; (indeed so it ought).

Page 5, he tells us, and who may question it? that what Dr. Walker asserts of Dr. Gauden's writing the Book, is all Sham; and that, if he had dared to have told such a Falshood, he must have sat-down contented with his Living at Barking, without any Expectation from the Court; without either being Bishop of Exeter, or

living in hopes of the Bishoprick of Winchester.

Now, who will doubt Dr. Gauden's having possessed the fat Living of Barking? But 'tis all Sham, 'he was no more Incumbent there, than Dr. Hollingworth was in the See of Canterbury, in the Reign of Charles the First. How then should it hap-"pen that he talks of Barking? I was thinking that he pitch'd upon it, in regard of its near resemblance to Railing, which has sometimes proved a good Living to an Ecclesiastical Wrangler. But, upon second Thoughts, I consider, that the Town of Barking is but seven Miles from London, and contiguous to the small Vicarage of West-Ham, which the Aldgate Doctor once possessed; and learning there, that Barking was a plump Parsonage of four or five hundred Pounds a Year, his Ambition might lead him to set his Heart upon it; and his Brain being now cracked at the Disappointment, he talks of it at the rate, which we have seen a distracted Lover in Bedlam speaking of his hard-hearted Mistress. But it seems one Falshood would have dashed all Dr. Gauden's Hopes of Preferment; I say then, Alas, poor Dr. Hollingworth! you must sit down contented with your Chaplainship at Aldgate of 8 l. per Annum, without any expectation of Barking, (though it is in their Majesties Gift) or of any other Promotion from the Court; for before I have done, I shall demonstrate, that your whole Book is but one huge Lie, 27 Pages long.

Page 6, the Doctor repeats his old Story of a worthy Person, Sir John Brattle's informing him, 'That in the Year 1647, the King having drawn-up the most considerable part of this Book in loose Papers, desired Bishop Juxon, to get some

trusty Friend to look it over, and to put it into exact Method. And the Bishop pitched upon Sir John's Father; who undertaking the Task, was assisted by

this his Son, who sat-up some Nights with his Father to assist him in methodizing

these Papers, all writ with the King's own Hand.

You shall see what Dr. Walker said in this Point; "I make no Judgement (saith he, page 19.) prejudicial, or of disadvantage, to the Character here given

of Sir John Brattle; but with due respect to him, I would ask the Doctor a few Questions.

1. 'May it not be possible, without any diminution of Sir John's Veracity, that in more than 40 Years, there may be some mistake of other Papers for these, or some other lapse of Memory, about a Matter in which he was concerned but once or twice, and that but transiently, and on the bye? Or was Sir John, who must have been then a young Man, and, 'tis likely, but in a private Capacity, so well acquainted with the King's Hand, which 'tis probable he had seldom or never seen? I believe few Country Youths, or young Gentlemen, are so very well used to their Sovereign's Hand-writing, as to make a critical Judgement of it, and to be able with assurance to distinguish it from the Writing of all other Men.

'Further; supposing, but by no means granting, that the King desired Bishop • Juxon, as is said, to desire a trusty Friend to do it: Why another rather than ' the Bishop himself? Had the King any Friend more trusty than Bishop Juxon; Or was he too good, or above doing such Service for his Master, who had not a Servant who loved or honoured him more? Or was he too busy to attend it, when he was wholly out of all Employment, and enjoyed the most undisturbed. • Privacy and Quiet of any Man that had served the King in any eminent Degree? Or was Bishop Juson less fit and able than a private Man, when the Book consists of Policy and Piety? And who a fitter Judge of what concerned the first, than one who had so long been a Privy-Counsellor, and Lord-High-Treasurer of England? And for the second, he was one on whom the King relied, as much or more than on any Man, for the conduct of his Conscience, as appeared by his singling him out, to be with him in his preparations for Death. And why must Bishop Juxon desire another Man to do that Work, for which (had there been any such Work to be done) he was the fittest Man alive, for Fidelity, for Ability, for Inclination to his Master's Service, and for vacancy and leisure?

Let's see now what Answers their Majesties Chaplain at Aldgate makes to these plain Questions; for we find him vaunting, (page 22.) That he hath made-out Matter of Fact against Dr. Walker's Assertions, in his vain, shuffling, proud and inconsistent Book. Why, all that the Aldgate Doctor saith hereunto is, (page 9.) He (Dr. Walker) questions Sir John's Memory, and talks of his Youth, to invalidate the Story; but that is so great an Affront to all the young Gentlemen and Apprentices in London, who, at the Age of Nineteen, are so very much employed and trusted in their Master's Books and Accounts, that I leave them to vindicate Sir John, upon the score of helping his Father in a thing of such a Nature as this was, at such an Age.

What ridiculous Stuff is this! 'Tis such an inexcusable Affront to the London Apprentices, to say, That, though they understand their Masters Account Books, they have not, at Nineteen, the necessary qualifications of States-men and Divines, that they must be instigated to draw-up an Abhorrence against it; and it may be this Doctor, who would coax them to fall upon Dr. Walker as their common Enemy, designs them a Venison Feast this Season; but (should he do it) I advise

Digitized by Google.

you, as his Friend, to caution him to appoint it at some other place than Merchant-Taylors Hall, in regard Dr. Meriton lives opposite to it; and it may be some diminution to his Credit, if that Reverend Divine should take the opportunity to cross the Street, and tell him, in the midst of his Jollity with the Lads, that he hath twice belied him in his malicious Scribblings against Dr. Walker.

The Aldgate Doctor (pag. 9.) dismisses Sir John Brattle, saying, And this is all I have to say as to Sir John Brattle; and that he told me this, I will depose

upon Oath, whenever I am lawfully RECALLED.

I have heard of Re-ordaining, Recanting, and Re-recanting; and it is more than probable, that this Learned Gentleman understands the meaning of these words; but 'tis beyond my Capacity to make sense of Recalling in this place, and he will oblige me in telling me his meaning therein: And to requite the Courtesy, you may tell him, that I will produce good Evidence upon Oath, when Required, (there's a Re for his Re) that Sir John Brattle, (who, I agree, is a very worthy Person,) doth declare, That he never told Dr. Hollingworth, or any other Person, that the Papers he spoke of were writ with the King's own Hand. Their Majesty's Chaplain may not take it ill, or think that his Veracity is called into Question, by enquiring of Sir John about this Matter: for we had his leave to do it, when he asserted the thing, and said, Thanks be to God, Sir John is yet alive, and is ready to give the same Account to any Man that asks him.

The Aldgase Doctor affirms, (pag. 10.) 'That the Reverend Dr. Meriton, dining in the latter end of the last Year with the Lord-Mayor, Sir Thomas Pilkington, happened to meet with Dr. Walker at the same Table; where Dr. Walker, was pleased, with his usual confidence, to assert Dr. Gauden to be the Author of the King's Book: Upon which Dr. Meriton, turned upon him with the Story of Mr. Simmond's communicating the whole thing to Dr. Gauden, upon which he was so confounded, that he had nothing to say for himself. And, though, if none but Dr. Meriton himself had declared to me (quoth he) the Issue of their Debate, it would have satisfied me: yet the further satisfaction I had from my worthy Friend Mr. Marriot, (then Chaplain to the Lord-Mayor, and Minister of the Parish Church in Rood-Lane,) who stood-by and heard the whole Discourse, and withal the silence he put Dr. Walker to; (which he professed to myself,) gave me so full a satisfaction, that, upon that account, I ventured to give the World an Account of it in print.

Now it had been much better either to have let this Story quite alone, or to have given a true Relation of it: but our Author trusts to Falshoods more than to the Truth of the Cause. He saith in his Preface, If any Man questions the Truth of these Living Evidences I have quoted, if he pleases to come to me, I will wait upon them, and he shall have satisfaction from themselves of the truth of what I have writ. I should tell him now, (if I did not know him,) that he might be ashamed to prevaricate as he doth: but he hath cast-off all shame; he exclaims thus upon Dr. Walker (page 20.) Well done, Dr. Walker, if thou ever hadst a Man alone with

Digitized by Google

with thee, undoubtedly he was alwaies on thy side, and thou wert always in the right; and, when the Man was dead, wouldest assume the confidence to print it.

In what words now shall I bespeak Dr. Hollingworth? he offers to wait upon any Man who is doubtful in the Matter, to the Persons he names; and yet, I am at a certainty that he hath assumed the confidence to put these reverend Divines, Dr. Meriton and Mr. Marriot (whom he terms his Worthy Friends) in print, (whilst living) without their Privity or Consent, or consulting them of the truth of what he relates; and I am as sure that they will nor averr what he asserts they told him. For, without putting the Doctor to the trouble of waiting upon him, I engaged a Friend to enquire of these Reverend Persons of the truth of what he writes relating to them; and Dr. Meriton saith, "that Dr. Holling worth had committed two Dr. Meriton's testi-Mistakes, (to give it no harder Name) in the Story; for, whereas he affirms that mony. Dr. Walker, with his usual Confidence, began the Discourse at my Lord Mayor's Table, Dr. Meriton declares, that there was no such Discourse at the Table, but that after Dinner he himself began the Discourse taking Dr. Walker into a Corner of the Room:" and Mr. Marriot is pleased to declare, "that he did not much ob-Mr. Marriot's testiserve the Discourse, nor charge his Memory with the Particulars thereof, but believes mony. Dr. Meriton began it; and that Dr. Walker did assert, in reply to him, that Dr. Gauden was the Author of the Book." Yet, we are to believe, if we please, that poor Dr. Walker was confounded and put to silence; but I am sure the Aldgate Doctor ought to be so, whose very asserting a thing ought to carry in itself an Argument of Credibility; and from henceforth, surely, he will be for ever banished from the Society of Learned and Honest Men.

Where are we next? Dr. Hollingworth saith (pag. 9.) The next thing I shall discourse upon, is the Story of Mr. Simmonds. Is it so? come then, let me hear it; A reverend Friend, the Vicar of Witham, acquainted him where the Widow of Mr. Simmonds lived; The Doctor went to her, and enquired whether she knew any thing of the King's Book, and how far her Hushand was concerned in it? She presently answered the Doctor, that going into her Hushand's Study, she saw upon the Table a Book in writing, which she knew was not her Hushand's Hand, and therefore asked him whose it was; but he turned her off, with hidding her mind her own Business.

A doughty Story upon my word; and such a Command as this (to mind bis own Business) from my Lord Bishop of London to our Doctor, might have prevented the blotting of abundance of Paper; but, seeing 'tis tumbled-out, and that with the License of his Lordship's Chaplain, with a vain imagination that it serves the Cause; I will take the liberty to say, That a Friend of mine, without consulting either the Vicar of Witham, or the Vicar of Gotham, found, that Mrs. Simmonds lived with Mr. Span in Creed lane, near Black-Fryers; and he assures me, that upon discourse with her, she appeared to be a very discreet and good Woman, (as in earnest I am assured her Reverend Husband was,) and did acknowledge that Dr. Hollingworth had been with her; which, without further examination of the above-mentioned Story, (it deserving no remark) I will allow to justify the Doctor therein. But (quoth he, pag. 11.) she told me, her Husband never joyed himself after

the King's Murther, but fell sick and died the 29th of March following. So she told my Friend, but with this difference (as the Doctor knows, but he seems resolved never to tell the Truth, the whole Truth, and nothing but the Truth) that his Sickness whereof he died was the Small-Pox.

The Doctor's next living Witness is your honest Name-sake Mr. Milbourn, the Printer; be told the Aldgate Chaplain, (if a Man may take his word) 'That in 1648, 'he was Apprentice to Mr. Grisman, a Printer; at which time Mr. Sirmonds. by Mr. Royston, sent the King's Book to be Printed, and that his Master did Print it: and that Mr. Simmonds alwaies had the name of sending it to the Press, and that it came to them as from the King.

Now, though it seems as improbable that a Printer's Apprentice should know the Author of a Book which comes to his Master, through several Hands (as 'tis in this Relation) to be Printed with the greatest privacy, as that those London Apprentices who understand the keeping their Masters' Accompts, are therefore capable of being Ministers of State: Yet I will not contend this matter with Mr. Mileourn. but be it as he saies.

In the next place (pag. 13.) I find a Certificate under the Hand of Mr. Clifford, who assisted Mr. Milbourn in Composing and Correcting the Book; which backs his Story, with this Addition, that 'great part of the Book was seized in Mr. Sim-"mond's Lodgings; and he, though in a Shepherd's Habit, was so far discovered, ' as that he was pursued into Great Carter-Lane, by the Rebels; where he took Refuge, and the blocdy Villains fired two Pistols at him, which frightened him up Stairs, and out of the Garret-window he made his escape over the Houses. And he further saith, That he never heard, nay, that be is sure Dr. Gauden never was concerned in that Book, by which Mr. Milbourn and himself printed it.

This Certificate, I find, Sir , is attested by yourself and $\mathit{Margaret}$ Hollingworth: And one of your and my Neighbours, was inquisitive, upon the reading it, to know whether this Jewel, for so they say Margaret is in the Greek, be the Doc-

tor's Wife or Daughter? But I could not resolve it.

Now had Dr. Walker been alive, and had Clifford made Oath of what he here asserts, I know not but he might have been indicted for Perjury, for saying; That be is sure Dr. Gauden was never concerned in the Bock. And then Dr. Holling worth, who confesses that he procured and penned this Certificate, might have been in

some danger of an Indictment for Subornation. But, pray, let us compare the Relation of Mr. Clifford with that of good Mrs. Simmonds; She saith, 'That she lodged with her Husband in Carter-Lane; and that, their Lodgings being discovered, a Sculdier shot a Pistol to mark the Dior, (the very Expression used by Dr. Walker in his Relation of the Story, pag. 30.) but she and her Husband were at that time at Dinner with a Major of the King's, at one Mr. Chibar's, a Minister about Old Fish-street; and had notice brought thither, that Souldiers had been at their Lodgings; whereupon her Husband went-away, bidding her go home: And the Souldiers coming soon after to Mr. Chibar's his House, the Major made his escape at a Garres-Window, before the ' Door

Door of the House was unlock'd. And she further told my Friend, That till he read it to her out of Dr. Hellingworth's Book, She never heard of her Husband's going in a Shepherd's Habit. But when this Matter comes to be scrutiniz'd, I foresee that our Doctor will affirm, That by a Shepherd's Habit, he only meant a Grun and Cassock.

The next material thing which occurs is, (pag. 17.) If he (the Essex Doctor) had writ nothing but Tr. th, a Nut-shell would have held it all.

There are more Brains in a Walnut, than in the Aldgate Doctor's dry Skull, and their Shells are alike thin and brittle; he is equally a Stranger to Wit and Manners; but a quart Pot will scarce contain the Falshoods which he hath writ.

Page 19. Our Author inserts the Transcripts of two-Letters from one Tom. Long of Exeter, as he affirms; which say, That Dr. Gauden told him, that he was fully convinc'd that the Eicon Basilice was entirely the King's Work. This famous Story, I observe, is esteemed by their Majesties Aldgate Chaplain, as a stabbing Evidence; for before he came at it, we were threatened with it all along in his Book: I' ge 6. he said, By and by I will prove, under the Hand of a more credible Man than ever Dr. Walker was, that Dr. Gauden had another Opinion of the Author of the Book. Page 17. We have the same thing over again in these words; I say, and will prove it by a better Evidence than Dr. Walker can be supposed to be, that Dr. Gauden, after be was Bishop of Exeter, did justify it to be the King's Book. Page 18, this celebrated Witness is produced; and our Doctor tells us, 'Tis Mr. Long, Prebendary, as be takes it, of Exeter. And, page 20, he thus characterizes him: I must tell the Reader, that he is an ancient, grave, Reverend Divine, well known for his Truth and Honesty; one, who as he is a professed Member of the Church of England, so be bath always been true to the Doct ine and Discipline of it, in his Preaching and Practice; and not like my Adversary, who I know (for I was personally acquainted with bim) was an Encourager of, and Comrade, principally, with, those who had no kindness for the Church at all.

I must, with your leave, Sir, a little remark upon this most extraordinary and remarkable Man. Dr. Hollingworth is, no doubt, sure of the truth of what he says; we are bound to believe him, though he is not at a certainty what this Long is; for he tells us, that he is Prebendary of Exeter, as he takes it. He hath alwaies been true to the Doctrine and Discipline of the Church of England. That's indeed something, and makes the Prebendary a much more valuable Man than our Chaplain; for he, once-upon-a-time declared, that he thanked God, he had vomited-up all his Calvinistical Principles. Whereupon a Person of true Worth, and of high Desert, replied thus to him; Then the Doctrine of the Church of England, and St. Paul's Epistles, have spewed you out for an Apostate; and so farewell to you for a Knave.

But I may not let the *Prebendary* thus slide out of my hands: I have found there's something more than ordinary in the Man, which recommends him to the Doctor's Favour, and I will not withhold it from you. There's a kind of Sympathy in the natures of these two mighty Churchmen; our Doctor proposed, page 50, of his second Defence, That every Parish of England should buy the famous Eicon

Eicon Basilice (with the other Works of King Charles) and chain it up, to inform the Minds of all good Men: and the Prehendary hath a Crotchet of reading some Portions out of it, in the Church, for the further enlightening our Understandings. Behold how they piss in a Quill; and for aught I know, the next proposal from these Men may be, to read the Arcadian Prayer in the same Book, for the furthering of our Devotion.

I proceed to give you something more of Long's just Character, and leave it to you to judge how much you find of Hollingworth therein. He hath an aking Tooth at Lectures and Sermons too; and a mighty Spleen at Free-Prayer; he would have all the publick Ministrations to consist in reading Liturgies and Homilies. But his virulent Book, called Kox Cleri, or the Sense of the Clergy, concerning the making of Alterations in the establish'd Liturgy, published in the Year 1690, doth most truly speak the Man's Principles, and discover what sort of Men, are, in our Doctor's esteem, the true Church-of-England-Men; and upon that score he terms the pious Dr. Walker an Adversary to the Church.

This Book is a Libel upon that great and excellent Person, his Grace my Lord Archbishop of Canterbury that now is, and several others of the highly-deserving Bishops and Clergy of the Church of England, who were found inclinable to

the much-long'd-for Union of Protestants in the late Convocation.

He glories that the Clergy opposed and overthrew a Bill for Comprehension, contrived by Bishop Wilhins, Sir Orlando Bridgman, and Judge Hales; because they thought a Faction within the Church would prove more hurtful than a Schism without it, &c. He rejoices that Dr. Jane was chosen Prolocutor of the Convocution, in opposition to Dr. Tillotson, and says, that this look'd-upon as a good Omen of success, in their Proceedings for the good of the Church; and throughout the whole Book he puts an high value npon Dr. Jane for opposing any alteration in the Liturgy or Ceremonies, with a Nolumus Leges Anglia mutare, and at the same time casts leering Reflections upon the Friends of Union and Peace, under the name of Latitudinarians. He oft extols and magnifies the Non-swearing Bishops, and calls their deserved Deprivation for their Obstinacy, a dealing with them as the Bishops were dealt-with in 1642, by the Scottish and Dissenters Malice. He expressly declares himself against parting with any thing for the Dissenters satisfaction; and perswades to the inforcing them to Uniformity by strict Discipline. But I may not dwell upon his envenom'd Invective; in short both Hollingworth and Long appear to be Fiery Zealots, Violent Bigots, who stand at an irreconcilable distance with dissenting Protestants, and will run both out of the Church and their Wits too, if the Parliament should think fit to let the Dissenters in, upon an honourable Accommodation of our Differences. And 'twould be strange indeed, if a Man of Dr. Walker's healing Spirit, should have any Credit with such Men as these; but 'tis his Honour to be traduced by them.

But now he falls with a Witness upon poor Dr. Walker, saying, (page 22.) I have a Commission from the present Bishop of Gloucester, Dr. Fowler, to present

the world with this Narrative attested by himself; which has a great deal in it, considering the former Testimonies.

The former Testimonies, indeed, considered (which have nothing in them but Falshood, and empty or angry Words) I must allow that there is something in this, though not to the Doctor's Purpose: We have here a Certificate attested by my Lord Bishop of Gloucester, which fills almost three Pages, with most undoubted Truth; and this must be esteemed something; and 'tis a rare thing too; for (this relation excepted) a Man may aver that there is scarce a Paragraph in their Majesties Chaplain's seven-and-twenty Pages without a Falshood. It behoves then that we look into this narrative: The sum of it is this:

- About 28 years since Mrs. Keighly, a very Religious and Pious Gentlewoman, told Dr. Fowler, that a Captain of the Parliament-Army told her, that, being appointed to stand every Morning at his Majesty's Bed-Chamber Door, when
- he was a Prisoner in the *Isle of Wight*, he observed, for several days, that he went into his Closet, and staid there a considerable time, and then went into the
- went into his Closet, and staid there a considerable time, and then went into the
- Garden: And the Captain perceiving that he still left the Key in the Closet-Door, he went in, and found that the King had been penning most Devout and Pious
- ' Meditations and Prayers, which the Captain read for several Mornings together.
- And Mrs. Keighly said, That he gave such an Account of these Meditations and
- 4 Prayers, that she was confident they were printed in Eicon Basilice, after she
- came to read the same.'

2

And I am very inclinable to be of good Mrs. Keighly's Mind; and yet this Relation doth more serve Dr. Walker than Dr. Hollingworth. It must be remembered that the Essex-Doctor asserts that Dr. Gauden sent a Copy of the Book by the Marquess of Hertford to the King, when a Prisoner in the Isle of Wight, and that he believes it was corrected by his Majesty. The design of the Book was, ad Captandum Populum; and this King was no fool, I assure you: He spent some time every Morning in perusing, and making such Alterations and Emendations as he thought fit in the Papers, and then took his walk, leaving the Key in his Closet-Door, and the Devout Papers upon the Table, as a Bait to catch the Captain; for though, as the Aldgate Chaplain most wittily expressed himself, Some Birds are not to be catch'd with Chaff, yet some may; And so I think the Mystery is unriddled.

And now, that I may take a full revenge upon the Doctor, I fall upon him with the But-end of another Bishop; 'tis Dr. Nicholson, who was Bishop of Gloucester at the time when the Widow of Dr. Gauden, after her Husband's Death, resided in that City: This Bishop, understanding that Mrs. Gauden did declare that her Husband wrote the King's Book, and desiring to be fully satisfied in that Point, did put the Question to her, upon her receiving the Sacrament; and she then affirmed, that it was wrote by her husband. For the Truth of this I can appeal to Persons of undoubted Credit now living in Gloucester: and I am under no doubt but my Lord Bishop of Gloucester, that now is, will acknowledge that those Persons have related this Matter to him, as I have now told it. And I do as certainly know that there is a Person of Quality and clear Reputation, who was Mrs.

Gauden's Brother, now living, that will affirm that his Sister did constantly, in her Conversation with him, declare that her Husband was the Author of that Book: And the same thing is well known to several of her Relations now in being.

I shall now hasten to an end, when I have related a Story which agrees with the Earl of Anglesey's Memorandum, and with Dr. Gauden's telling Dr. Walker, (as he asserts) that the Duke of York knew that he was the Author of that Book, and own'd it as a seasonable and acceptable Service. There is now in being a Person of Quality, in whose hearing the late King James was highly commending the excellent Language of the present Bishop of Rochester's Book, called, The Rye-House Conspiracy. Whereupon this Person took occassion to say, That his Majestie's Father's Book was wrote in an excellent stile. To which the King replied, My Father did not write that Book; it was wrote by Bishop Gauden. 'Tis very indecent to publish Names without Permission; but I will adventure to say, that the Person I mean, either is at present, or lately was, one of the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty.

I observe that Dr. Hollingworth never writes a Pamphlet without a Postscript: in that against Dr. Walker he tells an idle Story, 'That Mrs. Simmonds acquainted him, that [Mrs. Gauden] being at Dinner, some Years since, at a Citizen's House, he, (like one of the Faction, and greedy to lessen Monarchy by aspersing King Charles,) told her, if she would confess the Truth, that her Husband made the Book called the King's, there were some hundreds of Pounds at her service: which she scorned, and told him, She was not to be bribed by never-so-much to [tell] so great a Lie.'

'Twould be a very seasonable and good Work, to set some body to bribe this prevaricating and forging Doctor to speak Truth. For Mrs. Simmonds, who is a conscientious Woman, denies that she told the Doctor that any Body attempted to bribe her [Mrs. Gauden] to a Lie, or said to her that there were some hundred Pounds, or any Sum at her Service; but she declares she told him, That, quickly after the King's Murder, one Mr. Robinson, who lived about Threadneedle-street, invited her [Mrs. Gauden] to Dinner, and talked with her about her Husband's writing the King's Book, and said, it might be some hundred Pounds in her way, if she would acknowledge the Truth; and that, if she would not, she might come into great trouble; and she saith that she never saw him after.

And now, after all this wrangling; for Peace sake, and half-a-Crown to be spent at the Pye-Tavern at Aldgate; I will (so far as I am interested in the Matter) give that diminutive and inconsiderable thing, the Aldgate Chaplain, his saying: The Book was, without further debate about it, wrote by King Charles, and he Lies that gain-says it. But then I must be allowed to observe, that it begins with Falshood, and ends with Fraud: So that as Dr. Hollingworth told him, (1st Defence, p. 37.) If the Essex-Doctor had any value for the memory of his deceased Friend Dr. Gauden, he would certainly have forborn telling it in all places, with a more than usual Confidence, that Dr. Gauden was the Author of it; for he was a learned and grave Divine, and would scorn to gull the Multitude by setting-off a deformed Cause

Digitized by Google

N.B.

Cause with counterfeit Colours; by cloaking detestable Tyranny, with the re-

splendent Beauty of blessed Piety.

Ξ.

=i

~

#T

11

3.

ξ;

-

!"

ï. .

<u>ا</u> د

Ŧ,

ę:

ġ.

•

ŗ

The King begins his Book, saying, That he called his last Parliament, not more by others Advice, and the Necessity of his Affairs, than by his own Choice and Inclination. This is to all knowing Men so apparently not true, that a more unlucky Sentence hardly could have come into his Mind. He never lov'd, never fulfilled, never promoted the true End of Parliaments: But having first tried, in vain, all undue Ways to procure Money; his Army beaten by the Scots, the Lords Petitioning, and the general Voice of the People, almost hissing him and his ill-acted Regality off the Stage, compelled at length, both by his own Wants and Fears,

upon meer Extremity he summon'd this last Parliament.

And as to what we find in the end of this Book, his Prayer in the time of Captivity. Who would have imagined so little fear in him of the All-seeing Deity; so little care of Truth in his Words, or Honour to himself or to his Friends, or sense of his Afflictions, as immediately before his Death to pop into the Hands of that grave Bishop, Dr. Juxon, who attended him, as a special Relick of his Saintlike Exercises, a Prayer stolen, word for word, from the Mouth of a Heathen Woman praying to a Heathen God, and that not in a serious, but a vain, Amatorious, Book, Sir Philip Sidney's Arcadia; a Book, how full so ever of Wit, not worthy to be named among Religious Thoughts and Duties: Not to be read at any time without good Caution, much less in time of Trouble and Affliction to be a Christian's Prayer-Book. 'Tis worthy of remark, that he who had acted over us so Tragically, should leave the World at last with such a ridiculous *Emit*, as to bequeath, among his deifying Friends, such a piece of Mockery to be published by them, as must needs cover both his and their Heads with shame and confusion. And, sure, it was the Hand of God that let them fall, and be taken in such a foolish Trap, as hath exposed them to all Derision; if for nothing else, to throw Contempt and Disgrace, in the sight of all Men, upon this his idolized Book, and the whole Rosary of his Prayers.

To conclude, if any Man censures me for using too much tartness in any of my Expressions; let him take notice, that Dr. Walker told your Doctor, (page 9.) That good Nature and good Manners might be overcome with too much ill Usage,

so cause him to be answered as he would not, if he accused as he should not.

I am, yours,

Yarmouth, June 10, 1692.

JOS. WHLSON.

Insanis Veritas scandalum est, & cæcis Doctoribus Caligo quod Lumen est.

0 2

FUDIOM



LUDLOW NO LIAR, &c.

IN A LETTER TO

DR. HOLLINGWORTH.

IS common, Sir, to such despicable and malicious Brawlers as you are, to rail at those things most, that are most praise-worthy: I should therefore esteem it scandalous to the Glorious Cause, and Noble Performances of the most worthy Parliament of November 1640, (which I have endeavoured to vindicate,) to be commended, and account it a praise to be evil-spoken-of, by you: and it would provoke a Man to laughter to behold you betaking yourself to Slanders and Calumnies, to see nothing but dirt and filth issuing from your mouth, when you find your Arguments will little avail.

I should not give myself the trouble to animadvert upon your Follies and Frenzies, but that I hear you are swollen with Pride and Conceit to an incredible

degree.

I shall therefore shew, that, with a great deal of toil, you have done just nothing at all; and that you are fallen under a most prodigious degree of Stupidity and Madness, to take so much pains to make your Folly visible to the World, which till now, you, in some measure, have concealed; to be so industrious to heap disgrace upon yourself. What offence does Heaven punish you for, in making you undertake the Defence of so forlorn and desperate a Cause as that of King Charles the Eirst, and that with so much confidence and indiscretion; and, instead of defending it, to betray it by your ignorance?

It was as truly as ingeniously observed by the Learned Bishop Burnet, in his Sermon before the House of Commons, January 31st, 1688-89: 'That, if one were to make a Panegyrick on Tyranny, he ought to turn-over all the common Places of Wit, all the Stores of Invention, and the liveliest figures with which his

fancy would furnish him, to make so odious a thing look but tolerably; and, by sacrificing truth to interest, and varnishing it over with Wit and Eloquence, he " might shew now gracefully he could plead a very ill Cause.". And 'tis certain that most Writers use some endeavour to carry-on their discourses by a Stream of Sense and Reason: but you, Sir, have done it by a Course of Reviling and Railing; and it may be truly said, That, if the dirty and Tinker-like Names, the scurrilous and toul-mouth'd Expressions, the spiteful and false Accusations, (I gather these Expressions from your book) were taken out of your Pamphlet, it would appear but a poor and shrunken thing, unpleasing to yourself when you look upon it, and of small power to work upon others that read it You seem rather to bawl and hoot-at, than to answer, my Letter; and your Book is the best Common-Place for Billingsgate that I have lately seen: But it is well known, that a Mountebank can neither draw, nor keep, a Croud about his Stage, without the help of a witty, or foul-mouth'd, Buffoon. And the gay Fancy, the cutting Sarcasms, wherewith your Tract is all-bespatter'd, do adorn and render it highly entertaining to some Per-And I must confess, that I find some subtilty in your first setting-out. For you begin cunningly, and, like an old Cavalier, you place the Right Reverend and Pious Bishop Kidder, in the front of the Battle, just as King Charles the First did the Roundbead; whom he had taken Prisoners at the Battle of Edgebill; these (as we find the Relation in Husband's Exact Collections, page 758.) he set pinioned in the front of his Men, when he engaged the Parliament-Forces at Braintford, to be a Breast-work to receive the Bullets that came from the Brownists and Anabaptists, (of such the King affirmed the Parliament-Army to consist) that the Cavaliers might escape them. However, the good Bisbop, I plainly foresee, will comeoff, as every of them did; be may be shot through the Cloaths, but no way burt. For your Quotations out of the Sermons of this good Man, and of that great and well-studied Divine, Dr. Sherlock, do only endeavour to aggravate the Iniquity of this Martyr's Murder; whereas there is not one syllable in either of my Letters relating to it. I only endeavoured to evince, That the King intended to bow or break us, to persuade or force us to Slavery; and that the Parliament, when he was enflamed to take Arms against them, and to put all into a common Combustion, did, in one hand, present their humble Supplications, most earnestly begging to enjoy the English Liberties in Peace; and held in the other hand, the Sword of just and innocent Defence, against the Oppression and Violence of the Enemies of the King's true Honour, and of the Kingdom's Peace. And I am yet to learn, that, by any law of God or Nations, this could be judged to be Rebellion: And I cannot see but Dr. birlock is of my opinion; for in his Sermon upon this last 30th of January, 1691, page 6, he saith, 'He shall not dispute the lawfulness of resisting the King's Authority; whether it were lawful for the Parliament to take Arms against the King, to defend the Laws and Liberties of their Country. He supposes, that, in a limited Monarchy, the Estates of the Realm have Authority to maintain the Laws and Liberties of their Country, against the illegal. - Encroachments and Usurpations of their King.' Now I go no greater length,

and I think this comes-up to the great Lord Russel's Position, which you had in my Letter, page 20: 'That a free Nation, like this, may defend their Religion and Liberties, when invaded and taken from them, though under pretence and colour of Law.'

Your next step, Sir, is, (page 6) to my Quotation out of a Sermon of Bishop Burnet's, Jan. 30th, 1680, which you say you will transcribe, to let the World see what a Cheat I am. Well, seeing you did so, I will also transcribe it, that the World may judge whether you or I be the Knave in this Matter. The words are these, 'I acknowledge it were better if we could have Job's Wish, that this 'Day should perish, and the shadow of Death should cover it, that it should not 'see the dawning of the Day, nor should the Light shine upon it; it were better to strike it out of the Calendar, and make our January terminate at the 29th,

and add these remaining days to February.

These words (say you) are wrested by Ludlow, and they appear, at first sight, only a Rhetorical Flight, whereby that Right Reverend Person would express the detestableness and borridness of the Fact, which he bewailed that day. Now, because I ever was against judging any thing upon the first sight, I have twice read the Sermon of this learned, wise, and highly-meriting Bishop; and must tell you, that I did not wrest bis words, but that he was of Opinion, "that the observation of that Day had been too long continued, and that, in regard of the great abuse thereof by some bot-beaded Ecclesiastical Make-bates, 'twas time to leave it off; and I cannot but think that every Man will conclude as I do, even upon the reading of his Text, Zech. viii. 19. Thus saith the Lord of Hosts, The Fast of the Fourth Month, and the Fast of the Fifth, and the Fast of the Seventh, and the Fast of the Tenth, shall be to the House of Judah Joy and Gladness, and chearful Feasts; therefore LOVE THE TRUTH AND PEACE. And I must say, that I am strengthened in this Belief, when I remember, that about that Time, and indeed upon the very Day when this Sermon was preached, viz. Jan. 30th, 1680, some of the Clergy (I know their Names, but will spare them) did in their Pulpits deliver-up our Laws and Liberties to the King's Will; and, according to their Doctrine, we were to hold all at his. Pleasure; and in the three or four succeeding years, upon that and such-like Occasions, these Boutefeux did raise Despotick Power to that dangerous height, that England became too hot for Dr. Burnet, as well as for many other good Men; and he and I might, with equal safety, have returned together. But, to put it beyond doubt, what my Lord Bishop of Salisbury's meaning was, in that Expression, It were better if we could bave Job's Wish, &c. which you insinuate that I wrest; I shall lay before you some Expressions in that Sermon: you may read, page 4, these words; 'Upon their loving Truth and Peace, those black and mournful Days should be converted to Days of Gladness. Page 5, It might have been expected, that our 29th of May should have worn-out the remembrance of the 30th of January; and now at the end of two-and-thirty years, it may be reasonably asked, should we still continue to fast and mourn? Page 28. [If we come to love the Truth and Peace 1

Peace] to live in Love and Peace, one with another, then our Days of Fasting shall be turned into solemn and chearful Feasts: Then should our 29th of May swallow up the remembrance of the 30th of January; Or, perhaps, as the Prophet fore-told, such happy Deliverances should come to the Jews, as should make even that out of Egypt to be forgotten; so we might hope for such days, as should outshine and darken the very 29th of May.——If we come to love Truth and Peace, then shall even this Fast of the 10th Month, according to the Jewish Account, (which, according to Arch-Bishop Usher, is exactly our 30th of January) be to us, Joy and Gladness.

I can now scarce with-hold myself from saying, That 'tis most evident the Doctor at Aldgate doth appear to be the Person who would wrest Bishop Burnet's well-intended Words to bis own malicious Design: - A Design to keep-up Animosity, Wrath, and Feuds in the Kingdom; a Person who shews himself estranged from Truth and Peace, in contending to perpetuate the observation of this Day. And seeing we have happily lived to behold the wonderful Deliverances which my Lord Bishop of Salisbury did not only hope-for, but seem to foretel: - Seeing we have our glorious 5th of November, rendered famous to all succeeding. Ages, by our late, repeated, happy and miraculous Deliverance from Popery, and its inseparable Companion, Tyranny: - Seeing we behold our thrice-happy 30th of April and 4th of November, the Birth-Days of those matchless Princes, our most deservedly admired and beloved Soveraigns, King William and Queen Mary, out-sbining and darkening even the 29th of May; I would hope, that I may live to see the time, when his Lordship will make a Motion in Parliament, for the annulling the Law which enjoins the Observation of the 30th of January; and that, I am sure, would be highly acceptable to the sincere Lovers of Truth and Peace. But,

I already see an Objection against it; You (Doctor) say, Pag. 2. An Act of State bas appointed this Day to be FOR EVER observed, to vernail the Sin of the Murder of the King. However, I am sure, my Lerd Bishop of Salisaury doth well remember, that in Times by-past, other Days have been appointed to be observed by Acts of State, upon such like Occasions; and one in particular, to declaim against Gowry's detestable Conspiracy, which is now forgot: His Lordship also knows, that in Numb. 21. when, for the People's speaking against God and Moses, the Lord sent Fiery Serpents, which destroyed many of them; Upon their Confession of their Sin, Moses, at their Entreaty, prayed for them; and (as it is in the 8th and 9th Verses) The Lord said unto Noses, Make thee a fiery Serpent, and set it upon a Pole; and it shall come to pass, that every one that is biven, when he looketh upon it, shall live: And Moses made a Serpent of Brass, and put it upon a Pole; and it came to pass, that, if a Serpent bad buten any Man, when he beheld the Serpent of Brass, he lived. You see, Sir, this was God's own Institution; and that, I hope, was at least as good as your Act of State. Let us see now what became of this brazen Serpent; 2 Kings 18. The good King Hezekiah, (and there were very few good ones

in those days) who did that which was right in the Sight of the Lord, broke in pieces the brazen Serpent that Moses had made [for unto those days the Children of Israel did burn Incense to it] and he called it, Nehushtan. And that God highly approved this Act of this glorious Reformer, is evident from the very next Verse, which records, that after him was none like him among all the Kings of Judah, nor any that were her re kim.

And now, Sir, to dismiss this Black-Day; allow me to observe, that there is not one Syllable in either of my Letters, reflecting on the Act of State, which ordained the Observation of the 30th of January; but I term it a Madding-Day, because our Parasisical Court-Priests would not keep the Peace, but on that Day did set the Nation on Madding, by infusing Principles of Slavery into her Free-herm People.

You pick a Quarrel with me about my Epistle Dedicatory, and up-(Page 7.) braid me for courting the Populace, and Dedicating to the sincere Lovers of Old-England, in Aldgate-Parish; and say, Sure the King and Queen, or else the Lords of the Council, might have been made the Patrons of a Work that pretends to what Ludlow's dotb. But, whatever you think of yourself, or the World of you, methinks 'twas something sawcy, even in you, to prefix their Majesties Sacred Names to so silly a Book, as was your first Defence; and 'tis as arrogant, to entitle, the Most Reverend and Right Reverend the Arch-Bishops and Bishops, the Nobility, Gentry, &c. to this Second; and to begin, as if you were seated on the Throne, MY LORDS and GENTLEMEN. And it seems most impudent, to tell them, that upon the Reputation or Disbonour of King Charles the First, and the Principles which maintain the one, or those that propagate the other (as much as if you had said, upon my Scriblings) depend the Being and Well-being of our present Church and State; and consequently the Life and Preservation of our present King and Queen. But, whatever you may do, tis not for the mean Shrubs of the Laiety, to soar so high as you presume; and I took mine to be a modest and inoffensive Dedication, and do yet think it ought to be esteemed such, though you snarl, and, in your gay and angry Humour, make Distinctions, if not a Schism, and that in your own Parish; and very prodigally throw-out to Ludlow, a good number of Benefactors, because they do not believe that they were the only good Men, who took part with the King against the Parliament; who, you say, only did their Daties in standing by their Prince, according to the Laws of the Land, and the Oaths they had taken. Now, if this be not an inconsiderate and weak Way of arguing, why did not you and your Brethren do your Duty; and (as the Jacobites query) stand by King James, to whom you were sworn? And, as to your Old Englishmen, whom you cull-out and set-by for yourself, under the Notion of Lovers of the Government, by King, Lords, and Commons; I doubt not but there are of your Acquaintance, a great many Pretenders thereto; and yet, if a Man could stand behind the Hangings, at your Chib at the Pye Tavern, he might hear many of 'em kick at the Healths of King Wiliam and Queen Mary; and yet be the first who will propose and urge the drinking the King's Health: which, every Boy understands, is, in their meaning, King Tames's.

Digitized by Google

To proceed, Page 9, you tell me, that I begin my Epistle with a prophase piece. of Wit; namely, THE CHURCH, THE CLERGY; but that the best of it is but borrowed. Now, I hope, we of the Laiety, may, without committing the Sin of Sacrilege, borrow and lend this Commodity amongst ourselves; and, were all Clergy-Men as dull as yourself, Doctor, 'twould be as great a Sin to borrow of them, as to rob a Spittle. The piece of Wit which you here term prophane, was only a seasonable. Exhortation to you, to show a little regard to Sense, Truth and Christianity, in your future writings; and this your last; Book demonstrates, that of all the Scribblers of the Age, you ought most to have attended to this Caution. But, this was prophene Wit: ay, no doubt of it; there's no Salvation; can there he any Wit, out of the Church? Wit is ever prophaned, say these Borderers upon it, if any Man touches it but themselves. However, L will adventure to borrow again, from my Old Lay Friend, the most ingenious Mr. Andrew Marwell. "Albeit (saith he) Wit be not " inconsistent and incompatible with a Clergy-Man; yet, neither is it inseparable " from them: So that it is of concernment to my Lords the Bishops, henceforward "to repress those of 'em who have no Wit, from Writing; and to take care that even those that have it, do husband it better, as not knowing to what Exigency " they may be reduced."

You say, Pag. 10. I shall betake myself, with all the brevity I can, to consider your various Charges, you so imprudently draw-up against the King's and Queen's Grand-Father, both in your Epistle and in your Book itself. And Pag. 11, you fall of Psince Charles's to work: In your Epistle you tell us of a Letter which the Prince wrate to the Pope, Latter to the Pope, which, from the beginning to the end, savours of Popery; and you mention your Parti-

culars to prove it.

First, You tell us, that he professes nothing could affect him so much, as an Alliance with a Prince that, had the same apprehensions of true Religion with himself. You are in the right; I did say so; and, if I cannot make it out, you deservedly style me a foul-mouth'd, scandalous, and leud Miscreant: And a Man would think that you should not doubt your having caught me, when you bespeak me in these confident Words; For God's sake, Sir, read-over the Letter again, and tell me where there is such a word, or any thing thing like it; I have the Letter now before me, as it is in Rushworth; and I assure you, upon reading it again, I find nothing like it; and I hope I am not so dull, but I understand common Sense; and, if it was not for the unmannerliness of the Expression, I would, I am justly provoked to say, leave your L.—.

I must confess, Sir, this your Expostulation struck me with no small astonishment, and your bold and confident Assertion would, if possible, have made me ready to suspect myself (as you represent me) for one of the vilest Impostors that ever appeared in the World: for I never doubted but your Mother instructed you in the reading of English; and he who hath attained thereto, should not mistake in such a case as this. But,

Upon my second reading you; I observed, that you say, I bave the Letter now, before me, AS IT IS IN RUSHWORTH; this raised a Suspicion in me, that you were couscious that it was elsewhere to be found; why else should you say, AS IT IS IN RUSHWORTH? Turning to Rushworth, which you were poring-upon

when you wrote your Defence, I was confirmed in my Opinion; for in the Margin to that Letter, in Pag. 82, I read, and you will see, when you put on Impartial Spectacles, this honest Intimation; There is another Copy of the Prince's Letter to the Pope, published by soveral Hands, somewhat different from this. Well, though you affirm, that you find nothing like what I charge, I can see, (as you presently shall) even in Rushworth, several Things as like it, as I have found a Doctor to be

. like a Dunce.

Indeed, [any thing] like this Letter to the Pope is not found in Dr. Gauden's Famous Book, called Lican Basilica, nor in the Works of King Charles; neither it is in Pembrook's Arcadia, in Heylin, or in Nalson: But you, good Doctor, may see it in a Book which you have in your Library, for you quote it in your 13th Page; 'tis entituled, Cabala, Mysteries of State (in Quarto) Pag. 214. The Royal Words there, (which you could not, or, rather, would not, find,) are these; 'I shall never be so extreamly affectionate to any thing in the World, as to endeavour Alliance with a Prince that hath the same apprehension of the true Religion with myself. The same thing is expressed by Mr. Rusbinsth, in these Words; 'Your Holiness's Conjecture of our Desire to contract an Alliance and Marriage with a Catholick Family and Princess, is agreeable both to your Wisdom and Charity; for we would never desire so vehemently to be joined in a strict and indissoluble Bond with any Mortal whatsoever, whose Religion we hated.

You proceed in the Examination, or rather, as you affirm, Detection of Ludlow's

Lying, in the Particulars excepted from the King's Letter to the Pope.

2dly, Quoth you, What, Sir, you say, That he calls Popery the Catholick, Apostolic, Roman Religion; all others, Novelty and Faction? In what part of the Letter find you this? Sir, I tell you 'tis false, there is not one syllable of this nature throughout the whole; and I challenge the whole World of Malice to show me any thing like it in the Letter: And now again, Sir, who ought to leave their L——? Why, Sir, to deal honestly with you, I did say as you charge me; but I must also tell you, that I see 'tis not false; for towards the end of the Letter, I find these Syllables; 'I entreat your Holiuess to believe, that I have been always very far from encouraging 'Novelties, or to be a Partisan of any Faction, against the Catholick, Apostolick, 'Roman Religion.' And, in answer to your Question, Who ought to leave their 'L——? I say, they should who are convicted thereof. Now go on to act your part.

3dly, You say, That he protested, he did not esteem it a matter of greater Honour to be descended from great Princes, than to imitate them in the Zeal of their Piety, who had so often exposed their Eslates and Lives in the exaltation of the H.ly Cross: And, pray, where is the Fault in this? I hope any Man who knows what the Holy Cross means in its proper sense, (which is nothing else but the Christian Kelizion, purchased upon the Cross by the blood of Jesus,) will say, that this Protestation is so far from blackening this great Prince, that it redounds to his Credit and Honour. These are your Words, are they not, Doctor?

This Passage is indeed a little diverting: Ludlow, I observe, is no Lyar bere. You admit this Passage to be in the Letter; and, imagining you can justify it, do.

Digitized by Google

not

N.B.

not answer this, with Thou lyest; for that, in your Canenical way of Arguing, appertains only to things unanswerable. But now, upon reading the Letter, it will seem to some as though I had played the Wag in this Point, and laid a Trap for you, as some Body did for me, who gave me to understand that you were once a Presbyterian, with which you make yourself very merry, as I see, pag. 50. For, if you will please to look into the King's Letter, 'tis there HOLY CHAIR, though, indeed, it is Holy Cross in mine; and I am sure, such a Protestation to expose Estate and Life in the enaltation of the Holy Chair, doth not redound to the Honour of a Protestant King; for. we all know that the Holy Chair, (mean the Cross what it will) in its plain, proper, sense, means nething but down-right Pepery. But you, Dector, know a ready way to. bring yourself off with Honour; and, if I had not put a Trick upon you, in writing. Cross for Chair, your Answer would have run thus; For God's sake, Sir, read-over. the Letter again, and tell me where there is any Protestation about imitating the Zeal of his Ancestor's Piety, in exposing his Estate and Life in the exaltation of the Holy Chair, or any thing like it: I am not so dull, but I understand common Sense; and this. indeed (had it been in the Letter) savours of Potery, and would have blackened this. great Prince; but you, Bold-face, are past all manner of Shame; and a man would think. you are possessed; for there is not one word like this in the Letter; and I am justly prowill d to say, Leave your L.

Your next Cavil runs thus, (pag. 12.) You say that he solemnly engaged to the Pape to spare, nothing in the World, even to the hazarding his Life and Estate, to settle a thing so pleasing to God, as Unity with Rome. Surely, Sir, you are past all manner of shame; and a Man would think you were possessed; for there is not one word of this in the Letter; and none but a Person who cares not what Falsities be obtrudes upon the World, in order to deceive the silly and credulous part of Mankind, [THE LAIETY] would have so holdly printed such a notorious Falshood as this is;

and ought to leave his L--, Sin?

Why now, Dector, you are in the right again, and put-down my very Words; and as sure as you do so, so sure 'tis, that I charge nothing but the Truth: And, to shew you that the King's Letter hath many of the Words, I do here transcribe them; 'I will (saith the King) employ myself, for the time to come, to have but one Religion, and one Faith.— Having resolved in myself to spare nothing in the World, and to suffer all manner of Discommodities, even to the hazarding of my Estate and Life, for a Thing so pleasing to God. And who now ought to

leave his Lying, let the World judge.

Having thus, Sir, offered what occurs for the right placing the before-charged Lies, allow me to make a Parallel observation upon you. You insert into your Title-Page this Expression; Let the lying Lips he put to silence; which cruelly, disdainfully, and despitefully, speak against the Righteaus, Psal. 31. Now, at the rate of your talking, I might well say, For God's sake turn to your Rible again, and tell me where you find these words. The Text which I find in my Bible, Psal. xxxi. 18. runs thus; Let the lying Lips be put to silence; which speak grievous things, proudly and contemptuously against the Righteaus. But then you will reply, This is the wonted Gus-

N. B.



tom of your Party; these Presbyterians have their constant recourse to the Bible, to oppose the Liturgy; but we Laudean Church-men never cite the Bible, when we can make the Common-Prayer to serve the turn; and the pestilent Letter-writer must know, that I took my Quotation out of the Pealter, not the Pselms; and there, in the 31st and 20th Verse, (though it be the 18th in the Bible) are the very words which I put-down. Tis true, Sir, I do find it thus; but how had I been intrapped, if I had never seen, or had not had the Common Prayer-Book by me, and found that you had an Authentick Author for what you put-down? What a Nest of Ecclesiastical Wasps should I have brought about my Ears, had I said, Leave your List false, its not so in my Bible? And, pray, why may not I, (there being neither Statute nor Canon-Law prohibiting it) take the liberty to quote the Bible and the Cabala, when I quarrel not with you for reading the Common Prayer-Book and Rushworth?

To return to what you were upon: the last thing you said, was, And who ought to leave his Lying? You then say, (page 12.) And, as for his [the King's] Reply to the Pope's Nuncio, which you mention; after these Falsehoeds, pray, tell me in what Authentick Author I may find it? for I assure you, you have put so many false things together before, that you have so much lost your Credit with me, that I will believe nothing on your bare Assertion; and I do not doubt but every

body that reads both, will be of my mind.

Your Conclusion here, Sir, looks something fair; you seem content that every body should read both, and speak as he finds. I think they ought to do so; and I address you, in all humility, to be so ingenuous as to get Allowance that the Press may be open to both Sides, for what shall be hereafter published in this Controversy; for 'tis unreasonable that you should rail for what you idly call the Church of England, without controul, and under the publick Licence and Protection; and 'tis not only inconvenient to print at Amsterdam, but, in regard there are so many Tories and Jacobites employed in the Custom-House, 'tis no small Risque that every Man runs, who would bring-over any thing that is wrote for the Service of Old-England; I mean, the Government of England, by King William and Queen Mary, with Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament; and that you agree to be Old-England indeed. But I have too long digress'd.

You were telling me, that I have so much lost my Credit with you, that you will believe nothing on my bare Assertion. Upon this you must allow me to say, that you are laid so flat by the Reverend and pious Dr. Walker, in relation to the idle Story of Sir John Brattle, about Dr. Ganden's Book, commonly called the King's, (and which they say Sir John doth deny) and you have put-down so many things in your Defence of the Martyr, which are incredible, that your Credit is so much impaired with me, that I cannot believe every thing you assert. I therefore desire, that, for the future, you would give your Authorities (as I shall) for what you write; so that our Readers may know how to make a true Judgement of Things: And I must tell you, that, you being deficient in this Point in your First Defence of King Charles, I rather play'd than argued with you in my former

former Letter. But I will now tell you, that I had the King's Reply to the Nuncio, upon delivering the Pope's Letter to him, from Cabala, Mysteries of

State, page 214, where you may read it in these words.

I kiss his Holiness Feet, for the Favour and Honour he doth me; so much the more esteemed, by how much the less deserved of me hitherto; and his Holiness shall see what I will do hereafter. [And so did England, Scotland; Ireland, and the whole World; his Bishops and Chaplains pressed Popish Innovations, and preached Doctrines of gross Popery. And I think my Father will do the like; so that his Holiness shall not repent him of what he hath done.

Now, Sir, Cabala is a Book of clear Credit, and not to be gain-say'd by you; for you unluckily quote the same. Book in the very same Paragraph, wherein you

raise your Hue and Cry after my Authentick Author.

And now, for the further illustration of the Matters which I have too long dwelt-upon, I shall here transcribe, not only that Letter we have been talking-of, but that of the *Pope* to the *King*, which he answered in so highly-obliging terms; and, for your better Satisfaction, you may compare them with *Cabala*, p. 212, &c.

POPE GREGORY the XVth's LETTER to the PRINCE of WALES, afterwards King CHARLES the First.

Most Noble Prince, Health and Light of Divine Grace, &c.

GREAT BRITAIN, abounding with worthy Men, and fertile Virtues, so that the whole Earth is full of the Glory of her Renown, induceth many times the Thoughts of the great Shepherd to the consideration of her Praises. In regard, that presently in the Infancy of his Church, the King of Kings vouchsafed to choose her with so great Affection for his Inheritance, that almost, it seems, there entered into her, at the same time, the Eagles of the Roman Standard, and the Ensigns of the Cross. And not few of her Kings, indoctrinated in the true Knowledge of Salvation, gave example of Christian Piety to other Nations, and after-Ages. preferring the Cross to the Scepter, and the Defence of Religion to the Desire of Command. So that, meriting Heaven thereby (the Crown of eternal Bliss) they obtained likewise, upon Earth, the Lustre and glorious Ornaments of Sanctity. But in this time of the Britannick Churchshow much is the case altered? yet we see, that to this day, the English Court is fenced and guarded with moral Virtues, which were sufficient Motives to induce us to love this Nation, it being some Ornament to the Christian Name, if it were likewise a Defence and Sanctuary of Catholick Virtues.

Wherefore, the more the Glory of your most Serene Father, and the Property of your natural Disposition, delighteth us, the more ardently we desire that the Gates of Heaven should be opened unto you, and that you should purchase the uni-

Digitized by Google

N.B.

versal Love of the Church. For, whereas that Bishop, Gregory the Great; of most pious Memory, introduced amongst the English People, and taught their Kings the Gospel, and a Reverence to the Apostolical Authority; We, much inferiour to him in Virtue and Sanctity, as equal in Name, and height of Dignity, it is reason we should follow his most holy Steps, and procure the Salvation of those Kingdoms, especially (most Serene Prince) there being great hopes offered to us at this

time of some successful Issue of your Determination.

Wherefore, you, having come to Spain, and at the Court of the Catholick King, with desire to match with the House of Austria, it seemed good to us, most affectionately to commend this your Intent, and to give clear testimony, that at this time your Person is the most principal Care that our Church hath. For, seeing you pretend to match with a Catholick Damosel, it may easily be presumed, that the antient Seed of Christian Piety, which so happily flourished in the Minds of British Kings, may, by God's Grace, reverberate in your Breast.. For it is not probable that he that desires such a Wife, should abhor the Catholick Religion, and rejoice at the overthrow of the Holy Roman Church. To which purpose, we have caused continual Prayers to be made, and most vigilant Orisons to the Father of Lights, for you (fair Flower of the Christian World, and only Hope of Great Britam) that he would bring you to the Possession of that most noble Inheritance, which your Ancestors got you by the Defence of the Apostolick Authority, and Destruction of Monsters of Heresies. Call to memory the times of old; ask your Fore-fathers, and they will show you what way leads to Heaven, and perceiving what Path mortal Princes pass to the heavenly Kingdom, behold the Gates of Heaven open. Those most holy Kings of England, which, parting from Rome, accompanied with Angels, most piously reverenced the Lord of Lords, and the Prince of the Apostles in his Chair. Their Works and Examples are Mouths wherewith God speaks, and warneth you, that you should imitate their Customs, in whose Kingdoms you succeed.

when the Faith of the Church testifieth, that they reign with Christ in Heaven, and are exalted above all the Princes of the Earth, and that they, at this time reached you their hands from that most blessed Country, and brought you safely to the Court of the Catholich King, and desire to turn you to the Womb of the Roman Church; wherein, praying most humbly, with most unspeakable Groans, to the God of Mercy, for your Salvation, to reach you the Arms of Apostolical Charity, to embrace most lovingly your Children, so often desired, and These Desires of the to point-out, as it were with a Finger, the blessed Hopes of Heaven. And, truly with continual En-you could do no Act of great r Comfort to all Nations of Christendom, than to deavours of Swarms return the Possession of these most noble Isles to the Prince of the Apostles, whose of Jesuits and Priests Authority for so many Ages was held in England for the defence of the Kingdom, and divine Oracle: which will not be uneasy to do, if you open your Breast (upon which depends the Prosperity of those Kingdoms) to God, who is knocking. we have so great desire of the Honour and Exaltation of your Royal Name,

Can you suffer that they be called Hereticks, and condemned for wicked Men,

Puritans.

Pope were seconded permitted to reside amongst us.

that

that we wish, that you should be called through the whole World (together with your most Serene Father, the Freer of Great-Britain, and Restorer * of ber antient Religion. Whereof we will not lose all bopes, putting them in mind in whose hands, the Hearts of Kings lie, and he that rules all nations of the world, by whose Grace † we will, with all possible Diligence, labour to effect it. And you cannot choose but acknowledge in these Letters the Care of our Apostolical Charity to procure your Happiness, which it will never repent us to have written, if the Reading thereof shall at leastwise stir some Sparks of Catbolick Religion in the Heart of so great a Prince, who we desire may enjoy Eternal Comforts, and flourish with the Glory. of all Virtues.

> Given in Rome, in the Palace of St. Peter, the 201b of April, 1623. In the third of our Pontificado.

The PRINCE of WALES his Reply to the POPE'S LETTER.

'Most Holy Father,

I RECEIVED the Dispatch from your Holiness with great Content, and with that Respect which the Piety and Care wherewith your Holiness writes, doth require: It was an unspeakable Pleasure to me to read the generous Exploits of the Kings my Predecessors, in whose Memory, Posterity hath not given those Praises and Elogies of Honour as were due to them: I do believe that your Holiness hath, set their r xamples before my Eyes, to the end I might imitate them in all my Actions. For in truth they have often exposed their Estates and Lives for the Exaltation of the Holy Chair; and the Courage with which they have assaulted the Enemies of the Cross of Jesus Christ, hath not been less than the Care and Thought which I have, to the end that the Peace and Intelligence which hath hitherto been wanting in Christendom, might be bound with a true and strong Concord. For, has the common Enemy of the Peace watcheth always to put Hatred and Dissertion. amongst Christian Princes; so I believe that the Glory of God requires that we should endeavour to unite them: And I do not esteem it a greater. Honour to be descended from so great Princes, than to imitate them in the Zeal of their Piety. In which it helps me very much to have known the Mind and Will, of our thrice homoured Lord and Father, and the holy Intentions of his Catholick Majesty, to give a happy Concurrence to so laudable a Design: for it grieves him exceedingly to see the great Evils that grow from the Division of Christian Princes, which the Wisdom of your Holiness foresaw, § when it judged the Marriage which you pleased

The Pope well knew that his Design of destroying the Northern Heresy, had been considerably advanced in K. James's time.

vanced in N. James's time.

1. The Roman Strumpet is very industrious to corrupt the Earth with her Fornications, Rev. 19. 2.

1. The Interests of Popers and Tyranny were always found very well to agree, and this Prince was easily persu ded, that his Crown, and the Pope's Chair, had common Friends and common Enemies.

3. The Pope prepared a strange Wite for him, which, according to Scripture-truth, is a dangerous Preparative for a strange God; surely they will turn-away your Heart after their Gods, 1 Kings, 11. 2.

great a Good; for 'tis very certain, that I shall never be so extreamly affectionate to any thing in the World, as to endeavour Alliance with a Prince that hath the same Apprehension of the true Religion with myself: Therefore, I intreat your Holiness to believe, that I have been always very far from Movelties, or to be a Partisan of any Faction against the Catholick, Apostolick, Roman Religion: But, on the contrary, I have sought all Occasions to take-away the Suspicion that mightness upon me, and that I will employ myself for the time to come, to have but one-Religion and one Faith, seeing that we all believe in one Jesus Christ. Having resolved in myself, to spare nothing that I have in the World, and to suffer all manner of Discommodities, even to the hazarding of my Estate and Life, for a thing so pleasing unto God: It rests only that I thank your Holiness for the Permission you have been pleased to afford me, and, I pray God to give you a blessed Health and his Glory, after so much pains which your Holiness takes in his Church.

This Letter to the Pope was presently printed in Spain, in several Languages. And I can shew it you in many Authors of Credit; it is found recorded by Andrew an Chesne, Chronographer to the French King, in his History of England, Scotland, and beland; Lib. 22: The French Mercury (a never-controlled Author) hath it also, as I here give it you, in Tom. 9. p. 510. printed Anno 1623. Mr. James Howel, an Attendant upon the King in the Spanish Expedition, (and who ever remained firm to him, being imprisoned by the Parliament for a Malignant in the time of the War) doth also point at it in his Dodona's Grove, or Vocal Forest, printed Anno 1640. He saith there, pag. 128 : That the Pope was a great Friend to the ' intended Alliance with Spain, and wrote to the Prince. This Letter is also printed in Pryn's Popish Royal Favourite, p. 40. in French, and likewise in English, agreeing exactly with the Copy in Cabela: And Mr. Pryn saith, 'That he hath seen another Copy of this Letter long since in English, being somewhat different from the French in some expressions, though not in Substance; and, perchance, he wrote two of this Nature: but it appears that such Letters really passed between the King and the Pope, by divers ancient printed Copies of them in sundry Languages. Thus speaks Mr. Pryn himself; and you will credit him, because you tell me he was a Convert, and rectified many of his Errors; yet he never retracted, or acknowledged, this to be one.

And now, Sir, to expostulate this Matter with you; Is it credible, that a Man of common Honesty, nay a D.D. who styles himself their Majesties Chaplain, and dedicates to them, that a pretender to Learning and good Manners, who had notice from Rushworth, that there was another Copy of the King's Letter to the Pope, published by several Hands, different from his; that he, who by his own Confession liath Cabala, and uses it to serve-his Purpose, should treat a Person who writes Truth out of the same Author, with the unbecoming Expression,—and that three times over in one Leaf,—of Leave your L——; that such a Man as you, in such

Digitized by Google

N. B.

a Case as this, should say, 'Tis false; you are past all manner of shame; and one would think that you are possessed? But let us see what follows, my bonest Tell-truth.

Pag. 14. you fall upon Dr. Leighton's Case, and call the most barbarous and Dr. Leighton's Case. diabolical Sentence, which Bishop Laud procured to be pronounced, and most cruelly executed upon him, bis Punishment; and say, That you are something of the mind that be met-with hard Fate, and such as, had you been one of his Judges, Twith your present sense of things | you should not have consented to. So that, it seems, you cannot be confident but you might have been as wicked as Laud himself. And by the discovery which you indiscreetly make of yourself a little after, (of which more presently) I have reason to suspect that you would have made the worst Bishop of the two; and then I am sure you had been a very wicked Bishop indeed. You say, Let me tell you, Sir, Dr. Leighton was a great Transgressor, and deserved a severe Punishment. —— Must it be Persecution, to call such a foul-mouth d Person to an Account, and to punish bim? But you, of all Men, Dr. Brazen face, ought to be very tender of justifying the severe punishment of a foul Mouth, lest a Jury of your Neighbours (should you be called to an account, if for nothing more than your malicious slandering of that Reverend Divine Dr. Walker) should find you to be a four-mouth'd Person; for in such a case [according to your present sense of things] I am something of the mind. you would esteem it a hard Fate, to bave your Ears cut, your Nose slit; to be branded in the Face, stand in the Pillory, pay ten thousand Pounds Fine, and be perpetually imprisoned.

You proceed next (pag. 15.) saying, I have look d into the Case of Pryn, Burton, Case of Prynne, Burand Bastwick.

[I do, upon a full consideration of the whole, wish from my Heart ton and Bastwick. their Punishment had been some other way; I do not think that the way of punishing these Persons was at all Politick or Prudent, [because not for the Interest, as things then stood, either of the King or the Church]. And if Bishop Laud had kept in his Study at that time, and not appeared at all, either to hear the Trial, or assist in

much set bis Heart upon.

Whoever weighs this last Paragraph, must agree in what I but now hinted, that you, even you, Doctor; would have been a worse Bishop than Laud. You well approve the punishing of these three Persons; but the way was not Politich or Prudent, because not for the Interest [as things then stood] of King or Church. Let you (subtil Doctor) alone for Mischief, though you have a very unhappy Taient at writing in Defence thereof; you would have done it as effectually, but in a more cunning manner; you would have been found as Arch and Crafty, but a more close Youth; like the Persecutors in Ancient Times, whose Practices are most ingenuously express d by Mr. Marvel in these words; 'In Persecution, the Clergy 'as yet, wisely interposed the Magistrate betwixt themselves and the People, not 'caring, so their End were attained, how odious they render'd him: And you 'may observe, that, for the most part, hitherto, they stood crouching, and shot either 'over the Emperor's Back, or under his Belly: But in process of Time they be-

the Sentence, it had been better for him, and [those Designs of Uniformity he had so

came bolder and open-faced, and persecuted before the Sun at Mid-day; Bishops

grew worse, but Bishopricks every day better and better.

You, Politick Doctor, in your great Wisdom, would have taken a more prudent course than Bishop Land; you would, in your Study, have laid such a Scheme as this; A Jefferies, or a Wright, should have been made Lord Chief-Justice; a Grabam, and a Burton, should have pack'd a Jury of London Tories, to give such a Verdict as they should have directed: Hereby these Gentlemen should have been Whip'd, Pilloried, Stigmatized, and what else Bishop Hollingworth pleas'd, and all by the Hands of the Laiety, and that according to Law; the Bishop, good Man, neither assisting at Trial, nor Sentence, but close at his Book, as innocent as a wild Boar, and as barmless as a Tyger.

Well, it had been better for Laud, and those Designs of Uniformity which he had

so much set his keart upon.

Laud's design of an Union with Rome.

And pray, tell me, Sir, in all Love, what Uniformity was this which thus run in Laud's Head, and which you seem so much to approve? It must certainly be the honest Design of coming to a due Temper, to a uniting of Protestants: No, no, nothing like it. Mr. Wbitlock was a good Man; and you say, pag. 14, That you do not in the least question the Truth of what he writes. Take, then, his Account of this Monster, rather than Martyr, and you will see which way his Head turn'd. Whitl. Mem. pag. 97. 'In Arch-Bishop Laud's Diary, under his Hand, (produced in ' Evidence against him at his Trial) 'are Passages of his being offered to be made a Cardinal; which he said, that he could not suffer till Rome were other than

He wickedly and traiterously designed, that, upon the Pope's yielding, in some few Points, (as the Common Prayers to be continued in English, and such other Trifles,) he would deliver-over the possession of these most noble Isles to the Prince of the Apostles.

Wbitl. pag. 92. It was proved against him, that he should say, 'The Pope was 'not Antichrist, but the Head of the Church; and that the Protestant Religion, and Romish Religion, were all one; and, if the one was false, so was the other.

- He chid Dr. Hall (as in Whitlock, p. 91.) for giving the Holy Father the Epithets of Antichristian, &c. He held the Pope to be Metropolitan Bishop of the World.
- 'He furnished the King's Chapel, (they are Mr. Whitlock's own words, p. 85.) that Seminary Priests would come thither for their Devotion and Adoration; and some of them were instanced, (this was at his Trial still) who said they knew no 'difference between their Churches and this Chappel, and some other of our "Churches, as they were ordered.

He endeavours to lute.

To this I shall subjoin a few Words out of Rusbworth's Third Collection, Vol. 2. make the King abso- pag. 818. Arch-Bishop Laud, endeavoured to advance the Power of the Council-Table, the Canons of the Church, and the King's Prerogative, above the Laws of the Land; and said, that, as long as he sat at the Council-Board, they should I know, that an Order of that Board should be of equal Force with an Act of Par-' liament.

' liament. And at another time said, that he would crush them to pieces that would not yield to the King's power. He styled the Parliament Puritans, and com-'mended the Papists for harmless and peaceable Subjects. He said, 'That there must be a blow given to the Church, such as had not been given, before it could be brought to Conformity.

Was not this a rare Head of the Church of England? Why may not a Man for once, and not practise it, borrow your Words, (dear Doctor) pag. 53, and say, I cannot think Laud would have talked thus, unless he had been acted by seven Devils

worse than himself; and then I am sure they must be Devils indeed?

But no more of Laud in this place; I return to you, Mr. Chaplain at Aldgate. Though you do not commend the doing of the Business of Pryn, Burton, and Bastwick, in Laud's imprudent way, and that for a weighty Reason, because you would have done it better. You proceed, pag. 16, saying, The Justice of the Nation ought not to be afraid of accounting with such hold Men, as they shewed themselves. Mr. Burton, speaking of the Bishops; instead of Pillars, calls them The offensive words Caterpillers; instead of Fathers, Step-fathers. O horrid! is this true? Why, this in Mr. Burton's book. was almost as bad as his laying-open the Innovations in Doctrine, Worship, and Ceremonics, which had lately crept into the Church, and wishing the People to beware of them: which I mention to be charged upon him; and I question whether bis Ears, and 5000 l. Fine, would have paid the Reckoning, if Hollingworth had been in Laud's place.

But, what then would have aton'd for Dr. Bastwick's Transgression? He (say you) in his Answer to the Information against him, inserted these words; That the Prelates are Invaders of the King's Prerogative; Contemners and The words in Dr. Bastwick's book that Despisers of the Holy Scripture; Advancers of Popery and Superstition, were the ground of Idolatry and Profaneness: Also they abuse the King's Authority, to the his cruel punishment. Oppression of his Loyal Subjects; and therein exercise great Cruelty, Tyranny, and Injustice; and, in Execution of those impious Performances, they shew neither Wit, Honesty, nor Temperance; nor are they either Servants of God, or of the King, but of the Devil: being Enemies to God, and of every living Thing that is good: And concluded, that he, the said Dr. Bastwick, is ready to maintain these things thus putdown.

Now, seeing that they cut-off his Ears, for these Expressions, without bringing the Point to trial; I will put myself in his place, and stake mine against yours, that I will make-good every Syllable in this Charge against that Caterpiller Laud, and some of his Brethren; when I see you take it to pieces, and say, in your Rhetorical Flights, This is false; That's a Lie. And I will give it under my hand into the Bargain, that I will prove that these Bishops were a Generation of Vipers, which on any terms would have eaten their way to Preferment, through the Intrails of either Church or State. You may make the best on't, Doctor.

In your 17th Page, you affirm, That these three Men suffered for Libelling the Government, and putting Indignities and Affronts upon the then legal Admini-

I have shown you the heinous Transgressions of Dr. Bastwick and Mr. Mr. Prynne's offence. Burton; but you leave us in the dark as to Mr. Pryn's; therefore, pray, let this put you in mind, when you write next, to tell the World what those Indignities and Affronts were, for which Mr. Pryn suffered; because I have been told, 'twas for publishing a Book, which Dr. Buckner, Chaplain to the Arch-bishop, (I do do not mean the Villain Laud, but that excellent Pattern for Bishops, Dr. Abbot) did approve and license to be printed.

Having finished your Vindication of the Punishment of these Persons, you dismiss it thus, page 17. And so much by way of Answer' to that part of your Book, by which you have endeavoured to blacken the good King's Reign, and to run-down the Reputation of Bishop Laud; and to express your Indignation against me for saying otherways he was a very good Man. I see a Man cannot, for his Heart, prevail upon this Hare-brain'd Doctor, to let Laud alone; but, whether we will or not, he will go-on to murder the Reputation of this his Martyr: You runon thus, (without Fear, Wit, or Honesty,) I say still he was a good Man, and have a very good Man to back me, Judge Whitlock, a Man of a clear Credit, and sound Judgement; who, as his Son tells me in his Memoirs, said of him, that he had too much Fire, but was a just and good man. [This is to purpose, if it hath the necessary ingredient of Truth: But I observe now, that, when you have a sure Second, one upon whom you can depend, you constantly quote the Rage as well as Author; but you left me here, very unkindly, to turn-over a large folio; to find Judge Whitloch's Character of Laud; and at length I pitched upon it in the Mem. page 32, in these very words: - Laud was more busy in Temporal Affairs and Matters of State, than his Predecessors of late times had been: Judge Whitlock, (who was anciently, and thoroughly acquainted with him, and his Disposition,) would say, he was too full of Fire, though a just and good Man; and that his want of Experience in State-Matters, and his too much Zeal for the Church, and Heat, if he proceeded in the way he was then in, would set this Nation on fire. But this you intended to conceal: And now I think that the Judge did not only speak like a very good Man, but like a Prophet; and I wish you much Joy of Mr. Whitlock's Authority; whom, some will tell you, you had much better have let-alone.

Judge Whitlock's opinion of Archbishop Laud.

> Well; that I may once for all rid my hands of this troublesome Bishop, such you make him to this day, I will give you his Character from another very good Man, a Person of clear Credit and sound Judgement, we all know, that is, Sir Harbettle Grimston; 'tis in his Speech upon the Arch-bishop's Impeachment, in 1641, which you will find printed in the Continuation of Rushworth's Collections,

now published.

Mr. Grimston's speech against him.

We are (saith he) fallen upon the great Man, the Arch-bishop of Canterbury: look upon him as he is in his Highness, and he is the Sty of all pestilent Filth, that hath infected the State, and Government of the Church and Common-wealth; look upon him in his Dependencies, and he is the Man, the only Man that hath raised and advanced all those (that, together

together with himself, have been the Authors and Causers of all the Ruins, Miseries, and Calamities we now groan-under.

Who is it but he only, that brought-in the Earl of Strafford, a fit Instrument and Spirit to act and execute all his wicked and bloody Designs in these Kingdoms?

Who is it but he only, that brought in Secretary Windebank, the very

Broker and Pander to the Whore of Babylon?

Who is it but he only, that hath advanced Bishop Manwaring, the Bishop of Bath and Wells, the Bishop of Oxford, and Bishop Wren; the

least of all, but the most unclean one?

These are Men that should have fed Christ's Flock; but they are the Wolves that devoured them: It was the Happiness of our Church, when the Zeal of God's House did eat-up the Bisbops; glorious and brave Martyrs, that went to the Stake in the Defence of the Protestant Religion: but the Zeal of these Bishops, bath been to eat-up and persecute the Church. He hath been, and is, the common Enemy to all Goodness and good Men, So much for this, otherways good Man. What have we next?

You say, Page 18, I come now to make some Reflections upon your Of Laud's Liturgy Scotch Story, which you have told with so much Venom and Partiality, for Scotland. that you have every way acted like your malicious and ungodly self.

—— You begin with a Relation of Bishop Laud's (what, more of Laud still?) composing a Common-Prayer Book for them; and tell us, how the Mutinies and Disturbances in Scotland sprung from thence; which truly I am very sorry for.

'Tis well; we are agreed in this point, that from the imposing this Liturgy, the Scottish Troubles did arise; so that, hitherto, there's no Ungodliness in my Story. But (you proceed) I am sure it had been better for them, and [the Christian Religion] professed amongst them, if they had submitted to the Usage of that Book, and continued it ever since.

This, in truth, Sir, is ungodly and malicious all over; you are sure it had been better for the Christian Religion, &c. Why not Protestant Religion? CHRISTIAN RELIGION is indeed, in its true and genuine sense, so good an Expression, that a better cannot be found for the only true Religion: but these Laudean Churchmen, the Papists in disguise, must be narrowly watched; for 'tis notoriously known, that they hold the Roman-Church to be a true Church, though we know 'tis idolatrous. We must hold them to the Shiboleth, [PROTESTANT] when they pretend to tell us what is best for the Christian Religion: Laud himself spoke at the rate which you (crafty Turn-Coat) here do; his Letters expressed his fear of delay in bringing-in the Common-Prayer-book, for the great good (not of the Church of Scotland, but) of the Church.

My

My Lord Bishop of Salisbury may surely be allowed to be a more competent Judge, in this matter, than you: He saith, Page 30, of his Memoires; 'The Liturgy had some Alterations from the English, which made it more invidious, 'and less satisfactory.——The imposing it, really varied from their former Practices and Constitutions.——Page 33, The Lords petitioned, complaining against the Liturgy, and Book of Canons; offering, under the highest Penalties, to prove they contained things both contrary to Religion and the Laws of the Land. Page 36, The Earls of Traquaire and Roxburgh, by Letter to the King, advised him to secure the People of that which they so much apprehended, the fear of Innovation of Religion; saying, that they found few, or none, well satisfied.—Page 33, The Earl of Traquaire went to Court, and gave account, that all the Troubles were occasioned by the introducing the Liturgy: with which scarce a Member of the Council (except the Bishops) was well-satisfied; ' neither were all these cordially for it; for the Archbishop of St. Andrews, from the beginning, had withstood these Designs; and the Archbishop of Glasgow ' was worse pleased.

See, now, what the Scottish Nation offered against this Liturgy, which you, Doctor, are sure, it had been better for them, and the Christian Religion, if they had received and used it; Their Commissioners in their Charge against Laud, (exhibited in our Parliament, in 1641,) say, Page 11, &c.) 'This Book inverteth the 'Order of the Communion in the Book of England; of the divers secret Reasons' of this charge, we mention one only: In joining the Spiritual Project and

of this change, we mention one only: In joining the Spiritual Praise and Thanksgiving, which is in the Book of England, pertinently after the Communion, with the Prayer of Consecration before the Communion; and that, under

the Name of Memorial or Oblation, for no other end, but that the Memorial and Sacrifice of Praise, mentioned in it, may be understood according to the

Popish Meaning; Bellar. de Missa, lib. 2, cap. 21. Not of the Spiritual Sacri-

fice, but of the Oblation of the Body of the Lord.

The corporal Presence of Christ's Body is also to be found here; for the words of the Mass-Book, serving to this purpose, which are not to be found in the Book of England, are taken-in here; Almighty God is incalled [or invoked], that, of his Almighty Goodness, he may vouchsafe so to bless and sanctify with his Word and Spirit, these Gifts of Bread and Wine, that they be unto us the Body and Blood of Christ.—On the other part, the Expressions of the Book of England, at the delivery of the Elements; "Of feeding on Christ by Faith, and of eating and drinking in remembrance that Christ died for thee," are utterly deleted.

Now one would think, that, if such a wbiffling Doctor as you'are, were not past all shame, (as you affirm me to be) it would make you blush, (but we may sooner expect to see you burst) that you, (who appeared but now very tender of passing a Judgement upon the Actions of the accursed Star-Chamber), should be found so pragmatical, so arrogant, as to censure King Charles the First, (who damn'd this very Book by Act of Parliament) and the Kingdom and Church of Scotland in this Point;

Digitized by Google

Some expressions in a it bordering upon the Popish doctrine of Transubstantiation,

Point; and declare, That you are sure it bad been better for them, and the Christian Religion, if they had submitted to the Usage of this Babylonish Book and continued it ever since. But you are so inflexible, that there's little hope of reconciling you to that Nation, (I had almost said, to the King, and Queen) unless this well-approved Liturgy be sent-down once more, and entertained there. For then (you say, pag. 18.) the worship of God would be performed with [Order and Decency], and in a way suitable to his Divine Nature and Perfections: And, consequently, could not have been nauseous to the soberly-wise, and seriously-devous, part of that Kingdom, [as now it is jby reason of those rude and undigested Addresses, those extempore and unpremeditated Expostulations with God; those hold and saucy Applications, that, for want of a good Book, or a well-framed Form of Prayer, [of their own before-hand, and committed to memory] are so commonly made use of in their Pulpits; too many of the accounts of which we have lately, since the great Turn in Scotland, received from very good Hands and undeniable Testimonies.

This is, I am sure, a nauseating, if not an ungodly and prophane, way of Talking: You, poor, weak Man as you are, run-away with a gross Mistake; that because there were Bishops in Scotland till the great Turn, (as you term the legal Settlement of that Church by their present Majesties) they had also a Common-Prayer-Book: but, (believe me, or let it alone, as you please,) they had no such thing; it was detested, even by many of their Episcopal Clergy. I shall not pretend to remark upon your most unbecoming and malicious Representation of the praying of the present Ministers of that Kingdom; but, 'tis well known that their Divines are of good Ability, and every way well qualified for the discharge of the Ministerial Function. And, whereas you pretend to recommend a well-framed Form of Prayer of their own, before-hand, and committed to Memory, for the prevention of rude and undigested Addresses, bold and saucy Applications; I would fain know of you, what Canon allows a Minister of the Church of England to frame his own Prayer, and to mutter out a good part of it, so as nobody can tell what he says: And, then, to rise constantly in his Voice, when he comes to the Ox--- and

But, to talk seriously of this most serious Matter; pray, see what the Devout and Learned Bishop of Salishury says of such Doctors as yourself, in his Sermon, Jan. 30, 1680, pag. 9. 'Many weak Persons, who, by the Heat of their Tempers, are inclined to entertain Prejudices, hold, that Addressing to God in Prayer, and the being guided by the inward Motions of Grace, and God's Holy Spirit, are but illusions of Fancy, if not the Contrivances of designing Men.

Pag. 10. 'Earnestness in Prayer, and depending on the inward Assistances of God's Holy Spirit: How have Men, who know or value these things little them'selves, taken occasion to disparage them with much Impudence and Scorn?

Now, Sir, upon the whole Matter, I do think it might tend to the Publick Peace, if my Lord Risbop of London would please to suspend such a dry and insipid Doctor as you are, from publishing even ex-tempore and unpremeditated Defences, and to injoin you a well-framed Form of Defending, so that it may be performed with

with Order and Decency, and not be exposed to Contempt and Scorn, by reason of any rude and undigested Addresses, bold and saucy Applications, to their most Sacred Majesties, the Most Reverend and Right Reverend, the Arch-Bishops and Bishops, &c. For I perswade myself, that the Extempore Rhimes of some Antick Jack-Pudding, may deserve Printing better than your empty and nonsensical Pamphlets; and that it had been better to have set some Ballad-singer to have bewailed the King's Misfortunes, than so ridiculous an Orator as you are found to be, who are so insipid, that there's not the least Spirit in any thing you say.

Where are you now, Sir? Aye, bu this Bold-face, says, This Liturgy [for Scotland] was not only composed by Bishop Laud, but sent by him to the Pope and Cardinals for their Approbation; and this Story I must not dare to deny. But, with your leave, Mr. Modesty, I will venture upon that piece of Confidence, as to tell you. I do not believe it, and that, because you assert it. Now, I do agree that I did say so; and I am indeed a Bold-face, if I have not good Authority for what I thus charge upon Arch-Bishop Laud; for no Man's bare Assertion may pass in such a Case as this. But there is more in this Matter, than the short-sighted Chaplain at Aldgate is

aware of.

Proofs that the Scots Common Prayerbook composed by Laud, was sent to Rome for the approbation of the Pope and Cardinals.

You may find the Story of Laud's sending the Scots Common-Prayer, to be approved by the Pope and Cardinals (as I told it) in a Book of good Credit, entituled, A new Survey of the West-Indies, wrote by a Reverend Divine of the Church of England, Mr Thomas Gage, Minister of Deal, in Kens; 'tis in page 280, in the Folio Impression. He there tells you, 'That, being a Friar, he went to Rome with Letters of Recommendation to Cardinal Barbarini, the Pope's Nephew, intituled, The Prosector of England: That, coming acquainted with Father Fitz-Herbert, Rector of the English Colledge of Jesuits, he [Fitz-Herbert] highly praised Arch-Bishop Land, and said, I hat he had, not long since, sent a Common-Prayer-Book (which he had composed for the Church of Scotland) to be first viewed and approved by the Pope and Cardinals; and that they liked it very well for Protestants, to be trainedup in a Form of Prayer and Service; yet the Cardinals (first giving him Thanks for his Respect) sent him word, that he [the Pope] thought it was not fitting for Scotland. That Father Fitz-Herbert told him, he was Witness of all this, being sent-for by the Cardinal to give him his Opinion about it, and of the Temper of the Scots. And that Laud, hearing the Censure of the Cardinals concerning his Intention and Form of Prayer, to ingratiate himself the more in their Favour, corrected some things in it, and made it more harsh and unreasonable for that Nation.

This good Man, Mr. Gage, after he had there related the Matter as above, expresses himself thus; 'This most true Relation of Arch-Bishop Laud, I have oft spoke-of in private Discourse, and publickly in Preaching; and I could not, in Conscience, omit it here, both to vindicate the just Censure of Death, which the Parliament gave against him, and to reprove the ungrounded Opinion and Error of some ignorant Spirits, who have, since his Death, highly exalted and cried him

up for a Martyr.

You may also find something like this of Mr. Gage in Bishop Burnet's Memoirs, pag.



pag. 83, he relates, 'That in the year 1638, one Abernetby, who, from a Jesuit, turned a zealous Presbyterian, spread a Story in Scotland, (which took wonderfully,) of the Liturgy of that Kingdom, having been sent to Rome to some Cardinals to be re-

wised by them; and that Signior Con (the Pope's Nuncio to the Court of England)

had shewed it to Abernethy at Rome. Indeed, the Bishop adds, That the Marquess of

Hamilton wrote to Con about it; but he protested seriously, he never had so much as heard of a Liturgy designed for Scotland, till he came last to England; that

he had never seen Abernetby at Rome but once; and, finding him light-headed,

had never again taken notice of him.'

Now, it takes not much from the Credit of Abernetby's Relation, that Con denied it: for it must be noted, that he was a Jesuit; and, according to the Tenets of the

Romish Church, 'twas lawful, if not his Duty, to lie for Holy Church.

You come next, with a most convincing Argument, to shew the Falsehood of my last Assertion: What! (say you, pag. 19.) Bishop Laud send to the Pope and Cardinals for their Approbation of a Liturgy almost the same with ours? I think this vexatious Ghost will never be laid; I thought we had done with Laud; but here he appears again: What! Laud send to the Pope to approve a Liturgy almost the same with ours? Aye, Laud was the most likely Bishop in England to do it. For you say, That bis Heart [was set] upon Designs of Uniformity: And was not this the most probable Course to accomplish those designs? Mr. Wbitlick (whom you will credit) shews (as I but now told you) that Laud declared, That the Protestant Religion, and the Romish Religion, were all one; and, if the one was false, so was the other. That he brought the Romisb and English Churches (I think I must say Steeple-houses, to be rightly understood) to such an Uniformity, that the Popish Priests knew no difference between theirs and ours. Why, then, may we not believe that, in pursuit of that Plot of Uniformity, which his Heart was so much set upon, he sought the Pope's Approbation of the Liturgy; whom (as Mr. Wbitlock himself declares) he held to be the Metropolitan Bishop of the World; so that Laud was to him, (as that Traitor, Turner, the late Bishop of Ely, was to Sancroft,) but a younger brother?

Proceeding to argue the Point, you say; Sure, Sir, you have forgot the Bull of the Pope, in the 10th of Queen Elizabeth, which commands all his pretended Catholick Children, not to attend upon the publick Liturgical Devotions of our Church; and you have forgot that [the Papists, upon that account, and by virtue of the Authority of that Bull, have declined our Publick Service ever since]; and therefore it is very likely Bishop Laud should send a Liturgy to Rome for its Approbation. Most likely, for this very reason; and one who did not well know you to be a Hare-brain'd Blunderbuss, would be ready to conclude, with that ingenious Jacobite, of the Lacedamonian Society, who, inveighing against my Letter, told a Friend of mine, it must be answered by a better Pen; for the Doctor writes, said he, as though he play'd booty. I appeal to any Man of common Understanding, whether a better Reason can be invented, to persuade the World of the Probability of Laud's sending the Common-Prayer Book to be approved at Rome, than that which you have here assigned: The point is already settled, that his Head was set upon Designs of Uniformity; the Pope was his elder Brother;

the Papists came to the Common-Prayers of our Church for the first 10 years of Q. Elizabeth; and by consequence, might have so done to this day, had not Pope Pius the 5th prohibited them. Let any Man shew me a more probable way to obtain a Repeal of that Bull, (which hath made the Papists ever since decline our Liturgical Church-Devotions,) and to bring them to Church again, or, rather, to bring us to go to Church with them, than by introducing a Liturgy allowed and approved by his Holiness; a Liturgy, in which (as I said, and you do not deny) all the material Parts of the Man-Book seemingly were; and wherein Transubstantiation was rather allowed, than denied. But that empty Head of yours is carried round, so that you do not know what is fit to be said. What have we next?

Page 20. Well, Sir, you say, If [the Common-Prayer-Book] was sent into Scotland; pray, let me ask you one Question; In whose Name, and by whose Authority, was it sent?

The Answer is as obvious as short, and you needed not to have sent to Switzer-land to have a Resolution in the point. The Common-prayer-book was sent into Scotland in the name of one, who had not Authority to impose it upon the Scotlaccording to their Laws.

You go-on, saying, Why, if they did not like it, did they not, first, submissively felition their lawful King, and let bim know bow disgustful the Liturgy was to many of his

Subjects in that Kingdom?

Why, 'tis most evident, from all the Historians of that time, that they did, in the very beginning, petition in the most submissive manner against the imposing this Liturgy; and that thereupon, after the first reading it, in the great Church of Editburgh, upon the 23d of July, 1637, the Council of Scotland yielded that it should not be further urged by the Bishops, till his Majesty's Pleasure were known: Upon which, the Petitioners returned satisfied to their Habitations. But, upon the 18th of October, there being a great conflux of People at Edinburgh, to hear the King's Determination, a *Proclamation* was published, commanding them, upon pain of Rebellion, to depart the City; and, shortly after, the King commanded the Privy-Council to receive no more Petitions against the Common-Prayer-Book. Nevertheless, you confidently demand, Why, if they did not like it, did they not, first, submissively petition? But the Scots shall here answer for themselves; take their own words in their Charge exhibited in Parliament against Laud; 'Our Supplications (say they) were many against this Book. But Canterbury procured them to be answered with terrible 'Proclamations. We were constrained to use the remedy of Protestations: but, for our Protestations, Canterbury procured us to be declared Rebels and Traitors in • all the Parish-Kirks of England. When we were seeking to possess our Religion in Peace, against these Devices and Novations, Canterbury kindled War against us.—Our Scottish Prelates petitioned that something might be abated of the English Ceremonics; as the Cross in Baptism, &c. But he would not only have these kept, but others super-added; which was nothing else but adding Fuel to the Fire.

Read also their Expostulation in their Remonstrance, 1639, Pag. 4. Certainly, Posterity will hardly believe (as we, who have seen it, cannot but wonder) how a hath come to pass, that we should have so long petitioned our Native Prince to do

'us Justice, whereof he is Debtor to his People; and to hear our just Complaints against the Usurpation of a few Men, who were undermining the professed Religion, and the Government of the State; and to suffer us to live according to our Laws; and yet that we could never be heard, nor answered, in the point of our just Desires. Far less will they guess what hath been the ground of that merit and trust of one domineering Prelate, in the Affection of the King, that it should be more forcible to diswade, than all the Supplications and Intercessions of so ancient and faithful a Nation should have power to move.'

Well, what say you next, Mr. Tittle-tattle? The Scats took a Covenant ogainst

Compliance with the Church of England.

Against Compliance with the Church of England; Aye, now 'tis out; there's the ground of the Quarrel; the Scots traiterously refused to comply with Bp. Laud: But they shall speak for themselves; they answer you thus, Doctor. 'We are free of the heavy Censures of Rebellion and Treason, which are so ordinarily thundered-out, that they are become the less formidable to us. We are supported with this inward Testimony, that we fear God, and still honour the King; although our Adversaries will not be pleased, except we will follow their Rules, which are not unlike those of the Jesuits, which were found at Padue, when they were expelled the Territory of Venice: One of them was, [that Men should take heed, that they do not too much press, or inculcate, the Grace of God:] Another was, [that Men must believe the Hierarchical Church, although it tells us, that that is black which our Eye judgeth to be white.] Unto which we may add the third, invented by Ignatius Loyola, [of blind Obedience,] which we have no mind to practise.' But, to move-forward.

Page 22. We find (say you,) their Seditious Remonstrances, Declarations and

Pampblets, were dispersed.

Now, I cannot find that Mr. Whitloch, whom you quote, informs you, that their Remonstrances, &c. were seditious: this is maliciously foisted-in by you; and, if you were in Scotland, you would, as you deserve, be severely punished (which you

would call Persecution) upon the Statute against Leasing-makers.

Mr. Whitlock, in Pag. 28, which you cite, gives this Relation; 'About the year 1560, the Earl of Murray, with Knox, Buchanan, and others, gave such a shock to Popery, as made every thing (and, by consequence, Episcopacy) which stood near it, to reel. He then shews, how Episcopacy and Presbytery took their turns of Government: and, giving an Account of the King's Resolution to enforce the Common-Prayer-Book; and, by an Army, to bring the Scots to obedience, (or, as you phrase it, to Compliance with the Church of England); he saith, 'That, because this was the Bishops War, it was held fit that they should contribute largely towards the Preservation of their own Hierarchy; and, accordingly, the Clergy were assembled by the Bishops, in their Dioceses, and invited to a liberal Aid.

I shall now, (Sir,) in a short Digression, shew you, from Mr. Whitlock, how this was growing-up, from being the Bishops, to be a Popish War. He relates, Page 31. That the Queen employed Sir Kenelm Digby and Mr. Walter Moun-

' tarue,

* tague, (who at that very time, as we have it in Gage's Survey of the West-Indies, p. 209, stood Candidates at Rome for a Cardinal's-Cap,) ' to labour the Papists for a liberal Contribution, which they gained; and Sir Basil Brooks, a Person afterwards very active in the Irish Rebellion, was appointed Treasurer for the 6 Monies, thus raised by the Queen's Solicitation for this War against the Scots: hereupon some styled the Forces raised against the Scots, in the beginning of the year 1640, THE POPISH ARMY.' But to return to what I intended; I will shew you the heads of the Scotch Declaration, which Mr. Whitlock puts-down upon the Page you mention; and, that I may not be accused of Partiality, take, first, the King's Declaration;— His Majesty saith, he sets it forth to inform his Subjects of the seditious Practices of some in Scotland, seeking the overthrow of Regal Power, under the false pretext of Religion, &c. He takes God to witness, he is constrained by their Treasons, to take Arms for the safety of that and this Kingdom. He resolves to maintain Episcopacy there, &c.'

The Scots answer; 'That, though the Secrets of God's Ways cannot be sounded, 'yet, considering his Providence in their personal Affairs, the Lord is about some great Work on Earth; for the Cup of Affliction, propined to other Reformed 'Kirks, is now presented to them: ——That, instead of a gracious return to their humble Petitions from time to time, the return is a late Declaration libell'd ' [or, perhaps, levelled] against them; though the Gates of Hell shall not prevail against their Cause, and the Kingdom of Jesus Christ now in question. Which ' Declaration proceeds from the Unchristian Prelates and their Party. They conclude, setting-forth their long suffering of the Prelates Insolency, &c. and fearing Popery to be introduced. And they say, for doing any harm to England, cursed be their "Breasts, if they harbour any such Thought, &c."

Your next Accusation, Doctor, against the Scots, is, page 23. The King consents to a Treaty; Commissioners were appointed on both sides; and they came to a Conclusion, agreeing upon seven Articles; The King justly performed the Articles on his side, notwithstanding the first Article agreed-upon, was " to disband the Forces of Scotland within 24 hours;" and yet these perfidious Persons kept part of their Forces in a body, and all their Officers in pay, and kept-up their Fortifications at Leith. And now, let the Reader judge by this, how deserving these Men are of such Commendations as this pestilent and bold Letter-Writer gives them.

The Scots behave the King, after the Pacification.

N. B.

Take a full Answer to this Slander, from the Representation of the Proceedings with honour towards of the Kingdom of Scotland, since the late Pacification, by the Estates of the Kingdom, pag. 35. 'We, within the space of forty-eight hours, (the time appointed by 'his Majesty,) dissolved our Army. Concerning the Officers, we were careful, both to observe that Article of the Pucification to his Majesty, and also to keep promise to them; which did bind us—not to hold them in Military Pay, but—to vouchsafe them Entertainment, till they should be restored to their own, or called to other Service: which ought not to be taken for any Breach, Contempt, or 'Disobedience, but for an observation of the Law of Nature and common Equity;

they being our own Natives, and having forsaken their Places and Means for the Defence of Us and their Native Country. Less than this neither could they expect, nor we perform, although the Peace had been most firmly settled.

"All Forts and Castles were speedily restored, although they be now used for a 'Terror and Invasion against us. Some part of the Fortifications at Leith was de-'molished, for his Majesty's Satisfaction; and the whole remitted by his Majesty

' to the Town of Edinburgh, as having a right to the same.'

See further what they say in Refutation of this vile Calumny, in their Remonstrance concerning the present Troubles, pag. 7. 'We delivered all Places into ' his Majesty's Hands, which were desired, in testimony of our Obedience; and, 'although they might have been, in our Hands, Pledges of Assurance for perform-'ance of those Articles that were agreed to be granted in the following Assembly and Parliament; and now, contrary to our Expectation, are turned into Engines of Terror and Fetters of Slavery, to frustrate us from obtaining the benefit of ' that Capitulation.'

Now, to put you, Doctor, to eternal silence, I shall subjoin an unconquerable Evidence against your bold Assertion; The Pacification was made upon the 18th of June 1639; and upon the 24th, the Marquess of Hamilton received possession of the Castle of Edinburgh for the King. This is in Bishop Burnet's Memoirs of the two Hamiltons, pag. 144; which is a Book you have heard-of, though, I doubt, have never seen, (you shall presently see why I say so.) If this Treatise be partial, it must incline to the King against the Scots, because the Marquess was deeply engaged in the Royal Cause: This was not only wrote by the Bishop when he was a Chaplain to King Charles the Second, from the Marquesses own Memoirs, but is dedicated to the King, and was published with his Royal Testimonial, that he had seen and approved it. And is there room now for any Man to believe, that, if the Scots had not acted with the highest Simplicity and Integrity in this Treaty, they would have instantly and voluntarily quitted the castle of Edinburgh, (which was the best Strength in that Kingdom) to his Majesty? And now let the Reader judge by this, whether one word that such a paltry Doctor as you utters, out of your Pulpit, be to be credited?

N. B.

Well, what comes next? even what lies uppermost, pag. 23. And, whereas of the king's causing this scandalizing Person has the confidence to assert, that the King, when he came the Scotch Pacificahome, burnt, by the common Hangman, the Pacification he had made: I must tell the common hanghim, he talks, (as he has done all along throughout his Letter,) falsely, and [against man. his own Reading and Knowledge:] and for this I appeal to Bishop Burnet in his Memoirs of the two Hamiltons; where, pag. 782, he acquaints us, That the Scots published a false and scandalous Paper, entituled, Some of his Majestie's Treaties with his Subjects of Scotland; which was so Untrue and Seditious, that it was burnt by the Hands of the Common Hangman. And are not you a base Person, then, to obtrude such a Lie upon the World as you have done? But it is no wonder; the Father, whose Cause you have served in this rude and seditious Libel, is the Father of Lies.

Why, now, most unhappy Doctor, you are catch'd again; and, whereas you say, that



that I talk falsely against my reading, it will be found that you talk at random for want of reading. I told you, that I suspected you had never seen Bishop Burnet's Memoirs; you shall now see my reason for it; You quote pag. 782, and there are but 436 Pages in that Book, and 47 in the Appendix. And, for my part, I have read it some Years since, and now have again turn'd it over, but cannot find therein the Story for which you vouch him: I am apt to think, (as you told me, pag. 50.) That some crafty Knave, finding you ready to pick-up any Story, whereby you might serve your Cause, had a mind to put a Trick upon you, and to expose the Truth of the rest of your Book, by telling you, That Bishop Burnet's I vidence against the Scots, would outweigh a thousand Witnesses: and that he had declared what false Loons they were, in a certain Book called his Memoirs. But is not he a Blockhead, then, that will be so imposed-upon?

Bishop Burnet's ac-

Nevertheless, to deal openly, and without reserve, in this Matter; I find these count of this matter. Memoirs speaking thus, (pag. 143.) 'When the Scotch Commissioners came-back to the Camp, they gave an account of their Negotiation, and, besides Articles of Treaty, they produced another Paper, [which passed among all for the Conditions of Agreement; it was a Note containing some Points which were alledged to have been agreed-to at Berwick, verbally, though not set-down in the written Treaty; which was made-up of some down-right Mistakes, [this Term comes something short of False, Scandalous, Untrue and Seditious, which are your Epithets; and of other things which the King in discourse had indeed said, but 'not positively, nor as a Determination on which he had concluded.

> It were now worth the knowing, what, in particular, these down-right Mistakes. and these other things, were; but, this History leaving us in the dark therein, I shall shew you what was the main thing which gave distaste, in that Paper which, Bishop Burnet saith, passed among all for the Conditions of the Agreement; and how the Estates of Scotland justified that Paper from the Imputation of Mistakes. The Paper is intituled, Some Conditions of his Majesty's Treaty with his Subjects of Scotland, before the English Nobility.

> 'It is there remembered, that, it being with all Instancy and Humility prest, 'Saturday, June 15, that his Majesty would satisfy that main Desire of his Subjects, by declaring, that he would quit Episcopacy; his Majesty did answer, That it was onot sought in our Desires. And, when it was replied, That our first Desire to ' have the Acts of the General Assembly ratified," imported the same; His Majesty 4 acknowledged it to be so, and averred, that he did not refuse it, but would advise ' till Monday the 17th. At which time his Majesty, being prest to give some Siginification of his quitting Episcopacy: And, it being plainly shown to his Majesty, That, if he would labour to maintain Episcopacy, it would breed a miserable Schism ' in this Kirk, and make such a Rupture and Division in this Kingdom, as would • prove uncurable: And, if his Majesty would let the Kirk and Country be freed of them, his Majesty would receive as hearty and dutiful Obedience as ever Prince received of a People: His Majesty answer'd, that he could not prelimit and ' forestall

- forestall his Voice, but had appointed a Free Assembly, which might judge of all Ecclesiastical Matters; the Constitutions whereof he promised to ratify in the ensuing Parliament.
- See, now, what the Estates of Scotland said, in vindication of themselves in this Matter; you will find them thus expressing it, in their Representation of the Proceedings of the Kingdom, page 15.
- After much Agitation, and many Consultations, his Majestie's Declaration, touching the intended Pacification, was read to our Commissioners; who, upon their Dislike and Exceptions, taken both at the Matter and the Expressions, as being contrary to our Minds, and prejudicial to our Cause, did humbly remonstrate, that the Declaration, as it was conceived, could not give Satisfaction to us from whom they were sent. His Majesty was graciously pleased to command some words to be deleted, and other words to be changed; and many parts thereof were, by verbal Promises and Interpretation, from his Majesty's own Mouth, mitigated: Which, in our Estimation, were equal to that which was written, some of the Counseliors of England assuring our Commissioners, that what was spoken and promised bef re Men of Honour, and in the Face of two Armies, was no less certain, and would (no doubt) te as really performed, as if it bad been written in Capital Letters; which therefore were diligently observed, carefully remembered, and punctually related, by our Commissioners, at their delivering of his Majesty's Diclaration to us: And without which, we neither could, nor would, have condescended and consented to the · Articles of the Declaration, more than we could, or would, against the Light of our · Minds and Consciences, bave sinned against God, and condemned our own Deed. Thus way was made to the Pacification, and for pre-occupying all Mistakes, whether wilful possibly by some, or through weakness of Memory by others. These vocal Interpretations and Expressions were collected, keeped by ourselves, and, ' in Papers, delivered to some of the Commissioners of England.'

It may now be observed, upon the whole Matter, that this Paper contained nothing contrary to the Articles, or the Pacification, but was a mollifying of his Majesty's Declaration, that it might be the more readily received by the People. And it had been more than imaginable Impudence, to put into the Hands of the Nobility of England, a Paper professing what was openly spoken but just before in their own heaving; and yet containing Untruths and seditious Positions, contrary to all that was done for Peace.

The Truth of the Case is this; The King had promised them a General Assembly, to be holden the 6th of August, and a Paritament upon the 20th, to ratify what should be decreed in the Assembly: But he was reprimanded by the Queen and the Bishops, who vilified the Pacification, and upbraided him, that he had brought home a dishonourable Peace. Whereupon he altered his Mind, declaring, that what had been agreed, would be unprefuable for the Kirk, because he well knew that nothing short of the extirpation of Prelacy could satisfy that People. He, sherefore, about a month after the Pacification, set himself to pick a Quarrel with

IN. B.

them; and, upon the 18th of July, 1639, he charged them with no less than Eighteen Criminal Articles; whereof they denied some, and made full Answers to the rest. I shall touch upon two of them, because they refer to your Discourse which we are now examining.

The third Article was, 'Forces not dismissed; and, in particular, Monro's Regiment yet kept on foot.'

The Answer was this;

Since his Majesty will have that Regiment disbanded, the same shall be done presently: But we humbly beg, that his Majesty would be pleased to dismiss the Garrisons in *Berwick*, *Car.isle*, and the rest of the Borders.'

The 18th Article was; 'The Paper divulged; and if they avow the same?'

Which had this modest Answer:

As we are most unwilling to fall upon any Question which may seem to import the least Contradiction with his Majesty; so, if it had not been the Trust which we gave to the Relation of our Commissioners, the written Declaration would not have been acceptable, nor the Castle of Edinburgh randered to his Majestry.

- on the fact of Edinburgh rendered to his Majesty, except for the Trust we reposed in their Relation, and confidence in his Majesty's
- 'Royal Word; which, we believe they did not forget: which Paper was only written for that cause, lest his Majesty, or his Subjects, should aver, that they spake any thing without Warrant.'

But, having fully shewn that this Paper suffered innocently, I detain you no longer upon this head.

In the next place, page 24, you exhibit a most heinous Article, not only against the Scots, but the English also; They sent (you say) NEW COMMISSIONERS They did so; but I question whether you understand the reason why they were called New Commissioners; and therefore this may inform you, that they sent Commissioners, not long before, to supplicate for Peace; but they were denied access to the King's Presence, and commanded to return Home. You go-on, saying, that Mr. Whitlack informs you, page 31, they had great resort to them, and many secret Counsels beld with them, by the discontented English, especially those who faveured Presbytery, and were no Friends to Bisbops. Having consulted Mr. Wbittock, 1 find you are so far right; but you break-off in the middle of the Sentence, and omit these words, for bad suffered in the late Censures in the Star-Chamber, Exchequer, High-Commission, and other Judicatories]; and I would fain know what you infer from this Tale, and what harm you see in it. Mr. Whitlock gave you the Names of some Honourable and never-to-be-forgotten Patriots, who resorted to these Commissioners, to whose names you ought to pay more deference, than to make a malicious Representation of their Visits and Conversation. The Earls of Esse., Bedford, Holland, the Lord Say, Mr. Hambden, Mr. Pym, &c. were Men, who with sad hearts beheld the Innovations in Religion and the infringing of Fundamental Laws and Liberties in both Kingdoms. Surely, then, Doctor, with-

Digitized by Google

out

out your license, such men as these, may lawfully consult what means are proper to support the Fabrick, when they see Religion and Justice, which are the Pillars of the Government, to be undermined.

But, say you, The Scots implored Aid from the French King, by a Of the Letter of the

Letter under the Hands of many of their principal Actors. You then King. put-in an Appeal (page 25.) to the Reader, Whether his Majesty had not just Reason, after such Discoveries as these were, to clap some of them in Prison; and whether he had been to blame, if, for such traiterous Correspondencies with a Popish Prince, he had chopt-off some of their Heads? I have a word or two which might be offer'd for stay of Execution of this hard Sentence, and desire to be heard, or, rather that the whole Kingdom of Scotland may be permitted to speak in this case. 'This is that French Letter (saith that Parliament) so much insisted-upon, as to open a Gate to let-in Foreign Power to rule over England and ourselves; which, by what Consequence it can be inferred, we would fain know? When a People is sore distressed by Sea and Land, is it unlawful, by the Law of God and Man, to call for Help from God and Man? Is there no Help nor Assistance by Intercession, by Supply of Money, &c.? Is all Assistance by the Sword, and by Men? We love not Shrouds nor Disguisements, we speak the plain Truth, and fear nothing so much as that the Truth be not known. Great Forces by Sea and Land were coming upon us: Informations went-abroad in other Nations, to the prejudice of Us and our Cause. This made us resolve to write unto the French King, apprehending that, upon sinister Relation, his power might be used against Us. Aid and Assistance bath been given in former Times. If we have called now upon Denmark, Holland, Sweden, Poland, or other Nations for Help, are we therefore inviting them all to a Soveraignty over us? And, when all is said or done, the Letter was but an Embryo, forsaken in the Birth, as containing some unfit Expressions, and not agreeable to our Instructions, and therefore slighted by the Subscribers, but catch'd by this treat berous and secret Accuser of the Kingdom. Another Letter was formed, consonant to the Instructions, and signed by many Hands; but neither was this sent from us, because we conceived that Mediation from France would be but late to avert the Danger which was so near.——It is universally known, that it was written in May 1639, and, therefore, ought to have been buried in the Pacification.—We love not to barp upon Subscribing, or sending, of Letters to other Princes, and to the Pope himself, from Examples of Old, and of Late, which are not bid from the Eyes of the World. It is sufficient to us to have justified ourselves, and to show how innocently the Lord Lowdon suffereth, for putting his Hand to such a Letter, the Guiltiness or Innocence, not being personal or proper to the Lord Lowdon, but national, and common to us all. And although it had been a Fault, and his alone, yet whatsoever it was, it did in time, and for a long time, go before his Commission and Employment; and therefore ought not to have been challenged till he had returned to his Country, had uncloathed himself of his Commission, and turned again to be what he was before, a private Nobleman; The

' Dignity

 Dignity and Safety of Nations, Kingdoms, Estates, and Republicks, are much intersested in their Commissioners and Legates, (whether they he sent from one Prince to sanother, or from a Kingdom, Province, or Republic, to their own Prince.) Their Dignity; for what is done to the Legate, is interpreted to be done to them that sent him. Their Safety; because if Legates be wronged, there can be no more com-· * posing of Differences, nor possibility of Reconciliation.——Moreover, bis Majesty's own Royal and inviolable Warrant for the coming of our Commissioners to his Presence at this time, is enough for their Safe-Conduct and Security. If they have committed any thing at home against their King, Country, or any particular Subject; the fundamental Liberties and Independency of the Kingdom do require, that they be ' tried and judged at Home, and in a legal way, by the ordinary Judicatories of the 'Land.— -We earnestly intreat for their Liberty and Safety, who are to us as our-< setues.

Methinks, now, if the King, according to the rash Advice of you, their Majesties frantick Chaplain at Aldgate, should have chopped-off the Head of my Lord of Lowdon, one of the Scotch Commissioners, it would have offered Violence to the Peace and Quiet of bis Mind all the Days of bis Life, But, I must think again, his Lordship was a Preshyterian, a Heretick, who would not comply with the Church of England; that considered, you could do it with the greatest Complacency, and 'twould (I am satisfied) be highly to your content, that the People had but one Neck, so that you might do their business at a blow.

The King's design of Lowdon in the Tow-

I remember that you told me, upon the occasion of my talking of Laud's sending beheading the Earl of the Scotch Common-Prayer-Book to be approved at Rome, that you thought I bad got a Secret. Whether I then had or not, you bring one into my Remembrance, by your enquiry whether the King had been to blame, if he had chopped-off some of the

Scotch Commissioners Heads; and you shall have it.

I have heard, and do believe, that the King, having, against all Justice, imprisoned the Earl of Lowdon (one of the Commissioners from the Scotch Parliament) in the Tower; he, about three of the Clock in the Afternoon, sent his own Letter to Sir William Balfour, the Lieutenant of the Tower, commanding him to see my Lord of Lowdon's Head struck-off within the Tower, before nine the next morning: Upon the Receipt of this Command, the Lieutenant of the Tower, that his Lordship might prepare for Death, gave him notice of it: He being surprized, (as well he might,) prevailed with Sir William to find-out the Marquess of Hamilton, (then in great favour with the King, and Master of the Horse) and to tell him, that he esteemed. him to be engaged in Honour, to interpose in this matter. The Letter being thereupon carried and shewn to the Marquess, it struck him with Astonishment; and, with no small difficulty, he made his way to the King, who was then in Bed, and humbly enquired whether his Majesty had given such a Command for beheading the Earl of Lowdon? the King answered, Yes, and I will be obeyed therein; be shall die. The Marquess, finding him inexorable, told his Majesty, that he would kiss his Hand, and instantly take his Horse and be gone; for he would not stay to see his Majesty massacred, as most certainly he would be; for before the next Night the whole

City

City would come upon him. Hereby the King was wrought-upon to hold his Hand, and countermand the fatal Warrant.

This is so incredible a piece of Tyranny, that I cannot expect you should believe it upon my bare Assertion: I shall therefore shew you, that it seems to be pointed at in Bishop Burnet's Memoirs, Page 161, in these words; 'There were some ill' Instruments about the King [Bishops, no doubt on't] who advised him to proceed capitally against Lowdon; which, it is believed, went very far: But the Marquess of Hamilton opposed this vigorously; assuring the King, that, if that were done, Scotland was for ever lost.

Now, if Curiosity shall lead you to enquire further into this matter, you may do well to learn what is meant by the obscure Expression, [wbich, it is believed, went very far:] and, if that do not open the whole business to you, you will not fail of Satisfaction, if you can, by any Friend, make way to the Original Papers, from which my Lord Bishop of Salisbury took his Memoirs, and which now are in the Hands of his Grace the Duke of Hamilton.

A word or two more about Scotland, and we will cast an Eye on your Impeachment against our own Nation. You very often term the Actions of that Kingdom, factious, seditious, rebellious, traiterous: Now let me shew you how the Seeteb Parliament defined Treason; 'We entreat our Adversaries (say they), to shew us in good earnest, and not by way of Railing, in what sense we have incurred the Censure of Rebellion and Treason; We cannot be moved to think, but the Mitre of an usurping Prelate, by the Authority of a National Council, may be thrown tothe ground without the Violation, or smallest Touch, of the Crown, or Scepter, of 'Imperial Majesty. To dethrone a Prelate, and to overturn Prelacy, we judge it ' no Treason against the King. -—Traitors to God and their Country, must be Traitors to the King; and such as are faithful to God and their Country, must be the King's best Subjects: The Right of his Majesty's Crown, and the Acts of Parliament, command all the Subjects to rise with the King, and to assist him, 'when he riseth for God and the Country; but no law, nor act of Parliament, forbiddeth them to stand-up for God and the Country, in the case of publick Invasion. Take now, from Bp. Burnet's Memoirs, a true Account of these Scotch Troubles, which have now been so troublesome to you and me, and I'll return to Old England: The Lords of the Council (saith he,) Page 31, (not 782.) laid the greatest blame 'upon the Bishops, which appears from the Earl of Traquaire's Letter to the Mar-

quess of Hamilton, dated 27 Aug. 1631. viz.
At the meeting of the Council, 23d Instant, we found so much appearance of Trouble and Stir like to be, amongst People of all Qualities and Degrees, upon the urging of this New Service-Book, that we durst no longer forbear to acquaint his Majesty therewith.——Some of the leading Men of the Clergy are so violent, and many times without ground or true Judgement; that their want of right understanding how to compass business of this nature and weight, doth often breed as many Difficulties; and their rash and foolish Expressions and Attempts have bred such a Fear and Jealousy in the Hearts of many, that, if his Majesty were rightly informed thereof, he would blame them, and justly think that from them

arises the ground of many Mistakes amongst us. — [This Business, in good Faith, is, by the Folly and Misgovernment of some of our Clergy, come to that height, that

the like has not been seen in this Kingdom of a long time.]

No more of Scotland. Let's see what's next. You declare your Resolution, to apply yourself to the Defence of what you had formerly said in behalf of King Charles; and proceed thus (Pag. 26.) You say, That those Gracious Acts which I mention, were bought of him. And what then? What hath been more usual ever since Parliaments had a being in England? Pray, look into the Statute-Book, and tell me, what Gracious Favours can you find, bestowed by the several Kings of this Realm upon their People, that those People have not made their acknowledgments for them, by pre-

senting their Sovereigns with great Sums of Money?

What ridiculous Stuff is this? Gracious Acts, Gracious Favours, &c. It hath been heretofore well observed, that some who call themselves Church-men, have left their Station to become ignorant and unhappy States-men, who have made the Church, and the Tenets thereof, an Instrument of Bondage to the Subject. Men tell us, that Parliaments are not assembled to ease the Grievances of the Subject, but to fill the Coffers of the Prince: These Men teach Princes, that all the Rights and Liberties of the Subject, and the maintenance of them, are Doles of Grace, and Gifts of meer Favour, proceeding from the Prince, (and not the true Birth-right of the Subject, which they may truly challenge,) which are to be continued or changed as Princes shall think fit. But, pray, let us see what these Gracious Acts, these Gracious Favours, were, which we bought, as in your Opinion we ought. They were Acts to declare the levying Money by way of forced Loan, Ship-Money, Coat and Conduct-Money, to be illegal, and against the undoubted Liberty of the Subject; to suppress the most accursed and tyrannical Courts, called the Star-Chamber and High-Commission; to bring a Traytor to Justice; to secure us of the sitting of a Parliament once in three Years, when the antient Laws gave us a right to Annual Parliaments *, and when he had, to the high violation of those Laws,

N. B.

The statute of the 4th year of King Edward III., Chapter 14, A. D. 1331, is in these words; "Ensement est accordé que Parlement soit tenu chacun an une foitz; ou plus, si mestier soit." That is, "Item it is accorded, that a Parliament shall be holden every year once; and more often, if need be." And in the 26th year of the same King, Chap. 10., it is enacted as follows. "Item, pour maintenance des dits articles et Estatutz, et redresser diverses mischiefs et grevances, qui "viegnent de jour en autre, soit Parlement tenu chacun an, sicomme autrefois estoit ordeigné par "Estatut." That is, "Item, for maintenance of the said articles and statutes, and redress of divers mischiefs and grievances which daily happen, a Parliament shall be holden every year, as "at another time was ordained by Statute."

And this statute was regularly observed to the end of the reign of the great King Edward the 3d, and through the greater part of the following reign of king Richard the 2d; as is clearly shewn by that learned and zealous friend to Publick Liberty, Mr. Granville Sharp, of the Middle Temple, in pages 159, 160, 161, &c.——170, of a very able tract, intitled, "A Declaration of the People's Natural

Laws, kept us without a Parliament for about eleven Years. These Acts, say you, (their Majesties Malapert Chaplain at Aldgate,) are such Gracious Favours, that, if we will have them, we ought, in all Conscience, to buy them. But our English Parliaments have always been of another Mind; and Sir Robert Cotton tells us, in the Life of King Henry the Third, That that King was told in full Parliament, that they would not pay his Debts, nor give him a Groat, postquam coepit esse dilapidator Regni, so long as he continued to destroy the Kingdom. And pray now, turn to your Bible, and tell me what Text there, doth warrant this your wild Opinion. Where are we now?

But they bought these Acts; did they? Pray, who had the disposal of the Money? how was it laid out? was it given to the King to do what be listed withal? No; you know a great part of it was bestowed on the Scots, for the good Service they did in rebelling against their King, and putting two

Kingdoms into a Flame.

I did

Natural Right to a Share in the Legislature;" of which a second Edition was printed in the year 1775, for Benjamin White, Bookseller, in Fleet-street. And, amongst the several instances which he has there cited of successive years, in each of which a new Parliament had been summoned by the King, by a new Writ of Election, he mentions some years in which two, or more, new Parliaments had been summoned, by different Writs of Election, in the space of a single year, or without a royal Prorogation of the preceeding Parliament, to meet again at another day, in the course of the same year, as has been the practice for the last two Centuries. So that it may truly be affirmed, that, in those antient times, the people enjoyed the priviledge of electing new Representatives in Parliament, either once in every year, or more than once, if the King found it necessary to have a second Parliament, before the expiration of a year.

This seems to have been a very useful and valuable Priviledge, as it tended very much to strengthen the connection between the Members of the House of Commons and their Constituents, or Electors, of whom they are the Representatives, or, in the language of the Writ of Election sent to the Sheriff, the Attornies, or persons who have received from them, full and sufficient powers to consult with the King and his Council, upon the important matters relating to the state of the Kingdom, that shall be laid before them, and to consent, on the behalf of their Constituents, or Electors, to the resolutions that shall there be taken concerning them, " Ita quod Milites "plenam et sufficientem potestatem pro se et communitate Comitatus prædicti, et dicti Cives et "Burgenses pro se et communitatibus Civitatum et Burgorum, divisim, ab ipsis habeant ad faciendum « et consentiendum iis quæ tunc de communí consilio (favente Deo) ordinari contígerint super nego-" tiis ante-dictis; ita quod, pro defectu hujus modi protestatis, dicta negotia ineffecta non remaneant " quovis modo."—See Elsyng's Method of holding Parliaments in England, pages 68 and 69.—For hence it seems evident, that, according to the Antient and Original Constitution of the House of Commons, there ought to be a general agreement, or concurrence of opinion, upon the Subjects, for the discussion of which the Parliament was to be assembled, between the Electors of the several Counties, Cities, and Boroughs, and the persons they were so to impower to represent them, and act for them: and, surely, that agreement, or concurrence, would be much more likely to take place, if the elections were to occur once, or more than once, in every year, than if they are renewed only once in the course of seven years, as may be the case according to the laws now in being.

Nor, if this good old law were to be revived, would there be any danger of such violent and expensive,

I did observe, (in my Letter to you,) that the King had, out of the Subjects Purse, in the first Year of the Parliament, Nov. 1640, one Million and an half of Money. I also remember that the King, upon the Conclusion of the Treaty at Rippon, agreed to allow the Scots 850 l. per diem, and in answer to your question. I say, the King had the disposal of the Money; and, as to what part of it the Scots received, the King paid it to them, for his having done against all Law and Reason what he listed. And I will shew you from the Demand of that Nation, who ought to have paid the Reckoning. They say, 'We were constrained to take Arms for our Defence; The War on our part was Defensive, and all Men do . acknowledge, that in common Equity, the Defendant should not be suffered to perish in his just and necessary Defence; but that the Pursuer ought to bear the Charges of the Defendant. The prevalent Faction of Prelates and Papists have moved every Stone against us, and used all sorts of Means, not only their Counsels, Subsidies and Forces, but their Church-Canons and Prayers, for our utter Ruine; which make them obnoxious to our just Accusations, and guilty of all the Losses and Wrongs which we have sustained. And, therefore, we may now, ' with the greater Reason and Confidence, press our Demand, that the Parliament, ' the Kingdom, and the King himself, may see us repaired in our Losses, at the Cost of that Faction, by whose Means we have sustained so much damage.

expensive, and often ruinous, contests at the times of Election, as are seen in the present mode of proceeding, when the general Elections occur only once in about six years. For, as the Representatives would be constantly disposed to cultivate the good opinion of their Constituents, and, by their conduct in Parliament, to promote their interests and wishes, as far as their own consciences and judgements would allow them, in order to be re-elected by them in the next year, it is probable that there would be much fewer contested Elections, and changes of the Representatives, than there are at present. And from the harmony that would generally subsist, between the Members of Parliament and their Electors, the Dignity and Respectability of the House of Commons would be increased, and the confidence of the people, in the wisdom and uprightness of their measures, would be restored; and the resolutions that would be taken by them, would be generally allowed to be in reality, what they are now often called and pretended to be, true expressions, or declarations, of the Sense of the People at large, on the subjects to which they relate. It seems probable, therefore, that the revival of this good old law, for chusing new Parliaments every year, would be attended with very happy consequences, and give general satisfaction to the Nation.

And, if this law for annual new Parliaments were to be revived, it seems reasonable that the day for the said annual Election, and likewise the day of the meeting of the Parliament for the dispatch of business, should be certain known days in the year, fixed by the Law, just as the first days of Hilary and Michaelmas Terms are in the King's Courts of Justice in Westminster-Hall, for the beginning of the sessions of the King's Judges in those Courts, for the decision of suits at law; to the end that the Right and Duty of the two Houses of Parliament to assist, and concur with, the King in the important business of making new laws, and repealing, or altering, old ones, as occasion should require, and of imposing new taxes upon the people, should not only be, but constantly appear to be, and be universally known to be, an essential, permanent, regular, and indispensable, part of the Constitution of the British Government, as much as the administration of justice by the King's Judges in his Courts at Westminster-Hall, and not a temporary and occasional instrument of government to be employed only at the King's pleasure, whenever he should think fit to have recourse to it; and that no future King, who should happen to be infected with the malady of King Charles the First, "an inordinate love of arbitrary power, and a strong disposition to make himself an absolute Monarch

- will never doubt but the Parliament in their Wisdom and Justice, will provide that a proportionable part of the Cost and Charges be born by the Delinquents.
- We wish the Justice of the Parliament may be declared, in making the Burden more sensible to the Prelates and Papists, than to others who never have wronged

us, which will conduce much to the Honour of the King and Parliament.'

Pag. 27. You take notice of my Charge; that the King demurred to pass the Of the Bills for Bills for taking-away the Star-Chamber and High-Commission Courts, at the time taking-away the Star-when he passed the Poll-Bill, though presented together to him for the Royal Commission-Court. Assent; and demand whether he ought to have passed them, without a Why, or a Wherefore?

No, by no means; you talk now like a Rational Creature: We are then to look for the Why's and Wherefore's. You acknowledge, in your first Defence, that these Courts were Grievances to the Nation; and I said, and by many sad Instances proved, that they were Arbitrary and Tyrannical Courts, Forges of Misery, Oppression and Violence: There's then a Why, for you Doctor. The Parliament agreed with the King, to give him the Poll-Bill to remove these accursed Courts of Oppression and Tyranny; There's also a Wherefore. Nevertheless, though the Parliament voted that he should pass all the three Bills, or none at all; he, snatching-up their Money, runs-away, and delays to pass the Bills for

Monarch over his people," should be tempted to tell his Parliament, as King Charles did his in the year 1627, "to remember that Parliaments are altogether in his power, and that therefore, as he finds the fruits of them to be good or evil, they are to continue, or not to be:" as is shewn above in page 33.

And, if this salutary old law were to be revived, the first day of the month of October in every year, (if it were not on a Sunday, and in that case, the 2d,) would probably be found to be a convenient day for the proceeding to a general election; and some day about the middle of the following month of November, as, for example, the 17th, (if it were not on a Sunday, and, in that case, the 18th,) to be a convenient time for the meeting of the Parliament for the dispatch of business. The 17th of November was the Birth-day of that great Princess, Queen Elizabeth, who governed the nation during forty-three years with great wisdom and justice, and in great harmony with her Parliaments; and, by their advice and assistance, delivered the English nation a second time from the yoke of the Pope's authority, and the cruel persecutions that had been lately practised under it, and established the Protestant Religion on a solid and lasting foundation; and also caused the laws to be administered, in her Courts at Westminster-Hall, in a stable and uniform manner, by learned and upright Judges, well selected for the purpose, whereby property of every kind became more secure and valuable than it had ever been before; and who likewise greatly encouraged and advanced the trade of the nation, and laid the foundation of its navigation and maritime power. These were great and emment services to her subjects, which have justly made her memory dear to their posterity; and, (to use the words of Mr. Thomas May, in the beginning of his excellent History of the last Parliament of King Charles the First,) they were accomplished by the justice and prudence of her government, by making the right use of her subjects' hearts, hands, and purses, in a Parliamentary way. It seems, therefore, that it would be only a just tribute to be merits and memory to make choice of her birth-day, the 17th of November, in every year, (being in a part of that month that is very convenient for that purpose,) for the first day of the meeting of the newelected Parliament.

abrogating

abrogating the Star-Chamber and High-Commission Courts; and yet you affirmed, That HE READILY passed whatsoever Bills the Parliament offered to him for redress of the Nation's Grievances: And whether he did or not, was the point in Controversy between you and me.

The Earl of Strafford's case.

The next thing in course, is. (Page 28.) the unhappy Earl of Strafford's Case; in relation whereunto you, most learned Doctor, (whose head is swelled, like any Bladder, with Wind and Vapour,) do thus impeach the Lords and Commons;—Do not you know they were so little satisfied with the Legality of their Proceedings, that they in the very Bill [for his attainder] inserted a Clause, that this should not be made use of, as a Precedent for the time to come. This is well enough urged for a D.D. and is passable, the Man who utters it being considered: But I must tell you, Sir, what I have heard as wise a Man as you, say about this Clause, of not bringing it into Precedent; that in such Cases it could not be otherwise, without leaving the same power to the Judges in Westminster-Hall, which, by the Statute of Edward the Third, is entrusted only with the Parliament; for that Statute, enumerating all Treason cognizable by the Judges, reserves to the Parliament declarative Treason; as that which they [the Parliament] might be safely entrusted with, though it could not be safely left in the Hands of any other Jurisdiction. And that this is the reason of that Clause, I am told, no Lawyer, though never so much a Tory, will deny.

Allow me now, Sir, seeing we are talking of Strafford, to lay before you a pleasant Dialogue, which I find in Whitlock's Memoirs, page 41, between your three Martyrs, the King, the Archbishop of Canterbury, and the Earl of Strafford, together with the Lord Cottington, a Papist; and that upon the 5th of May, 1640, the very Day upon which the Parliament was dissolved, for their refusing to furnish Money to carry-on the wicked War, then resolved-upon against Scotland; the

Paper is intituled,

His wicked advice to the King.

N.B.

No danger of a War with Scotland; if Offensive, not Defensive.

- King Charles. How can we undertake Offensive War, if we have no Money?
- * Earl of Strafford. Borrow of the City 100,000 l. go-on vigorously to levy Ship-Money; your Majesty having tryed the Affection of your People, you are
- * absolved and loose from all Rule of Government, and to do what Power will admit:
- Your Majesty having tried all ways, and being refused, shall be acquitted before
- God and Man. And you have an Army in Ireland, that you may employ to reduce this Kingdom to Obedience: For I am confident the Scots cannot hold-out five
- ' Months.
- 'Archbishop. You have tried all ways, and have already been denied; IT IS NOW LAWFUL TO TAKE IT BY FORCE.
- Lord Cottington. Leagues abroad there may be made for the Defence of the
- 'Kingdom; the Lower House are weary of the King and Church: [The Enemies of Popery, were even in that Day Common-wealths-men]. 'All ways shall be just
- to raise Money by, in this inevitable Necessity, and are to be used, being lawful.
 - ' Archbishop. For an Offensive, not a Defensive, War.

· Strafford.

Strafford. The Town is full of Lords: put the Commission of Array on Foot; and, if any of them stir, We will make 'em smart.

Now you will readily agree that this is no Sham; in regard it comes from Mr. Whitlock, whom you quote four or five times. Besides, I assure you, that it was given in Evidence upon Oath, at the Earl of Strafford's Tryal; and (which further evinces the Truth thereof,) the King instantly required the Loan of the City of London, as here advised; and, for refusal to comply therein, Ludlow tells you, page 17, he imprisoned Sir Stephen Soame, Sir Nicholas Rainton, and other eminent Citizens. And were not these Halcion Days? were not these a rare set of blessed Saints?

Page 32. You lash me for my relation of the King's tampering with Of Goring's Plot. the Army, to curb the Parliament and subdue them to his Will, and you say, that I tell a Story of Piercy and Goring, &c. such a one as the Faction was wont to make use-of upon all occasions, to amuse and heat the People; but the best of it is, there are so many incredible Things (you say) in the Account, that I must tell you it hath not gained upon my belief at all. Amongst the rest, you tell us that two of the Parties concerned confess "that all the French that were about the Town, were to be mounted." But that which is the Nicker, is, that the Clergy would raise 1000 Horse to assist them; and yet this conspiracy was under an Oath of Secrecy: And VERY LIKELY INDEED! WHEN SO MANY CLERGYMEN MUST BE ACQUAINTED WITH IT. Surely, Sir, you have a mighty Opinion of yourself.

Surely, Sir, you have a very bad Opinion of your Brethren of the Cassock, or else a most weak way of arguing; and the more you say, the more you discover your Rashness and want of Judgement: The Clergy will not con you Thanks for representing them to the World as Blabs of their Tongues, to the prejudice of the Cause of Mother-Church; as an Order of Men, who may not be trusted with a Secret, committed to them under a strict Oath. But this Story (you say) has not gained upon your Belief .- Who can help it? Our Saviour converted many, of divers States and Conditions, to the Faith; but we do not find that he ever converted a Priest.—That the King did tamper with the Army, to bring them against the Parliament, as I relate it, appears most evidently in Whitlock's Memoirs, Page 44, and also by the several Informations, Examinations and Confessions upon Oath, (before a Committee of the House of Lords) of the Parties engaged in it, most of them Men of Quality, and highly in favour with the King. You may read them at large in Husbands's exact Collections (a Book in esteem with you) beginning at Page 220. I there find that the two Parties who confessed "that the French about the Town were to be mounted, and that the Clergy were to find 1000 Horse," were Lieutenant-Colonel Ballard and Captain Chudleigh. But, in regard

regard you have taken the Pains to relate what his Majesty's Declaration said to this Point; I shall, for the setting the matter in its true Light, transcribe a brief Account thereof from the Declaration of the Parliament, (which you most rudely call the Faction) as you will find it in *Husbands's* Collections, *Page* 200. There, speaking of the intended Force upon the Parliament, they declare themselves thus:

Certainly we have been more tender of his Majesty's Honour in this point,

than he, whosoever he was, that did write his Majesty's Declaration; where he calls God to witness "he never had any such Thought, or knew of any such Resolution of bringing-up the Army;" which truly will seem strange to those who shall read the Depositions of Mr. Goring, the Information of Mr. Piercy, and the Examination of Mr. Wilmot, Mr. Pollard, and others; with the other Examination of Cant. Long. Six Local. Applies and Six Loka Converse and consider the Confi

N. B.

⁶ Capt. Legg, Sir Jacob Ashley, and Sir John Conyers: and consider the Condition and Nature of the Petition, which was sent unto Sir Jacob Ashley, under the Approbation of C. R. which his Majesty doth now acknowledge to be his own Hand; and, being full of Scandal to the Parliament, might have proved dangerous to the whole Kingdom, if the Army should have interposed betwint the King and them, as was desired.

Of the Tumults at Whitehall.

You tell me, page 43, That I have been so bold in my Assertion about the Tumults, that I give the Lie to almost all the Historians that have writ the Transactions of those Times; and you refer me to the Votes of the Common-Council, Dec. 31, 1641. Now, because you are short in the Relation of that Matter, I shall give it you as it is in Husbands's Collection, page 30. The Lord Newburgh, upon Dec. 31, 1641, delivered a Message from his Majesty to the Common-Council, to this effect; 'There having been of late many tumultuary Assemblies about 'Whitehall and Westminster, the King recommended to their Care the preventing the like Tumults; and declared, That he was so well assured of the good Affections of the City, that he could in no wise understand it to have any share in the Fault of these Tumults, but that they proceed meerly from the mean and unruly People of the Suburbs, &c.

Hereupon the Common-Council returned Answer, 'That they had no hand in these tumultuous Proceedings, and disavowed the same; and promised their best Endeavours to prevent and suppress, in time to come, all such tumultuous Assemblies, and all mutinous, rebellious, Persons: And they humbly desired, that all the Delinquents, and Causers of Tumults, being apprehended, may receive condign Punishment. And,

They ordered every Member of the Common-Council to make it known, That, if any Person should neglect his Duty of Watch and Ward, &c. and not do his best Endeavour to suppress, or prevent, Tumults, he shall receive condign

' Punishment.'

Now, Sir, I appeal to all Mankind, whether this doth any way serve your Pupose? You refer to the Votes of the Common-Council, and would thence argue

that the King was necessitated, by reason of the Tumults, to leave Whitehall. But the contrary is most evident, from the King's Message, and the Answer and Resolutions of the City. The King declares, That he was well-assured of the good Affections of the City, and that they had not any share in the Fault of the Tumults, but that they proceeded merely from the mean and unruly People of the Suburbs. The Common-Council promises to prevent and suppress all Tumults, and commands strict Watch and Ward to be kept to that purpose. And might not the King have been hereby persuaded, that he was in no danger from Tumults? Were not these Votes a full Security against Fear from such Disorders for the future? No doubt but they were; but the King had other Designs than those of I told you of his Majesty's fortifying Whitehall, and that Peace in his Head. armed Men sallied-out thence, reviling, menacing, and wounding, many Citizens passing-by with Petitions to the Parliament; and that, when the Parliament and People complained of those Assaults, the King justified the Authors thereof; so that I must needs conclude (as I did before) that the tumults were made at Whitehall, by the King's own People; that all his fear of Tumults, was but a mere Pretence and Occasion taken, of his resolved Absence from the Parliament, that he might turn his flashing at the Court-Gate, to slaughtering in the Field.

Page 44. You tell me, that another Calumny wherewith I reproach the Memory King Charles's unof King Charles, is his unwillingness to issue-out his Proclamations against the Irish willingness to proclaim the Irish Missells; and when he did issue it, he gave order that only 40 copies of it should be macrers to be Rebels. printed. Youthen say, The truth of it is, that, if this Story was true, it would bean inexcusable Fault in the King; but, to Refute me, you transcribe his Majesty's own Vindication of himself, which saith, that he was in Scotland when the Rebellion broke-forth, that he immediately recommended the care of that business to the Parliament here; — That, if no Proclamation issued sooner (of which for the present he was not certain, but thinks that others were issued-out before), it was, because the Lords-Justices of Ireland desired them no sooner, and, when they did, the number of copies of it which they desired might be printed, was but twenty.

Now, in Truth Sir, this doth little mend the matter; 'tis most strange that the King should publish to all the World in Print, that he thinks other Proclamations zoere issued before; he might, without doubt, have easily been at a certainty in this point: For, had there been any such thing, his Council-Books, his Secretary of State, his Clerks of the Council, would have remembered him thereof; but, to this day, no such thing hath appeared, nor ever will. And, 'tis a poor excuse to say, that the Proclamation was no sooner issued, because not sooner desired. We, of this Age, do remember in what manner our Late Princes (their Father's own Sons) have pursued the least suspicion of Rebellion: You know that King Charles the Second, upon the pretence of a Plot, in the year 1683, was so far from deferring, by the space of three' months, to issue a Proclamation against his own Son, the Duke of Monmouth, that we had it in three days: and I do think there were rather forty Thousand than forty copies of it Printed; for, after we had had it by itself, for the better spreading thereof,

thereof, it was published in the Gazette; and the like course, you well know, was taken by the late King James; First, in the case of the Duke of Monmouth, and then in that of the Prince of Orange. But I will shew you what the Parliament said in this case of the Irish Rebels, in a Declaration in 1642.

- That, when the Lords and Commons had, upon the first breaking-out of the Irish Rebellion, immediately sent-over 20,000 L and engaged themselves for the reducing of the Rebels, yet the King, after his Return from Scotland, was not pleased to take notice of it, until after some, in the House of Commons, had truly observed, how forward his mischievous Counsellors were to incite him against
- his Protestant Subjects of Scotland, and how slow to resent the proceedings of 'his Papist Traytors in Ireland.

'That, although the Rebels had most impudently styled themselves, The Queen's

Army, and profest that the Cause of their Rising was, to maintain the King's prerogative, and the Queen's Religion, against the Puritan Parliament of England; and that thereupon the Parliament advised his Majesty to wipe-away this dangerous scandal by proclaiming them Rebels; which then would have weakened the Conspirators in the beginning, and have encouraged both the Parliament here, and good People there, the more vigorously to have opposed their proceedings; yet no Proclamation was set-forth to that purpose, till almost three months after the breaking-out of this Rebellion, and then Command was given, that but forty should be Printed, nor they published, till further directions should be " given by his Majesty.

He hinders the Parliament from suppressing the Irish Rebellion.

'That the Parliament and Adventurers had long since designed 5000 Foot, and 500 Horse for the Relief of Munster, to be sent under the Command of the Lord Wharton: but no Commission could be obtained from his Majesty; where-• by Lymerick was wholly lost.

That, when divers well-affected persons had prepared twelve Ships and six

- 'Pinnaces, with more than 1000 Land-Forces, at their own charge, for the service of Ireland, and desired nothing but a Commission from his Majesty to enable
- them thereunto; That Commission, after twice sending to York for the same, ' was likewise denied.
- That, although the Lords Justices of Ireland have, three Months since, earnestly desired to have two pieces of Battery sent-over for that Service, yet such Com-* mands are given to the Officers of the Tower, that none of his Majestie's Ord-
- ' nance must be sent to save his Majestie's Kingdom.
- 'That the King's Souldiers took-away, at one time, six hundred Suits of Cloaths: and at another time three hundred Suits; which were sent by the • Parliament: for the poor Souldiers in Ireland.
 - That the Rebels did lately send a Petition to his Majesty, Intitling them-

selves his Majestie's Catholick Subjects of Ireland, complaining of the Puritan Parliament of England, and desiring, that, since his Majesty comes not thither, according to their expectation, they may come into England to his Majesty.

You come (page 46) to Examine, who were the first Beginners of the War, and say, The Parliament d'd really, and in deed, first draw the Sword, and sound the Trumpet to Battle——-Whereas the King set-up his Standard at Nottingham, in August, did not the Lords and Commons, in June before, make an Order for bringing-in of Money, or Plate, to maintain Horses, Horsemen, and Arms?

And did not the King, long before, in the beginning of the year 1642, when The King made preall things were in perfect Peace, send-over the Crown-Jewels, to buy Arms and parations for the Ammunition in Holland? Did not he, at that time, write to the King of Denmark, liament. complaining of the Parliament, and asking Supplies from him, ad propulsandos Hostes, to subdue bis Enemies? You were told of these things before: but you will not touch them. I shall not therefore trifle-away more time with you, upon this point of the first beginning of the War; only I will mind you, that the King, upon the 4th of July 1642, Rendezvoused an Army at Beverly in Yorkshire, though the Parliament did not Vote the raising of an Army till the 12th. And, which is more, I will give Assembling an Army you the name of the first Martyr who fell in that War in defence of the Laws and at Beverly 4th July. Liberties of his Country; 'twas one Percival, of Kirkman, Shalme, in Lancashire; he was Murdered the 15th of July 1642, near Manchester, by the King's Forces, under the Command of the Lord Strange, Son to the Earl of Derby; for which that The first man killed Lord was impeached in Parliament. You may see a particular Account of this, in on the side of the Par-May's History of the War, page 109. in Husbands's Collections, 611. and in Rusb-liament, July 12, 1642. worth's Collections, 3d. Part. Vol. 1st. p. 680.

Well; I see, to my Comfort, that we shall soon draw to a Conclusion: You say p. 49. I have answered your Grand Impeachments and Accusations of this great and Excellent Prince: As for the other things, with which you stufft your Libell, I say, alas! Sir, you must not think to catch some Birds, (and there are, thanks be to God, great numbers of them in the Kingdom) with such Chaffe as this.

There are indeed, in England, a great many kinds of Birds, and of Beasts also, and a great many of every kind; and, before we part, we will a little recreate ourselves with some of them. You must not think to catch such Birds with Chaffe: A witty Conceit, upon my word; and, had your dull fancy chopt-upon this other flight, neither must Chickens think to feed Capons, it would have made you as proud as a Peacock, and you would have clapt your Wings, and crowed like any fighting Cock, at the wit of the Expression; But (begging pardon of your Gravity) I will tell you, that it hath been observed, that, of all Creatures in the Creation, the Owle of Birds, and the Ass of Beasts, are the most grave; and Sir William Temple, in his Memoirs of what passed in Christendom from 1672, to 1679, page 57, saith, that Old Prince Maurice of Nassau, when he was about 76 years of Age (having ever passed for an honest and pious man,) informed him, that, when he was Governor

of Brasil, he heard of a Parrot, that spoke, and asked, and answered common questions like a reasonable Creature, and (though he believed nothing of it,) his curiosity led him to send for it; That, when it came first into the Room where the Prince was, with a great many Dutchmen about him, it said presently, What a Company of White Men are here? They asked it, what he thought that Man was? pointing to the Prince; it answered, Some General or other; the Prince asked it, whence came you? It answered, from Marinnan; the Prince, to whom do you belong? The Parrot, to a Portugueze; Prince, what do you do there? Parrot, Ilock after the Chickens; the Prince laughed and said, you look after the Chickens? The Parrot answered, yes I, and I know well enough how to do it, and made the Chuck four or five times, that People use to make to Chickens when they call them.

Now, one would hope that this pretty Bird, which discoursed so rationally, might put a braying Beast to silence, if any thing but pulling-out the Asse's Tongue could do it: You see, Doctor, that this Understanding Parrot could distinguish White from Black, knew its own Capacity, and undertook no other Task than it could well perform, crying Chuck, Chuck, Chuck, to the Chickens very pertinently; (which is more than you do to your Birds;)—that this ingenious, fair-dealing, Parrot, when it talked with the Prince, (not thinking it would pass for an answer to have told him, you must not think to catch such Birds as me with Chaff,) came close to the point, and gave direct and sensible Answers to plain and honest Questions; whereas you prevaricate in a most shameful manner, and prate, as though you were only fit for the Conversation of a Flock of Magpies, Jack aws, Woodcocks, Owles, and Buzzards. Tis evident that your itch of Vain-glory, and unparalleled Confidence, makes you affirm, that you have answered me; and you would fain be thought to have said all that can be said, when you hardly say any thing, but blate what you know nothing of; you have heaped-up together many Impertinencies, abundance of Rubbish and Trifles, but treated of nothing with Solidity and Judgement, nor so much as touched the Tenth part of the matters charged in my Letter; but in your natural levity, skipping them over, would persuade the Birds of your Feather, (I gave you their names but now) that, as Chaff, you make them to vanish with a puff of your mouth. But, indeed, when I consider how miserable a Wretch of an answerer you do here render yourself, and yet how you persist still in your huffing and strutting, and do more and more revile and rail, I cannot (especially seeing it relates to one of your own Birds) but present you with another piece of Mr. Marvel's profane Wit, as you call it; 'I have seen (saith he) with some pleasure, the Hawking at the Magpye; the poor Bird understands very well the terrible pounces of that Vulture, but therefore she chatters amain most ruefully, and spreads and cocks her tail, so that one that first saw and heard the sport, would think that she insulted over the Hawk in that Chatter, and huffed her Train in token of Courage and Victory; when, alas! tis all from her fear, and another way of crying the Hawke, mercy; and to the end that, the Hawke, finding nothing but Tail and Feather to strike at, she may so perhaps shelter her Body. I have been too long trifling at this Boys Play of Bird-catching; I return now to a more manly Recreation, and, having already dispatched the Wild Boar, the fierce Tiger, and the dull Ass, I pass by the Monkey, the Ape, the Baboon, and that great Herd of the many other despicable Animals, and will a little hunt the barking Woolf.

Quoth you, Doctor, (page 50.) I am ready to take my leave of you; but, before we part, I must needs reckon with you upon the score of a Reflection you have made upon myself: you are pleased to say, you understand I was a Presbyterian Minister in Essex; which words have almost forced me to a smile.

Now, if I were mistaken as to your being a Presbyterian Minister in Essen, you are not to make yourself too merry with it, nor may you deny your having changed your Opinion from what it formerly was. For you know there are many of your Contemporaries in the University of Cambridge, who knew you to be a Presbyterian there: and I could name you an honest Gentleman now in being, who, you know, hath reason to be acquainted with all the steps you have taken from your youth; and he saith, that you left the University upon a dislike of the Ceremonies; and persisted in that dislike, till you found there was no Preferment to be got, but by Conformity; so that I may with truth say, you are one of Dr. Wild's Changelings, and that he gave us your exact Marks, when he thus described you in his Poem called, The Recantation of a Penitent Proteus, or, the Changeling.

• My Conscience first, like Balaam's Ass, was shy, Boggled and Winc'd: which when I did espy, I cudgel'd her, and spur'd her on each side, Until the Jade her Paces all could ride.

When first I mounted on her tender Back, She would not leave the Protestant Dull Rack, Till in her Mouth the Covenant-Bit I got, And made her learn the Presbyterian Trot.

Twas a hard Trot, and fretted her; alas! The Independent Amble easier was; I taught her that, and out of that to fall To the Tantivy of Prelatical.

Now with a Snaffle, or a twined Thread, To any Government she'll turn her head: I have so broke her, She will never start, And that's the meaning of my Broken beart.

• The Doctor saith, P. 51, of 2d Defence, I took time to Consider the Nature and Terms of Conformity; retrich, by my former Education, I was wholly a Stranger to.

Cambridge

Cambridge I left with grief, and great disgrace, To seek my Fortune in some other place, And that I might the better save my stake, I took an Order, and did Orders take.

Amongst Conformists I myself did list,

A Son o'th Church as good as ever pist;

But tho' I bow'd, and cring'd, and cross'd, and all,

I only got a * Vicaridge very small.

Oh! I am almost mad: 'twould make one so, To see which way Preferment's game doth go. I ever thought I had her in the Wind; And yet I'm cast above three years behind.

Three times already I have turn'd my Coat; Three times already I have chang'd my Note. I'll make it Four, and four-and-Twenty more, And turn the Compass round, e're I'll give-o're.

Ambition, my great Goddess and my Muse, Inspire thy Prophets all such Arts to use As may exalt; betwixt this and my Grave, A Mitre, or a Halter, I must have.

Tell me, Ambition! pry'thee, tell me why, So many Dunces, Doctors, and not I?

A Scarlet Gown I must and will obtain;
I cannot else Commence a Priest in Grain.

If this Poet's *Ecclesiastical Pencil* has not drawn you to the Life, you shall see that Lay Prose comes pretty near you; Mr. Marvel, (whom I choose always to ply you with, above all other Authors,) describes you thus:

- 'He was sent to Cambridge to be bred-up to the Ministry; There, in a short time, he entered himself into the Company of some young Students, who were used to Fast and Pray weekly together; he pick'd Acquaintance with the Brother-
- bood, and train'd himself up in attending upon their Sermons and Prayers, till he had gained such Proficience, that he too began to Exercise in the Meetings, and
- by Preaching Mr. Baxter's Sermons, he got the Reputation of one of the Preciousest young Men in the University: But, when thus, after several years Approbation,
- he was even ready to have taken the Charge, not of an Admiring Drove, or Herd,

+ The Vicaridge of Westham in Esses.

as he now calls them, but of a Flock, upon him; by great misfortune to him, the King came-in. Nevertheless he broke not off yet from his former habitudes; he persisted, as far as in him was, (that is, by Praying, Caballing, and Discoursing) ' to obstruct the Restoring of the Episcopal Government, Revenues, and Authority; insomuch that, being discountenanced, he went-away from the University without his Degree, scrupling, forsooth, the Subscription then required: From thence he came to London, where he spent a considerable time in creeping into all Corners and Companies, horoscoping up and down concerning the duration of the Government, not considering any thing as best, but as most lasting and profitable; and, after having many times cast a Figure, he at last satisfied himself, that the Episcopal Government would endure as long as he lived; and from thence-forward cast-about how to be admitted into the Church of England, and find the High-way to her Preferments. In order to this, he daily enlarged not only his Conversation, but his Conscience, and was made free of some of the ' Town-Vices; imagining, like Muleasses, King of Tunes, that by hiding himself among the Onions, he should escape being traced by his perfumes: Ignorant and mistaken Man! that thought it necessary to part with any Virtue to get a Living; or that the Church of England did not require and encourage more sobriety than he could be guilty of. But neither was this yet, in his opinion, sufficient; and therefore he resolved to try a shorter Path, which some few men have trod not unsuccessfully; that is, to Print a Book; and, if that would not do, to print a Second; and, if that also would not do, a Third, and so forward; to give Experience of a keen style, and a ductile Judgement: After this, he was ready to leap over the Moon; No scruple of Conscience could stand in his way, and no Preferment seemed too high for his Ambition.

In the next place, Doctor, you spit your Venom, and that even against their Majesties; page 51, you say, Since the late Persecution in Scotland by that Party of Men [the Presbyterians], it is a greater scandal to be called a Presbyterian than it was before.

I here observe, with what Reverence and Duty you speak of your Superiours and their Actions, when they are not so happy as to please you: this last thing is uttered most scandalously, and with a leering reflection upon the Government; and 'tis a dangerous thing, I perceive, for their Majesties to lose your favour. When you talk, page 15, of the Accursed Court of Star-Chamber, you do it with great Modesty and Manners, saying, If it he lawful for a private Person, as I am, to pass a Judgement upon the publick Actions of a then Legal Court. But here (the King and Queen, seeming to be fallen into disgrace with you,) you assume the impudence to call their establishing Presbytery by Act of Parliament, A Persecution; So that, what the Scots said, in the year 1640, they may well repeat at this day; All means (said they) are used to disgrace this Kirk; Books, Pasquils, honouring of our Cursed Bishops, advancing of our deposed Ministers, &c.

'Twas.

'Twas, it should seem, scandalous in some measure, to be a persecuted Presbyterian, in the two By-past Reigns; but (in your Opinion, Doctor,) 'tis so in a much higher degree, to be a Presbyterian, now that Presbytery has the Royal Favour, and is settled by Act of Parliament: and yet you, Sir, did heretofore esteem it no longer scandalous to be of the Church of England, than till she obtained a legal Establishment, and I can tell you the exact day when it became a scandal to you to be called a Presbyterian; 'twas Bartholomew day, 1662, the day when the Act of Uniformity took place, and, would a man take the liberty which you do, I should say, when the Bishops Persecution was revived in England.

Well, 'Tis a Scandal to be a Presbyterian; and it will puzzle a man to find-out what you are: for you seem to esteem it a Persecution, that you may not compel all men to be of the Church of England, and yet you say, page 52, It is true, Sir. I have always been kind to Dissenters, and when the great Storm [in plain English, Persecution | eight or nine Years ago, fell upon the Dissenters, I preserved my our Parish from Charge and Trouble, to the great endangering of myself. Alas! good Man, did you so, and yet do they abuse you? pray, was all this kindness for naught? did not you interlope with Dr. Pinfold? I have been told that you ought to have said, that what you did in that day, was to the great enriching of yourself, and that you had your Wby's and your Wherefore's for your kindness to the Dissenters; that you received a constant Contribution from such of them 25 you preserved from Doctors' Commons; and I know that it may be made-out, that a Collection was made amongst them, by Mr. Ogden and Mr. Webster, to raise the Money for to defray your Charges of commencing Doctor; and is it not an Act of foolish Prodigality in you, to throw-off such generous Benefactors as these?

Having thus Examined your Second Defence, I shall now, Sir, recount the heads of some things which you asserted in your First, and which, being answered by me, you pass-over in silence.

You affirmed, page 7th of your first Defence, that the Parliament in their Remonstrance, Dec. 1641, made Reflections upon the King's former Government, unmannerly and false; and that the King answered it and vindicated himself from those horrid aspersions, wherewith they loaded him: Now, page 35, I denied the falsehood thereof, and said, that the King only answered it, in saying, We shall, in few words, pass-over that part of the Narrative wherein the misfortunes of this Kingdom, from our first entering to the Crown, to the beginning of this Parliament, are remembered in so sensible expressions.

You asserted, page 12, that the King could, by good Evidence, prove, the Lord Mandevile, Mr. Holles, Sir Arthur Haslerig, Mr. Hambden, Mr. Pym, and Mr. Strode, Members of the House of Commons, to be Guilty of Treason; Page 37, Go. I gave you the full History of that matter, and shewed that the King retracted that rash accusation; which, I see, is more than you will do, though good manners, one

Digitized by Google

would think, should oblige you thereto, and to beg pardon especially of the Right Honourable, the present earl of Manchester, as he is a Peer of the Realm; and of the Right Honourable, the most eminently-deserving Patriot, Mr. Hambden, as he is Chancellour of their Majestie's Exchequer, and one of their most Honourable Privy-Council, for such a horrid slander brought upon their highly-deserving Families. But you find it a grievous thing to forego a falsehood that is serviceable to your great undertaking.

You affirm, page 26, first Defence, that the Scots sold the King to the English Parliament. I denied it, page 67, and shewed, that the Scots might, with the consent of the Parliament, have taken him home to his Native Country; but that they refused it, fearing be might raise new Commotions there; and you have not thought fit to contradict me in this neither.

You, amongst other gracious concessions of the King's, wherein you glory, speak, pa. 11, 1st. Defence; of his consenting to a Treaty at Uxbridge. I (page 61) mentioned many things relating to that Treaty; and, to shew the King's insincerity in his pretensions of Peace, gave a Relation how that, at the very instant of that Treaty, he used all imaginable means, to bring, not only 10,000 Lorrainers, but the Irish Cut-Throats, against the Parliament; That he declared himself resolved to adhere not only to the Bishops, but also to the Papists, &c. These are Reproaches which you ought to wipe-off, if you would defend this King to any purpose; but you touch them not.

View, now, I beseech you, the Heads of many of the Articles of misgovern- An enumeration of ment, which I recounted, and which you have overlookt, only saying, in relation several high acts of misgovernment, and then I shall have done to them, some Birds are not to be catcht with such Chaffe; and then I shall have done. committed by king

- ' I. King Charles I. favoured Popery. By his Marriage-Articles he agreed, that Papists should not be molested; he put above a hundred Popish Lords and Gentlemen into great Trusts.
- II. His Bishops were unsound in their principles; in particular, Laud allowed Books which favoured Popery, but refused to License Books written against it. ' His Chaplains endeavoured to reconcile England to Rome, and got preferment "by it.
- 'III. He lent Ships to the French King to destroy the Protestants of Rochelle, which (as the French boasted,) mowed the Hereticks down like Grass.
- 'IV. He Raised an Army, and required the Country to furnish Coat and Con-" duct Money; and Levied Money by way of Loane, and the Refusers of the meaner Rank (Men of Quality being imprisoned) were compelled to go for Soul-

diers, or to serve at Sea.

V. He Suspended and Confined the Archbishop of Canterbury (not Laud, but Dr. Abbot) because he refused to make that good by Divinity, which the King

- had done against the Laws. He imprisoned Dr. Williams, Bishop of Lincoln, for speaking against the Loane, and not prosecuting Puritans.
 - VI. He turned-out the Lord Chief Justice Crew, for opposing the Loane.
- VII. He remitted 30,000 l. to Holland, for the Levying Horse and Men there, to serve his Arbitrary purposes.
 - WIII. He violated the Petition of Right, so soon as it was passed into a Law.
- IX. He confined the Earl of Bristol near two years, without any Accusation; and he Imprisoned the Earl of Arundel in the time of Parliament, without expressing any Cause of his Commitment.
- * X. He sheltered the Duke of Buckingbam, when he was Prosecuted in Parliament, as the Patron of a Popish Faction; and he Dissolved Parliaments when they were intent upon the Duke's Prosecution, and charged him in effect with the Murder of King James: In Relation thereunto, Sir Edward Peyton, who was a Member of Parliament in that time, doth thus express himself in a Treatise called the Divine Catastrophe; The Duke of Buckingbam rewarded King James by Poyson, as appeared plainly in Parliament, by the Evidence of divers Physicians, especially Dr. Ramsey; and King Charles, to save the Duke, dissolved the Parliament when he was Impeached for it, and never after had the Truth Tryed, to clear himself from confederacy, or the Duke from so heinous a scandal.
- 'XI. He Imprisoned Members of Parliament in the time of Parliament, for refusing to Answer out of the Parliament, what was said and done there, &c.
- 'XII. He threatened the House of Commons, that, if they did not give him Supplies, He would betake bimself to New Counsels; he asserted, that Parliaments were altogether in his Power, and therefore, as they humour'd him, were to continue, or not to he.

You may here see, Sir, to your shame (had you any), what a small advance you have made, in the defence of that Cause which you so briskly engaged-in; and how much of your Work you have devolved upon your better Pens. Before I take my leave of you, I shall observe how little you, the mighty defender of Princes, are to be relied-upon; for, though you tell their Majesties, in the Dedication of your first Defence, that you wrote it to secure them from Danger; and the most Reverend, Right Reverend, &c. had your word for it, in your Dedication of this Second Pamphlet, that you had nothing more in your aim, in putting it out, than to preserve the present Government in Church and State; (A most commendable and highly-meriting Undertaking, upon my word) yet, (which is a melancholy consideration) you, their Majesties great Preserver, who so bravely engaged never to drop the Cause as long as you could hold a pen, do now flinch and give ground, and, as vanquished by a grey-headed Man with one foot in the Grave (as

you Confess me to be) you say, page 13, that you will not give yourself the trouble of Answering me [a decrepit, crazy Adversary] but will spare yourself the labour because you understand it is recommended to a better band. It is astonishingly strange that you, this vaunting Goliab, who came-out strutting in a gigantic garb of Pace and Language, and with a terrible look, to act a piece of Ecclesiastical Knight-Errantry; that you, who, in an unprecedented manner, huff'd and threatened the World with that vast magazine of stuff, which you had amassed to annoy the Man that should be found in your way; that you, whom nothing must atone, but a pray, Master, forgive me; and I'll do so no more; That such a Doctor, such a Champion as you, should, on the sudden, be crying-out for the aid of better Hands, of better Pens, than your own, and that, in a quarrel of your own picking, upon the success whereof, you vainly conceit that the Being and Well-being of their Majesties, and of every thing that is worth the preserving, depends. But, I see you, Inferiour Clergymen, do often stand in need of Guides: and, let who will come to your assistance, (though I am decrepit,) this good old Cause, I rest assured, will abide firm and unshaken, against all the attempts of such Assailants as you can list and draw-up against it: I mean, by this expression of the good old cause, the true Government of old England, by King, Lords, and Commons.

No more at present (dear Doctor): only I acquaint you at parting, that I am sensible I have not paid you the Tithe of what I owe you. But it lies ready for

you, when you shall draw a Bill upon

Your Debtor,

Geneva, May 29th, 1692.

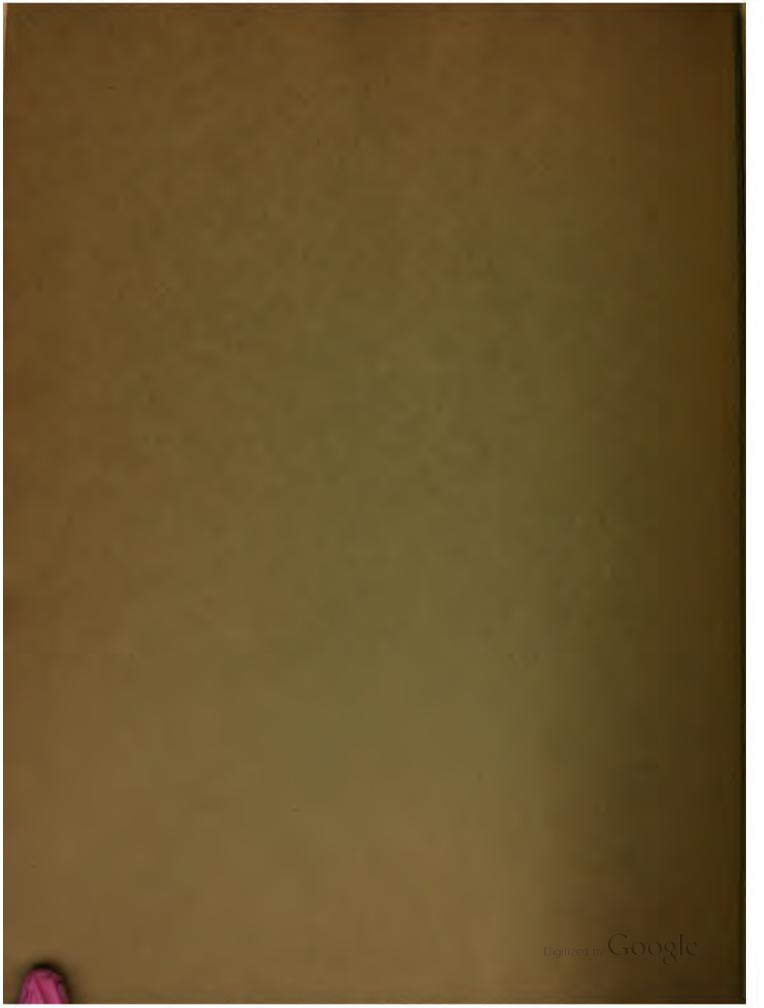
EDMUND LUDLOW.

Allatres

ALLATRES licet usque nos, & usque, Et gannitibus improbis lacessas; Ignotus pereas, Miser, Necesse est. Non deerunt tamen hac in Urbe forsan Unus, vel duo, trésve, quatubre, Pellem rodere qui velint Caninam; Nos hâc à scabie tenemus ungues.

Rail-on, poor feeble Scribbler; speak of me, In as base Terms as the World speaks of thee; Sit swelling in thy Hole, like a vex'd Toad, And, full of Malice, spit thy spleen abroad; Thou can'st blast no man's Fame with thy ill word; Thy Pen is just as harmless as thy Sword.

FINIS.



LEQOX LIBRARY

Bancroft Collection. Purchased in 1893.

